SUMMARY AND ANALYSIS OF EXTENSION PROGRAM EVALUATION IN R

SALVATORE S. MANGIAFICO
Rutgers Cooperative Extension
New Brunswick, NJ

VERSION 1.13.5
# List of Chapters

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Chapter</th>
<th>Page</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>Introduction</td>
<td>1</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Purpose of This Book</td>
<td>1</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Author of this Book and Version Notes</td>
<td>2</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Using R</td>
<td>3</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Statistics Textbooks and Other Resources</td>
<td>12</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Statistics for Educational Program Evaluation</td>
<td>16</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Why Statistics?</td>
<td>16</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Evaluation Tools and Surveys</td>
<td>17</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Variables, Descriptive Statistics, and Plots</td>
<td>23</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Types of Variables</td>
<td>23</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Descriptive Statistics</td>
<td>27</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Confidence Intervals</td>
<td>59</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Basic Plots</td>
<td>70</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Understanding Statistics and Hypothesis Testing</td>
<td>109</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Hypothesis Testing and p-values</td>
<td>109</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Reporting Results of Data and Analyses</td>
<td>129</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Choosing a Statistical Test</td>
<td>134</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Independent and Paired Values</td>
<td>142</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Likert Data</td>
<td>148</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Introduction to Likert Data</td>
<td>148</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Descriptive Statistics for Likert Data</td>
<td>158</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Descriptive Statistics with the likert Package</td>
<td>180</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Confidence Intervals for Medians</td>
<td>185</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Converting Numeric Data to Categories</td>
<td>193</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Traditional Nonparametric Tests</td>
<td>204</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Introduction to Traditional Nonparametric Tests</td>
<td>204</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>One-sample Wilcoxon Signed-rank Test</td>
<td>208</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Sign Test for One-sample Data</td>
<td>214</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>
Two-sample Mann–Whitney U Test ................................................................. 217
Mood’s Median Test for Two-sample Data .................................................... 228
Two-sample Paired Signed-rank Test ........................................................... 230
Sign Test for Two-sample Paired Data ......................................................... 239
Kruskal–Wallis Test ................................................................................... 242
Mood’s Median Test .................................................................................. 254
Friedman Test ........................................................................................... 259
Quade Test .................................................................................................. 271
Scheirer–Ray–Hare Test ............................................................................. 279
Nonparametric Regression ........................................................................ 284
Nonparametric Regression for Time Series ................................................. 293

**Permutation Tests** ................................................................................. 299
Introduction to Permutation Tests ............................................................. 299
One-way Permutation Test of Independence for Ordinal Data ..................... 303
One-way Permutation Test of Symmetry for Paired Ordinal Data ................ 312
Permutation Tests for Medians and Percentiles ........................................... 322

**Tests for Ordinal Data in Tables** ............................................................. 328
Association Tests for Ordinal Tables .......................................................... 328
Measures of Association for Ordinal Tables ............................................... 338

**Concepts for Linear Models** ................................................................. 347
Introduction to Linear Models .................................................................. 347
Using Random Effects in Models .............................................................. 350
What are Estimated Marginal Means? ...................................................... 355
Estimated Marginal Means for Multiple Comparisons ............................... 358
Factorial ANOVA: Main Effects, Interaction Effects, and Interaction Plots ...................... 366
p-values and R-square Values for Models .................................................. 378
Accuracy and Errors for Models ............................................................... 391

**Ordinal Tests with Cumulative Link Models** ........................................ 397
Introduction to Cumulative Link Models (CLM) for Ordinal Data .................. 397
Two-sample Ordinal Test with CLM ......................................................... 399
Two-sample Paired Ordinal Test with CLMM ............................................. 403
One-way Ordinal Regression with CLM ..................................................... 408
One-way Repeated Ordinal Regression with CLMM ................................... 415
<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Section</th>
<th>Page</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>Two-way Ordinal Regression with CLM</td>
<td>424</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Two-way Repeated Ordinal Regression with CLMM</td>
<td>440</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td><strong>Tests for Nominal Data</strong></td>
<td>454</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Introduction to Tests for Nominal Variables</td>
<td>454</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Confidence Intervals for Proportions</td>
<td>464</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Goodness-of-Fit Tests for Nominal Variables</td>
<td>469</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Association Tests for Nominal Variables</td>
<td>483</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Measures of Association for Nominal Variables</td>
<td>492</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Tests for Paired Nominal Data</td>
<td>505</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Cochran–Mantel–Haenszel Test for 3-Dimensional Tables</td>
<td>517</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Cochran’s Q Test for Paired Nominal Data</td>
<td>521</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Models for Nominal Data</td>
<td>531</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td><strong>Parametric Tests</strong></td>
<td>549</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Introduction to Parametric Tests</td>
<td>549</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>One-sample t-test</td>
<td>568</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Two-sample t-test</td>
<td>575</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Paired t-test</td>
<td>583</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>One-way ANOVA</td>
<td>592</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>One-way ANOVA with Blocks</td>
<td>604</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>One-way ANOVA with Random Blocks</td>
<td>614</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Two-way ANOVA</td>
<td>622</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Repeated Measures ANOVA</td>
<td>636</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Correlation and Linear Regression</td>
<td>647</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Advanced Parametric Methods</td>
<td>665</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Transforming Data</td>
<td>686</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td><strong>Analysis of Count Data and Percentage Data</strong></td>
<td>705</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Regression for Count Data</td>
<td>705</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Beta Regression for Percent and Proportion Data</td>
<td>723</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>
# Table of Contents

List of Chapters

Table of Contents

Introduction

## Purpose of This Book
- Goals of this book
- Specific learning goals
- Pre-requisites
- What this book will not cover
  - Designing and conducting surveys
  - Advanced statistical analyses
  - R programming

## Author of this Book and Version Notes
- Author of this book
- Version notes

## Using R
- R and RStudio
- Using the RStudio environment
  - Installation
- Using the R Console environment
- What if I don't have my own computer?
  - Portable installation on a usb drive
  - Using university computers
  - Using R online
  - apps.rutgers.edu
- Tests for package installation
- Required readings
  - About R
  - Obtaining R
  - A Few Notes to Get Started with R
  - Avoiding Pitfalls in R
  - Help with R
  - R Tutorials
- References for this chapter
- Exercises A
- Exercises Alpha

## Statistics Textbooks and Other Resources
- Some free general statistics books
- Books on statistical analyses and tests
- Analyses in R
  - Online resources
  - Text books
  - Videos
- R programming
## Statistics for Educational Program Evaluation

### Why Statistics?
- The importance of statistics in program evaluation
- Applicability of statistical tests to other fields and situations

### Evaluation Tools and Surveys
- Extension programs
- Designing a questionnaire
  - Some principles of questionnaire design for program evaluation
  - Examples of evaluation tools
- Optional Readings
- Optional additional resources
- References for this chapter
- Acknowledgements

### Variables, Descriptive Statistics, and Plots

#### Types of Variables
- Organizing data: observations and variables
  - Long-format and wide-format data
- Types of variables
  - Nominal data
  - Ordinal data
  - Interval/ratio data
  - Levels of measurement
- Required readings
- Optional readings
- Exercises B

#### Descriptive Statistics
- Packages used in this chapter
- Descriptive statistics
- Descriptive statistics for interval/ratio data
  - Statistics of location for interval/ratio data
  - Statistics of variation for interval/ratio data
  - Statistics for grouped interval/ratio data
  - Summaries for data frames
  - Dealing with missing values
  - Statistics of shape for interval/ratio data
- Descriptive statistics for ordinal data
  - Example of descriptive statistics for ordinal data
  - Statistics of location for ordinal data
  - Statistics of variation for ordinal data
  - Statistics for grouped ordinal data
  - Statistics for ordinal data treated as nominal data
- Descriptive statistics for nominal data
  - Example of descriptive statistics for nominal data
  - Levels for factor variables
- Required readings
Optional: Appropriate use of traditional nonparametric tests .................................................. 207
  Using traditional nonparametric tests with ordinal data ......................................................... 207
  Using traditional nonparametric tests with interval/ratio data .............................................. 208
References ................................................................................................................................. 208

One-sample Wilcoxon Signed-rank Test .................................................................................... 208
  Packages used in this chapter .................................................................................................... 209
  One-sample Wilcoxon signed-rank test example ................................................................. 210
    Summarize data treating Likert scores as factors .............................................................. 211
    Summarize data treating Likert scores as numeric .............................................................. 211
    One-sample Wilcoxon signed-rank test .............................................................................. 212
    Optional analysis: effect size ............................................................................................... 212
  Exercises I ................................................................................................................................ 213

Sign Test for One-sample Data ................................................................................................. 214
  Packages used in this chapter .................................................................................................... 215
  One-sample sign test example ............................................................................................... 215
  Sign test with the BSDA package ......................................................................................... 216
  Sign test with the DescTools package .................................................................................... 216

Two-sample Mann–Whitney U Test .......................................................................................... 217
  When to use this test ............................................................................................................... 217
  Packages used in this chapter .................................................................................................... 218
  Two-sample Mann–Whitney U test example .......................................................................... 218
    Summarize data treating Likert scores as factors .............................................................. 220
    Bar plots of data by group ..................................................................................................... 220
    Summarize data treating Likert scores as numeric .............................................................. 221
    Two-sample Mann–Whitney U test example ........................................................................ 221
    Effect size ............................................................................................................................. 222
  References ................................................................................................................................ 223
  Exercises J ................................................................................................................................ 226

Mood’s Median Test for Two-sample Data ............................................................................... 228
  Packages used in this chapter .................................................................................................... 229
  Example using the RVAideMemoire package ........................................................................ 229
  Mood’s Median Test ................................................................................................................. 230

Two-sample Paired Signed-rank Test ....................................................................................... 230
  When to use this test ............................................................................................................... 230
  Packages used in this chapter .................................................................................................... 231
  Two-sample paired signed-rank test example ........................................................................ 231
    Plot the paired data ............................................................................................................... 232
    Two-sample paired signed-rank test .................................................................................... 236
    Effect size ............................................................................................................................. 237
  Exercises K ................................................................................................................................ 238

Sign Test for Two-sample Paired Data ...................................................................................... 239
  Packages used in this chapter .................................................................................................... 239
  Sign test for paired two-sample data example ....................................................................... 240
    Two-sample sign test with BSDA package .......................................................................... 241
    Two-sample sign test with DescTools package ..................................................................... 241

Kruskal–Wallis Test .................................................................................................................. 242
  Packages used in this chapter .................................................................................................... 243
  Kruskal–Wallis test example .................................................................................................... 243
Summarize data treating Likert scores as factors .......................................................... 245
Bar plots of data by group ................................................................................................. 245
Summarize data treating Likert scores as numeric ............................................................. 246
Kruskal–Wallis test example .............................................................................................. 246
Effect size .......................................................................................................................... 247
Post-hoc test: Dunn test for multiple comparisons of groups ........................................ 248
Post-hoc test: pairwise Mann–Whitney U-tests for multiple comparisons ........................ 249
Plot of medians and confidence intervals .......................................................................... 251
Exercises L ......................................................................................................................... 252

Mood’s Median Test ......................................................................................................... 254
Packages used in this chapter ............................................................................................ 255
Example using the RVAideMemoire package ..................................................................... 255
Mood’s median test ............................................................................................................ 256
Post-hoc test: pairwiseMedianTest function .................................................................. 258
Post-hoc test: pairwiseMedianMatrix function ................................................................. 259

Friedman Test .................................................................................................................. 259
Packages used in this chapter ............................................................................................ 261
Friedman test example ....................................................................................................... 262
Summarize data treating Likert scores as factors ............................................................. 263
Bar plots by group ............................................................................................................. 264
Bar plots of differences between groups .......................................................................... 264
twoDifferences to produce bar plots of differences between all groups ....................... 265
Summarize data treating Likert scores as numeric ............................................................. 266
Friedman test example ....................................................................................................... 267
Effect size .......................................................................................................................... 267
Post-hoc test: pairwise sign test for multiple comparisons of groups .......................... 268
Post-hoc test: Conover test ............................................................................................... 270

Quade Test ...................................................................................................................... 271
Packages used in this chapter ............................................................................................ 273
Quade test example ........................................................................................................... 273
Summarize data treating Likert scores as factors ............................................................. 274
Bar plots by group ............................................................................................................. 275
Summarize data treating Likert scores as numeric ............................................................. 276
Quade test example ........................................................................................................... 277
Post-hoc test: pairwise two-sample paired rank-sum test for multiple comparisons ........ 277
Post-hoc test: Quade post-hoc test ................................................................................... 278

Scheirer–Ray–Hare Test .................................................................................................. 279
Packages used in this chapter ............................................................................................ 280
Scheirer–Ray–Hare test examples ...................................................................................... 280
Midichlorians example ..................................................................................................... 280
Example from Sokal and Rohlf ......................................................................................... 281
Example from Real Statistics Using Excel ......................................................................... 282
References .......................................................................................................................... 283

Nonparametric Regression .............................................................................................. 284
Packages used in this chapter ............................................................................................ 284
Nonparametric correlation ................................................................................................. 284
Nonparametric regression examples .................................................................................. 284
Kendall–Theil Sen Siegel nonparametric linear regression ............................................... 286
Plot with statistics ............................................................................................................. 286
Quantile regression ........................................................................................................... 287
Permutation Tests

Permutation Tests for Medians and Percentiles

Introduction to Permutation Tests

One-way Permutation Test of Independence for Ordinal Data

One-way Permutation Test of Symmetry for Paired Ordinal Data

Permutation Tests for Medians and Percentiles

Nonparametric Regression for Time Series

Comparison of methods for symmetry tests for ordinal data

Comparison of methods for independence tests for ordinal data

Permutation symmetry test

Permutation test of symmetry

Post-hoc test: pairwise permutation tests

Plot of medians and confidence intervals

Comparison of methods for symmetry tests for ordinal data

Mann–Kendall trend test

Sen’s slope for time series data

Pettitt’s test for change in value

Decomposing time series objects

Nonparametric regression examples

Local regression

Generalized additive models

Confidence intervals for percentiles

Plot of medians and confidence intervals

Summarize data treating Likert scores as numeric

Bar plots by group

Plot with statistics

Summarize data treating Likert scores as factors

Box plots by group

Scatter plot with one-to-one line

Permutation test of independence

Permutation test of symmetry

References

Box plots

Plot with statistics

When to use this test

Nonparametric regression examples

Packages used in this chapter

Packages used in this chapter

One-way ordinal permutation test example

Bar plots by group

Summarize data treating Likert scores as numeric

One-way ordinal permutation test

Post-hoc test: pairwise permutation tests

Plot of medians and confidence intervals

Comparison of methods for independence tests for ordinal data

When to use this test

When to use this test

When to use this test

When to use this test

Permutation symmetry test

Permutation test of symmetry

Post-hoc test: pairwise permutation tests

Plot of medians and confidence intervals

Comparison of methods for symmetry tests for ordinal data

Permutation test example

One-way permutation test example

Permutation test example

Packages used in this chapter

Packages used in this chapter

The coin package

References

Generalized additive models

Local regression

Kendall trend test

Confidence intervals for percentiles

Box plots

The coin package

Pettitt’s test for change in value

Sen’s slope for time series data

Decomposing time series objects

Nonparametric regression examples
<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Packages used in this chapter</th>
<th>399</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>Two-sample ordinal model example</td>
<td>400</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Summarize data treating Likert scores as factors</td>
<td>401</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Bar plots of data by group</td>
<td>401</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Summarize data treating Likert scores as numeric</td>
<td>402</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Two-sample ordinal model example</td>
<td>402</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

**Two-sample Paired Ordinal Test with CLMM**

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Packages used in this chapter</th>
<th>403</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>Two-sample paired ordinal model example</td>
<td>404</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Plot the paired data</td>
<td>405</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Two-sample paired ordinal model</td>
<td>406</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

**One-way Ordinal Regression with CLM**

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Packages used in this chapter</th>
<th>408</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>One-way ordinal regression example</td>
<td>409</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Summarize data treating Likert scores as factors</td>
<td>410</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Bar plots by group</td>
<td>411</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Summarize data treating Likert scores as numeric</td>
<td>411</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>One-way ordinal regression</td>
<td>412</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Optional analyses</td>
<td>414</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Post-hoc test: pairwise ordinal tests for multiple comparisons of groups</td>
<td>414</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

**One-way Repeated Ordinal Regression with CLM**

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Packages used in this chapter</th>
<th>415</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>One-way repeated ordinal regression example</td>
<td>416</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Summarize data treating Likert scores as factors</td>
<td>418</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Bar plots by group</td>
<td>418</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Summarize data treating Likert scores as numeric</td>
<td>419</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>One-way repeated ordinal regression</td>
<td>419</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Post-hoc comparisons with emmeans</td>
<td>421</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Optional analyses</td>
<td>422</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Post-hoc test: pairwise paired ordinal tests for multiple comparisons</td>
<td>422</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

**Two-way Ordinal Regression with CLM**

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Packages used in this chapter</th>
<th>424</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>Two-way ordinal regression example</td>
<td>425</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Summarize data treating Likert scores as factors</td>
<td>427</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Bar plots by group</td>
<td>428</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Summarize data treating Likert scores as numeric</td>
<td>431</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Produce interaction plot with medians and quantiles</td>
<td>432</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Two-way ordinal regression</td>
<td>433</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Post-hoc tests with emmeans for multiple comparisons of groups</td>
<td>434</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Optional analyses</td>
<td>437</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Post-hoc test: pairwise ordinal tests for multiple comparisons of groups</td>
<td>437</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

**Two-way Repeated Ordinal Regression with CLM**

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Packages used in this chapter</th>
<th>440</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>Two-way repeated ordinal regression example</td>
<td>441</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Summarize data treating Likert scores as factors</td>
<td>443</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Bar plots by group</td>
<td>444</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Summarize data treating Likert scores as numeric</td>
<td>445</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Plot Likert scores before and after</td>
<td>446</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Produce interaction plot with medians and confidence intervals</td>
<td>447</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Two-way repeated ordinal regression</td>
<td>448</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>
# Tests for Nominal Data

**Introduction to Tests for Nominal Variables**

- Descriptive statistics and plots for nominal data
- Contingency tables and matrices
- Bar plots
- Mosaic plots
- Optional analyses: converting among matrices, tables, counts, and cases
  - Long-format with each row as an observation (cases)
  - Long-format with counts of observations (counts)
- Matrix form
- Optional analyses: obtaining information about a matrix object

## Confidence Intervals for Proportions

- Packages used in this chapter
- Example of confidence intervals for a binomial proportion
- Example of confidence intervals for a multinomial proportion
- Optional analysis: confidence intervals for a difference in proportions

## Goodness-of-Fit Tests for Nominal Variables

- Packages used in this chapter
- Goodness-of-fit tests for nominal variables example
  - Exact tests for goodness-of-fit
  - G-test for goodness-of-fit
  - Chi-square test for goodness-of-fit
- Effect size for goodness-of-fit tests
  - Examples of effect size for goodness-of-fit tests
  - Simple bar plots
    - Race example
    - Ethnicity example
  - Optional: Multinomial test example with plot and confidence intervals
- Optional readings
- Exercises Beta

## Association Tests for Nominal Variables

- Low cell counts
- Fisher’s exact test
- Choosing among tests
- Packages used in this chapter
- Association tests for nominal variables example
- Reading the data as a matrix
- Expected cell counts
- Effect size
- Fisher Exact test of association
- Post-hoc analysis
- G-test of association
- Post-hoc analysis
- Chi-square test of association
- Post-hoc analysis
### Measures of Association for Nominal Variables

- Interpretation of statistics
- Packages used in this chapter
- Examples for measures of association for nominal variables
  - Cramér’s $V$
  - $\phi$
  - Cohen’s $w$
  - Cohen’s $h$
  - Goodman Kruskal lambda
  - Tschuprow’s $T$

#### Optional analysis:
- using effect size statistics when counts are not known
- Cohen’s $h$ and prop.test for paired data when subject matching isn’t known
- changing the order of the table
- comparing statistics

#### References

### Tests for Paired Nominal Data

- Packages used in this chapter
  - McNemar and McNemar–Bowker tests
- Exact tests
- Example of tests for paired data nominal data
  - Exact tests for symmetry
  - Effect size
  - McNemar and McNemar–Bowker chi-square tests for symmetry

#### An example without repeated measures, comparing test of symmetry with test of association

#### Optional analysis:
- a 4 x 4 example with several 0’s
- conducting exact tests for symmetry

#### References

### Cochran–Mantel–Haenszel Test for 3-Dimensional Tables

- Packages used in this chapter
- C–M–H test example: long-format with counts
- C–M–H test example: table format

### Cochran’s Q Test for Paired Nominal Data

- Packages used in this chapter
- Cochran’s Q test example: long-format
- Cochran’s Q test example: short-format in matrix

### Models for Nominal Data

- Packages used in this chapter
- Log-linear models for tests of association
  - Log-linear model example
- Logistic regression
  - Logistic regression example
- Multinomial logistic regression
  - VGAM package
  - mlogit and nnet packages
- Multinomial regression example
- Mixed-effects logistic regression example

---

Optional readings — — M

---

References — — — — M

---

Optional analyses: comparing statistics — — changing the order of the table

---

Optional analysis: conducting exact tests for symmetry

---

Optional analysis: a 4 x 4 example with several 0’s

---

Example of tests for paired data nominal

---

References

---

Linear models for tests of association

---

Dimensional Tables

---

McNemar and McNemar tests

---

Effect size

---

Exact tests

---

Linear model example

---

McNemar and McNemar tests

---

Tschuprow’s $T$

---

Goodman Kruskal lambda

---

Cohen’s $h$

---

Cramer’s $V$

---

Exact tests for symmetry

---

Haenszel Test for 3-Dimensional Tables

---

Mantel–Haenszel test example: long-format with counts

---

Cochran’s Q test example: long-format

---

Cochran’s Q test example: short-format in matrix

---

Models for Nominal Data

---

490

---

491

---

491

---

492

---

493

---

494

---

494

---

494

---

495

---

496

---

496

---

497

---

497

---

498

---

499

---

500

---

502

---

504

---

505

---

506

---

506

---

506

---

508

---

509

---

509

---

510

---

511

---

513

---

514

---

516

---

517

---

518

---

518

---

521

---

521

---

521

---

523

---

523

---

529

---

531

---

532

---

532

---

535

---

536

---

539

---

539

---

540

---

540

---

544

---

xix
Two-sample unpaired t-test .................................................................................................................. 580
Effect size .............................................................................................................................................. 581
  Interpretation of Cohen’s d ..................................................................................................................... 581
  Cohen’s d for two-sample t-test ............................................................................................................. 581
Optional readings .................................................................................................................................. 581
References .............................................................................................................................................. 581
Exercises P .............................................................................................................................................. 582

Paired t-test ........................................................................................................................................... 583
  Packages used in this chapter .................................................................................................................. 584
  Paired t-test example ............................................................................................................................. 584
    Check the number of paired observations ......................................................................................... 585
    Histogram of difference data .............................................................................................................. 585
    Plot the paired data ............................................................................................................................ 586
    Paired t-test ....................................................................................................................................... 588
  Effect size ............................................................................................................................................ 589
    Interpretation of Cohen’s d .................................................................................................................. 589
    Cohen’s d for paired t-test ................................................................................................................... 589
Optional readings .................................................................................................................................. 590
References .............................................................................................................................................. 590
Exercises Q .............................................................................................................................................. 591

One-way ANOVA ................................................................................................................................. 592
  Packages used in this chapter .................................................................................................................. 593
  One-way ANOVA example ..................................................................................................................... 593
    Summarize data by group .................................................................................................................... 595
    Box plots for data by group .................................................................................................................. 595
    Plot of means and confidence intervals ............................................................................................. 596
    Define linear model ............................................................................................................................. 597
    Conduct analysis of variance .............................................................................................................. 598
    Histogram of residuals ......................................................................................................................... 598
    Post-hoc analysis: mean separation tests ............................................................................................ 599
    Plot of means, confidence intervals, and mean-separation letters ..................................................... 600
References .............................................................................................................................................. 602
Exercises R .............................................................................................................................................. 602

One-way ANOVA with Blocks .............................................................................................................. 604
  Packages used in this chapter .................................................................................................................. 605
  One-way ANOVA with blocks example ............................................................................................... 605
    Use Summarize to check if cell sizes are balanced ......................................................................... 607
    Define linear model ............................................................................................................................. 608
    Conduct analysis of variance .............................................................................................................. 608
    Histogram and plot of residuals .......................................................................................................... 608
    Post-hoc analysis: mean separation tests ........................................................................................... 609
    Plot of means, confidence intervals, and mean-separation letters ..................................................... 610
Exercises S .............................................................................................................................................. 611

One-way ANOVA with Random Blocks ............................................................................................ 614
  Packages used in this chapter .................................................................................................................. 614
  One-way ANOVA with random blocks example .................................................................................. 614
    Mixed-effects model with lmer ............................................................................................................ 616
    Mixed-effects model with nlme ........................................................................................................... 619
  Comparison of results from one-way ANOVA with blocks .................................................................. 622

Two-way ANOVA ................................................................................................................................. 622
Transforming Data .......................................................... 686
  Transforming data .......................................................... 687
  Packages used in this chapter ........................................... 687

Advanced Parametric Methods ........................................... 665
  Packages used in this chapter ........................................... 665
  More complex experimental designs .................................. 665
  Analysis of co-variance .................................................. 666
  Nonlinear regression and curvilinear regression .................. 666
  Multiple regression ...................................................... 666
  Logistic regression ....................................................... 667
  Analysis of count data ................................................... 667
  Robust techniques ........................................................ 667
    Example of robust linear regression .................................. 668
  Contrasts in Linear Models ............................................. 672
  Linear plateau and quadratic plateau models ...................... 672
    Examples of linear plateau and quadratic plateau models ...... 672
  Cate–Nelson analysis .................................................... 685

Correlation and Linear Regression .................................... 647
  Packages used in this chapter ........................................... 648
  Examples for correlation and linear regression .................... 648
    Visualizing correlated variables ...................................... 649
    Effect size statistics .................................................. 652
    Pearson correlation .................................................... 653
    Kendall correlation .................................................... 654
    Spearman correlation .................................................. 655
    Linear regression ....................................................... 656
    Polynomial regression .................................................. 658
  A few of xkcd comics .................................................... 662
    Correlation ............................................................. 662
    Extrapolating ............................................................ 662
    Cat proximity ............................................................ 663
  References ...................................................................... 663
  Exercises U .................................................................. 663

Repeated Measures ANOVA .................................................. 636
  Packages used in this chapter ........................................... 636
  Repeated measures ANOVA example .................................... 637
  Optional analysis: determining autocorrelation in residuals ... 644
  Optional discussion on specifying formulae for repeated measures analysis ............................................ 645
    Specifying random effects in models .................................. 645
    Indicating time and subject variables .................................. 646
  Exercises T .................................................................. 634

Exercises U .................................................................. 634

References ...................................................................... 634

xxii
Introduction

Purpose of This Book

Goals of this book

The goal of this book is to introduce to students interested in extension education, outreach, and public education to the quantitative methods used to assess the evaluation of these activities. Extension education includes a diverse collection of subject matter, including environmental science, home horticulture, agriculture, youth development, nutrition, and financial literacy.

Tools for evaluating educational programs may include in-class surveys that measure the knowledge gain of students in a course or follow-up surveys to determine the behaviors adopted by course participants. Evaluation may also include any number of measured variables, perhaps the age of youth participants, the number of calories eaten daily by students in a nutrition program, or the organic matter content of farm fields managed by participating farmers.

The examples and methods here are chosen specifically to be applicable to the evaluation of extension education programs. That being said, these methods are some of the most common used in the analysis of experiments—techniques used from diverse disciplines from manufacturing to environmental science to psychology, though each of these disciplines has additional methods used in specific situations.

Specific learning goals

One goal of this book is to give readers the skills and abilities to be able to understand the graphs and statistics that you might encounter in a publication such as the Journal of Extension or other academic reports of program results. As examples, students will be able to answer the questions: What can I conclude from this bar plot? How do I interpret this p-value? What is an r-squared value?

A second goal is for readers to be able to design and analyze their own program evaluation experiments in order to document the impacts of their extension teaching or research. What analysis would I use to assess knowledge gain with before-and-after surveys? What statistics should I report to convey the results of this analysis? Can I explain the results with a graph?

Pre-requisites

This book is written for students at the undergraduate level with no prior knowledge of the analysis of experiments, and with no prior knowledge of computer programming. This being said, students with no background in these areas will need to apply care and dedication in order to understand the material and the computer code used in examples. These students may also need to explore the optional readings to obtain a better foundation in statistical thinking and theory.

What this book will not cover
Designing and conducting surveys
There are many skills and considerations that go into conducting competent assessments of education programs. This book will not cover these many of these topics in any depth. For example, good survey design and effective survey questions will be touched on only very briefly. Conducting surveys well, for example by avoiding sampling bias, will also not be covered in any significant way.

Advanced statistical analyses
There are variety of relatively advanced statistical analyses that are used in even relatively simple studies. This book focuses on only the most basic analyses for common designs used in extension evaluation. A solid understanding of these analyses will give the reader the foundation for exploring more complicated analyses as the student wishes or the situation calls for.

R programming
R is a flexible and powerful programming language. Readers of this book will benefit from learning the basics of programming in R; however, descriptions of R programming will be kept to a minimum here. There are books and online resources available to learn R programming. A few places to start include the book by Roger Peng listed in the "R programming" section and the courses offered by the resources listed in "Online Learning Modules and Massive Open Online Courses (MOOC’s)" section in the Statistics Textbooks and Other Resources chapter.

Author of this Book and Version Notes
This book is written with the intention of providing users simple and complete examples of analyses common in the evaluation of extension education programs using the R Project for Statistical Computing. I have chosen the computer code to both be as clear as possible for a beginner to follow, but also to demonstrate some of the options available in conducting analyses or producing plots of data. In some cases the code is more difficult to follow than in others.

Likewise, discussion of the assumptions and theoretical considerations for the statistical analyses included here is limited. Readers are encouraged to understand these considerations in more depth when using these analyses.

Author of this book
I am neither a statistician nor an R programmer, so all advice and code in this book comes without guarantee. I am happy to accept corrections or suggestions. Send correspondence to mangiafico@njaes.rutgers.edu.

Version notes
Version 1.11 – Code utilizing the lsmeans package has been switched to using the emmeans package. This appears to have required only minor changes in the code. If you find something that doesn’t work, please let me know.
Using R

**R and RStudio**

This book will use the software package *R Project for Statistical Computing* to create plots and conduct statistical analyses. It is free to install on a Windows, Mac, or Linux computer. Although it is not required, I also recommend using *RStudio*, which is also free.

Links to websites where the software can be obtained are included in the “Obtaining R” section in the “Required Readings” below.

**Using the RStudio environment**

*RStudio* provides a nice work environment because it presents several windows on the screen that make it easy to view code, results, and plots at once.

Program code can be worked on in the upper left *Script* window. If that window isn't displayed, it can be opened with *File > New File > R Script*. Code in the *Script* window is selected, and the *Run* button is used to run the code. The results are reported in the *Console* window on the lower right. Code can be saved as an *.r* or *.R* file, and those files should subsequently open automatically with *RStudio*.

As an alternative, code can be pasted directly in the *Console* window.

The lower right window will usually show either plot results or help results.

**Installation**

As far as I know, *R* should be installed first. And then when *RStudio* is installed, you will tell *RStudio* where *R* is installed on the machine. Links to obtain this software are in the *Obtaining R* in the Required Readings below.

**Using the R Console environment**

If you are not using *RStudio*, code is pasted directly into the *R GUI Console*. Results are produced in the Console as code is entered, and plots will open in a separate window.

**What if I don’t have my own computer?**

If you don’t have your own computer on which to install the software, there are a few options.

**Portable installation on a usb drive**

One solution is to install *R Portable* on a portable usb drive. You can then run this software on university or other computers directly from that drive, if the computer is set up to give you permission
to do so. You should check to see if you will have permission to run portable software from a usb drive on these computers.

**Using university computers**

*R* and *RStudio* are installed on Rutgers University computers in computer laboratories. You should check with the individual computer lab, and make sure you will have permission to install additional R packages on those machines.

**Using R online**

There are websites on which you can run *R* in an online environment. *r-fiddle.org* is one such site. However, I have had trouble using some R packages used in this book on *r-fiddle*.

**apps.rutgers.edu**

*R* and *RStudio* are also included in the *apps.rutgers.edu* environment. You can log in at *apps.rutgers.edu* with your Rutgers Net ID. Then, *Desktop > Menu > Development > R Studio*. In general, I have not found this to be the most convenient environment to work in. Working on a laptop, I have found that I had to zoom out with the browser zoom to see the whole virtual desktop on my screen. To transfer text to the desktop environment, paste the text into the clipboard using the clipboard icon at the upper right of the screen. Also, I have had trouble trying to install additional R packages in this environment.

**Tests for package installation**

If you are unsure if you can install additional R packages in the environment you are working in, try the two examples below. The *psych* and *FSA* packages may take a while for their initial installation. The code for you to run is in blue, and the output is in red. The output is truncated here.

Don’t worry too much about what the code is doing at this point. The main point is to see if you can get output from both the *psych* and *FSA* packages.

The code assigns a vector of numbers to *Score*, and a vector of text strings to *Student*. It then combines those two into a data frame called *Data*, which is then printed. The *summary* function counts the values in *Student*, and determines the median and other statistics for *Score*. The *psych* package is installed, then loaded with the *library* function, and then is used to output summary statistics for *Score* for each *Student*. The same is then done with the *FSA* package.

Remember to run only the blue code. The red code is the (truncated) output R should produce.

```r
Score = c(10, 9, 8, 7, 7, 8, 9, 10, 6, 5, 4, 9, 10, 9, 10)

Data = data.frame(Student, Score)

Data

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Student</th>
<th>Score</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>Bugs</td>
<td>10</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Bugs</td>
<td>9</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Bugs</td>
<td>8</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Bugs</td>
<td>7</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Bugs</td>
<td>7</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Bugs</td>
<td>8</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>9</td>
<td>9</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>10</td>
<td>10</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>6</td>
<td>5</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>4</td>
<td>9</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>10</td>
<td>9</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>10</td>
<td>10</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>
```

4
1 Bugs 10
2 Bugs 9
3 Bugs 8
4 Bugs 7
5 Bugs 7
6 Daffy 8
7 Daffy 9
8 Daffy 10
9 Daffy 6
10 Daffy 5
11 Taz 4
12 Taz 9
13 Taz 10
14 Taz 9
15 Taz 10

summary(Data)

    Student  Score
    Bugs :5  Min. : 4.000
    Daffy:5  1st Qu.: 7.000
    Taz  :5  Median : 9.000
           Mean : 8.067
           3rd Qu.: 9.500
           Max. :10.000

if(!require(psych)){install.packages("psych")}

library(psych)

describeBy(x = Score,
            group = Student)

  group: Bugs
 vars n mean  sd median trimmed mad min max range skew  kurtosis    se
  1 1  5 8.2 1.3      8     8.2 1.48   7  10     3 0.26 -1.96 0.58
  1 1  5 8.2 1.3      8     8.2 1.48   7  10     3 0.26 -1.96 0.58

  group: Daffy
 vars n mean  sd median trimmed mad min max range skew  kurtosis    se
  1 1  5 7.6 2.07      8     7.6 2.97   5 10      5 -0.11 -2.03 0.93
  1 1  5 7.6 2.07      8     7.6 2.97   5 10      5 -0.11 -2.03 0.93

  group: Taz
 vars n mean  sd median trimmed mad min max range skew kurtosis    se
  1 1  5 8.4 2.51      9     8.4 1.48   4 10      6 -0.97 -1.04 1.12
  1 1  5 8.4 2.51      9     8.4 1.48   4 10      6 -0.97 -1.04 1.12

if(!require(FSA)){install.packages("FSA")}

library(FSA)

Summarize(Score ~ Student,
           data=Data)
Required readings

The following readings are required for this chapter. You can read them at the individual links below, or as chapters in the pdf version of the *R Companion to the Handbook of Biological Statistics* (rcompanion.org/documents/RCompanionBioStatistics.pdf).

**About R**
[rcompanion.org/rcompanion/a_04.html](rcompanion.org/rcompanion/a_04.html)

**Obtaining R**
[rcompanion.org/rcompanion/a_05.html](rcompanion.org/rcompanion/a_05.html)

**A Few Notes to Get Started with R**
[rcompanion.org/rcompanion/a_06.html](rcompanion.org/rcompanion/a_06.html)

**Avoiding Pitfalls in R**
[rcompanion.org/rcompanion/a_07.html](rcompanion.org/rcompanion/a_07.html)

**Help with R**
[rcompanion.org/rcompanion/a_08.html](rcompanion.org/rcompanion/a_08.html)

**R Tutorials**
[rcompanion.org/rcompanion/a_09.html](rcompanion.org/rcompanion/a_09.html)

**References for this chapter**


**Exercises A**

1. Install *R* and *RStudio* on your computer, or determine how you will access this software. Be sure that you will be able to install additional R packages (as in “Tests for package installation” above).

If you haven’t installed the *FSA* and *psych* packages, do so with the following command, or use *Tools > Install packages* in RStudio.
if(!require(FSA)){install.packages("FSA")}
if(!require(psych)){install.packages("psych")}

Use the following code to import from the internet a data frame of river stage measurements for Greenwich, NJ.

Greenwich = read.table("http://rcompanion.org/documents/Greenwich.csv",
header=TRUE, sep="","")

a. Summarize the stage measurements by year and report the results.

library(FSA)

Summarize(Stage ~ Year, 
data = Greenwich)

Examine the variables in the data frame. (Don’t report anything.)

str(Greenwich)

library(psych)

headTail(Greenwich)

summary(Greenwich)

The str function reports the type of each variable in the data frame. Agency is treated as a factor variable by R. We’ll consider this a nominal variable. It has one level, which is “USGS”. The rest of the variables are being treated as integer or numeric variables.

The function headTail in the psych package shows you the top and bottom of the data frame, arranged in the usual way with variables in columns and observations in rows.

The summary function reports some summary statistics for the data frame. In this case, it reports that there are 171 instances of “USGS” for the variable Agency. Since it treats Year as an integer variable, it tells you that the minimum is 2000 and the maximum is 2014. It tells us that there are 6 NA values in the variable Stage.

These functions are useful to see what variables are in a data frame, and to be sure that the data frame reflects the data we think it should. For example, this data frame has 171 observations. If we were expecting 1000 observations, we would know something went wrong in our data entry or importing of the data.

We could create a new variable called Yearf that would be the same as Year, but treated as a factor variable.

Greenwich$Year.f = as.factor(Greenwich$Year)
Now when we use the `summary` function, it will report the counts for some levels of `Year.f`.

```
summary(Greenwich)
```

b. In future chapters, we will learn to summarize data in more specific ways. In this case, if we want the counts for all the years in `Year.f`, we can do the following. **Report this result.**

```
xtabs(~ Year.f,
      data = Greenwich)
```

2. The following will create a data frame called `TwoCats` with Pepé's and Penelope's scores from a talent show, and produce summary statistics for Penelope's scores.

```
Input = ("Cat  Score
       'Pepé Le Pew' 8
       'Pepé Le Pew' 8
       'Pepé Le Pew' 8
       'Pepé Le Pew' 8
       'Pepé Le Pew' 8
       'Pepé Le Pew' 8
       Penelope  10
       Penelope  9
       Penelope  9
       Penelope  8
       Penelope  7
       Penelope  7
")

TwoCats = read.table(textConnection(Input),header=TRUE)
library(FSA)
Summarize(Score ~ Cat,
          data = TwoCats,
          exclude = "Pepé Le Pew")
```

a. **Report the results** for Penelope.

Change Pepé’s scores to 9, 9, 7, 7, 6, 5. Change the `exclude` option in the `Summarize` function to exclude only Penelope. Penelope’s name will need to be in simple double quotes.

b. **Report the results** for the summary statistics for Pepé’s new scores. (The new mean for Pepe should be 7.1667.)

c. Summarize the data below with the `Summarize` function in the `FSA` package. **Report the results.**
To do this,

- Copy the data below and paste it into code above. Make sure you retain the *Input* line and the "j" line.

  Dog    Snacks
  Scooby 4
  Scooby 3
  Scooby 6
  Scooby 18
  Scooby 7
  Scrappy 8
  Scrappy 10
  Scrappy 6
  Scrappy 5
  Scrappy 15
  Scrappy 7
  Scrappy 9

- Get rid of the *exclude* option in the *Summarize* call. Pay attention to the placement of the commas and parentheses, so it will look like this:

  \[
  \text{Summarize(Score ~ Cat,} \\
  \text{data = TwoCats)}
  \]

- In the code, change *TwoCats* to *TwoDogs*.

- In the *Summarize* function call, change *TwoCats* to *TwoDogs*, change *Score* to *Snacks*, change *Cat* to *Dog*.

You should get summary statistics for both Scooby and Scrappy in one output. The number of observations (n) for Scooby should be 5 and for Scrappy should be 7. The mean snacks for Scooby should be 7.6 and the mean snacks for Scrappy should be 8.57.

**Exercises Alpha**

1. The package *FSA* contains a data set called *ChinookArg* that has the lengths and weights of Chinook salmon at three locations.

   \[
   \text{library(FSA)} \\
   \text{data(ChinookArg)}
   \]

   We can find some information about the data set with

   \[
   \text{?ChinookArg}
   \]

   a. **Report**, From what county are these data?
We can see the first and last rows of the data with

```r
library(psych)
headTail(ChinookArg)
```

Note that the variable `tl` is length, `w` is weight, and `loc` is location. This is explained in the help file pulled up with

```r
?ChinookArg
```

We can then get some summary statistics about the data.

```r
library(FSA)
Summarize(tl ~ loc,
data = ChinookArg)
```

This will provide summary statistics about length at each location.

In the output, `n` is the number of observations for that group. The other summary statistics are mean, standard deviation, minimum, 1st quartile, median, 3rd quartile, and maximum. These statistics will be discussed in a later chapter.

This example uses formula notation, where `tl` is measurement variable and `loc` is the grouping variable, and they are separated with a tilde. We could also think of `tl` as the dependent variable and `loc` as the independent variable.

Some functions accept formula notation and some do not. Usually asking for help about the function will help you determine what input is required and what other arguments can be passed to the function, e.g.

```r
?Summarize
```

**Answer the following:**

b. What is the number of observations for Petrohue?

c. What is the mean length for Chinook in Petrohue?

d. The minimum length in Petrohue?

e. The maximum length in Petrohue?

2. Install the *ggplot2* package with following command, or use *Tools > Install packages* in RStudio.
if(!require(ggplot2)){install.packages("ggplot2")}

The following code will plot Chinook length vs. weight. It will add a smooth line to the plot.

```r
library(ggplot2)
qplot(
x    = w,
y    = tl,
data = ChinookArg,
geom = c("point", "smooth"),
xlab = "Weight (kg)",
ylab = "Length (cm)",
main = "Chinook plot by Sal")
```

a. In the code above, change "Sal" to your name. **Export the plot and embed it in your assignment.**

In RStudio, in the Plot window, you can try the Export menu, and save as image, save as pdf, or copy to clipboard.

For assignments, probably the easiest thing is to use Export, save as image. The recommended format is .png. Pay attention to the directory where your image was saved.

For high resolution images, I tend to use the .pdf option and then edit the file with Photoshop or GIMP.

If you don't use RStudio, or would like to specify the size and resolution of image files, you can use

```r
png(filename = "Rplot%03d.png",
width = 4,
height = 3,
units = "in",
res = 600)
qplot(
x    = w,
y    = tl,
data = ChinookArg,
geom = c("point", "smooth"),
xlab = "Weight (kg)",
ylab = "Length (cm)",
main = "Chinook plot by Sal")
dev.off()
```

You may use the following to see where the file was saved, if you didn't specify a path in the filename argument.

```r
getwd()
```
3. In the `qplot` function above, switch the variable for weight, `w`, with the variable for location, `loc`. Remove the whole line with the `geom` argument. And change the `xlab` argument to something appropriate.

   a. **Export the plot and embed it in your assignment.**

4. There's another data set in the `FSA` package called `WhitefishLC`.

Using the command

```
?WhitefishLC
```

**Answer the following lettered questions.**

a. What are the units for fish length in this data set?

Using this data set, summarize the length of whitefish (`tl`) by their age (`scale1`).

Use the code for `Summarize` that you used in 1.a. Make sure you change the names of the variables in the function and the name of the data frame in the function.

b. Report the results.

c. Do you observe anything interesting in these results?

Plot length vs. age for whitefish.

Use the code you used in 2. Be sure to change the name of the variables and of the data frame.

d. Embed this plot with your assignment. Include appropriate axis labels and be sure the units of length are correct. If you include a title, be sure it is appropriate.

e. How would you describe the relationship of length and age for these fish?

---

**Statistics Textbooks and Other Resources**

This book is not intended to be a substitute for an introductory course or text in statistics. The introductory chapters will briefly cover certain key concepts mostly through readings and videos from external sources. Other concepts that are important to having an appreciation for the theory and use of statistical tests are not addressed. For this understanding, readers are encouraged to pursue an introductory undergraduate course, appropriate MOOC, or careful reading of an introductory textbook.
Some free general statistics books

Luckily there are free resources available that cover the key concepts in an introductory statistics course. Some of these will be suggested as recommended reading in this book.

Types of data, plots, experimental design, sampling, probability, hypothesis testing, confidence limits, t-test, analysis of variance, chi-square test, linear regression, multiple regression, logistic regression.

Sampling, descriptive statistics, probability, distributions, confidence intervals, hypothesis testing, Type I and Type II errors, t-test, chi-square, linear regression, analysis of variance.

Descriptive statistics, plots, correlation, probability, experimental design, confidence intervals, type I and type II errors, t-test, regression, analysis of variance, chi-square test, nonparametric tests, power.

Distributions, regression, correlation, hypothesis testing, t-test, chi-square test, analysis of variance.

Books on statistical analyses and tests

Data analysis steps, kinds of variables, probability, hypothesis testing, confounding variables, descriptive statistics, chi-square test, t-test, analysis of variance, nonparametric tests, linear regression, logistic regression. Analyses in SAS programming language.

Analyses in R

Online resources


Data input, data management, basic statistics, advanced statistics, basic graphs, advanced graphs.

**Text books**


**Videos**

Joseph, M.B. *The IQUIT R video series*. www.r-bloggers.com/the-iquit-r-video-series/ or www.youtube.com/channel/UCXSzyk3li4bh9ODis_B8daQ.

**R programming**


**Other useful resources for understanding statistics**

**Videos**

*Statistics Learning Centre* (Videos with Dr. Nic). YouTube channel. www.youtube.com/channel/UCG32MfGLit1pcqCRXyy9cAg.

**Blogs**

*Learn and Teach Statistics and Operations Research* (Articles by Dr. Nic). learnandteachstatistics.wordpress.com/summary/.

**Online Learning Modules and Massive Open Online Courses (MOOC’s)**

Online learning modules and online courses offer another alternative to learning basic statistical concepts, programming in R, or advanced statistical techniques.

**Swirl**

swirlstats.com/
Swirl has free, brief lessons for beginners to R programming and analysis. Topics include R programming, data analysis, data visualization, data manipulation, statistical inference.

**DataCamp**

www.datacamp.com/
DataCamp has short online modules covering topics such as an introduction to R, data manipulation, data visualization, and statistics with R. Limited parts of several courses are free. For the complete courses, there is a subscription charge. There is a discount for students.

**Coursera**
www.coursera.org/
Coursera hosts MOOC’s from various universities on a range of academic topics, including introductory statistics using R. Courses are free, though there is an option to pay for a certificate in a data science specialization.

edX
www.edx.org/
edX also hosts free MOOC’s from universities on a variety of topics, including a course on introduction to R programming.

Udemy
www.udemy.com/
Udemy hosts relatively inexpensive online courses on a variety of subjects, including programming and statistics with R. Some are free.
Why Statistics?

Statistics is a general term. Every time you report a mean, median, or standard deviation of your data, you are reporting a statistic. Specifically, this type of statistics are called descriptive statistics. We can also use statistical tests and report the statistics from these tests, such as p-values or r-squared values. In order to convey the implications of these statistics and the underlying data, we might present them in a plot or table.

The importance of statistics in program evaluation

There are several reasons why we want to conduct statistical analyses when looking at our program evaluation data.

*Communication*

Descriptive statistics and statistical tests can be used to communicate with our colleagues. Once we understand statistical tests—as well common statistics such as p-values, confidence intervals, and r-squared values—we can communicate our results in a shared language. A single well designed plot with appropriate statistics is an effective tool to convey our findings.

Communication is a two-way street. We also need to be able to understand others when they share their results with us, whether it's in a departmental presentation, a presentation at a professional meeting, in extension literature, or in a peer-reviewed journal article.

*Adding rigor*

Sometimes educators will simply report the change in median scores before and after a course, or report a best fit line for bivariate data. However, without applying a statistical tests and reporting p-values or other appropriate statistics, it is not clear to the reader (or probably the author!) if the reported effect is real.

*Getting things right*

In order for your statistical analyses to provide correct results, you need to understand when they are appropriate and what the results mean. Also you will want to understand what tests and techniques are available in order to best be able to understand and explain your results.

*Presenting results well*

Knowledge of statistical tests and plots can inform the best ways to summarize and present results from your data.

*Academic recognition*

Correct and accepted statistical methods are usually required to get results published in academic journals or proceedings from professional meetings.
**Program evaluation**
Appropriate statistics help to evaluate programs, for example determining if there was an increase in student knowledge scores was statistically significant or if one teaching technique is better than another. Such information can guide future programming efforts.

**Applicability of statistical tests to other fields and situations**
The statistical techniques presented in this book are applicable to a wide variety of disciplines, and are some of the most common used across fields. While the analyses presented in this book are common and relatively simple, understanding of these techniques will serve as a basis for more advanced analyses.

---

**Evaluation Tools and Surveys**
A complete discussion of the proper design and administration of program evaluation tools and surveys is far beyond the scope of this book. This chapter is intended only to give the reader some context for the remainder of the book, which discusses the analysis of data from these survey tools and other sources.

**Extension programs**
An extension program is an organized educational endeavor delivered to some segment of the public, such as famers, students in 4-H, or Master Gardeners. It is based on an assessments of needs for that group for the specific topic of the program, and is based on objectives for what knowledge students should improve, skills they should learn, or behaviors they should adopt.

An extension program will have multiple activities associated with these goals. The extension educator may be organizing educational events, delivering lectures, writing factsheets, or reporting on research.

Each of these components is evaluated in light of the objectives of the program and the objectives of the individual activities. In each case objectives should be measurable.

In some cases, the evaluator can collect “hard data” about the results of some program: number of attendees, number of downloads, measured differences in water quality.

In other cases evaluation tools such as surveys will be developed to evaluate how well program objectives will be met. These might ask participants about an increase in their knowledge, a change in their behavior, or adoption of specific practices, along with other relevant information.

**Designing a questionnaire**
There is much to be learned about good questionnaire design, and good practices for conducting a survey. This chapter will only scratch the surface of this topic.

**Some principles of questionnaire design for program evaluation**

**Length and audience-appropriateness**

Your questionnaire should be short enough and simple enough so that your respondents will be likely to complete it, and complete it thoughtfully.

On the other hand, it should be long enough to gain valuable information. For example, it might not want to ask simply, “Did you learn something?”, but ask how much was learned in each topic area. Identifying areas where teaching was successful or not successful helps to improve the program in the future.

It is also important to take into account your audience. Young children may be able to answer only a few questions, simple in scope, and without too many options. On the other end of the spectrum, expert audiences can much more critically assess programs and program component. Non-expert adult audiences fall in the middle of this spectrum: They are capable of assessing their own changes in knowledge, skills, attitudes, behaviors, and implemented practices. Still, questionnaires for them should still be short and clear, with the possibility of some open-ended questions.

**Types of impacts**

A questionnaire may assess a single type of impact or several types depending on what is appropriate. It may seek to assess knowledge gain, changes in attitude, gained skills, changes in behavior.

These can be assessed for an extension activity as short as single lecture, a day-long workshop, or after a program lasting several years.

**Assessment techniques of a questionnaire**

*Knowledge gain: before-and-after tests*

For knowledge gain questions, respondents could be tested in a before-and-after manner, where some specific question is asked on a pre-test before the course, and then on a post-test after the course.

It is helpful if the same respondent can be identified on both tests, so that the before responses and after responses can be paired for each respondent.

Personally, I find before-and-after assessment rather patronizing and annoying for adult audiences. Instead, I prefer a self-assessment knowledge gain format, discussed below.

As an example, Bakacs et al. (2013) on Table 1, reported an increase in knowledge by respondents for individual questions about using rain barrels, conserving water, and reducing stormwater runoff. For example, they asked workshop attendees the following question, both before and after the workshop. They asked respondents for their initials and favorite number for each test so that responses could be paired for each respondent.
10. A 55 gallon rain barrel, when full will weigh approximately
A. 200 lbs.
B. 300 lbs.
C. 400 lbs.
D. Not sure

Knowledge gain: self-assessment questions
Another approach for assessing knowledge gain after a program or event is to allow respondents to
assess their own knowledge gain. This allows self-reflection, and may therefore be more meaningful
than looking at correct and incorrect answers on before-and-after tests.

One form of self-assessment question asks the respondent to assess their knowledge on a topic both
before and after the course, but is answered only once, after the course.

As an example, Mangiafico et al. (2011) (Table 1) reported self-assessment changes in knowledge gain
by respondents for individual questions about environmentally-friendly lawn care. The survey was
done following a lecture, so that respondents reflected about their knowledge before and after the
lecture from the perspective of having just listened to the lecture.

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Before</th>
<th>After</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>1 2 3 4 5</td>
<td>I understand how to determine how much phosphorus should be applied to my lawn.</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

Behavior change and adopted practices
One way to approach assessing changes in behavior is to use follow-up surveys (discussed below) at
some time after a program or workshop to see if participants adopted practices or behaviors.

A second method is to question participants at the conclusion of an event concerning their anticipated
changes in behaviors based on what they learned at the event. The obvious drawback to this approach
is that respondents are likely to anticipate that they will improve their behaviors, and this anticipation
may never materialize in reality. However, this method is often used because it is easier and allows
collecting data from a captive audience.

As an example, Mangiafico et al. (2011) (Table 2) reported self-assessment anticipated behaviors
concerning environmentally-friendly lawn care.

17. I will test my soil or have my soil tested to determine the need to adjust pH and apply phosphorus fertilizer.

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>disagree</th>
<th>neutral</th>
<th>agree</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>1 2 3 4 5</td>
<td>6 7 8 9 10</td>
<td>Don’t know Not applicable</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>
Follow-up surveys
Follow-up surveys are conducted at some time after a course or event, and are useful to assess if specific practices were implemented or certain behaviors were changed, to give some time reflection by respondents to consider changes in attitudes or knowledge.

As an example, Bakacs et al. (2013) on Table 3, used a follow-up survey to determine if workshop participants installed rain barrels at their homes or businesses after building one at the workshop.

The follow-up survey in New Jersey was e-mailed to participants three to six months after the workshops, and were completed online.

One drawback to this approach is that it is necessary to collect contact information from participants and take the time re-survey participants. Another problem is that response rates may be lower than response rates from in-classroom assessments.

Rating of course quality and materials
It is often useful to have program participants rate the quality of instruction, presentation, visual aids, handouts, etc.

Open-ended questions
Open-ended questions can be very valuable to solicit critical comments about a course or program, or assess knowledge gain or other impacts that aren’t covered by other assessment questions.

Open-ended questions can attempt to solicit critical comments—“What could be done to improve this program?”; assess knowledge gain—“What did you learn from this program?”; or gain other information—“Where did you learn about this course?”.

These questions can be very valuable, but you should also be cautious since responses may be sparse and not representative of program participants. In particular, critical responses may be unrepresentatively positive or negative. In general, participants may or may not put a lot effort into answering open-ended questions, depending on a variety of factors not necessarily related to program content or quality.

Demographic data
Finally, collecting demographic data of questionnaire respondents can be useful for interpreting and understanding responses for other questions. Demographic data may include profession or stakeholder group; current practices; or age, grade, sex, etc.

Forms of responses
Answers to questions may be in the form of yes/no, multiple choice, ordered response (Likert), or open-ended.

The statistical analysis of these different forms of answers will vary. This will be unpacked over the course of this book.

Examples of evaluation tools
Rutgers Cooperative Extension Program Evaluation, Youth Audience, GRK-3
njaes.rutgers.edu/evaluation/youth/docs/RCEYOUTHEVALUATION_GRK-3_FORM.pdf
Notes:
- As a questionnaire written for younger children, most responses to questions are 3- to 5-point Likert items with face emoticons for support, and yes/no questions.
- Questions 1 and 2 are self-assessment knowledge gain. 3-point Likert items.
- Question 3 is anticipated behavior change. Yes/no.
- Questions 5 and 6 are rating of the instructor and program. 5-point Likert items.
- Question 7 is a question about demographics.
- Question 8 is an open-ended question.

Rutgers Cooperative Extension Turf Management for a Healthier Lawn, Program Evaluation Form
rcompanion.org/documents/TurfProgramEvaluation.pdf
Notes:
- Questions 1–11 are self-assessment questions of knowledge gain and attitudes, using before-and-after in a single sitting. 5-point Likert items.
- Questions 12–13 are ratings of information and educational materials. 10-point Likert items, with two opt-out options (Don’t know, and Not applicable)
- Questions 17–20 are anticipated behaviors. 10-point Likert items, with two opt-out options (Don’t know, and Not applicable)

Rutgers Cooperative Extension Program Evaluation, Older Youth Audience, GR4-13A
njaes.rutgers.edu/evaluation/youth/docs/RCEYOUTHEVALUATION_GR4-13A_FORM.pdf
Notes:
- Questions 1–2 are open-ended questions assessing knowledge gain and behavior change.
- Questions 4–5 are ratings of presenter and program. 5-point Likert items.
- Question 6 is a question about demographics.
- Question 7 is an open-ended question.

Rutgers Cooperative Extension Program Evaluation - Older Youth Audience, GR4-13B
njaes.rutgers.edu/evaluation/youth/docs/RCEYOUTHEVALUATION_GR4-13B_FORM.pdf
Notes:
- Questions 1–3 are self-assessment questions of knowledge gain, using before-and-after in a single sitting. 4-point Likert items.
- Question 4 is an open-ended question about behaviors.
- Questions 6–7 are ratings of presenter and program. 5-point Likert items.
- Question 8 is a question about demographics.
- Question 9 is an open-ended question.

Optional resource

Optional Readings

Optional additional resources


Rutgers Cooperative Extension. 2015. Program Evaluation. njaes.rutgers.edu/evaluation/.


References for this chapter


Acknowledgements

I would like to thank Dan Kluchinski of Rutgers Cooperative Extension and the Rutgers Department of Agricultural and Resource Management Agents for supplying some resources for this chapter.
Types of Variables

Organizing data: observations and variables

In general, collected raw data is organized according to observations and variables. Variables represent a single measurement or characteristic for each observation. In the Statistics Learning Center video in the Required Readings below, Dr. Nic gives an example of a survey where each observation is a separate person, and the variables are age, sex, and chocolate preference for each person.

In education evaluation, observations will commonly be a student or an instructor, but could also be any other experimental unit, such as a single farmer’s field.

In reality, a single observation may be more specific. For example, the rating for one instructor by one student on one date. For example, here is part of the example from the Friedman Test chapter with some additional hypothetical data.

Each row represents an observation. So each observation contains the rating by a single student on a single date for an instructor. The variables are Instructor, Date, Student, and Rating.

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Instructor</th>
<th>Date</th>
<th>Student</th>
<th>Rating</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>Bob Belcher</td>
<td>2015-01-01</td>
<td>a</td>
<td>4</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Bob Belcher</td>
<td>2015-01-01</td>
<td>b</td>
<td>5</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Bob Belcher</td>
<td>2015-01-01</td>
<td>c</td>
<td>4</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Bob Belcher</td>
<td>2015-01-01</td>
<td>d</td>
<td>6</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Bob Belcher</td>
<td>2015-02-05</td>
<td>e</td>
<td>6</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Bob Belcher</td>
<td>2015-02-05</td>
<td>f</td>
<td>6</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Bob Belcher</td>
<td>2015-02-05</td>
<td>g</td>
<td>10</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Bob Belcher</td>
<td>2015-02-05</td>
<td>h</td>
<td>6</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Linda Belcher</td>
<td>2015-01-01</td>
<td>a</td>
<td>8</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Linda Belcher</td>
<td>2015-01-01</td>
<td>b</td>
<td>6</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Linda Belcher</td>
<td>2015-01-01</td>
<td>c</td>
<td>8</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Linda Belcher</td>
<td>2015-01-01</td>
<td>d</td>
<td>8</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Linda Belcher</td>
<td>2015-02-05</td>
<td>e</td>
<td>8</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Linda Belcher</td>
<td>2015-02-05</td>
<td>f</td>
<td>7</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Linda Belcher</td>
<td>2015-02-05</td>
<td>g</td>
<td>10</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Linda Belcher</td>
<td>2015-02-05</td>
<td>h</td>
<td>9</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

Long-format and wide-format data
The example above has ratings for each instructor on each of two dates and by each of eight students. Because each observation has just one rating value, this data is in long format.

In general, it is best to keep data in long format for summary and analyses.
However, to conduct certain analyses in R, or to produce certain plots, data will need to be in wide format. The following is an example of the same data, translated into wide format, with a focus on the ratings by date, and in this case ignoring student.

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Instructor</th>
<th>Rating</th>
<th>2015-01-01</th>
<th>2015-02-05</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>Bob Belcher</td>
<td>4</td>
<td>6</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Bob Belcher</td>
<td>5</td>
<td>6</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Bob Belcher</td>
<td>4</td>
<td>10</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Bob Belcher</td>
<td>6</td>
<td>6</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Linda Belcher</td>
<td>8</td>
<td>8</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Linda Belcher</td>
<td>6</td>
<td>7</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Linda Belcher</td>
<td>8</td>
<td>10</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Linda Belcher</td>
<td>8</td>
<td>9</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

**Types of variables**

The most common variables used in data analysis can be classified as one of three types of variables: nominal, ordinal, and interval/ratio.

Understanding the differences in these types of variables is critical, since the variable type will determine which statistical analysis will be valid for that data. In addition, the way we summarize data with statistics and plots will be determined by the variable type.

**Nominal data**

Nominal variables are data whose levels are labels or descriptions, and which cannot be ordered. Examples of nominal variables are *sex, school,* and yes/no questions. They are also called “categorical” or “qualitative” variables, and the levels of a variable are sometimes called “classes” or “groups”.

The levels of categorical variables cannot be ordered. For the variable *sex,* it makes no sense to try to put the levels “female”, “male”, and “other” in any numerical order. If levels are numbered for convenience, the numbers are arbitrary, and the variable can’t be treated as a numeric variable.

**Ordinal data**

Ordinal variables can be ordered, or ranked in logical order, but the interval between levels of the variables are not necessarily known. Subjective measurements are often ordinal variables. One example would be having people rank four items by preference in order from one to four. A different example would be having people assess several items based on a Likert ranking scale: “On a scale of one to five, do you agree or disagree with this statement?” A third example is level of education for adults, considering for example “less than high school”, “high school”, “associate’s degree”, etc.

Critically, in each case we can order the responses: My first favorite salad dressing is better than second favorite, which is better than my third favorite. But we cannot know if the interval between the levels is equal. For example, the distance between your favorite salad dressing and your second favorite salad dressing may be small, where there may be a large gap between your second and third choices.
We can logically assign numbers to levels of an ordinal variable, and can treat them in order, but shouldn’t treat them as numeric: “strongly agree” and “neutral” may not average out to an “agree.”

For the purposes of this book, we will consider such Likert data to be ordinal data under most circumstances.

**Interval/ratio data**
Interval/ratio variables are measured or counted values: *age, height, weight, number of students*. The interval between numbers is known to be equal: the interval between one kilogram and two kilograms is the same as between three kilograms and four kilograms. Interval/ratio data are also called “quantitative” data, although ordinal data are also quantitative.

**Discrete and continuous variables**
A further division of interval/ratio data is between *discrete* variables, whose values are necessarily whole numbers or other discrete values, such as population or counts of items. *Continuous* variables can take on any value within an interval, and so can be expressed as decimals. They are often measured quantities. For example, in theory a weight could be measured as 1 kg, 1.01 kg, or 1.009 kg, and so on. Age could also be considered a continuous variable, though we often treat it as a discrete variable, by rounding it to the most recent birthday.

**Optional technical note**
There is a technical difference between interval and ratio data. For interval data, the interval between measurements is the same, but ratio between measurements is not known. A common case of this is temperature measured in degrees Fahrenheit. The difference between 5 ° F and 10 ° F is the same as that between 10 ° F and 15 ° F. But 10 ° F is not twice 5 ° F. This is because the definition of 0 ° F is arbitrary. 0 ° F does not equal 0 ° C.

Measurements where there is a natural zero, such as length or height, or where a zero can be honestly defined, such as time since an event, are considered ratio data.

For the most part, ratio and interval data are considered together. In general, just be careful not to make senseless statements with interval data, such as saying, “The mean temperature in Greenhouse 1 was twice the mean temperature of Greenhouse 2.”

**Levels of measurement**
In general it is advantageous to treat variables as the highest level of measurement for which they qualify. That is, we could treat education level as a categorical variable, but usually we will want to treat it as an ordinal variable. This is because treating it as an ordinal variable retains more of the information carried in the data. If we were to reduce it to a categorical variable, we would lose the order of the levels of the variable. By using a higher level of measurement, we will have more options in the way we analyze, summarize, and present data.

This being said, there may be cases when it is advantageous to treat ordinal or count data as categorical. One case is if there are few levels of the variable, or if it makes sense to condense the variable into a couple of broad categories. Another example of when we choose a lower level of measurement is when we use nonparametric statistical analyses which treat interval/ratio data as ordinal, or ranked, data.
Types of Variables

Summary and Analysis of Extension Education Program Evaluation in R

Required readings


Optional readings


“Frequency, frequency tables, and levels of measurement”, Chapter 1.3 in Openstax College. 2013. Introductory Statistics. Rice University. openstaxcollege.org/textbooks/introductory-statistics.


Exercises B

1. For the following variables and levels identify the variable as nominal, ordinal, or interval/ratio.
   a. Political affiliation (very liberal, liberal, independent, conservative, very conservative)
   b. Political affiliation (Democrat, Republican, Green, Libertarian)
   c. Student age
   d. Favorite school subject (Science, History, Math, Physical Education, English Literature)
   e. How often do you complete your homework (never, sometimes, often, always)
   f. Gender identity (1-female, 2-male, 3-other)
   g. Level of education (1-elementary school, 2-junior high school, 3-high school, 4-college)
   h. Dairy cow weight
   i. Number of meals and snacks eaten in a day
   j. (Yes, No)
   k. (Yes, No, Not applicable)
   l. Favorite salad dressing (1st, 2nd, 3rd, 4th)
   m. Favorite salad dressing (Italian, French, Caesar, etc.)

2. Are each of the following terms associated with nominal, ordinal, or interval/ratio data.
   a. Likert
   b. Categorical
   c. Continuous
   d. Qualitative
   e. Discrete

3. For the following table, identify:
   a. Number of observations
   b. Number of variables
   c. Type of each variable (nominal, ordinal, or interval/ratio)
Descriptive Statistics

Summary and Analysis of Extension Education Program Evaluation in R

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Student</th>
<th>Grade</th>
<th>Age</th>
<th>Sex</th>
<th>Height</th>
<th>Calories eaten</th>
<th>Attitude</th>
<th>Class rank</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>A</td>
<td>5</td>
<td>10</td>
<td>M</td>
<td>137</td>
<td>2000</td>
<td>5</td>
<td>4</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>B</td>
<td>5</td>
<td>11</td>
<td>M</td>
<td>140</td>
<td>1500</td>
<td>4</td>
<td>2</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>C</td>
<td>4</td>
<td>9</td>
<td>F</td>
<td>120</td>
<td>1200</td>
<td>3</td>
<td>5</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>D</td>
<td>4</td>
<td>10</td>
<td>F</td>
<td>140</td>
<td>1400</td>
<td>4</td>
<td>1</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>E</td>
<td>6</td>
<td>12</td>
<td>Other</td>
<td>147</td>
<td>1800</td>
<td>5</td>
<td>6</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>F</td>
<td>5</td>
<td>10</td>
<td>M</td>
<td>135</td>
<td>1600</td>
<td>4</td>
<td>8</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>G</td>
<td>4</td>
<td>9</td>
<td>M</td>
<td>130</td>
<td>1200</td>
<td>4</td>
<td>3</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>H</td>
<td>4</td>
<td>10</td>
<td>F</td>
<td>140</td>
<td>1800</td>
<td>3</td>
<td>7</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

4. For the following table, identify:
   a. Number of observations
   b. Number of variables
   c. Type of each variable (nominal, ordinal, or interval/ratio)

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Farm</th>
<th>Town</th>
<th>Acreage</th>
<th>Product</th>
<th>Sustainability</th>
<th>Sustainability code</th>
<th>Preserved</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>A</td>
<td>Skara.Brae</td>
<td>21.1</td>
<td>Turnip</td>
<td>Very unsustainable</td>
<td>1</td>
<td>Yes</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>B</td>
<td>Arboria</td>
<td>7.0</td>
<td>Parsnip</td>
<td>Sustainable</td>
<td>4</td>
<td>Yes</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>C</td>
<td>Lucencia</td>
<td>32.5</td>
<td>Rutabaga</td>
<td>Unsustainable</td>
<td>2</td>
<td>No</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>D</td>
<td>Tenebrosia</td>
<td>21.0</td>
<td>Daikon</td>
<td>Very sustainable</td>
<td>5</td>
<td>No</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>E</td>
<td>Tarmitia</td>
<td>6.3</td>
<td>Yucca</td>
<td>Sustainable</td>
<td>4</td>
<td>Unknown</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>F</td>
<td>Malefia</td>
<td>18.1</td>
<td>Kholrabi</td>
<td>Neutral</td>
<td>3</td>
<td>Yes</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

Descriptive Statistics

Packages used in this chapter

The packages used in this chapter include:
- psych
- DescTools
- Rmisc
- FSA
- plyr
- boot

The following commands will install these packages if they are not already installed:

```r
if(!require(psych)){install.packages("psych")}
if(!require(DescTools)){install.packages("DescTools")}
if(!require(Rmisc)){install.packages("Rmisc")}
if(!require(FSA)){install.packages("FSA")}
if(!require(plyr)){install.packages("plyr")}
if(!require(boot)){install.packages("boot")}
```
Descriptive statistics

Descriptive statistics are used to summarize data in a way that provides insight into the information contained in the data. This might include examining the mean or median of numeric data or the frequency of observations for nominal data. Plots can be created that show the data and indicating summary statistics.

Choosing which summary statistics are appropriate depend on the type of variable being examined. Different statistics should be used for interval/ratio, ordinal, and nominal data.

In describing or examining data, you will typically be concerned with measures of location, variation, and shape.

*Location* is also called *central tendency*. It is a measure of the values of the data. For example, are the values close to 10 or 100 or 1000? Measures of location include mean and median, as well as somewhat more exotic statistics like M-estimators or Winsorized means.

*Variation* is also called *dispersion*. It is a measure of how far the data points lie from one another. Common statistics include standard deviation and coefficient of variation. For data that aren’t normally-distributed, percentiles or the interquartile range might be used.

*Shape* refers to the distribution of values. The best tools to evaluate the shape of data are histograms and related plots. Statistics include skewness and kurtosis, though they are less useful than visual inspection. We can describe data shape as normally-distributed, log-normal, uniform, skewed, bi-modal, and others.

**Descriptive statistics for interval/ratio data**

For this example, imagine that Ren and Stimpy have each held eight workshops educating the public about water conservation at home. They are interested in how many people showed up to the workshops.

Because the data are housed in a data frame, we can use the convention `Data$Attendees` to access the variable *Attendees* within the data frame `Data`.

```r
Input = c("Instructor Location Attendees
Ren North 7
Ren North 22
Ren North 6
Ren North 15
Ren South 12
Ren South 13
Ren South 14
Ren South 16
Stimpy North 18
Stimpy North 17
Stimpy North 15
Stimpy North 9
```

---

28
Descriptive Statistics

Summary and Analysis of Extension Education Program Evaluation in R

Stimpy South 15
Stimpy South 11
Stimpy South 19
Stimpy South 23
"

Data = read.table(textConnection(Input),header=TRUE)
Data
### Will output data frame called Data
str(Data)
### Will be discussed later,
###  but shows the structure of the data frame
summary(Data)
### Will be discussed later,
###  but summarizes variables in the data frame

Functions sum and length
The sum of a variable can be found with the sum function, and the number of observations can be
found with the length function.

    sum(Data$Attendees)
    232

    length(Data$Attendees)
    16

Statistics of location for interval/ratio data

Mean
The mean is the arithmetic average, and is a common statistic used with interval/ratio data. It is
simply the sum of the values divided by the number of values. The mean function in R will return the
mean.

    sum(Data$Attendees) / length(Data$Attendees)
    14.5

    mean(Data$Attendees)
    14.5

Caution should be used when reporting mean values with skewed data, as the mean may not be
representative of the center of the data. For example, imagine a town with 10 families, nine of whom
have an income of less than $50,000 per year, but with one family with an income of $2,000,000 per
year. The mean income for families in the town would be $233,000, but this may not be a reasonable
way to summarize the income of the town.
**Descriptive Statistics**

**Summary and Analysis of Extension Education Program Evaluation in R**

\[
\text{Income} = c(49000, 44000, 25000, 18000, 32000, 47000, 37000, 45000, 36000, 2000000)
\]

\[
\text{mean(Income)}
\]

233300

**Median**

The median is defined as the value below which are 50% of the observations. To find this value manually, you would order the observations, and separate the lowest 50% from the highest 50%. For data sets with an odd number of observations, the median is the middle value. For data sets with an even number of observations, the median falls half-way between the two middle values.

The median is a robust statistic in that it is not affected by adding extreme values. For example, if we changed Stimpy's last *Attendees* value from 23 to 1000, it would not affect the median.

\[
\text{median(Data$Attendees)}
\]

15

### Note that in this case the mean and median are close in value to one another. The mean and median will be more different the more the data are skewed.

The median is appropriate for either skewed or unskewed data. The median income for the town discussed above is $40,500. Half the families in the town have an income above this amount, and half have an income below this amount.

\[
\text{Income} = c(49000, 44000, 25000, 18000, 32000, 47000, 37000, 45000, 36000, 2000000)
\]

\[
\text{median(Income)}
\]

40500

Note that medians are sometimes reported as the “average person” or “typical family”. Saying, “The average American family earned $54,000 last year” means that the median income for families was $54,000. The “average family” is that one with the median income.

**Mode**

The mode is a summary statistic that is used rarely in practice, but is normally included in any discussion of mean and medians. When there are discreet values for a variable, the mode is simply the value which occurs most frequently. For example, in the Statistics Learning Center video in the *Required Readings* below, Dr. Nic gives an example of counting the number of pairs of shoes each student owns. The most common answer was 10, and therefore 10 is the mode for that data set.

For our Ren and Stimpy example, the value 15 occurs three times and so is the mode.
The *Mode* function can be found in the package *DescTools*.

```r
library(DescTools)
Mode(Data$Attendees)
```

15

**Statistics of variation for interval/ratio data**

**Standard deviation**
The standard deviation is a measure of variation which is commonly used with interval/ratio data. It's a measurement of how close the observations in the data set are to the mean.

There's a handy rule of thumb that—for normally distributed data—68% of data points fall within the mean ± 1 standard deviation, 95% of data points fall within the mean ± 2 standard deviations, and 99.7% of data points fall within the mean ± 3 standard deviations.

Because the mean is often represented with the letter *mu*, and the standard deviation is represented with the letter *sigma*, saying someone is "a few sigmas away from *mu*" indicates they are rather a rare character.  (I originally heard this joke on an episode of *Car Talk*, for which I cannot find a reference or transcript.)

```r
sd(Data$Attendees)
```

4.830459

Standard deviation may not be appropriate for skewed data.

**Standard error of the mean**
Standard error of the mean is a measure that estimates how close a calculated mean is likely to be to the true mean of that population. It is commonly used in tables or plots where multiple means are presented together. For example, we might want to present the mean attendees for Ren with the standard error for that mean and the mean attendees for Stimpy with the standard error that mean.

The standard error is the standard deviation of a data set divided by the square root of the number of observations. It can also be found in the output for the *describe* function in the *psych* package, labelled *se*.

```r
sd(Data$Attendees) / sqrt(length(Data$Attendees))
```

1.207615

```r
library(psych)
describe(Data$Attendees)
```
### Descriptive Statistics

**Summary and Analysis of Extension Education Program Evaluation in R**

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>vars</th>
<th>n</th>
<th>mean</th>
<th>sd</th>
<th>median</th>
<th>trimmed</th>
<th>mad</th>
<th>min</th>
<th>max</th>
<th>range</th>
<th>skew</th>
<th>kurtosis</th>
<th>se</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>1</td>
<td>16</td>
<td>14.5</td>
<td>4.83</td>
<td>15</td>
<td>14.5</td>
<td>6</td>
<td>23</td>
<td>17</td>
<td>-0.04</td>
<td>-0.88</td>
<td>1.21</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

### Description

The above table provides a summary of the variables with the following statistics:

- **n**: Number of observations
- **mean**: Mean of the variable
- **sd**: Standard deviation
- **median**: Median of the variable
- **trimmed**: Trimmed mean
- **mad**: Median absolute deviation
- **min**: Minimum value
- **max**: Maximum value
- **range**: Range
- **skew**: Skewness
- **kurtosis**: Kurtosis
- **se**: Standard error of the mean

### Notes

#### Standard Error of the Mean

Standard error of the mean may not be appropriate for skewed data.

#### Five-number summary, quartiles, percentiles

The median is the same as the 50th percentile, because 50% of values fall below this value. Other percentiles for a data set can be identified to provide more information. Typically, the 0th, 25th, 50th, 75th, and 100th percentiles are reported. This is sometimes called the five-number summary.

These values can also be called the minimum, 1st quartile, 2nd quartile, 3rd quartile, and maximum.

The five-number summary is a useful measure of variation for skewed interval/ratio data or for ordinal data. 25% of values fall below the 1st quartile and 25% of values fall above the 3rd quartile. This leaves the middle 50% of values between the 1st and 3rd quartiles, giving a sense of the range of the middle half of the data. This range is called the interquartile range (IQR).

Percentiles and quartiles are relatively robust, as they aren't affected much by a few extreme values. They are appropriate for both skewed and unskewed data.

```r
summary(Data$Attendees)
```

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Min.</th>
<th>1st Qu.</th>
<th>Median</th>
<th>Mean</th>
<th>3rd Qu.</th>
<th>Max.</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>6.00</td>
<td>11.75</td>
<td>15.00</td>
<td>14.50</td>
<td>17.25</td>
<td>23.00</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

### Optional Technical Note on Calculating Percentiles

It may have struck you as odd that the 3rd quartile for `Attendees` was reported as 17.25. After all, if you were to order the values of `Attendees`, the 75th percentile would fall between 17 and 18. But why does R go with 17.25 and not 17.5?

```r
sort(Data$Attendees)
```

6 7 9 11 12 13 14 15 15 16 17 18 19 22 23

The answer is that there are several different methods to calculate percentiles, and they may give slightly different answers. For details on the calculations, see `?quantiles`.

For `Attendees`, the default type 7 calculation yields a 75th percentile value of 17.25, whereas the type 2 calculation simply splits the difference between 17 and 18 and yields 17.5. The type 1 calculation doesn’t average the two values, and so just returns 17.

```r
quantile(Data$Attendees, 0.75, type=7)
```
Percentiles other than the 25th, 50th, and 75th can be calculated with the quantiles function. For example, to calculate the 95th percentile:

```
quantile(Data$Attendees, .95)
```

95%
22.25

Confidence intervals

Confidence intervals are covered in the next chapter.

**Statistics for grouped interval/ratio data**

In many cases, we will want to examine summary statistics for a variable within groups. For example, we may want to examine statistics for the workshops lead by Ren and those lead by Stimpy.

**Summarize in FSA**

The Summarize function in the FSA package returns the number of observations, mean, standard deviation, minimum, 1st quartile, median, 3rd quartile, and maximum for grouped data.

Note the use of formula notation: *Attendees* is the dependent variable (the variable you want to get the statistics for); and *Instructor* is the independent variable (the grouping variable). Summarize allows you to summarize over the combination of multiple independent variables by listing them to the right of the ~ separated by a plus sign (+).

```
library(FSA)

Summarize(Attendees ~ Instructor, data=Data)
```

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Instructor</th>
<th>n</th>
<th>nvalid</th>
<th>mean</th>
<th>sd</th>
<th>min</th>
<th>Q1</th>
<th>median</th>
<th>Q3</th>
<th>max</th>
<th>percZero</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>Ren</td>
<td>8</td>
<td></td>
<td>13.125</td>
<td>5.083236</td>
<td>6</td>
<td>10.75</td>
<td>13.5</td>
<td>15.25</td>
<td>22</td>
<td>0</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Stimpy</td>
<td>8</td>
<td></td>
<td>15.875</td>
<td>4.454131</td>
<td>9</td>
<td>14.00</td>
<td>16.0</td>
<td>18.25</td>
<td>23</td>
<td>0</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>
Summarize(Attendees ~ Instructor + Location,
data=Data)

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Instructor</th>
<th>Location</th>
<th>N</th>
<th>nvalid</th>
<th>mean</th>
<th>sd</th>
<th>min</th>
<th>Q1</th>
<th>median</th>
<th>Q3</th>
<th>max</th>
<th>percZero</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>Ren</td>
<td>North</td>
<td>4</td>
<td>4</td>
<td>12.50</td>
<td>7.505554</td>
<td>6</td>
<td>6.75</td>
<td>11.0</td>
<td>16.75</td>
<td>22</td>
<td>0</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Stimpy</td>
<td>North</td>
<td>4</td>
<td>4</td>
<td>14.75</td>
<td>4.031129</td>
<td>9</td>
<td>13.50</td>
<td>16.0</td>
<td>17.25</td>
<td>18</td>
<td>0</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Ren</td>
<td>South</td>
<td>4</td>
<td>4</td>
<td>13.75</td>
<td>1.707825</td>
<td>12</td>
<td>12.75</td>
<td>13.5</td>
<td>14.50</td>
<td>16</td>
<td>0</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Stimpy</td>
<td>South</td>
<td>4</td>
<td>4</td>
<td>17.00</td>
<td>5.163978</td>
<td>11</td>
<td>14.00</td>
<td>17.0</td>
<td>20.00</td>
<td>23</td>
<td>0</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

summarySE in Rmisc

The `summarySE` function in the `Rmisc` package outputs the number of observations, mean, standard deviation, standard error of the mean, and confidence interval for grouped data. The `summarySE` function allows you to summarize over the combination of multiple independent variables by listing them as a vector, e.g. `c("Instructor", "Student")`.

```r
library(Rmisc)

summarySE(data=Data,
    "Attendees",
    groupvars="Instructor",
    conf.interval = 0.95)

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Instructor</th>
<th>N</th>
<th>Attendees</th>
<th>sd</th>
<th>se</th>
<th>ci</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>Ren</td>
<td>8</td>
<td>13.125 5.083236</td>
<td>1.797195</td>
<td>4.249691</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Stimpy</td>
<td>8</td>
<td>15.875 4.454131</td>
<td>1.574773</td>
<td>3.723747</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>
```

```r
summarySE(data=Data,
    "Attendees",
    groupvars = c("Instructor", "Location"),
    conf.interval = 0.95)
```

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Instructor</th>
<th>Location</th>
<th>N</th>
<th>Attendees</th>
<th>sd</th>
<th>se</th>
<th>ci</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>Ren</td>
<td>North</td>
<td>4</td>
<td>12.50 7.505553</td>
<td>3.7527767</td>
<td>11.943011</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Ren</td>
<td>South</td>
<td>4</td>
<td>13.75 1.707825</td>
<td>0.8539126</td>
<td>2.717531</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Stimpy</td>
<td>North</td>
<td>4</td>
<td>14.75 4.031129</td>
<td>2.0155644</td>
<td>6.414426</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Stimpy</td>
<td>South</td>
<td>4</td>
<td>17.00 5.163978</td>
<td>2.5819889</td>
<td>8.217041</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

describeBy in psych

The `describeBy` function in the `psych` package returns the number of observations, mean, median, trimmed means, minimum, maximum, range, skew, kurtosis, and standard error of the mean for grouped data. `describeBy` allows you to summarize over the combination of multiple independent variables by combining terms with a colon (:) .

```r
library(psych)

describeBy(Data$Attendees,  
            group = c("Instructor", "Location"),  
            digits = 3)
```

```
<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Instructor</th>
<th>Location</th>
<th>N</th>
<th>Attendees</th>
<th>sd</th>
<th>se</th>
<th>ci</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>Ren</td>
<td>North</td>
<td>4</td>
<td>12.50 7.505553</td>
<td>3.7527767</td>
<td>11.943011</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Ren</td>
<td>South</td>
<td>4</td>
<td>13.75 1.707825</td>
<td>0.8539126</td>
<td>2.717531</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Stimpy</td>
<td>North</td>
<td>4</td>
<td>14.75 4.031129</td>
<td>2.0155644</td>
<td>6.414426</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Stimpy</td>
<td>South</td>
<td>4</td>
<td>17.00 5.163978</td>
<td>2.5819889</td>
<td>8.217041</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>
```
Descriptive Statistics

Summary and Analysis of Extension Education Program Evaluation in R

```r
group = Data$Instructor,
digits= 4)

group: Ren
  vars n  mean   sd median trimmed  mad min max range skew kurtosis  se
  1 1  8 13.12  5.08   13.5  13.12  2.97  6 22  16 0.13  -1.08  1.8

-----------------------------------------------

group: Stimpy
  vars n  mean   sd median trimmed  mad min max range skew kurtosis  se
  1 1  8 15.88  4.45   16  15.88  3.71  9 23  14 -0.06  -1.26  1.57

describeBy(Data$Attendees,
group = Data$Instructor : Data$Location,
digits= 4)

group: Ren:North
  vars n  mean   sd median trimmed  mad min max range skew kurtosis  se
  1 1  4 12.5  7.51   11  12.5  6.67  6 22  16 0.26  -2.14  3.75

-----------------------------------------------

group: Ren:South
  vars n  mean   sd median trimmed  mad min max range skew kurtosis  se
  1 1  4 13.75  1.71  13.5  13.75  1.48  12 16  4 0.28  -1.96  0.85

-----------------------------------------------

group: Stimpy:North
  vars n  mean   sd median trimmed  mad min max range skew kurtosis  se
  1 1  4 14.75  4.03  16  14.75  2.22  9 18  9 -0.55  -1.84  2.02

-----------------------------------------------

group: Stimpy:South
  vars n  mean   sd median trimmed  mad min max range skew kurtosis  se
  1 1  4 17  5.16  17  17  5.93  11 23  12 0 -2.08  2.58
```

Summaries for data frames

Often we will want to summarize variables in a whole data frame, either to get some summary statistics for individual variables, or to check that variables have the values we expected in inputting the data, to be sure there wasn’t some error.

The `str` function

The `str` function in the native `utils` package will list variables for a data frame, with their types and levels. `Data` is the name of the data frame, created above.

```r
str(Data)

'data.frame': 16 obs. of 3 variables:
$ Instructor: Factor w/ 2 levels "Ren","Stimpy": 1 1 1 1 1 1 1 1 2 2 ...$ Location : Factor w/ 2 levels "North","South": 1 1 1 1 2 2 2 2 1 1 ...
$ Attendees : int  7 22 6 15 12 13 14 16 18 17 ...

### Instructor is a factor (nominal) variable with two levels.
### Location is a factor (nominal) variable with two levels.
### Attendees is an integer variable.
The summary function
The summary function in the native base package will summarize all variables in a data frame, listing the frequencies for levels of nominal variables; and for interval/ratio data, the minimum, 1st quartile, median, mean, 3rd quartile, and maximum.

```
summary(Data)
```

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Instructor</th>
<th>Location</th>
<th>Attendees</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>Ren</td>
<td>North</td>
<td>Min.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Stimpy</td>
<td>South</td>
<td>1st Qu.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td>Median</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td>Mean</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td>3rd Qu.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td>Max.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Ren</td>
<td>North</td>
<td>6.00</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Stimpy</td>
<td>South</td>
<td>11.75</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td>15.00</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td>14.50</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td>17.25</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td>23.00</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

The headTail function in psych
The headTail function in the psych package reports the first and last observations for a data frame.

```
library(psych)
headTail(Data)
```

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Instructor</th>
<th>Location</th>
<th>Attendees</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>Ren</td>
<td>North</td>
<td>7</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Ren</td>
<td>North</td>
<td>22</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Ren</td>
<td>North</td>
<td>6</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Ren</td>
<td>North</td>
<td>15</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>&lt;NA&gt;</td>
<td>&lt;NA&gt;</td>
<td>...</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Stimpy</td>
<td>South</td>
<td>15</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Stimpy</td>
<td>South</td>
<td>11</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Stimpy</td>
<td>South</td>
<td>19</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Stimpy</td>
<td>South</td>
<td>23</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

The describe function in psych
The describe function in the psych package reports number of observations, mean, standard deviation, trimmed means, minimum, maximum, range, skew, kurtosis, and standard error for variables in a data frame.

Note that factor variables are labeled with an asterisk (*), and the levels of the factors are coded as 1, 2, 3, etc.

```
library(psych)
describe(Data)
```

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>vars</th>
<th>n</th>
<th>mean</th>
<th>sd</th>
<th>median</th>
<th>trimmed</th>
<th>mad</th>
<th>min</th>
<th>max</th>
<th>range</th>
<th>skew</th>
<th>kurtosis</th>
<th>se</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>Instructor*</td>
<td>1</td>
<td>16</td>
<td>1.5</td>
<td>1.5</td>
<td>1.5</td>
<td>0.74</td>
<td>1</td>
<td>2</td>
<td>1</td>
<td>-2.12</td>
<td>0.13</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Location*</td>
<td>2</td>
<td>16</td>
<td>1.5</td>
<td>1.5</td>
<td>1.5</td>
<td>0.74</td>
<td>1</td>
<td>2</td>
<td>1</td>
<td>-2.12</td>
<td>0.13</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Attendees</td>
<td>3</td>
<td>16</td>
<td>14.5</td>
<td>4.83</td>
<td>15.0</td>
<td>4.45</td>
<td>6</td>
<td>23</td>
<td>17</td>
<td>-0.04</td>
<td>-0.88</td>
<td>1.21</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>
Dealing with missing values

Sometimes a data set will have missing values. This can occur for a variety of reasons, such as a respondent not answering a specific question, or a researcher being unable to make a measurement due to temporarily malfunctioning equipment.

In R, a missing value is indicated with *NA*.

By default, different functions in R will handle missing values in different ways. But most have options to change how they treat missing data.

In general, you should scan your data for missing data, and think carefully about the best way to handle observations with missing values.

```r
data = read.table(textConnection("Instructor  Location  Attendees
Ren         North      7
Ren         North     22
Ren         North     6
Ren         North     15
Ren         South     12
Ren         South     13
Ren         South     NA
Ren         South     16
Stimpy      North     18
Stimpy      North     17
Stimpy      North     NA
Stimpy      North     9
Stimpy      South     15
Stimpy      South     11
Stimpy      South     19
Stimpy      South     23")

Data2 = read.table(textConnection(Input),header=TRUE)

### Note: This data frame will be called Data2 to distinguish it from Data above.

Data2
```

The *na.rm* option for missing values with a simple function

Many common functions in R have a *na.rm* option. If this option is set to *FALSE*, the function will return an *NA* result if there are any NA’s in the data values passed to the function. If set to *TRUE*, observations with NA values will be discarded, and the function will continue to calculate its output.

Note that the *na.rm* option operates only on the data values actually passed to the function. In the following example with *median*, only *Attendees* is passed to the function; if there were NA’s in other variables, this would not affect the function.
Not all functions have the same default for the `na.rm` option. To determine the default, use e.g. 

```r
median(Data2$Attendees,
       na.rm = FALSE)
NA
### na.rm=FALSE. Since there is an NA in the data, report NA.
median(Data2$Attendees,
       na.rm = TRUE)
15
### na.rm=TRUE. Drop observations with NA and then calculate the median.
``` 

**Missing values with Summarize in FSA**

`Summarize` in `FSA` will indicate invalid values, including NA’s, with the count of valid observations outputted as the variable `nvalid`.

```r
library(FSA)
Summarize(Attendees ~ Instructor,
           data=Data2)

Instructor n nvalid mean    sd   min  Q1 median   Q3 max percZero
1  Ren   8       7  13 5.47 6.00  9.5 13.0 15.5 22 0
2 Stimpy 8       7 16 4.79 9.00 13.0 17.0 18.5 23 0
### This function removes missing values, but indicates the number of
### missing values by not including them in the count for nvalid.
```

**Missing values indicated with summary function**

The `summary` function counts NA’s for numeric variables.

```r
summary(Data2)

Instructor Location Attendees
Ren   :8 North:8   Min.  : 6.00
Stimpy:8 South:8  1st Qu.:11.25
Median :15.00
Mean   :14.50
3rd Qu.:17.75
Max.   :23.00
NA's   :2
### Indicates two NA's in Attendees.
```
Missing values in the `describe` function in `psych`
The `describe` function is the `psych` package removes NA's by default.

```r
library(psych)

describe(Attendees)
```

```r
vars  n mean   sd median trimmed  mad min max range  skew kurtosis   se
1   1 14 14.5 5.19     15    14.5 5.19   6  23    17  0.04  -1.17  1.39

### Note that two NA's were removed by default, reporting an n of 14.
```

Missing values in the `summarySE` function in `Rmisc`
By default, the `summarySE` function does not remove NA's, but can be made to do so with the `na.rm=TRUE` option.

```r
library(Rmisc)

summarySE(data=Data2,  
  "Attendees")
```

```
.id  N Attendees sd se ci
1 <NA> 16        NA NA NA NA

### Note an N of 16 is reported, and statistics are reported as NA.
```

```r
library(Rmisc)

summarySE(data=Data2,  
  "Attendees",  
  na.rm=TRUE)
```

```
.id  N Attendees       sd      se       ci
1 <NA> 14      14.5 5.185038 1.38576 2.993752

### Note an N of 14 is reported, and statistics are calculated with NA's removed.
```

Advanced techniques

**Discarding subjects**
Certain psychology studies use scales that are calculated from responses of several questions. Because answers to all questions are needed to reliably calculate the scale, any observation (subject, person) with missing answers will simply be discarded. Some types of analyses in other fields also follow this approach.

Subjects can be deleted with the `subset` function. The following code creates a new data frame, `Data3`, with all observations with `NA` in the variable `Attendees` removed from `Data2`. 

39
Data3 = subset(Data2, !is.na(Attendees))

Data3

Imputation of values
Missing values can be assigned a likely value through the process of imputation. An algorithm is used that determines a value based on the values of other variables for that observation relative to values for other variables. The mice package in R can perform imputation.

Optional code: removing missing values in vectors
If functions don’t have a na.rm option, it is possible to remove NA observations manually. Here we’ll create a vector called valid that just contains those values of Attendees that are not NA’s.

The ! operator is a logical not. The brackets serve as a list of observations to include for the preceding variable. So, the code essentially says, “Define a vector valid as the values of Attendees where the values of Attendees are not NA.”

valid = Data2$Attendees[!is.na(Data2$Attendees)]

summary(valid)

Min. 1st Qu. Median    Mean 3rd Qu.    Max.
 6.00   11.25   15.00   14.50   17.75   23.00

Statistics of shape for interval/ratio data
The most common statistics for shape are skewness and kurtosis.

Understanding skewness and kurtosis are important as they are ways in which a distribution of data varies from a normal distribution. This will be important in assessing the assumptions of certain statistical tests.

However, I rarely see skewness and kurtosis values reported. Instead, normality is usually assessed visually with plot, or using certain statistical tests. One problem with using skewness and kurtosis values is that there is not agreement in what values constitute meaningful deviations from the normal curve.

Skewness
Skewness indicates the degree of asymmetry in a data set. If there are relatively more values that are far greater than the mean, the distribution is positively skewed or right skewed, with a tail stretching to the right. Negative or left skew is the opposite.

A symmetric distribution has a skewness of 0. The skewness value for a positively skewed distribution is positive, and a negative value for a negatively skewed distribution. Sometimes a skew with an absolute value greater than 1 or 1.5 or 2 is considered highly skewed. There is not agreement on this interpretation.
There are different methods to calculate skew and kurtosis. The `describe` function in the `psych` package has three options for how to calculate them.

```R
library(psych)
describe(Data$Attendees, type=3)  # Type of calculation for skewness and kurtosis
```

### Type of calculation for skewness and kurtosis

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>vars</th>
<th>n</th>
<th>mean</th>
<th>sd</th>
<th>median</th>
<th>trimmed</th>
<th>mad</th>
<th>min</th>
<th>max</th>
<th>range</th>
<th>skew</th>
<th>kurtosis</th>
<th>se</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>1</td>
<td>16</td>
<td>14.5</td>
<td>4.83</td>
<td>15</td>
<td>14.5</td>
<td>4.45</td>
<td>6</td>
<td>23</td>
<td>17</td>
<td>-0.04</td>
<td>-0.88</td>
<td>1.21</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

### Skewness and kurtosis among other statistics

**Normal curve**

**Positive (right) skewed**  **Negative (left) skewed**

The normal curve is symmetrical around its center. The positively-skewed distribution has a longer, thicker tail to the right. The negatively-skewed distribution has a longer, thicker tail to the left.

For more information on the normal curve, see the video on “Normal Distribution” from Statistics Learning Center in the “Optional Readings” section. Additional thoughts on the normal distribution and real-world data distributions are in the article by Dr. Nic in the “Optional Readings” section.

**Kurtosis**

Kurtosis measures the degree to which the distribution is either more sharply peaked or more squat relative to a normal distribution. In general, the higher the kurtosis, the sharper the peak and the longer the tails. This is called leptokurtic, and is indicated by positive kurtosis values. The opposite—
platykurtosis—has negative kurtosis values. Sometimes a kurtosis with an absolute value greater than 2 or 3 is considered a high deviation from being mesokurtic. There is not agreement on this interpretation.

**Descriptive statistics for ordinal data**

Descriptive statistics for ordinal data are more limited than those for interval/ratio data. You’ll remember that for ordinal data, the levels can be ordered, but we can’t say that the intervals between the levels are equal. For example, we can’t say that an Associate’s degree and Master’s degree somehow average out to a Bachelor’s degree. This concept is discussed in more detail in the chapters on Likert data.

Because of this fact, several common descriptive statistics are usually inappropriate for use with ordinal data. These include mean, standard deviation, and standard error of the mean.

Ordinal data can be described by either: 1) treating the data as numeric and using appropriate statistics such as median and quartiles; or, 2) treating the data as nominal, and looking at counts of the data for each level.

A more-complete discussion of descriptive statistics for ordinal data can be found in the *Descriptive Statistics for Likert Data* chapter.

**Example of descriptive statistics for ordinal data**

For this example, imagine that Arthur and Baxter have each held a workshop educating the public about preventing water pollution at home. They are interested in the education level of people who attended the workshops. We can consider education level an ordinal variable. They also collected information on the sex and county of participants.

For this data, we have manually coded *Education* with numbers in a separate variable *Ed.code*. These numbers list the education in order: High school < Associate’s < Bachelor’s < Master’s < Ph.D.

Of course we could have had R do this coding for us, but the code is slightly messy, so I did the coding manually, and listed the optional R code below.

Ideally we would want to treat *Education* as an ordered factor variable in R. But unfortunately most common functions in R won’t handle ordered factors well. Later in this book, ordered factor data will be handled directly with cumulative link models (CLM), permutation tests, and tests for ordered tables.

Optional R code is shown below for converting a factor to an ordered factor.

```
Input = ("Date   Instructor  Student Sex County  Education  Ed.code
'2015-11-01'  'Arthur Read'  a  female  'Elwood' BA  3
'2015-11-01'  'Arthur Read'  b  female  'Bear Lake' PHD  5
'2015-11-01'  'Arthur Read'  c  male  'Elwood' BA  3
'2015-11-01'  'Arthur Read'  d  female  'Elwood' MA  4
'2015-11-01'  'Arthur Read'  e  male  'Elwood' HS  1
```
Descriptive Statistics

Summary and Analysis of Extension Education Program Evaluation in R

'2015-11-01' 'Arthur Read'  f  female  'Bear Lake'  MA  4
'2015-11-01' 'Arthur Read'  g  male  'Elwood'  HS  1
'2015-11-01' 'Arthur Read'  h  female  'Elwood'  BA  3
'2015-11-01' 'Arthur Read'  i  female  'Elwood'  BA  3
'2015-11-01' 'Arthur Read'  j  female  'Elwood'  BA  3
'2015-12-01' 'Buster Baxter'  k  male  'Elwood'  MA  4
'2015-12-01' 'Buster Baxter'  l  male  'Bear Lake'  MA  4
'2015-12-01' 'Buster Baxter'  m  female  'Elwood'  AA  2
'2015-12-01' 'Buster Baxter'  n  male  'Elwood'  AA  2
'2015-12-01' 'Buster Baxter'  o  other  'Elwood'  BA  3
'2015-12-01' 'Buster Baxter'  p  female  'Elwood'  BA  3
'2015-12-01' 'Buster Baxter'  q  female  'Bear Lake'  PHD  5

Data = read.table(textConnection(Input),header=TRUE)

### Check the data frame

Data

str(Data)

'data.frame': 17 obs. of 7 variables:
$ Date      : Factor w/ 2 levels "2015-11-01","2015-12-01": 1 1 1 1 1 1 1 1 1 1 1 1 1 1 1 1 1
$ Instructor: Factor w/ 2 levels "Arthur Read",..: 1 1 1 1 1 1 1 1 1 1 ...
$ Student   : Factor w/ 17 levels "a","b","c","d",...: 1 2 3 4 5 6 7 8 9 10 ...
$ Sex       : Factor w/ 3 levels "female","male",..: 1 1 2 1 2 1 2 1 1 1 1 ...
$ County    : Factor w/ 2 levels "Bear Lake","Elwood": 2 1 2 2 2 1 2 2 2 2 ...
$ Education : Factor w/ 5 levels "AA","BA","HS",...: 2 5 2 4 3 4 3 2 2 2 ...
$ Ed.code   : int 3 5 3 4 1 4 1 3 3 3 ...

summary(Data)

Date Instructor Student Sex County
2015-11-01:10 Arthur Read :10 a :1 female:10 Bear Lake: 4
          c :1 other :1
          d :1
          e :1
          f :1
          (Other):11

Education Ed.code
AA :2 Min. :1.000
BA :7 1st Qu.:3.000
HS :2 Median :3.000
MA :4 Mean :3.118
PHD:2 3rd Qu.:4.000
       Max. :5.00

### Remove unnecessary objects

rm(Input)
Optional code to assign values to a variable based on another variable

```r
Data$Ed.code[Data$Education=="HS"] = 1
Data$Ed.code[Data$Education=="AA"] = 2
Data$Ed.code[Data$Education=="BA"] = 3
Data$Ed.code[Data$Education=="MA"] = 4
Data$Ed.code[Data$Education=="PHD"] = 5
```

Optional code to change a factor variable to an ordered factor variable

```r
Data$Education.ordered = factor(Data$Education, 
    ordered = TRUE, 
    levels = c("HS", "AA", "BA", "MA", "PHD")
)
str(Data$Education.ordered)
summary(Data$Education.ordered)

HS  AA  BA  MA PHD
2   2   7   4   2
```

median(Data$Education.ordered)

```
[1] "BA"
```

**Statistics of location for ordinal data**

Using the mean is usually not appropriate for ordinal data. Instead the median should be used as a measure of location. We will use our numerically-coded variable `Ed.code` for the analysis.

```r
median(Data$Ed.code)
3
```

### Remember that 3 meant Bachelor's degree in our coding

**Statistics of variation for ordinal data**

Statistics like standard deviation and standard error of the mean are usually inappropriate for ordinal data. Instead the five-number summary can be used.

```r
summary(Data$Ed.code)
  Min. 1st Qu.  Median     Mean  3rd Qu.    Max.  
   1.000   3.000   3.000  3.118   4.000   5.000
```

### Remember to ignore the mean value for ordinal data.

### Remember that 1 meant High school, 3 meant Bachelor’s, 4 meant Master's, and 5 meant Ph.D.
**Statistics for grouped ordinal data**

Because the `Summarize` function in the `FSA` package reports the five-number summary, it is a useful function for descriptive statistics for grouped ordinal data.

```r
library(FSA)

Summarize(Ed.code ~ Sex,
          data=Data)

     Sex  n nvalid mean        sd min   Q1 median   Q3 max percZero
1 female 10     10  3.5 0.9718253   2 3.00    3.0 4.00   5        0
2   male  6      6  2.5 1.3784049   1 1.25    2.5 3.75   4        0
3  other  1      1  3.0        NA   3 3.00    3.0 3.00   3        0

### Remember to ignore the mean and sd values for ordinal data.
```

```r
library(FSA)

Summarize(Ed.code ~ Sex + County,
          data=Data)

     Sex   County n nvalid  mean        sd min   Q1 median   Q3 max percZero
1 female Bear Lake 3      3 4.666667 0.5773503   4 4.5    5 5.0    5        0
2   male Bear Lake 1      1 4.000000        NA   4 4.0    4 4.0    4        0
3 female    Elwood 7      7 3.000000 0.5773503   2 3.0    3 3.0    3        0
4   male    Elwood 5      5 2.200000 1.3038405   1 1.0    2 3.0    2        0
5  other    Elwood 1      1 3.000000        NA   3 3.0    3 3.0    3        0

### Remember to ignore the mean and sd values for ordinal data.
```

**Statistics for ordinal data treated as nominal data**

The `summary` function in the native `base` package and the `xtabs` function in the native `stats` package provide counts for levels of a nominal variable.

The `prop.table` function translates a table into proportions. The `margin=1` option indicates that the proportions are calculated for each row.

First we will order the levels of `Education`, otherwise R with report results in alphabetical order.

```r
Data$Education = factor(Data$Education,
                         levels = c("HS", "AA", "BA", "MA", "PHD"))

### Order factors, otherwise R will alphabetize them
```

```r
summary(Data$Education)

     HS AA BA MA PHD
    2 2 7 4 2
```
### Counts of each level of Education

```r
XT = xtabs(~ Education,
data=Data)
XT

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Education</th>
<th>HS</th>
<th>AA</th>
<th>BA</th>
<th>MA</th>
<th>PHD</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>2</td>
<td>2</td>
<td>7</td>
<td>4</td>
<td>2</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>
```

```r
prop.table(XT)

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Education</th>
<th>HS</th>
<th>AA</th>
<th>BA</th>
<th>MA</th>
<th>PHD</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>0.1176471</td>
<td>0.1176471</td>
<td>0.4117647</td>
<td>0.2352941</td>
<td>0.1176471</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>
```

**Grouped data**

```r
XT = xtabs(~ Sex + Education,
data = Data)
XT

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Education</th>
<th>Sex</th>
<th>HS</th>
<th>AA</th>
<th>BA</th>
<th>MA</th>
<th>PHD</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td>2</td>
<td>2</td>
<td>2</td>
<td>2</td>
<td>2</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>female</td>
<td>0</td>
<td>1</td>
<td>5</td>
<td>2</td>
<td>2</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>male</td>
<td>2</td>
<td>1</td>
<td>1</td>
<td>2</td>
<td>0</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>other</td>
<td>0</td>
<td>0</td>
<td>1</td>
<td>0</td>
<td>0</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>
```

```r
prop.table(XT, margin = 1)

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Education</th>
<th>Sex</th>
<th>HS</th>
<th>AA</th>
<th>BA</th>
<th>MA</th>
<th>PHD</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>female</td>
<td>0.0000000</td>
<td>0.1000000</td>
<td>0.5000000</td>
<td>0.2000000</td>
<td>0.2000000</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>male</td>
<td>0.3333333</td>
<td>0.1666667</td>
<td>0.1666667</td>
<td>0.3333333</td>
<td>0.0000000</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>other</td>
<td>0.0000000</td>
<td>0.0000000</td>
<td>1.0000000</td>
<td>0.0000000</td>
<td>0.0000000</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>
```

### Proportion of responses for each row

**Two-way grouped data**

```r
XT = xtabs(~ Sex + Education + County,
data=Data)
XT
```
### Note that the dependent variable, Education, is the middle of the variable list.

, , County = Bear Lake

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Sex</th>
<th>HS</th>
<th>AA</th>
<th>BA</th>
<th>MA</th>
<th>PHD</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>female</td>
<td>0</td>
<td>0</td>
<td>0</td>
<td>1</td>
<td>2</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>male</td>
<td>0</td>
<td>0</td>
<td>0</td>
<td>1</td>
<td>0</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>other</td>
<td>0</td>
<td>0</td>
<td>0</td>
<td>0</td>
<td>0</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

, , County = Elwood

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Sex</th>
<th>HS</th>
<th>AA</th>
<th>BA</th>
<th>MA</th>
<th>PHD</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>female</td>
<td>0</td>
<td>1</td>
<td>5</td>
<td>1</td>
<td>0</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>male</td>
<td>2</td>
<td>1</td>
<td>1</td>
<td>1</td>
<td>0</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>other</td>
<td>0</td>
<td>0</td>
<td>1</td>
<td>0</td>
<td>0</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

Descriptive statistics for nominal data

Descriptive statistics for nominal data consist of listing or plotting counts for levels of the nominal data, often by levels of a grouping variable. Tables of this information are often called contingency tables.

For this example, we will look again at Arthur and Buster’s data, but this time considering Sex to be the dependent variable of interest.

If levels of a nominal variable are coded with numbers, remember that the numbers will be arbitrary. For example, if you assign female = 1, and male = 2, and other = 3, it makes no sense to say that the average sex in Arthur’s class was 1.3. Or that the average sex in Buster’s class was greater than that in Arthur’s. It also makes no sense to say that the median sex was female.

Input = ("}
Date     Instructor    Student    Sex County      Education Ed.code
'2015-11-01' 'Arthur Read' a    female 'Elwood'    BA     3
'2015-11-01' 'Arthur Read' b    female 'Bear Lake' PHD    5
'2015-11-01' 'Arthur Read' c    male    'Elwood'     BA     3
'2015-11-01' 'Arthur Read' d    female 'Elwood'     MA     4
'2015-11-01' 'Arthur Read' e    male    'Elwood'     HS     1
'2015-11-01' 'Arthur Read' f    female 'Bear Lake'    MA     4
'2015-11-01' 'Arthur Read' g    male    'Elwood'     HS     1
'2015-11-01' 'Arthur Read' h    female 'Elwood'     BA     3
'2015-11-01' 'Arthur Read' i    female 'Elwood'     BA     3
'2015-11-01' 'Arthur Read' j    female 'Elwood'     BA     3
'2015-12-01' 'Buster Baxter' k    male    'Elwood'     MA     4
'2015-12-01' 'Buster Baxter' l    male    'Bear Lake'    MA     4
'2015-12-01' 'Buster Baxter' m    female 'Elwood'     AA     2
'2015-12-01' 'Buster Baxter' n    male    'Elwood'     AA     2
'2015-12-01' 'Buster Baxter' o    other   'Elwood'     BA     3
'2015-12-01' 'Buster Baxter' p    female 'Elwood'     BA     3
Example of descriptive statistics for nominal data
The `summary` function in the native `base` package and the `xtabs` function in the native `stats` package provide counts for levels of a nominal variable.

The `prop.table` function translates a table into proportions. The `margin=1` option indicates that the proportions are calculated for each row.

**One-sample data**

```r
summary(Data$Sex)

female  male  other
10      6      1
```

### Counts of each level of Sex

**One-way data**

```r
xtabs(~ Date + Sex,
      data=Data)

# Sex
# Date  female  male  other
# 2015-11-01  7     3     0
# 2015-12-01  3     3     1

XT = xtabs(~ Date + Sex,
            data=Data)

prop.table(XT,
           margin = 1)
```
Descriptive Statistics

Summary and Analysis of Extension Education Program Evaluation in R

Sex
Date         female     male     other
2015-11-01  0.7000000 0.3000000 0.0000000
2015-12-01  0.4285714 0.4285714 0.1428571

### Proportion of each level of Sex for each row

sum(XT)
[1] 17

### Sum of observation in the table

rowSums(XT)
2015-11-01 2015-12-01
10       7

### Sum of observation in each row of the table

colSums(XT)
female   male     other
10       6         1

### Sum of observation in each column of the table

Two-way data

xtabs(~ County + Sex + Date,
data=Data)

### Note that the dependent variable, Sex, is the middle
### of the variable list.

, , Date = 2015-11-01

Sex
County     female male other
Bear Lake   2       0     0
Elwood      5       3     0

, , Date = 2015-12-01

Sex
County     female male other
Bear Lake   1       1     0
Elwood      2       2     1
Levels for factor variables
Most of the time in R, nominal variables will be handled by the software as factor variables.

The order of levels of factor variables are important because most functions, including plotting functions, will handle levels of the factor in order. The order of the levels can be changed, for example, to change the order that groups are plotted in a plot, or which groups are at the top of the table.

By default, the `read.table` function in R interprets character data as factor variables. And by default R alphabetizes the levels of the factors.

Looking at the Arthur and Buster data, note that Instructor, Student, Sex, among other variables, are treated as factor variables.

```r
str(Data)
'data.frame': 17 obs. of 7 variables:
$ Date      : Factor w/ 2 levels "2015-11-01","2015-12-01": 1 1 1 1 1 1 1 1 1 1 ...
$ Instructor: Factor w/ 2 levels "Arthur Read",..: 1 1 1 1 1 1 1 1 1 1 ...
$ Student   : Factor w/ 17 levels "a","b","c","d",..: 1 2 3 4 5 6 7 8 9 10 ..
$ Sex       : Factor w/ 3 levels "female","male",..: 1 1 2 1 2 1 2 1 1 1 ...
$ County    : Factor w/ 2 levels "Bear Lake","Elwood": 2 1 2 2 2 1 2 2 2 2 ..
$ Education : Factor w/ 5 levels "AA","BA","HS",..: 2 5 2 4 3 4 3 2 2 2 ...
$ Ed.code   : int 3 5 3 4 1 4 1 3 3 3 ...
```

Note also that the levels of the factor variables were alphabetized by default. That is, even though Elwood was found in the data before Bear Lake, R treats Bear Lake as the first level in the variable County.

```r
summary(Data)
Date            Instructor       Sex           County
2015-11-01:10   Arthur Read :10 female:10  Bear Lake: 4
                  other : 1
```

We can order factor levels by the order in which they were read in the data frame.

```r
Data$County = factor(Data$County, levels=unique(Data$County))
levels(Data$County)
[1] "Elwood"    "Bear Lake"
```

We can also order factor levels in an order of our choosing.

```r
Data$Sex = factor(Data$Sex, levels=c("male", "female"))
```
levels(Data$Sex)

[1] "male"   "female"

Note that in the actions above, we are not changing the order in the data frame, simply which level is treated internally by the software as "1" or "2", and so on.

Required readings


Optional readings

Statistics of location: mean and median


"The median outclasses the mean" from Dr. Nic. 2013. Learn and Teach Statistics & Operations Research. learnandteachstatistics.wordpress.com/2013/04/29/median/.


Statistics of variation: standard deviation and range


The normal distribution
Optional note on reporting summary statistics honestly

Every time we report a descriptive statistic or the result of a statistical test, we are condensing information, which may have been a whole data set, into one or a few pieces of information. It is the job of the analyst to choose the best way to present descriptive and graphical information, and to choose the correct statistical test or method.

SAT score example
Imagine a set of changes in SAT scores from seven students who took a certain SAT preparation course. The change in scores, \( Increase \), represents the difference in score, that is the score after taking the course minus their initial score.

\[
Increase = c(50, 60, 120, -80, -10, 10, 0)
\]

Our first instinct in assessing the course might be to look at the average (mean) change in score. The result is a mean increase of 21 points, which could be considered a success, perhaps.

\[
\text{mean(Increase)} \\
[1] 21.42857
\]

But we would be remiss to not look at other summary statistics and plots.

Using the \texttt{Summarize} function in the \texttt{FSA} package, we find that the median increase was only 10 points. The increase for the first quartile was negative, suggesting at least 25\% of students got a lower score afterwards.

\[
\text{library(FSA)}
\]
\[
\text{Summarize(Increase, digits = 2)}
\]

\[
\begin{array}{cccccccc}
\text{n} & \text{nvalid} & \text{mean} & \text{sd} & \text{min} & \text{Q1} & \text{median} & \text{Q3} & \text{max} \\
7.00 & 7.00 & 21.43 & 63.09 & -80.00 & -5.00 & 10.00 & 55.00 & 120.00 \\
\end{array}
\]

A histogram of the changes in scores suggests a slight right skew to the data, but that the mass of the data sits not far from zero.

\[
\text{hist(Increase, col="gray")}
\]
Finally, we'll compute the 95% confidence intervals for the mean change in score. Looking at the results for the percentile method, the confidence interval includes zero, suggesting the change in scores for this course were not statistically different from zero.

```r
library(rcompanion)
Data = data.frame(Decrease)

summary = groupwiseMean(Increase ~ 1, 
data = Data, 
traditional = FALSE, 
percentile = TRUE)
```

```
.id n Mean Conf.level Percentile.lower Percentile.upper
1 <NA> 7 21.4       0.95       -21.4             65.7
```

Based on the data exploration, it seems that it would be irresponsible or dishonest to simply report that the average increase in test scores was 20 points.

For descriptive statistics, we might report the mean and 95% confidence interval. Or perhaps the 5-point summary for the change in scores, or show the histogram of values.

**Optional analyses**

*Robust estimators: trimmed mean and Winsorized mean*

Robust estimators of central tendency are used to describe the location of a data set without undue influence of extreme values. Robust estimators include trimmed means, Winsorized means, and other estimates like M-estimators (not discussed here).
Example
The New Jersey Envirothon is a statewide competition for high school students covering various aspects of natural resources science. In the Team Presentation station, student teams are judged by five judges.

Currently, scorekeepers drop the highest and lowest scores for each team to avoid the effect of aberrant low or high scores. This is an example of a trimmed mean. In this case, the mean is trimmed to 60% (with 20% removed from each side).

Another option to ameliorate the effect of extreme scores is using Winsorized means. A Winsorized mean removes extreme observations, but replaces them with the closest observations in terms of magnitude.

In this example, two teams received five scores for their presentations that have the same mean and median. We will look at robust estimators to determine if one team should be scored higher than the other.

```r
Team.A = c(100, 90, 80, 60, 20)
median(Team.A)
[1] 80

mean(Team.A)
[1] 70

mean(Team.A, trim = .20)  # This trims to the inner 60% of observations
[1] 76.66667

library(psych)
winsor(Team.A, trim = 0.20)  # This winsorizes to the inner 60% of observations
[1] 92 90 80 60 52

### Note that the winsorized values at the extremes appear to be calculated with a function analogous to the quantile(x, probs, type = 7) function.

winsor.mean(Team.A, trim = 0.20)  # This winsorizes to the inner 60% of observations
[1] 74.8
In this example, the means and medians for Team A and Team B were identical. However, the trimmed mean for Team A was less than for Team B (77 vs. 80), and the Winsorized mean for A was less than for Team B (75 vs. 78). According to either the trimmed mean method or the Winsorized mean method, Team B had a higher score.

Note also that the Winsorized means were lower than for the trimmed means, for both teams. This is because the Winsorized mean is better able to take into account the low scores for each team.

**Geometric mean**

The geometric mean is used to summarize certain measurements, such as average return for investments, and for certain scientific measurements, such as bacteria counts in environmental water. It is useful when data are log-normally distributed.

Practically speaking, using the geometric mean ameliorates the effect of outlying values in the data.
To get the geometric mean, the log of each value is taken, these values are averaged, and then the result is the base of the log raised to this value.

Imagine a series of 9 counts of bacteria from lake water samples, called Bacteria here. The geometric mean can be calculated with a nested log, mean, and exp functions. Or more simply, the geometric.mean function in the psych package can be used.

**Bacteria example**

```
Bacteria = c(20, 40, 50, 60, 100, 120, 150, 200, 1000)
exp(mean(log(Bacteria)))
```

```
[1] 98.38887
```

```
library(psych)
geometric.mean(Bacteria)
```

```
[1] 98.38887
```

```
hist(Bacteria, col="darkgray", breaks="FD")
```

**Annual return example**

Geometric means are also used to calculate the average annual return for investments. Each value in this vector represents the percent return of the investment each year. The arithmetic mean will not give the correct answer for average annual return.

```
Return = c(-0.80, 0.20, 0.30, 0.30, 0.20, 0.30)
library(psych)
geometric.mean(Return + 1)-1
```

```
[1] -0.07344666
```

```
### The geometric mean will give the correct answer for average annual return
```

This can also be calculated manually. If you start with 100 dollars with this investment, you will end up with 63 dollars, equivalent to a return of – 0.07.

```
100 * (1-0.80) * 1.20 * 1.30 * 1.30 * 1.20 * 1.30
```

```
[1] 63.2736
```
**Harmonic mean**

The harmonic mean is another type of average that is used in certain situations, such as averaging rates or speeds.

To get the harmonic mean, the inverse of each value is taken, these values are averaged, and then the inverse of this result is reported.

Imagine a series of 9 speeds, called Speed here. The harmonic mean can be calculated with a nested 1/x, mean, and 1/x functions. Or more simply, the `harmonic.mean` function in the `psych` package can be used.

```r
Speed = c(20, 40, 50, 60, 100, 120, 150, 200, 1000)
1/mean(1/Speed)
63.08411
library(psych)
harmonic.mean(Speed)
63.08411
```

**Exercises C**

1. Considering Ren and Stimpy’s workshops,
   a. How many total attendees were there?
   b. How many total workshops were there?
   c. How many locations were there?
   d. What was the mean number of attendees?
   e. What was the median number of attendees?

2. Considering Ren and Stimpy’s workshops,
   a. Which workshops had a higher mean number of attendees and what was the mean? Ren’s or Stimpy’s?
   b. Which workshops had a higher mean number of attendees and what was the mean? Ren North or Ren South?

3. Considering Arthur and Buster’s workshops,
a. How many students attended in total?

b. How many distinct levels of education were reported?

c. What was the median level of education reported?

d. 75% of students had what level of education or lower?

e. What was the median education level for females?

f. What was the median education level for males?

g. What was the median education level for females from Elwood County?

h. What was the median education level for males from Elwood County?

4. Considering Arthur and Buster's workshops,

a. How many students were male?

b. What percentage is this of total students?

c. How many students in the November workshop were male?

d. What percentage is this of total students in the November workshop?

e. How many male students in the November workshop were from Bear Lake County?

5. As part of a nutrition education program, extension educators had students keep diaries of what they ate for a day and then calculated the calories students consumed. The following data are the result. *Rating* indicates the score, from 1 to 5, that students gave as to the usefulness of the program. It should be considered an ordinal variable.

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Student</th>
<th>Teacher</th>
<th>Sex</th>
<th>Calories</th>
<th>Rating</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>a</td>
<td>Tetsuo</td>
<td>male</td>
<td>2300</td>
<td>3</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>b</td>
<td>Tetsuo</td>
<td>female</td>
<td>1800</td>
<td>3</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>c</td>
<td>Tetsuo</td>
<td>male</td>
<td>1900</td>
<td>4</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>d</td>
<td>Tetsuo</td>
<td>female</td>
<td>1700</td>
<td>5</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>e</td>
<td>Tetsuo</td>
<td>male</td>
<td>2200</td>
<td>4</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>f</td>
<td>Tetsuo</td>
<td>female</td>
<td>1600</td>
<td>3</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>g</td>
<td>Tetsuo</td>
<td>male</td>
<td>1800</td>
<td>3</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>h</td>
<td>Tetsuo</td>
<td>female</td>
<td>2000</td>
<td>3</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>i</td>
<td>Kaneda</td>
<td>male</td>
<td>2100</td>
<td>4</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>j</td>
<td>Kaneda</td>
<td>female</td>
<td>1900</td>
<td>5</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>k</td>
<td>Kaneda</td>
<td>male</td>
<td>1900</td>
<td>4</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>l</td>
<td>Kaneda</td>
<td>female</td>
<td>1600</td>
<td>4</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>m</td>
<td>Kaneda</td>
<td>male</td>
<td>2000</td>
<td>4</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>n</td>
<td>Kaneda</td>
<td>female</td>
<td>2000</td>
<td>5</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>
a. What are the variables in this data set and what type of variable is each? (Types are “nominal”, “ordinal”, and “interval/ratio”, not how their types are reported by R.)

For each of the following, answer the question, and show the output from the analyses you used to answer the question.

b. How many students were involved in this data set?

c. What was the mean caloric intake?

d. What was the median caloric intake?

e. What was the standard deviation of caloric intake?

f. What was the mean caloric intake for females?

g. What was the mean caloric intake for females in Kaneda’s class?

h. How many males are in Kaneda’s class?

6. What do you conclude in practical terms about the caloric intake data for Tetsuo’s and Kaneda’s classes? You might consider the mean or median values between males and females or between Tetsuo and Kaneda. Think about the real world. Are the differences you are looking at important in a practical sense?

Be sure to pay attention to the spread of data as you think about this, for example using minimums and maximums, Q1 and Q3 values, or standard deviation values.

Be quantitative in your answer. That is, if you are talking about a difference in medians, mention the actual numerical difference. If expressing values as a percentage makes sense, feel free to do so.

Confidence Intervals

Packages used in this chapter

The packages used in this chapter include:

- Rmisc
- DescTools
- plyr
- boot
The following commands will install these packages if they are not already installed:

```r
if(!require(Rmisc)){install.packages("Rmisc")}
if(!require(DescTools)){install.packages("DescTools")}
if(!require(plyr)){install.packages("plyr")}
if(!require(boot)){install.packages("boot")}
if(!require(rcompanion)){install.packages("rcompanion")}
```

Understanding confidence intervals

Confidence intervals are used to indicate how confident we are that a reported statistic falls within a certain range. Confidence intervals can be calculated for a variety of statistics, such as the mean, median, or slope of a linear regression. This chapter will focus on confidence intervals for means. This book contains a separate chapter, *Confidence Intervals for Medians*, which addresses confidence intervals for medians. There is also a chapter *Confidence Intervals for Proportions* in this book.

The Statistics Learning Center video in the *Required Readings* below gives a good explanation of the meaning of confidence intervals.

**Populations and samples**

Most of the statistics we use assume we are analyzing a sample which we are using to represent a larger population. If extension educators want to know about the caloric intake of 7th graders, they would be hard-pressed to get the resources to have every 7th grader in the U.S. keep a food diary. Instead they might collect data from one or two classrooms, and then treat the data sample as if it represents a larger population of students.

The mean caloric intake could be calculated for this sample, but this mean will not be exactly the same as the mean for the larger population. If we collect a large sample and the values aren’t too variable, then the sample mean should be close to the population mean. But if we have few observations, or the values are highly variable, we are less confident our sample mean is close to the population mean.

We will use confidence intervals to give a sense of this confidence.

It’s best not to overthink the discussion on populations and samples. We aren’t necessarily actually extending our statistics to a larger population. That is, we shouldn’t think our measurements from two classrooms are actually indicative of the whole country. There are likely many factors that would change the result school to school and region to region. But even if we are thinking about just the 7th graders in just these two classrooms, most of our statistics will still be based on the assumption that there is a whole large population of 7th graders in these two classrooms, and we are sampling just a subset.

**Interpretation of confidence intervals**

If we were to sample the same population many times and calculated a mean each time, a 95% confidence interval would indicate the range that 95% of those means would fall into.
As a technically-dubious, but useful, interpretation, we often say that we are then justified in thinking that the true population mean likely lies within our calculated confidence interval.

In all cases, the confidence interval says something about the calculated statistic. That is, we are saying something about the mean, not about the underlying data per se.

Confidence intervals as an alternative to some tests
Most of the statistical tests in this book will calculate a probability (p-value) of the likelihood of data and draw a conclusion from this p-value. John McDonald, in the Optional Readings below, describes how confidence intervals can be used as an alternative approach.

For example, if we want to compare the means of two groups to see if they are statistically different, we will use a t-test, or similar test, calculate a p-value, and draw a conclusion. An alternative approach would be to construct 95% or 99% confidence intervals about the mean for each group. If the confidence intervals of the two means don’t overlap, we are justified in calling them statistically different.

Likewise, if the 95% confidence interval for some statistic includes zero, we can conclude that the statistic is not significantly different from zero.

As a technical note, non-overlapping confidence intervals for means do not equate exactly to a t-test with a p-value of 0.05. They are different methods to assess similar questions. The article by Cumming and Finch in the “References” section gives more details on the relationship between overlapping confidence intervals and p-values from statistical tests.

Example for confidence intervals
For this example, extension educators had students wear pedometers to count their number of steps over the course of a day. The following data are the result. Rating is the rating each student gave about the usefulness of the program, on a 1-to-10 scale.

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Student</th>
<th>Sex</th>
<th>Teacher</th>
<th>Steps</th>
<th>Rating</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>a</td>
<td>female</td>
<td>Catbus</td>
<td>8000</td>
<td>7</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>b</td>
<td>female</td>
<td>Catbus</td>
<td>9000</td>
<td>10</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>c</td>
<td>female</td>
<td>Catbus</td>
<td>10000</td>
<td>9</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>d</td>
<td>female</td>
<td>Catbus</td>
<td>7000</td>
<td>5</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>e</td>
<td>female</td>
<td>Catbus</td>
<td>6000</td>
<td>4</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>f</td>
<td>female</td>
<td>Catbus</td>
<td>8000</td>
<td>8</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>g</td>
<td>male</td>
<td>Catbus</td>
<td>7000</td>
<td>6</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>h</td>
<td>male</td>
<td>Catbus</td>
<td>5000</td>
<td>5</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>i</td>
<td>male</td>
<td>Catbus</td>
<td>9000</td>
<td>10</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>j</td>
<td>male</td>
<td>Catbus</td>
<td>7000</td>
<td>8</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>k</td>
<td>female</td>
<td>Satsuki</td>
<td>8000</td>
<td>7</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>l</td>
<td>female</td>
<td>Satsuki</td>
<td>9000</td>
<td>8</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>m</td>
<td>female</td>
<td>Satsuki</td>
<td>9000</td>
<td>8</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>n</td>
<td>female</td>
<td>Satsuki</td>
<td>8000</td>
<td>9</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>o</td>
<td>male</td>
<td>Satsuki</td>
<td>6000</td>
<td>5</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>p</td>
<td>male</td>
<td>Satsuki</td>
<td>8000</td>
<td>9</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>
Recommended procedures for confidence intervals for means
Confidence intervals for means can be calculated by various methods.

The traditional method is the most commonly encountered, and is appropriate for normally distributed data or with large sample sizes. It produces an interval that is symmetric about the mean.

For skewed data, confidence intervals by bootstrapping may be more reliable.

For routine use, I recommend using bootstrapped confidence intervals, particularly the BCa or percentile methods. For further discussion, see below Optional Analyses: confidence intervals for the mean by bootstrapping.

**groupwiseMean function for grouped and ungrouped data**
The `groupwiseMean` function in the rcompanion package can produce confidence intervals both by traditional and bootstrap methods, for grouped and ungrouped data.

The data must be housed in a data frame. By default, the function reports confidence intervals by the traditional method.

In the `groupwiseMean` function, the measurement and grouping variables can be indicated with formula notation, with the measurement variable on the left side of the tilde (~), and grouping variables on the right.
The confidence level is indicated by, e.g., the `conf = 0.95` argument. The `digits` option indicates the number of significant digits to which the output is rounded. Note that in the output, the means and other statistics are rounded to 3 significant figures.

**Ungrouped data**

Ungrouped data is indicated with a 1 one on the right side of the formula, or the `group = NULL` argument.

```r
library(rcompanion)

groupwiseMean(Steps ~ 1,
data   = Data,
conf   = 0.95,
digits = 3)
.id  n  Mean Conf.level Trad.lower Trad.upper
 1 <NA>  26  7690       0.95      7170       8210

### Trad.lower and Trad.upper indicate the confidence interval
### for the mean by traditional method.
```

**One-way data**

```r
library(rcompanion)

groupwiseMean(Steps ~ Sex,
data   = Data,
conf   = 0.95,
digits = 3)
Sex  n  Mean Conf.level Trad.lower Trad.upper
 1 female 15  8200       0.95      7530       8870
 2    male 11  7000       0.95      6260       7740

### Trad.lower and Trad.upper indicate the confidence interval
### for the mean by traditional method.
```

**Two-way data**

```r
library(rcompanion)

groupwiseMean(Steps ~ Teacher + Sex,
data   = Data,
conf   = 0.95,
digits = 3)
Teacher    Sex  n  Mean Conf.level Trad.lower Trad.upper
 1  Catbus female 6  8000       0.95      6520       9480
 2  Catbus    male 4  7000       0.95      4400       9600
 3  Satsuki female 4  8500       0.95      7580       9420
```
### Trad.lower and Trad.upper indicate the confidence interval
### for the mean by traditional method.

#### Bootstrapped means by group
In the `groupwiseMean` function, the type of confidence interval is requested by setting certain options to `TRUE`. These options are `traditional`, `normal`, `basic`, `percentile` and `bca`. The `boot` option reports an optional statistic, the mean by bootstrap. The `R` option indicates the number of iterations to calculate each bootstrap statistic.

```r
library(rcompanion)

groupwiseMean(Steps ~ Sex, 
data = Data, 
conf = 0.95, 
digits = 3, 
R = 10000, 
boot = TRUE, 
traditional = FALSE, 
normal = FALSE, 
basic = FALSE, 
percentile = FALSE, 
bca = TRUE)
```

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Sex</th>
<th>n</th>
<th>Mean</th>
<th>Boot.mean</th>
<th>Conf.level</th>
<th>Bca.lower</th>
<th>Bca.upper</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>female</td>
<td>15</td>
<td>8200</td>
<td>8200</td>
<td>0.95</td>
<td>7470</td>
<td>8670</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>male</td>
<td>11</td>
<td>7000</td>
<td>7000</td>
<td>0.95</td>
<td>6270</td>
<td>7550</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

```r
library(rcompanion)

groupwiseMean(Steps ~ Teacher + Sex, 
data = Data, 
conf = 0.95, 
digits = 3, 
R = 10000, 
boot = TRUE, 
traditional = FALSE, 
normal = FALSE, 
basic = FALSE, 
percentile = FALSE, 
bca = TRUE)
```

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Teacher</th>
<th>Sex</th>
<th>n</th>
<th>Mean</th>
<th>Boot.mean</th>
<th>Conf.level</th>
<th>Bca.lower</th>
<th>Bca.upper</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>Catbus</td>
<td>female</td>
<td>6</td>
<td>8000</td>
<td>8000</td>
<td>0.95</td>
<td>6830</td>
<td>8830</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Catbus</td>
<td>male</td>
<td>4</td>
<td>6990</td>
<td>8000</td>
<td>0.95</td>
<td>5500</td>
<td>8000</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Satsuki</td>
<td>female</td>
<td>4</td>
<td>8500</td>
<td>8500</td>
<td>0.95</td>
<td>8000</td>
<td>8750</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Satsuki</td>
<td>male</td>
<td>3</td>
<td>7000</td>
<td>7000</td>
<td>0.95</td>
<td>6000</td>
<td>7670</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Totoro</td>
<td>female</td>
<td>5</td>
<td>8200</td>
<td>8190</td>
<td>0.95</td>
<td>6800</td>
<td>9000</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Totoro</td>
<td>male</td>
<td>4</td>
<td>7000</td>
<td>7000</td>
<td>0.95</td>
<td>6250</td>
<td>7500</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>
Optional: Other functions for traditional confidence intervals for means

Functions that produce confidence intervals for means by the traditional method include `t.test`, `CI` in `Rmisc`, and `MeanCI` in `DescTools`.

```r
t.test(Data$Steps, 
       conf.level=0.95)

One Sample t-test

95 percent confidence interval:
7171.667 8212.949

mean of x
7692.308

library(DescTools)

MeanCI(Data$Steps, 
       conf.level=0.95)

      mean  lwr.ci  upr.ci
7692.308 7171.667 8212.949

library(Rmisc)

CI(Data$Steps, 
   ci=0.95)

 upper  mean    lower
8212.949 7692.308 7171.667

library(Rmisc)

group.CI(Steps ~ Sex, 
         data=Data, 
         ci = 0.95)

     Sex     Steps.upper Steps.mean Steps.lower
1 female   8868.482       8200    7531.518
2   male    7735.930       7000    6264.070

library(Rmisc)

group.CI(Steps ~ Teacher + Sex, 
          data=Data, 
          ci = 0.95)

     Teacher    Sex     Steps.upper Steps.mean Steps.lower
1   Catbus female  9484.126       8000    6515.874
2 Satsuki female  9418.693       8500    7581.307
```
Optional Analyses: confidence intervals for the mean by bootstrapping

Bootstrapping is a method that samples the data many times, each time calculating a statistic, and then determining a confidence interval or other statistic from these iterations.

Bootstrapped confidence intervals can be more reliable than those determined by the traditional method for certain data sets. For more details on the different types of bootstrapped confidence intervals, see the Carpenter and Bithel article in the “References” section of this chapter. The BCa method (bias corrected, accelerated) is often cited as the best method, and the percentile method is also cited as typically good.

The boot package can calculate confidence intervals for means by bootstrap. In the boot function, R indicates the number of re-samplings.

The function groupwiseMean in the rcompanion package allows for calculating confidence intervals for means for grouped data, using the bootstrap procedures from the boot package.

Note that for bootstrap procedures, your results may vary slightly from the results reported here.

```r
library(boot)

Mboot = boot(Data$Steps, 
    function(x,i) mean(x[i]), 
    R=10000)

mean(Mboot$t[,1])

7693.381

### The mean based on the bootstrap method.

boot.ci(Mboot, 
    conf = 0.95, 
    type = c("norm", "basic", "perc", "bca")
)

Intervals :
Level     Normal     Basic
95%  (7208, 8174 )  (7192, 8154 )

Level     Percentile     BCa
95%  (7231, 8192 )  (7154, 8115 )

Calculations and Intervals on Original Scale
### Other information

```r
hist(Boot$[,1],
    col = "darkgray")
```

### Required readings


### Optional readings


### References


### Optional analyses

**Confidence intervals for geometric mean**

The geometric mean was discussed in the previous chapter. Here, the `CI` function in *Rmisc* is used to construct confidence intervals for the geometric mean.

```r
Bacteria = c(20, 40, 50, 60, 100, 120, 150, 200, 1000)
library(Rmisc)
exp(CI(log(Bacteria), ci=0.95))
```
Confidence intervals for geometric means for groups

The function `groupwiseGeometric` in the `rcompanion` package produces the geometric mean and limits for the geometric mean plus and minus the standard deviation, standard error, and confidence interval.

```r
Input = ("Site  Bacteria
A        20
A        40
A        50
A        60
A        100
A        120
A        150
A        200
A        1000
B        100
B        120
B        210
B        300
B        420
B        400
B        500
B        800
B        4000
C        10
C        30
C        40
C        60
C        110
C        100
C        160
C        210
C        1200")

Data = read.table(textConnection(Input),header=TRUE)

library(rcompanion)

groupwiseGeometric(Bacteria ~ Site,
data = Data,
digits = 3,
na.rm = TRUE)

Site n Geo.mean sd.lower sd.upper se.lower se.upper ci.lower ci.upper
1 A    9  98.4  31.9   303      67.6   143      41.4   234
```
Exercises D

1. Considering the Catbus, Satsuki, and Totoro data,
   a. What was the mean of Steps?
   b. What is the 95% confidence interval for Steps (traditional method)?

2. Considering the Catbus, Satsuki, and Totoro data,
   a. What was the mean of Steps for females?
   b. What is the 95% confidence interval for Steps for females (traditional method)?

3. Looking at the 95% confidence intervals for Steps for males and females, are we justified in claiming that the mean Steps was statistically different for females and males? Why?

4. As part of a nutrition education program, extension educators had students keep diaries of what they ate for a day and then calculated the calories students consumed.

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Student</th>
<th>Teacher</th>
<th>Sex</th>
<th>Calories</th>
<th>Rating</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>a</td>
<td>Tetsuo</td>
<td>male</td>
<td>2300</td>
<td>3</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>b</td>
<td>Tetsuo</td>
<td>female</td>
<td>1800</td>
<td>3</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>c</td>
<td>Tetsuo</td>
<td>male</td>
<td>1900</td>
<td>4</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>d</td>
<td>Tetsuo</td>
<td>female</td>
<td>1700</td>
<td>5</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>e</td>
<td>Tetsuo</td>
<td>male</td>
<td>2200</td>
<td>4</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>f</td>
<td>Tetsuo</td>
<td>female</td>
<td>1600</td>
<td>3</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>g</td>
<td>Tetsuo</td>
<td>male</td>
<td>1800</td>
<td>3</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>h</td>
<td>Tetsuo</td>
<td>female</td>
<td>2000</td>
<td>3</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>i</td>
<td>Kaneda</td>
<td>male</td>
<td>2100</td>
<td>4</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>j</td>
<td>Kaneda</td>
<td>female</td>
<td>1900</td>
<td>5</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>k</td>
<td>Kaneda</td>
<td>male</td>
<td>1900</td>
<td>4</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>l</td>
<td>Kaneda</td>
<td>female</td>
<td>1600</td>
<td>4</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>m</td>
<td>Kaneda</td>
<td>male</td>
<td>2000</td>
<td>4</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>n</td>
<td>Kaneda</td>
<td>female</td>
<td>2000</td>
<td>5</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>o</td>
<td>Kaneda</td>
<td>male</td>
<td>2100</td>
<td>3</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>p</td>
<td>Kaneda</td>
<td>female</td>
<td>1800</td>
<td>4</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

For each of the following, answer the question, and show the output from the analyses you used to answer the question.

a. What is the mean of Calories?

b. What is the 95% confidence interval for Calories (traditional method)?
c. What is the mean of Calories for females?

d. What is the 95% confidence interval for Calories for females (traditional method)?

e. Looking at the 95% confidence intervals for Calories for males and females, are we justified in claiming that the mean Calories was statistically different for females and males? Why?

---

**Basic Plots**

**The need to understand plots**

There are several reasons why it is important to be able to produce and interpret plots of data.

*Visualize your data.* Plots are essential for visualizing and exploring your data. Plotting a histogram gives a sense of the range, center, and shape of the data. It shows if the data is symmetric, skewed, bimodal, or uniform. Box plots and plots of means, medians, and measures of variation visually indicate the difference in means or medians among groups. Scatter plots show the relationship between two measured variables.

*Communicate your results to others.* Being able to choose and produce appropriate plots is important for summarizing your data for professional or extension presentations and journal articles. Plots can be very effective for summarizing data in a visual manner and can show statistical results with impact.

*Understand other’s results.* It is essential to understand the plots you find in extension and professional literature.

**Packages used in this chapter**

The packages used in this chapter include:

- lattice
- plyr
- ggplot2
- FSA
- DescTools
- vcd
- rcompanion

The following commands will install these packages if they are not already installed:

```r
if(!require(lattice)){install.packages("lattice")}
if(!require(plyr)){install.packages("plyr")}
if(!require(ggplot2)){install.packages("ggplot2")}
if(!require(FSA)){install.packages("FSA")}
if(!require(DescTools)){install.packages("DescTools")}
```
Some advice on producing plots

For some good advice on producing high-quality plots, read the “General tips” section of the McDonald page listed in the “Optional readings I”.

His basic points:
• “Don’t clutter up your graph with unnecessary junk.”
• “Include all necessary information.”
• “Don’t use color in graphs for publication.”
• “Do use color in graphs for presentations.”

Producing clear and informative plots

There are many ways to make a bad plot. As McDonald notes, one way is to have a cluttered or unclear plot, and another is to use color inappropriately.

I strive for clear, bold text, lines and points. In a presentation, it can be difficult for the audience to understand busy plots, or see thin text, lines, or subtle distinctions of colors. Publications may or may not accept color in plots, and subtle shading or hatching may not be preserved. Sometimes the resolution of images of plots are downsampled, making small text or symbols unclear.

In general, a plot and its caption should more-or-less be able to stand alone. Obviously, you can’t describe your whole study in a caption, but it is helpful to give enough information so that the figure is informative if it were separated from the rest of the article or presentation. The amount of information will be tempered by the style of medium you’re writing for, journal versus factsheet, for example. In a scientific article, you may wish to include the subjects (“students in seventh grade who had completed a 4-H program in robotics”), location, time period, and other relevant information.

Be sure to label axes as thoroughly as possible, and also accurately. For example, an “increase in student scores” is not the same as “student scores.” Indicate if the values are cumulative, total, monthly, etc.

When possible, plots should show some measures of variation, such as standard deviation, standard error of the mean, or confidence interval. By their nature, histograms and box plots show the variation in the data. Plots of means or medians will need to have error bars added to show dispersion or confidence limits.

If applicable, usually the x-axis is the independent variable and the y-axis is the dependent variable of an analysis.

Misleading plots

You should also avoid making misleading plots. Remember that you are trying to accurately summarize your data and show the relationships among variables. It takes care to do this accurately and in a way that won’t confuse or mislead your reader.
The “Optional analyses” section on “Misleading and disorienting plots” near the end of this chapter gives some examples of plots I’ve seen that display their shortcomings.

**Using software to produce plots**

The plots in this book will be produced using R. R has the capability to produce informative plots quickly, which is useful for exploring data or for checking model assumptions. It also has the ability to produce more refined plots with more options, quintessentially through using the package *ggplot2*.

Sometimes it is easier to produce plots using software with a graphic user interface like Microsoft *Excel*, Apple *Numbers*, or free software like LibreOffice *Calc*.

In general, you should use whichever tool will best serve your purposes.

**Exporting plots**

RStudio makes exporting plots from R relatively easy. For lower-resolution images, plots can be exported directly as image files like .jpg or .png. For higher-resolution images, images can be exported as .pdf. See the *Mangiafico* reference in the “Optional readings I” section for some brief instructions.

Also, see “Exercises A” in this book for code on exporting higher resolution image files.

**Examples of basic plots for interval/ratio and ordinal data**

There are many types of plots, and this chapter will present only a few of the most common ones. In later chapters, variants of these plots will be used to explore the data or to check the assumptions of the analyses.

The type of plot you choose will depend upon on the number and types of variables you are trying to present, and what you are trying to show.

For this example, extension educators had students wear pedometers to count their number of steps over the course of a day. The following data are the result. *Rating* is the rating each student gave about the usefulness of the program, on a 1-to-10 scale.

Note the code that orders the levels of the factor variables. In general, R will alphabetize levels of factors, and this may be reflected on plots. The code will order the factor by the order that the levels are encountered in the dataset.

```
Input = (" 
Student Sex Teacher Steps Rating 

a female Catbus 8000 7
b female Catbus 9000 10
c female Catbus 10000 9
d female Catbus 7000 5
e female Catbus 6000 4
f female Catbus 8000 8
g male Catbus 7000 6
h male Catbus 5000 5
```

72
### Order the factors, otherwise R will alphabetize them

```r
Data$Sex = factor(Data$Sex, 
                 levels=unique(Data$Sex))

Data$Teacher = factor(Data$Teacher, 
                      levels=unique(Data$Teacher))
```

### Check the data frame

```r
Data
```

```r
str(Data)
```

```r
summary(Data)
```

### Remove unnecessary objects

```r
rm(Input)
```

**Histogram**

A histogram shows the frequency of observations broken down into ranges, to give a sense of the range and distribution of the data.

- A single histogram is used for one interval/ratio or ordinal variable.
- Multiple histograms can be put on one plot to compare among groups.
• If you want to make a histogram for counts of a categorical variable in R, you will want to use a bar plot.

Note that col defines the colors of the bars; main defines the main plot title; xlab defines the label on the x-axis.

Simple histogram

```r
hist(Data$Steps,
     col="gray",
     main="",
     xlab="Steps")
```

Frequency histogram of the number of steps taken by students in three classes.

Histogram with density line

This plot will add a curve for the density of the data in the histogram, which is a smoothed-out representation of the distribution of the data.

The function `plotDensityHistogram` in the `rcompanion` package will produce this plot. Options include the options for the `hist` function as well as `adjust`, `bw`, and `kernel`, which is passed to the `density` function.

```r
library(rcompanion)

plotDensityHistogram(Data$Steps,
                      adjust = 1)  ## Decrease this number
                     ## to make line less smooth
```
Histogram of the number of steps taken by students in three classes with the smoothed gaussian kernel density shown as a black curve.

**Histogram with normal curve**

This plot will add a normal curve with the mean and standard deviation of the data in the histogram. This type of plot will be useful to visually determine if a distribution of data is close to normal.

The function `plotNormalHistogram` in the `rcompanion` package will produce this plot. Options include the options for the `hist` function as well as `linecol` for the line color.

```r
library(rcompanion)
plotNormalHistogram(Data$Steps)
```

Histogram of the number of steps taken by students in three classes with a normal distribution of the same mean and standard deviation shown in blue.
Histogram for one-way data

The `lattice` package can be used to put multiple histograms on one plot for grouped data. This is useful to compare data distributions among groups. Notice the grammar used in the formula in the `histogram` function, and the need to indicate into how many columns and rows the plots will be placed.

```r
library(lattice)

histogram(~ Steps | Sex,
data=Data,
layout=c(1,2)  # columns and rows of individual plots
)
```

Histograms of the number of steps taken by male and female students across three students.

Histogram for two-way data

```r
library(lattice)

histogram(~ Steps | Teacher + Sex,
data=Data,
layout=c(3,2)  # columns and rows of individual plots
)
```
Histograms of the number of steps taken by male and female students in each of the classes of Catbus, Satsuki, and Totoro.

**Box plots**

Box plots graphically present the five-number summary. The main box indicates the 25\(^{th}\) and 75\(^{th}\) percentile of the plotted data. The median is indicated with a heavy line through the box. The whiskers extending from the box indicate the range of the data, but different software packages may use somewhat different statistics for the extent of the whiskers. For this reason, when you are presenting box plots, you should always specify what the length of whiskers indicate.

By default, the whiskers in the boxplot function indicate the range of the data, unless there are data that are further away from the box than 1.5 times the length of the box. In this case, the whiskers extend only 1.5 times the length of the box, and points beyond this distance are indicated with circles. An example of box plots with circles indicating outlying values is shown in the “Box plot for one-way data” section. If you wish to have the whiskers extend to the range of the data, and not display any point with circles, the range=0 option can be used. See ?boxplots and ?boxplot.stats for more details.

The video from Statistics Learning Center in the “Optional readings II” section may be a helpful introduction to box plots. The “Graphing Distributions” chapter in the Lane textbook in the “Optional readings II” section also has a nice description of box plots.

- A single box plot is used for one interval/ratio or ordinal variable. Don’t use means for ordinal data.

- Multiple box plots can be put on one plot to compare among groups.
Note that *xlab* defines the label on the *x*-axis; *ylab* defines the label on the *y*-axis

**Simple box plot**

```r
boxplot(Data$Steps,
        ylab="Steps",
        xlab="")
```

Box plot of the number of steps taken by students in three classes. The box indicates the 1st and 3rd quartiles, and the dark line indicates the median. Whiskers extend to the maximum and minimum of the data.

**Box plot with means**

```r
M = mean(Data$Steps)

boxplot(Data$Steps,
        ylab="Steps",
        xlab=""

points(M,
       col="red",
       pch="+",  ### symbol to use, see ?points
cex=2)  ### size of symbol
```

Box plot of the number of steps taken by students in three classes. The box indicates the 1st and 3rd quartiles, and the dark line indicates the median. The mean is indicated with the red cross. Whiskers extend to the maximum and minimum of the data.
Box plot for one-way data

```r
boxplot(Steps ~ Sex,
       data=Data,
       ylab="Steps")
```

Box plots of the number of steps taken by male and female students across three classes. The boxes indicate the 1st and 3rd quartiles, and the dark lines indicate the median. Points more than 1.5 times the inter-quartile range away from the box are shown with hollow circles.

Box plot for one-way data with means

```r
M = tapply(Data$Steps,
            INDEX = Data$Sex,
            FUN   = mean)

boxplot(Steps ~ Sex,
        data=Data,
        ylab="Steps")

points(M,
       col="red",
       pch="+",
       cex=2)
```

```r
boxplot(Steps ~ Sex,
       data=Data,
       ylab="Steps")
points(M,
       col="red",
       pch="+",
       cex=2)
```
Box plots of the number of steps taken by male and female students across three classes. The boxes indicate the 1st and 3rd quartiles, and the dark lines indicate the median. The means are indicated with red crosses. Points more than 1.5 times the inter-quartile range away from the box are shown with hollow circles.

**Box plot for two-way data**

```r
boxplot(Steps ~ Sex + Teacher,
data=Data,
ylab="Steps")
```

Box plots of the number of steps taken by male and female students in each of three classes. The boxes indicate the 1st and 3rd quartiles, and the dark lines indicate the median. Points more than 1.5 times the inter-quartile range away from the box are shown with hollow circles.

**Box plot for two-way data with means**

```r
M = tapply(Data$Steps,
            INDEX = Data$Teacher : Data$Sex,
            FUN = mean)

boxplot(Steps ~ Sex + Teacher,
data=Data,
ylab="Steps")

points(M,
col="red",
pch="+",
cex=2)
```

80
Box plots of the number of steps taken by male and female students in each of three classes. The boxes indicate the 1st and 3rd quartiles, and the dark lines indicate the median. The means are indicated with red crosses. Points more than 1.5 times the inter-quartile range away from the box are shown with hollow circles.

**Plot of means and interaction plots**

Means or medians for a group can be plotted with error bars showing standard deviation, standard error, or confidence interval for the statistic.

For two-way data, these plots are sometimes called *interaction plots*.

- Each mean or median represents one group or treatment for an interval/ratio or ordinal variable. Error bars are associated with each mean or median. Don’t use means for ordinal data.

- Multiple means or medians can be plotted on the same plot, with groups from one or two independent variables.

The package *ggplot2* will be used for this type of plot. A simple interaction plot can be made with the *qplot* function, and more refined plots can be made with the *ggplot* function.

The *ggplot2* package is very powerful and flexible for making plots. The tradeoff is that the grammar can be difficult to understand. When trying to get a plot to look a certain way, it may be necessary to find an example plot online, and follow the code closely. Good resources include those by Hadley Wickham, Winston Chang, and Robbins and Robbins in the “References” section.
Plot of means for one-way data with `qplot`
In this example, we will plot means and confidence intervals. These will first be calculated with the function `groupwiseMean`. The output of the function is a data frame, we will call `Sum`. `Sum` will then be passed to the `qplot` function, so the variables mentioned in the code are from the `Sum` data frame.

```r
library(rcompanion)

Sum = groupwiseMean(Steps ~ Sex,
   data = Data,
   conf = 0.95,
   digits = 3)

# Display the data frame
Sum

   Sex n Mean Conf.level Trad.lower Trad.upper
 1 female 15 8200       0.95       7530       8870
 2   male 11 7000       0.95       6260       7740

library(ggplot2)

qplot(x = Sex,
      y = Mean,
      data = Sum) +
      geom_errorbar(aes(
                      ymin = Trad.lower,
                      ymax = Trad.upper,
                      width = 0.15))
```

Plot of mean steps taken versus sex, for students in the classes of Catbus, Satsuki, and Totoro. Error bars indicate the traditional 95% confidence intervals for the mean.
Plot of means with *ggplot*

This example will plot the same statistics, but will make a more attractive plot using the *ggplot* function. Note that the variables mentioned in the code are from the *Sum* data frame.

The code invokes the black-and-white visual theme with the option *theme_bw*.

```r
library(rcompanion)

Sum = groupwiseMean(Steps ~ Sex,  
  data    = Data,  
  conf    = 0.95,  
  digits  = 3)

Sum

  Sex  n Mean Conf.level Trad.lower Trad.upper
  1 female 15 8200       0.95       7530       8870
  2  male 11 7000       0.95       6260       7740

library(ggplot2)

ggplot(Sum,  
  ### The data frame to use.
  aes(x = Sex,  
       y = Mean)) +  
  geom_errorbar(aes(ymin = Trad.lower,  
                     ymax = Trad.upper),  
                width = 0.05,  
                size = 0.5) +  
  geom_point(shape = 15,  
              size   = 4) +  
  theme_bw() +  
  theme(axis.title = element_text(face = "bold")) +  
  ylab("Mean steps")
```
Interaction plot of means with `qplot`
This example will plot means and standard errors for the interaction of two independent variables, Teacher and Sex.

We will use the `Summarize` function to produce the data frame `Sum`, and will then add a variable `se` to the data frame for the standard error.

Note that the default color palette of `ggplot` uses a pinkish color for the first group in the legend and a blueish color for the second. I wasn’t intentionally matching females and males with their traditional colors. These colors could be changed to avoid the appearance of gender essentialism.

```r
library(FSA)
Sum = Summarize(Steps ~ Teacher + Sex, data=Data)
Sum$se = Sum$sd / sqrt(Sum$n)
```

### This creates a new variable for standard error in our summary data frame
### Replace n with nvalid if there are missing values

```
Teacher    Sex n mean        sd  min   Q1 median   Q3   max percZero       se
1  Catbus female 6 8000 1414.2136 6000 7250   8000 8750 10000        0 577.3503
2 Satsuki female 4 8500  577.3503 8000 8000   8500 9000  9000        0 288.6751
3  Totoro female 5 8200 1483.2397 6000 8000   8000 9000 10000        0 663.3250
4  Catbus   male 4 7000 1632.9932 5000 6500   7000 7500  9000        0 816.4966
```

Plot of mean steps taken versus sex, for students in the classes of Catbus, Satsuki, and Totoro. Error bars indicate the traditional 95% confidence intervals for the mean.
library(ggplot2)

qplot(x = Teacher, 
      y = mean, 
      color = Sex, 
      data = Sum) +

geom_errorbar(aes(ymin = mean - se, 
                   ymax = mean + se, 
                   width = 0.15))

Interaction plot of mean steps taken versus teacher for males and female students. Error bars indicate the standard error of the mean.

Interaction plot of means with ggplot
As in the example above, this example will plot means and standard errors for the interaction of two independent variables, Teacher and Sex. As noted above, the pink and blue colors are the default color palette in ggplot.

library(FSA)

Sum = Summarize(Steps ~ Teacher + Sex, 
                 data=Data)

Sum$se = Sum$sd / sqrt(Sum$n)

### This creates a new variable for standard error in our summary data frame
## Replace n with nvalid if there are missing values

Sum

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th></th>
<th>Teacher</th>
<th>Sex</th>
<th>n</th>
<th>mean</th>
<th>sd</th>
<th>min</th>
<th>Q1</th>
<th>median</th>
<th>Q3</th>
<th>max</th>
<th>percZero</th>
<th>se</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>1</td>
<td>Catbus</td>
<td>female</td>
<td>6</td>
<td>8000</td>
<td>1414.2136</td>
<td>6000</td>
<td>7250</td>
<td>8000</td>
<td>8750</td>
<td>10000</td>
<td>0</td>
<td>577.3503</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>2</td>
<td>Satsuki</td>
<td>female</td>
<td>4</td>
<td>8500</td>
<td>577.3503</td>
<td>8000</td>
<td>8000</td>
<td>8500</td>
<td>9000</td>
<td>9000</td>
<td>0</td>
<td>288.6751</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>3</td>
<td>Totoro</td>
<td>female</td>
<td>5</td>
<td>8200</td>
<td>1483.2397</td>
<td>6000</td>
<td>8000</td>
<td>8000</td>
<td>9000</td>
<td>10000</td>
<td>0</td>
<td>663.3250</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>4</td>
<td>Catbus</td>
<td>male</td>
<td>4</td>
<td>7000</td>
<td>1632.9932</td>
<td>5000</td>
<td>6500</td>
<td>7000</td>
<td>7500</td>
<td>9000</td>
<td>0</td>
<td>816.4966</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>5</td>
<td>Satsuki</td>
<td>male</td>
<td>3</td>
<td>7000</td>
<td>1000.0000</td>
<td>6000</td>
<td>6500</td>
<td>7000</td>
<td>7500</td>
<td>8000</td>
<td>0</td>
<td>577.3503</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>6</td>
<td>Totoro</td>
<td>male</td>
<td>4</td>
<td>7000</td>
<td>816.4966</td>
<td>6000</td>
<td>6750</td>
<td>7000</td>
<td>7250</td>
<td>8000</td>
<td>0</td>
<td>408.2483</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

```r
library(ggplot2)
pd = position_dodge(.2)  ### How much to jitter the points on the plot

ggplot(Sum,                ### The data frame to use.
       aes(x = Teacher,
            y = mean,
            color = Sex)) +

    geom_point(shape = 15,
                size = 4,
                position = pd) +

    geom_errorbar(aes(ymin = mean - se,
                       ymax = mean + se),
                  width = 0.2,
                  size = 0.7,
                  position = pd) +

    theme_bw() +
    theme(axis.title = element_text(face = "bold")) +

    ylab("Mean steps")
```
Bar plot of means
Another common method to plot means or medians is with bar plots. Error bars can be added to each bar.

- Each bar represents one group mean or median for an interval/ratio or ordinal variable. Error bars are associated with each mean or median. Don’t use means for ordinal data.
- Multiple means or medians can be plotted on the same plot, with groups from one or two independent variables.

The barplot function can produce a simple bar plot, from a table of numbers. For more complex bar plots, or to add error bars, the ggplot2 package can be used.

Simple bar plot of means
```r
library(FSA)
Sum = Summarize(Steps ~ Sex,
data=Data)
Sum
```

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Sex</th>
<th>n</th>
<th>nvalid</th>
<th>mean</th>
<th>sd</th>
<th>min</th>
<th>Q1</th>
<th>median</th>
<th>Q3</th>
<th>max</th>
<th>percZero</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>female</td>
<td>15</td>
<td>15</td>
<td>8200</td>
<td>1207.122</td>
<td>6000</td>
<td>8000</td>
<td>9000</td>
<td>10000</td>
<td>0</td>
<td>0</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>
Bar plot of the mean steps taken by female and male students across three classes.

**Bar plot of means for one-way data with `qplot`**

In this example, we will plot means and confidence intervals. These will first be calculated with the function `groupwiseMean`. The output of the function is a data frame, which we will call `Sum`. `Sum` will then be passed to the `qplot` function, so that the variables mentioned in the code are from the `Sum` data frame.

```r
library(rcompanion)

Sum = groupwiseMean(Steps ~ Sex,
                     data = Data,
                     conf = 0.95,
                     digits = 3)
```

```
   Sex n Mean Conf.level Trad.lower Trad.upper
 1 female 15 8200       0.95       7530       8870
 2   male 11 7000       0.95       6260       7740
```
library(ggplot2)

qplot(x = Sex, y = Mean, data = Sum) +
geom_bar(stat = "identity", fill = "gray") +
geom_errorbar(aes(ymin = Trad.lower, ymax = Trad.upper, width = 0.15))

Bar plot of the mean steps taken by female and male students across three classes. Error bars indicate traditional 95% confidence intervals of the means.

Interaction bar plot of means with ggplot
This example will plot means and standard errors for the interaction of two independent variables, Teacher and Sex. We will use the Summarize function to produce the data frame Sum, and will then add a variable se to the data frame for the standard error.

Note that the default color palette of ggplot uses a pinkish color for the first group in the legend and a blueish color for the second. These colors can be changed.

library(FSA)

Sum = Summarize(Steps ~ Teacher + Sex, data=Data)

Sum$se = Sum$sd / sqrt(Sum$n)

### This creates a new variable for standard error in our summary data frame
### Replace n with nvalid if there are missing values

Sum

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Teacher</th>
<th>Sex</th>
<th>n</th>
<th>mean</th>
<th>sd</th>
<th>min</th>
<th>Q1</th>
<th>median</th>
<th>Q3</th>
<th>max</th>
<th>percZero</th>
<th>se</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>Catbus</td>
<td>female</td>
<td>6</td>
<td>8000</td>
<td>1414</td>
<td>6000</td>
<td>7250</td>
<td>8000</td>
<td>8750</td>
<td>10000</td>
<td>0</td>
<td>577.3503</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Satsuki</td>
<td>female</td>
<td>4</td>
<td>8500</td>
<td>577.3503</td>
<td>8000</td>
<td>8000</td>
<td>8000</td>
<td>9000</td>
<td>9000</td>
<td>0</td>
<td>288.6751</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Totoro</td>
<td>female</td>
<td>5</td>
<td>8200</td>
<td>1483.2397</td>
<td>6000</td>
<td>8000</td>
<td>8000</td>
<td>9000</td>
<td>10000</td>
<td>0</td>
<td>663.3250</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Catbus</td>
<td>male</td>
<td>4</td>
<td>7000</td>
<td>1632.9932</td>
<td>5000</td>
<td>6500</td>
<td>7000</td>
<td>7500</td>
<td>9000</td>
<td>0</td>
<td>816.4966</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Satsuki</td>
<td>male</td>
<td>3</td>
<td>7000</td>
<td>1000.0000</td>
<td>6000</td>
<td>6500</td>
<td>7000</td>
<td>7500</td>
<td>8000</td>
<td>0</td>
<td>577.3503</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Totoro</td>
<td>male</td>
<td>4</td>
<td>7000</td>
<td>816.4966</td>
<td>6000</td>
<td>6750</td>
<td>7000</td>
<td>7250</td>
<td>8000</td>
<td>0</td>
<td>408.2483</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

```r
library(ggplot2)

pd = position_dodge(1)  # How much to jitter the bars on the plot,
# 0.5 for overlapping bars

ggplot(Sum, aes(x = Teacher, y = mean, fill = Sex)) +
  geom_bar(stat = "identity", color = "black", position = pd) +
  geom_errorbar(aes(ymin = mean - se, ymax = mean + se),
                width = 0.2, size = 0.7, position = pd,
                color = "black") +
  theme_bw() +
  theme(axis.title = element_text(face = "bold")) +
  ylab("Mean steps")
```
Bar plots of the mean steps taken by female and male students in each of three classes. Error bars indicate the standard error of the means.

Scatter plot
A scatter plot is used for bivariate data, to show the relationship between two interval/ratio or ordinal variables. Each point represents a single observation with one measured variable on the x-axis, and one measured variable is y-axis.

- Data are two interval/ratio or ordinal variables, paired by observation.
- Multiple plots can be shown together to investigate the relationships among multiple measured variables. (Not shown in this chapter.)

Simple scatter plot
The `plot` function can produce a simple bivariate scatter plot. The `xlab` and `ylab` options indicate the labels for the x- and y-axes. The `jitter` function is needed only in cases where individual points will overlap on the plot.

```r
plot(Rating ~ jitter(Steps),
     data = Data,
     pch = 16,
     cex = 1.0,
     xlab = "Steps",
     ylab = "Rating")
```

# jitter offsets points so you can see them all
# shape of points
# size of points
Plot of program rating versus steps taken by students in three classes.

**Scatter plot with qplot**
The *jitter* function is needed only in cases where individual points will overlap on the plot.

```r
qplot(x = jitter(Steps),
      y = Rating,
      data = Data,
      xlab = "Steps per day",
      ylab = "Rating (1 – 10)"
)
```

Plot of program rating versus steps taken by students in three classes.

**Examples of basic plots for nominal data**
Plots for nominal data show the counts of observation for each category of the variable.
Bar plot for counts of a nominal variable
The \textsf{xtabs} function is used to count observations for each level of the nominal variables, producing a contingency table.

\begin{verbatim}
XT = xtabs(~ Sex + Teacher, data=Data)
XT

\begin{tabular}{lcccc}
  & Catbus & Satsuki & Totoro \\
Sex     & female & 6 & 4 & 5 \\
        & male   & 4 & 3 & 4 \\
\end{tabular}
\end{verbatim}

\begin{verbatim}
barplot(XT, 
  beside = TRUE, 
  legend = TRUE, 
  ylim = c(0, 8),  # adjust to remove legend overlap 
  xlab = "Teacher", 
  ylab = "Count")
\end{verbatim}

Bar plot for frequencies of observations for female and male students in each of three classes.

Bar plot of counts and confidence intervals with \textit{ggplot}
This example will plot the counts of observations for the interaction of two independent variables, \textit{Teacher} and \textit{Sex}. We will use the \textit{Summarize} function to produce the data frame \textit{Sum}, and will use the variable \textit{n} as the count of observations.

It’s not necessary you understand the code completely, but in order to demonstrate error bars on this plot, 95% confidence intervals for the counts will be produced with the \textit{MultinomialCI} function in the \textit{DescTools} package. We call the results of this function \textit{MCI}. These results will then be converted from proportions to counts and added to the \textit{Sum} data frame.

We will use the \texttt{scale_fill_manual} option at the end of the code to change the fill on the bars to grays.
Note that this example uses two-way data in a data frame, and extracts the count of observations from the `Summarize` function. A similar plot, using one-way data, and starting with a vector of counts, is shown in the “Multinomial test example with plot and confidence intervals” in the Goodness-of-Fit Tests for Nominal Variables chapter.

```r
library(FSA)

Sum = Summarize(Steps ~ Teacher + Sex, 
data=Data)

library(DescTools)

MCI = MultinomCI(Sum$n, 
conf.level=0.95)

Total = sum(Sum$n)

Sum$lower = MCI[, 'lwr.ci'] * Total
Sum$upper = MCI[, 'upr.ci'] * Total

### The few lines above create new variables in the data frame Sum
## for the multinomial confidence intervals for n

### The data frame to use.

ggplot(Sum, 
### The data frame to use.
aes(x = Teacher, 
y = n, 
fill = Sex)) +

geom_bar(stat = "identity", 
color = "black", 
position = pd) +

geom_errorbar(aes(ymin = lower, 
ymax = upper), 
width = 0.2, 
size = 0.7,
```

94
Bar plots of the counts of observations for female and male students in each of three classes. Error bars indicate the 95% multinomial confidence intervals for each count (Sison and Glaz method).

**Mosaic plot**
A mosaic plot can be constructed with the `mosaic` function in the `vcd` package.

Interpretation of mosaic plots is discussed in the *Introduction to Tests for Nominal Variables* chapter.

```r
library(vcd)
mosaic(~ Sex + Teacher, 
       data = Data, 
       shade = TRUE, 
       legend = TRUE)
```
Mosaic plot for frequencies of observations for female and male students in each class.

**Ordering plot categories**

The order in which factor variable levels are plotted can often be controlled by ordering the levels of the factor, for example,

```r
Data$Teacher = factor(Data$Teacher, 
    levels=c("Totoro", "Catbus", "Satsuki"))
levels(Data$Teacher)

[1] "Totoro"  "Catbus"  "Satsuki"
```

If you are going to be using other variables from the data frame, for example for error bars or mean separation letters, it is sometimes best to reorder the whole data frame according to the factor variable you want to use, and then reorder the levels of that variable as well. Sometimes this is overkill, but it prevents any mismatching of the observations from the different variables.

```r
library(rcompanion)
Sum = groupwiseMean(Steps ~ Teacher, 
    data = Data, 
    conf = 0.95, 
    digits = 3, 
    traditional = FALSE, 
    percentile = TRUE)

Sum

       Teacher  n Mean Conf.level Percentile.lower Percentile.upper
```

```r
```

96
### Optional analyses: Describing histogram shapes

The following plots are histograms of water quality data for U.S. Geological Survey station 1467016, Rancocas Creek at Willingboro, NJ, from approximately 1970 to 1974 (USGS, 2015).

The distribution of $pH$ follows a normal distribution relatively well. It is rather symmetric around a mean of about 6. A normal curve with the same mean and standard deviation as the data has been superimposed as a blue line.

The distribution of *conductance* shows a slight right skew, but otherwise is relatively symmetric around a mean of about 120.

I would describe the distribution of *dissolved oxygen* as bimodal. It seems to have relatively many observations clustered around a value of 3 and around a value of 9.

I'm not sure how I would describe the distribution of *temperature*. If pressed I might say it is relatively uniform. A histogram of a uniform distribution would have all bars of equal height. You might see *temperature* as bimodal, or of indescribable shape.

Results from the `describe` function in the `psych` package are shown below the histograms, and kernel density plots of these distributions are shown below those results.

For examples of skewed histograms, see the “Skewness” sub-section of the “Statistics of shape for interval/ratio data” section in the *Descriptive Statistics* chapter.
### describe(pH)

vars   n mean   sd median trimmed  mad min max range skew kurtosis   se
1    1 366 6.02 0.24      6    6.01 0.15 5.2 6.7   1.5 0.11 0.84 0.01

### describe(Conductance)

vars   n   mean    sd median trimmed   mad min max range skew kurtosis   se
1    1 366 121.95 14.08    121  121.33 13.34  94 162    68 0.38 -0.26 0.74

### describe(DO)

vars   n mean   sd median trimmed  mad min max range skew kurtosis   se
1    1 354 6.32 3.43   6.35  6.25 4.82 0.5 12.4  11.9 0.09 -1.42 0.18

### describe(Temperature)

vars   n  mean   sd median trimmed   mad min  max range skew kurtosis   se
1    1 366 14.48 7.98  14.55 14.54 11.64 1.5 27.1  25.6 0.02 -1.43 0.42
Optional analyses: Misleading and disorienting plots

The need to include measures of variation

The following plot mimics one I’ve seen, showing median salary for non-tenure-track university faculty by race or ethnicity. One minor complaint I have about it is that the x-axis label doesn’t really describe the x-axis. Really, it should be labeled “Race or ethnicity”, and the categories should be listed along the x-axis.

The larger complaint I have is that there are no measures of variation indicated for the medians. As presented, one might say, “Blacks have a higher median salary than do Whites, whose salary is higher still than that of Hispanics.” But I suspect that the variation within each demographic category is much greater than the variation between them. If we had error bars on each bar, we might be less inclined to think that there is a real (statistically significant) difference among groups. Of course, it’s impossible to draw any conclusions without their including measures of variation or statistical analyses.

As a final note, usually if there is no statistical difference among groups, there is no need to plot their values separately. In the example of this plot, if there were no statistical difference among racial groups, we could just report one median for the whole lot, with a five-number summary, or a single box plot. There are exceptions to this; for example, in this case if salaries among racial groups were of some particular interest, we might show statistics for each group even if there were no statistical differences.
Original caption: “Median academic-year salary for full-time, non-tenure-track faculty by race or ethnicity, Fall 2010.”


**For bar charts, start the y-axis at zero**
The following plots mimic plots I saw for the same data on *Fox News* and *The Guardian*. They compare the enrollment for the Affordable Care Act (“Obamacare”) in March 2014 to the stated goal for enrollment in March 2014.

The main deficiency of the plot on the left is that the bottom of the y-axis doesn’t represent zero, but 5.75 million, making the difference in the bars look large compared with the size of first bar. For good measure, units on the y-axis are left off.

The plot on the right more honestly depicts the relationship between the difference in the bars and the size of the bars by setting the bottom of the y-axis to zero. Also, units are included on the y-axis.
Avoid disorienting the audience

The following plot mimics one released by Reuters in 2014. I didn't try to mimic the aesthetics of the plot, but you can see the original in the article cited in “Original source” at the end of the section.

The original plot had the confusing heading and sub-heading, “Gun deaths in Florida: number of murders committed using firearms”. Of course, murders aren’t the same as gun deaths, so it’s not clear what is being measured on the y-axis.

A quick look at the plot would suggest that gun murders dropped after 2005. But a more careful inspection reveals that the y-axis is inverted, in that smaller numbers are on the top and larger numbers are on the bottom. Therefore, gun murders went up after 2005!

At first I found it difficult to believe that this plot could have been made in good faith. Most commonly we put larger numbers toward the top of the y-axis. I suspect, though, that the author was using a less-common convention that positive outcomes are put toward the top of the y-axis. It makes sense if you think of zeros murders as the goal, and increasing murders are further below that goal. An example of this convention is the Hickey article in the “Reference” the end of the section. In that article, actors with a low billing score are at the top of the y-axis, since first billing is the best.

Reuters did release a second plot with the y-axis in its normal orientation, which is mimicked in the second plot.

As a final note, there are cases where the y-axis is traditionally inverted. For example when plotting the depth to water table in groundwater hydrology, the surface (0 depth) is plotted at the top, so as the depth increases, the value is vertically lower on the plot.
First plot, with y-axis reversed.

Second plot, with y-axis in its common orientation.


Use the best model
The following plot mimics one published by the Organisation for Economic Co-operation and Development. The model they fit to the data is shown as the blue curve. It’s subtle, but the model makes assumptions that may not fit the data well. In particular, the author chose a simple logarithmic model for which $y$ continues to increase as $x$ increases. [In reality, I think they chose a model from the limited options in Excel, probably without thinking about it much.] One implication in this plot is that life expectancy in the United States, USA, is notably lower than what the model predicts.

But I don’t think there’s any good reason to suspect that life expectancy would continue to increase as health care spending increases, beyond some limit. Life expectancy is probably limited by human biology, limits in medical science, and intractable human behaviors. Looking at just the data points and ignoring the blue curve, the data suggest to me that life expectancy increases as spending increases up to about 2500 dollars (about where Israel, ISR, is) and then plateaus. Spending beyond this critical value results in no further increase in life expectancy.

I created the model in the second plot, which uses a quadratic plateau model. With this model, a quadratic curve rises to a plateau. This model predicts a critical level of about 3500 dollars, about where Japan, JPN, is. It also suggests that life expectancy in the United States is lower than the model predicts, but not much more than Switzerland’s, CHE, or Japan’s is above it. But more importantly, this model and other similar alternatives predict a critical value in healthcare spending, above which we should not expect an increase in life expectancy. Of course, there are other factors that would affect life expectancy, and maybe spending above this critical value is warranted in some cases.

The third plot uses a linear plateau model, which is composed of a linear increasing segment and a plateau segment. It fits the data slightly better than the quadratic plateau model, and indicates a critical level near 2500 dollars.
Second plot with quadratic plateau model.

Third plot with linear plateau model.

References


Wickham, H. 2013. ggplot2 0.9.3.1. docs.ggplot2.org/current/.

Optional readings I


Optional readings II


“Graphing Distributions, Chapter 2 in Lane, D.M. (ed.). No date. Introduction to Statistics, v. 2.0. onlinestatbook.com/. (Stem and Leaf Displays, Histograms, Frequency Polygons, Box Plots, Bar Charts, Line Graphs, Dot Plots.)


**Exercises E**

1. Look at the histogram of the steps taken by male and female students.
   a. Would you describe the distributions of each as symmetrical, skewed, bimodal, or uniform?
   b. If skewed, in which direction?
   c. For the data for steps for female students, would using each of the following be appropriate?
      i. Median
      ii. Mean
      iii. Standard deviation
      iv. 1st quartile
      v. Standard error
      vi. 95th percentile

2. Look at the box plot of the steps taken by all students.
   a. Estimate the minimum, 25th percentile, median, 75th percentile, and maximum.
   b. Write a few sentences interpreting these results.
3. In box plots including the mean, a symmetrical distribution will have the mean close to the median, and the box will be symmetrical on either side of the median line. Looking at the box plot of the steps taken by female and male students, would you describe the distributions of each as symmetrical or skewed?

4. Looking at the plot of mean steps for female and male students, estimate the mean of each.

5. It is justified to say that group means with non-overlapping 95% confidence intervals are statistically different. Looking at the plot of mean steps with confidence intervals for female and male students, are the two means statistically different?

6. a. Looking at the interaction plot for mean steps for female and male students by each class, do the error bars for standard error overlap or not for each teacher?

   b. Write a couple of sentences interpreting these results. Include the practical importance of the results. (For example, is the difference in means in a certain class large enough to be practically important? You might consider the difference in means as a percentage of the absolute value of the mean. Also, consider the spread of the data or the standard errors of the means.)

7. Look at the scatter plot.

   a. Does it look like there is a correlation or relationship between Steps and Rating, or not?

   b. If so, how would you describe it?

   c. Is the relationship of practical importance?

8. Look at any of the plots for nominal data.

   a. Are there more females or males in these classes?

   b. In which class is the greatest disparity?

   c. Write a couple of sentences reporting these results.

9–11. As part of a nutrition education program, extension educators had students keep diaries of what they ate for a day and then calculated the calories students consumed.

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Student</th>
<th>Teacher</th>
<th>Sex</th>
<th>Calories</th>
<th>Rating</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>a</td>
<td>Tetsuo</td>
<td>male</td>
<td>2300</td>
<td>3</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>b</td>
<td>Tetsuo</td>
<td>female</td>
<td>1800</td>
<td>3</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>c</td>
<td>Tetsuo</td>
<td>male</td>
<td>1900</td>
<td>4</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>d</td>
<td>Tetsuo</td>
<td>female</td>
<td>1700</td>
<td>5</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>e</td>
<td>Tetsuo</td>
<td>male</td>
<td>2200</td>
<td>4</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>f</td>
<td>Tetsuo</td>
<td>female</td>
<td>1600</td>
<td>3</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>g</td>
<td>Tetsuo</td>
<td>male</td>
<td>1800</td>
<td>3</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>
For each of the following, answer the question, and show the plot or other output from the analyses you used to answer the question.

9. Plot a histogram of the calories consumed for males and females.
   a. Write a caption for this plot. Submit the plot and caption.
   b. Would you describe the distribution of each as symmetrical, skewed, bimodal, or uniform?

10. Produce box plots of the calories consumed for males and females.
    a. Write a caption for this plot. Submit the plot and caption.
    b. Report the 25th percentile, median, and 75th percentile. (Estimate from the plot, or report more precise statistics.)

11. Plot means of the calories consumed for males and females. Include error bars for either confidence intervals or standard error of the means. You can use either `qplot` or `ggplot`, and you can use either the bar chart style or the "plot of means" style.
    a. Write a caption for this plot. Submit the plot and caption.
    b. Add a sentence reporting the respective means in the caption.
    c. Are the calories consumed likely to be statistically different?
Hypothesis Testing and p-values

Statistical inference

Most of what we’ve covered in this book so far is about producing descriptive statistics: calculating means and medians, plotting data in various ways, and producing confidence intervals. The bulk of the rest of this book will cover statistical inference: using statistical tests to draw some conclusion about the data. We’ve already done this a little bit in earlier chapters by using confidence intervals to conclude if means are different or not among groups.

As Dr. Nic mentions in her article in the “References and further reading” section, this is the part where people sometimes get stumped. It is natural for most of us to use summary statistics or plots, but jumping to statistical inference needs a little change in perspective. The idea of using some statistical test to answer a question isn’t a difficult concept, but some of the following discussion gets a little theoretical. The video from the Statistics Learning Center in the “References and further reading” section does a good job of explaining the basis of statistical inference.

The most important thing to gain from this chapter is an understanding of how to use the p-value, alpha, and decision rule to test the null hypothesis. But once you are comfortable with that, you will want to return to this chapter to have a better understanding of the theory behind this process.

Packages used in this chapter

The packages used in this chapter include:

- `lsr`

The following commands will install these packages if they are not already installed:

```r
if(!require(lsr)){install.packages("lsr")}
```

Hypothesis testing

The null and alternative hypotheses

The statistical tests in this book rely on testing a null hypothesis, which has a specific formulation for each test. The null hypothesis always describes the case where e.g. two groups are not different or there is no correlation between two variables, etc.

The alternative hypothesis is the contrary of the null hypothesis, and so describes the cases where there is a difference among groups or a correlation between two variables, etc.

Notice that the definitions of null hypothesis and alternative hypothesis have nothing to do with what you want to find or don’t want to find, or what is interesting or not interesting, or what you expect to find or what you don’t expect to find. If you were comparing the height of men and women, the null
Hypothesis would be that the height of men and the height of women were not different. Yet, you might find it surprising if you found this hypothesis to be true for some population you were studying. Likewise, if you were studying the income of men and women, the null hypothesis would be that the income of men and women are not different, in the population you are studying. In this case you might be hoping the null hypothesis is true, though you might be unsurprised if the alternative hypothesis were true. In any case, the null hypothesis will take the form that there is no difference between groups, there is no correlation between two variables, or there is no effect of this variable in our model.

**p-value definition**
Most of the tests in this book rely on using a statistic called the *p*-value to evaluate if we should reject, or fail to reject, the null hypothesis.

*Given the assumption that the null hypothesis is true*, the *p*-value is defined as the probability of obtaining a result equal to or more extreme than what was actually observed in the data.

We’ll unpack this definition in a little bit.

**Decision rule**
The *p*-value for the given data will be determined by conducting the statistical test.

This *p*-value is then compared to a pre-determined value *alpha*. Most commonly, an *alpha* value of 0.05 is used, but there is nothing magic about this value.

If the *p*-value for the test is less than *alpha*, we reject the null hypothesis.

If the *p*-value is greater than or equal to *alpha*, we fail to reject the null hypothesis.

**Coin flipping example**
For an example of using the *p*-value for hypothesis testing, imagine you have a coin you will toss 100 times. The null hypothesis is that the coin is fair—that is, that it is equally likely that the coin will land on heads as land on tails. The alternative hypothesis is that the coin is not fair. Let’s say for this experiment you throw the coin 100 times and it lands on heads 95 times out of those hundred. The *p*-value in this case would be the probability of getting 95, 96, 97, 98, 99, or 100 heads, or 0, 1, 2, 3, 4, or 5 heads, *assuming that the null hypothesis is true*.

This is what we call a two-sided test, since we are testing both extremes suggested by our data: getting 95 or greater heads or getting 95 or greater tails. In most cases we will use two sided tests.

You can imagine that the *p*-value for this data will be quite small. If the null hypothesis is true, and the coin is fair, there would be a low probability of getting 95 or more heads or 95 or more tails.

Using a binomial test, the *p*-value is < 0.0001.

(Actually, R reports it as < 2.2e-16, which is shorthand for the number in scientific notation, 2.2 x 10^{-16}, which is 0.00000000000000022, with 15 zeros after the decimal point.)
Assuming an \textit{alpha} of 0.05, since the \textit{p}-value is less than \textit{alpha}, we reject the null hypothesis. That is, we conclude that the coin is not fair.

\begin{verbatim}
binom.test(5, 100, 0.5)

Exact binomial test

number of successes = 5, number of trials = 100, p-value < 2.2e-16

alternative hypothesis: true probability of success is not equal to 0.5
\end{verbatim}

**Passing and failing example**

As another example, imagine we are considering two classrooms, and we have counts of students who passed a certain exam. We want to know if one classroom had statistically more passes or failures than the other.

In our example each classroom will have 10 students. The data is arranged into a contingency table.

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Classroom</th>
<th>Passed</th>
<th>Failed</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>A</td>
<td>8</td>
<td>2</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>B</td>
<td>3</td>
<td>7</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

We will use Fisher's exact test to test if there is an association between \textit{Classroom} and the counts of passed and failed students. The null hypothesis is that there is no association between \textit{Classroom} and \textit{Passed/Failed}, based on the relative counts in each cell of the contingency table.

\begin{verbatim}
Input = (
  Classroom  Passed  Failed
  A          8       2
  B          3       7
)
Matrix = as.matrix(read.table(textConnection(Input),
  header=TRUE,
  row.names=1))

Matrix

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Passed</th>
<th>Failed</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>A</td>
<td>8</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>B</td>
<td>3</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

fisher.test(Matrix)

Fisher's Exact Test for Count Data

p-value = 0.06978
The reported $p$-value is 0.070. If we use an $alpha$ of 0.05, then the $p$-value is greater than $alpha$, so we fail to reject the null hypothesis. That is, we did not have sufficient evidence to say that there is an association between Classroom and Passed/Failed.

More extreme data in this case would be if the counts in the upper left or lower right (or both!) were greater.

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Classroom</th>
<th>Passed</th>
<th>Failed</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>A</td>
<td>9</td>
<td>1</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>B</td>
<td>3</td>
<td>7</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Classroom</th>
<th>Passed</th>
<th>Failed</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>A</td>
<td>10</td>
<td>0</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>B</td>
<td>3</td>
<td>7</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

and so on, with Classroom B...

In most cases we would want to consider as "extreme" not only the results when Classroom A has a high frequency of passing students, but also results when Classroom B has a high frequency of passing students. This is called a two-sided or two-tailed test. If we were only concerned with one classroom having a high frequency of passing students, relatively, we would instead perform a one-sided test. The default for the `fisher.test` function is two-sided, and usually you will want to use two-sided tests.

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Classroom</th>
<th>Passed</th>
<th>Failed</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>A</td>
<td>2</td>
<td>8</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>B</td>
<td>7</td>
<td>3</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Classroom</th>
<th>Passed</th>
<th>Failed</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>A</td>
<td>1</td>
<td>9</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>B</td>
<td>7</td>
<td>3</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Classroom</th>
<th>Passed</th>
<th>Failed</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>A</td>
<td>0</td>
<td>10</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>B</td>
<td>7</td>
<td>3</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

and so on, with Classroom B...

In both cases, "extreme" means there is a stronger association between Classroom and Passed/Failed.

**Clarification of some terms**

"**Statistically significant**"

In the context of this book, the term "significant" means "statistically significant".

Whenever the decision rule finds that $p < alpha$, the difference in groups, the association, or the correlation under consideration is then considered "statistically significant" or "significant".
No effect size or practical considerations enter into determining whether an effect is significant or not. The only exception is that test assumptions and requirements for appropriate data must also be met in order for the $p$-value to be valid.

**What you need to consider:**
- The null hypothesis
- $p$, $\alpha$, and the decision rule,
- Your result. That is, whether the difference in groups, the association, or the correlation is significant or not.

**What you should report on your assignments:**
- The $p$-value
- The conclusion, e.g. "There was a significant difference in the mean heights of boys and girls in the class." It is best to preface this with the "reject" or "fail to reject" language concerning your decision about the null hypothesis.

"Practical" / "Practical importance"
If there is a significant result, the question of practical importance asks if the difference or association is large enough to matter in the real world.

If there is no significant result, the question of practical importance asks if the difference or association is large enough to warrant another look, for example by running another test with a larger sample size or that controls variability in observations better.

Usually you will consider an effect in relation to the magnitude of measurements. That is, you might look at the difference in medians as a percent of the median of one group or of the global median. Or, you might look at the difference in medians in relation to the range of answers. For example, a one-point difference on a 5-point Likert item. Counts might be expressed as proportions of totals or subsets.

**What you should report on assignments:**
- The size of the effect. That is, the difference in medians or means, the difference in counts, or the proportions of counts among groups.
- Where appropriate, the size of the effect expressed as a percentage or proportion.
- Your conclusion as to whether this effect is large enough to be important in the real world.
- The context, explanation, or support to justify your conclusion.
- If there is an effect size statistic—such as $r$, epsilon-squared, $\phi$, Cramér's $V$, or Cohen's $d$—: report this and its interpretation (small, medium, large), and incorporate this into your conclusion.

"Other practical considerations"
These are considerations that aren’t included in the data presented. Examples might include the cost of one treatment over another, including time investment, or whether there is a large risk in selecting one treatment over another (e.g., if people’s lives are on the line).

**What to include on your assignments:**
Theory and practice of using p-values

Wait, does this make any sense?
Recall that the definition of the p-value is:

Given the assumption that the null hypothesis is true, the p-value is defined as the probability of obtaining a result equal to or more extreme than what was actually observed in the data.

The astute reader might be asking herself, “If I’m trying to determine if the null hypothesis is true or not, why would I start with the assumption that the null hypothesis is true? And why am I using a probability of getting certain data given that a hypothesis is true? Don’t I want to instead determine the probability of the hypothesis given my data?”

The answer is yes, we would like a method to determine the likelihood of our hypothesis being true given our data, but we use the Null Hypothesis Significance Test approach since it is relatively straightforward, and has wide acceptance historically and across fields.

In practice we do use the results of the statistical tests to reach conclusions about the null hypothesis.

Technically, the p-value says nothing about the alternative hypothesis. But logically, if the null hypothesis is rejected, then its logical complement, the alternative hypothesis, is supported. Practically, this is how we handle significant p-values, though this practical approach generates disapproval in some theoretical circles.

Statistics is like a jury?
Note the language used when testing the null hypothesis. Based on the results of our statistical tests, we either reject the null hypothesis, or fail to reject the null hypothesis.

This is somewhat similar to the approach of a jury in a trial. The jury either finds sufficient evidence to declare someone guilty, or fails to find sufficient evidence to declare someone guilty.

Failing to convict someone isn’t necessarily the same as declaring someone innocent. Likewise, if we fail to reject the null hypothesis, we shouldn’t assume that the null hypothesis is true. It may be that we didn’t have sufficient samples to get a result that would have allowed us to reject the null hypothesis, or maybe there are some other factors affecting the results that we didn’t account for. This is similar to an “innocent until proven guilty” stance.

Errors in inference
For the most part, the statistical tests we use are based on probability, and our data could always be the result of chance. Considering the coin flipping example above, if we did flip a coin 100 times and came up with 95 heads, we would be compelled to conclude that the coin was not fair. But 95 heads could happen with a fair coin strictly by chance.
We can, therefore, make two kinds of errors in testing the null hypothesis:

- A Type I error occurs when the null hypothesis really is true, but based on our decision rule we reject the null hypothesis. In this case, our result is a false positive; we think there is an effect (unfair coin, association between variables, difference among groups) when really there isn’t. The probability of making this kind error is \( \alpha \), the same \( \alpha \) we used in our decision rule.

- A Type II error occurs when the null hypothesis is really false, but based on our decision rule we fail to reject the null hypothesis. In this case, our result is a false negative; we have failed to find an effect that really does exist. The probability of making this kind of error is called \( \beta \).

The following table summarizes these errors.

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Reality</th>
<th>Decision of Test</th>
<th>Null is true</th>
<th>Null is false</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>Reject null hypothesis</td>
<td>Type I error</td>
<td>(prob. = ( \alpha ))</td>
<td>Correctly reject null (prob. = 1 - ( \beta ))</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Retain null hypothesis</td>
<td>Correctly retain null (prob. = 1 - ( \alpha ))</td>
<td></td>
<td>Type II error (prob. = ( \beta ))</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

**Statistical power**

The statistical power of a test is a measure of the ability of the test to detect a real effect. It is related to the effect size, the sample size, and our chosen \( \alpha \) level.

The effect size is a measure of how unfair a coin is, how strong the association between two variables, or how large the difference among groups. As the effect size increases or as the number of observations we collect increases, or as the \( \alpha \) level decreases, the power of the test increases.

Statistical power in the table above is indicated by \( 1 - \beta \), which is the probability of correctly rejecting the null hypothesis.

An example should make these relationship clear. Imagine we are sampling a class of 7th grade students for their height. In reality, for this class, the girls are taller than the boys, but the difference is small (that is the effect size is small), and there is a lot of variability in students’ heights. You can imagine that in order to detect the difference between girls and boys that we would have to measure many students. If we fail to sample enough students, we might make a Type II error. That is, we might fail to detect the actual difference in heights between sexes.
If we had a different experiment with a larger effect size—for example the weight difference between mature hamsters and mature hedgehogs—we might need fewer samples to detect the difference.

Note also, that our chosen alpha plays a role in the power of our test, too. All things being equal, across many tests, if we decrease our alpha, that is to insist on a lower rate of Type I errors, we are more likely to commit a Type II error, and so have a lower power. This is analogous to a case of a meticulous jury that has a very high standard of proof to convict someone. In this case, the likelihood of a false conviction is low, but the likelihood of a letting a guilty person go free is relatively high.

The 0.05 alpha value is not dogma
The level of alpha is traditionally set at 0.05 in some disciplines, though there is sometimes reason to choose a different value.

One situation in which the alpha level is increased is in preliminary studies in which it is better to include potentially significant effects even if there is not strong evidence for keeping them. In this case, the researcher is accepting an inflated chance of Type I errors in order to decrease the chance of Type II errors.

Imagine an experiment in which you wanted to see if various environmental treatments would improve student learning. In a preliminary study, you might have many treatments, with few observations each, and you want to retain any potentially successful treatments for future study. For example, you might try playing classical music, improved lighting, complimenting students, and so on, and see if there is any effect on student learning. You might relax your alpha value to 0.10 or 0.15 in the preliminary study to see what treatments to include in future studies.

On the other hand, in situations where a Type I, false positive, error might be costly in terms of money or people’s health, a lower alpha can be used, perhaps, 0.01 or 0.001. You can imagine a case in which there is an established treatment for cancer, and a new treatment is being tested. Because the new treatment is likely to be expensive and to hold people’s lives in the balance, a researcher would want to be very sure that the new treatment is more effective than the established treatment. In reality, the researchers would not just lower the alpha level, but also look at the effect size, submit the research for peer review, replicate the study, be sure there were no problems with the design of the study or the data collection, and weigh the practical implications.

The 0.05 alpha value is almost dogma
In theory, as a researcher, you would determine the alpha level you feel is appropriate. That is, the probability of making a Type I error when the null hypothesis is in fact true.

In reality, though, 0.05 is almost always used in most fields for readers of this book. Choosing a different alpha value will rarely go without question. It is best to keep with the 0.05 level unless you have good justification for another value, or are in a discipline where other values are routinely used.

Practical advice
One good practice is to report actual p-values from analyses. It is fine to also simply say, e.g. “The dependent variable was significantly correlated with variable A (p < 0.05).” But I prefer when possible to say, “The dependent variable was significantly correlated with variable A (p = 0.026).”
It is probably best to avoid using terms like “marginally significant” or “borderline significant” for \( p \)-values less than 0.10 but greater than 0.05, though you might encounter similar phrases. It is better to simply report the \( p \)-values of tests or effects in straight-forward manner. If you had cause to include certain model effects or results from other tests, they can be reported as e.g., “Variables correlated with the dependent variable with \( p < 0.15 \) were \( A \), \( B \), and \( C \).”

**Philosophy of statistical analyses**

*Statistics is not like a trial*

When analyzing data, the analyst should not approach the task as would a lawyer for the prosecution. That is, the analyst should not be searching for significant effects and tests, but should instead be like an independent investigator using lines of evidence to find out what is most likely to true given the data, graphical analysis, and statistical analysis available.

*Practical importance and statistical significance*

It is important to remember to not let \( p \)-values be the only guide for drawing conclusions. It is equally important to look at the size of the effects you are measuring, as well as take into account other practical considerations like the costs of choosing a certain path of action.

For example, imagine we want to compare the SAT scores of two SAT preparation classes with a \( t \)-test.

```r
Class.A = c(1500, 1505, 1505, 1510, 1510, 1515, 1515, 1520, 1520, 1520)
Class.B = c(1510, 1515, 1515, 1520, 1520, 1520, 1525, 1525, 1530, 1530)

> t.test(Class.A, Class.B)

Welch Two Sample t-test

    t = -3.3968, df = 18, p-value = 0.003214

    mean of x mean of y
    1511      1521
```

The \( p \)-value is reported as 0.003, so we would consider there to be a significant difference between the two classes (\( p < 0.05 \)).

But we have to ask ourselves the practical question, is a difference of 10 points on the SAT large enough for us to care about? What if enrolling in one class costs significantly more than the other class? Is it worth the extra money for a difference of 10 points on average?

*p-values and effect sizes*

It should be remembered that \( p \)-values do not indicate the size of the effect being studied. It shouldn’t be assumed that a small \( p \)-value indicates a large difference between groups, or vice-versa.
For example, in the SAT example above, the p-value is fairly small, but the size of the effect (difference between classes) in this case is relatively small (10 points, especially small relative to the range of scores students receive on the SAT).

In converse, there could be a relatively large size of the effects, but if there is a lot of variability in the data or the sample size is not large enough, the p-value could be relatively large.

In this example, the SAT scores differ by 100 points between classes, but because the variability is greater than in the previous example, the p-value is not significant.

```r
Class.C = c(1000, 1100, 1200, 1250, 1300, 1300, 1400, 1400, 1450, 1500)
Class.D = c(1100, 1200, 1300, 1350, 1400, 1400, 1500, 1500, 1550, 1600)

t.test(Class.A, Class.B)

Welch Two Sample t-test

t = -1.4174, df = 18, p-value = 0.1735

mean of x mean of y
1290 1390

boxplot(cbind(Class.C, Class.D))
```

**p-values and sample sizes**

It should also be remembered that p-values are affected by sample size. For a given effect size and variability in the data, as the sample size increases, the p-value is likely to decrease. For large data sets, small effects can result in significant p-values.

As an example, let’s take the data from Class.C and Class.D and double the number of observations for each, and rename them Class.E and Class.F.

```r
Class.E = c(1000, 1100, 1200, 1250, 1300, 1300, 1400, 1400, 1450, 1500,
          1000, 1100, 1200, 1250, 1300, 1300, 1400, 1400, 1450, 1500)
Class.F = c(1100, 1200, 1300, 1350, 1400, 1400, 1500, 1500, 1550, 1600,
          1100, 1200, 1300, 1350, 1400, 1400, 1500, 1500, 1550, 1600)
```
Hypothesis Testing and P-values

Summary and Analysis of Extension Education Program Evaluation in R

```r

t.test(Class.E, Class.F)

Welch Two Sample t-test

t = -2.0594, df = 38, p-value = 0.04636

mean of x  mean of y
1290      1390

boxplot(cbind(Class.E, Class.F))

```

Notice that the p-value is lower for the t-test for Class.E and Class.F than it was for Class.C and Class.D. Also notice that the means reported in the output are the same, and the box plots would look the same.

**Effect size statistics**

One way to account for the effect of sample size on our statistical tests is to consider effect size statistics. These statistics reflect the size of the effect in a standardized way, and are unaffected by sample size.

An appropriate effect size statistic for a t-test is Cohen’s $d$. It takes the difference in means between the two groups and divides by the pooled standard deviation of the groups. Cohen’s $d$ equals zero if the means are the same, and increases to infinity as the difference in means increases relative to the standard deviation.

In the following, note that Cohen’s $d$ is not affected by the sample size difference in the Class.C / Class.D and the Class.E / Class.F examples.

```r

library(lsr)

cohensD(Class.C, Class.D,
method = "raw")

[1] 0.668

cohensD(Class.E, Class.F,
method = "raw")

[1] 0.668

```

Effect size statistics are standardized so that they are not affected by the units of measurements of the data. This makes them interpretable across different situations. A Cohen’s $d$ of 1 suggests that the two means differ by one pooled standard deviation. A Cohen’s $d$ of 0.5 suggests that the two means differ by one-half the pooled standard deviation.
For example, if we create new variables—*Class.G* and *Class.H*—that are the SAT scores from the previous example expressed as a proportion of a 1600 score, Cohen’s *d* will be the same as in the previous example.

\[
\begin{align*}
\text{Class.G} &= \frac{\text{Class.E}}{1600} \\
\text{Class.H} &= \frac{\text{Class.F}}{1600}
\end{align*}
\]

\[
\begin{align*}
\text{Class.G} \\
\text{Class.H}
\end{align*}
\]

\[
\text{cohensD(Class.G, Class.H, method="raw")}
\]

\[1\] 0.668

**The problem of multiple p-values**

One concept that will be in important in the following discussion is that when there are multiple tests producing multiple *p*-values, that there is an inflation of the Type I error rate. That is, there is a higher chance of making false-positive errors.

This simply follows mathematically from the definition of *alpha*. If we allow a probability of 0.05, or 5% chance, of making a Type I error for any one test, as we do more and more tests, the chances that at least one of them having a false positive becomes greater and greater.

**p-value adjustment**

One way we deal with the problem of multiple *p*-values in statistical analyses is to adjust *p*-values when we do a series of tests together (for example, if we are comparing the means of multiple groups).

*Don’t use Bonferroni adjustments*

There are various *p*-value adjustments available in R. In certain types of tests, in this book we use Tukey range adjustment. In other cases, we will use FDR, which stands for *false discovery rate*, and in R is an alias for the Benjamini and Hochberg method.

Unfortunately, students in analysis of experiments courses often learn to use Bonferroni adjustment for *p*-values. This method is simple to do with hand calculations, but is excessively conservative in most situations, and, in my opinion, antiquated.

There are other *p*-value adjustment methods, and the choice of which one to use is dictated either by which are common in your field of study, or by doing enough reading to understand which are statistically most appropriate for your application.

**Preplanned tests**

The statistical tests covered in this book assume that tests are preplanned for their *p*-values to be accurate. That is, in theory, you set out an experiment, collect the data as planned, and then say “I’m going to analyze it with kind of model and do these post-hoc tests afterwards”, and report these results, and that’s all you would do.
Some authors emphasize this idea of preplanned tests, but in reality, of course, researchers will often collect data, and then use an exploratory data analysis approach to see what the data suggests before heading into statistical analyses.

**Exploratory data analysis**
Exploratory data analysis often relies upon examining the data with plotting the data in various ways and using simple tests like correlation tests to suggest what statistical analysis makes sense.

Sometimes the preplanned approach is appropriate. If an experiment is set out in a specific design, then usually it is appropriate to use the analysis suggested by this design.

However, in general I recommend an exploratory approach. There may be interesting correlations hidden in the data. Or perhaps the distribution of the data didn't allow for the originally planned analysis.

**p-value hacking**
It is important when approaching data from an exploratory approach, to avoid committing *p*-value hacking. Imagine the case in which the researcher collects many different measurements across a range of subjects. The researcher might be tempted to simply try different tests and models to relate one variable to another, for all the variables. He might continue to do this until he found a test with a significant *p*-value.

But this would be a form of *p*-value hacking.

Because an *alpha* value of 0.05 allows us to make a false-positive error five percent of the time, finding one *p*-value below 0.05 after several successive tests may simply be due to chance.

Some forms of *p*-value hacking are more egregious. For example, if one were to collect some data, run a test, and then continue to collect data and run tests iteratively until a significant *p*-value is found.

**Publication bias**
A related issue in science is that there is a bias to publish, or to report, only significant results. This can also lead to an inflation of the false-positive rate. As a hypothetical example, imagine if there are currently 20 similar studies being conducted testing a similar effect—let’s say the effect of glucosamine supplements on joint pain. If 19 of those studies found no effect and so were discarded, but one study found an effect using an *alpha* of 0.05, and was published, is this really any support that glucosamine supplements decrease joint pain?

**A few of xkcd comics**

*Significant*
[link](https://xkcd.com/882/)

*Null hypothesis*
[link](https://xkcd.com/892)
Experiments, sampling, and causation

Types of experimental designs

Experimental designs
A true experimental design assigns treatments in a systematic manner. The experimenter must be able to manipulate the experimental treatments and assign them to subjects. Since treatments are randomly assigned to subjects, a causal inference can be made for significant results. That is, we can say that the variation in the dependent variable is caused by the variation in the independent variable.

For interval/ratio data, traditional experimental designs can be analyzed with specific parametric models, assuming other model assumptions are met. These traditional experimental designs include:

- Completely random design
- Randomized complete block design
- Factorial
- Split-plot
- Latin square

Quasi-experiment designs
Often a researcher cannot assign treatments to individual experimental units, but can assign treatments to groups. For example, if students are in a specific grade or class, it would not be practical to randomly assign students to grades or classes. But different classes could receive different treatments (such as different curricula). Causality can be inferred cautiously if treatments are randomly assigned and there is some understanding of the factors that affect the outcome.

Observational studies
In observational studies, the independent variables are not manipulated, and no treatments are assigned. Surveys are often like this, as are studies of natural systems without experimental manipulation. Statistical analysis can reveal the relationships among variables, but causality cannot be inferred. This is because there may be other unstudied variables that affect the measured variables in the study.

Sampling
Good sampling practices are critical for producing good data. In general, samples need to be collected in a random fashion so that bias is avoided.

In survey data, bias is often introduced by a self-selection bias. For example, internet or telephone surveys include only those who respond to these requests. Might there be some relevant difference in the variables of interest between those who respond to such requests and the general population being surveyed? Or bias could be introduced by the researcher selecting some subset of potential subjects, for example only surveying a 4-H program with particularly cooperative students and ignoring other clubs. This is sometimes called “convenience sampling”.

xkcd.com/1478/
In election forecasting, good pollsters need to account for selection bias and other biases in the survey process. For example, if a survey is done by landline telephone, those being surveyed are more likely to be older than the general population of voters, and so likely to have a bias in their voting patterns.

**Plan ahead and be consistent**
It is sometimes necessary to change experimental conditions during the course of an experiment. Equipment might fail, or unusual weather may prevent making meaningful measurements.

But in general, it is much better to plan ahead and be consistent with measurements.

**Consistency**
People sometimes have the tendency to change measurement frequency or experimental treatments during the course of a study. This inevitably causes headaches in trying to analyze data, and makes writing up the results messy. Try to avoid this.

**Controls and checks**
If you are testing an experimental treatment, include a *check* treatment that almost certainly will have an effect and a *control* treatment that almost certainly won’t. A *control* treatment will receive no treatment and a *check* treatment will receive a treatment known to be successful. In an educational setting, perhaps a control group receives no instruction on the topic but on another topic, and the check group will receive standard instruction.

Including checks and controls helps with the analysis in a practical sense, since they serve as standard treatments against which to compare the experimental treatments. In the case where the experimental treatments have similar effects, controls and checks allow you say, for example, “Means for the all experimental treatments were similar, but were higher than the mean for control, and lower than the mean for check treatment.”

**Include alternate measurements**
It often happens that measuring equipment fails or that a certain measurement doesn’t produce the expected results. It is therefore helpful to include measurements of several variables that can capture the potential effects. Perhaps test scores of students won’t show an effect, but a self-assessment question on how much students learned will.

**Include covariates**
Including additional independent variables that might affect the dependent variable is often helpful in an analysis. In an educational setting, you might assess student age, grade, school, town, background level in the subject, or how well they are feeling that day.

The effects of covariates on the dependent variable may be of interest in itself. But also, including covariates in an analysis can better model the data, sometimes making treatment effects more clear or making a model better meet model assumptions.

**Optional discussion: Alternative methods to the Null Hypothesis Significance Test**
The NHST controversy
Particularly in the fields of psychology and education, there has been much criticism of the null hypothesis significance test approach. From my reading, the main complaints against NHST tend to be:

- Students and researchers don’t really understand the meaning of $p$-values.
- $p$-values don’t include important information like confidence intervals or parameter estimates.
- $p$-values have properties that may be misleading, for example that they do not represent effect size, and that they change with sample size.
- We often treat an $alpha$ of 0.05 as a magical cutoff value.

Personally, I don’t find these to be very convincing arguments against the NHST approach.

The first complaint is in some sense pedantic: Like so many things, students and researchers learn the definition of $p$-values at some point and then eventually forget. This doesn’t seem to impact the usefulness of the approach.

The second point has weight only if researchers use only $p$-values to draw conclusions from statistical tests. As this book points out, one should always consider the size of the effects and practical considerations of the effects, as well present finding in table or graphical form, including confidence intervals or measures of dispersion. There is no reason why parameter estimates, goodness-of-fit statistics, and confidence intervals can’t be included when a NHST approach is followed.

The properties in the third point also don’t count much as criticism if one is using $p$-values correctly. One should understand that it is possible to have a small effect size and a small $p$-value, and vice-versa. This is not a problem, because $p$-values and effect sizes are two different concepts. We shouldn’t expect them to be the same. The fact that $p$-values change with sample size is also in no way problematic to me. It makes sense that when there is a small effect size or a lot of variability in the data that we need many samples to conclude the effect is likely to be real.

(One case where I think the considerations in the preceding point are commonly problematic is when people use statistical tests to check for the normality or homogeneity of data or model residuals. As sample size increases, these tests are better able to detect small deviations from normality or homoscedasticity. Too many people use them and think their model is inappropriate because the test can detect a small effect size, that is, a small deviation from normality or homoscedasticity).

The fourth point is a good one. It doesn’t make much sense to come to one conclusion if our $p$-value is 0.049 and the opposite conclusion if our $p$-value is 0.051. But I think this can be ameliorated by reporting the actual $p$-values from analyses. And at some point, one does sometimes have to have a cutoff value.

Overall it seems to me that these complaints condemn poor practices that the authors observe: not reporting the size of effects in some manner; not including confidence intervals or measures of
dispersion; basing conclusions solely on $p$-values; and not including important results like parameter estimates and goodness-of-fit statistics.

**Alternatives to the NHST approach**

Estimates and confidence intervals
One approach to determining statistical significance is to use estimates and confidence intervals. Estimates could be statistics like means, medians, proportions, or other calculated statistics. To compare among group medians, one might calculate the medians for each group and a 95% confidence interval for each median. Then, medians with non-overlapping confidence intervals are considered statistically significantly different.

This approach is used in a few spots in this book, including in the *Confidence Intervals* chapter and in the Jerry Coyne example.

This approach can be very straightforward, easy for readers to understand, and easy to present clearly.

Another example of when this approach can be used is in the case of estimates from an analysis like multiple regression. Instead of reporting $p$-values for terms in the model, the estimates and confidence intervals for each term in the model could be reported. Terms with confidence intervals not including zero contribute statistically to the model, and the value of slope coefficient suggests the size of the contribution of the term.

Bayesian approach
The most popular competitor to the NHST approach is Bayesian inference. Bayesian inference has the advantage of calculating the probability of the hypothesis *given the data*, which is what we thought we should be doing in the “Wait, does this make any sense?” section above. Essentially it takes prior knowledge about the distribution of the parameters of interest for a population and adds the information from the measured data to reassess some hypothesis related to the parameters of interest. If the reader will excuse the vagueness of this description, it makes intuitive sense. We start with what we suspect to be the case, and then use new data to assess our hypothesis.

One disadvantage of the Bayesian approach is that it is not obvious in most cases what could be used for legitimate prior information. A second disadvantage is that conducting Bayesian analysis is not as straightforward as the tests presented in this book.

References and further reading


HYPOTHESIS TESTING AND P-VALUES

www.youtube.com/watch?v=eyknGvncKLw.


Exercises F

1. Which of the following pair is the null hypothesis?

   A) The number of heads from the coin is not different from the number of tails.

   B) The number of heads from the coin is different from the number of tails.
2. Which of the following pair is the null hypothesis?
   
   A) The height of boys is different than the height of girls.
   
   B) The height of boys is not different than the height of girls.

3. Which of the following pair is the null hypothesis?
   
   A) There is an association between classroom and sex. That is, there is a difference in counts of girls and boys between the classes.
   
   B) There is no association between classroom and sex. That is, there is no difference in counts of girls and boys between the classes.

4. We flip a coin 10 times and it lands on heads 7 times. We want to know if the coin is fair.
   
   a. What is the null hypothesis?
   
   b. Looking at the code below, and assuming an alpha of 0.05, What do you decide (use the reject or fail to reject language)?
   
   c. In practical terms, what do you conclude?

   ```r
   binom.test(7, 10, 0.5)
   
   Exact binomial test
   number of successes = 7, number of trials = 10, p-value = 0.3438
   ```

5. We measure the height of 9 boys and 9 girls in a class, in centimeters. We want to know if one group is taller than the other.
   
   a. What is the null hypothesis?
   
   b. Looking at the code below, and assuming an alpha of 0.05, What do you decide (use the reject or fail to reject language)?
   
   c. In practical terms, what do you conclude? Address the practical importance of the results.

   ```r
   Girls = c(152, 150, 140, 160, 145, 155, 150, 152, 147)
   Boys = c(144, 142, 132, 152, 137, 147, 142, 144, 139)
   t.test(Girls, Boys)
   ```
Welch Two Sample t-test

t = 2.9382, df = 16, p-value = 0.009645

mean of x mean of y
150.1111  142.1111

mean(Boys)
sd(Boys)
quantile(Boys)
mean(Girls)
sd(Girls)
quantile(Girls)

boxplot(cbind(Girls, Boys))

6. We count the number of boys and girls in two classrooms. We are interested to know if there is an association between the classrooms and the number of girls and boys. That is, does the proportion of boys and girls differ statistically across the two classrooms?

a. What is the null hypothesis?

b. Looking at the code below, and assuming an \textit{alpha} of 0.05, What do you decide (use the \textit{reject} or \textit{fail to reject} language)?

c. In practical terms, what do you conclude?

\begin{tabular}{lll}
\textbf{Classroom} & \textbf{Girls} & \textbf{Boys} \\
A & 13 & 7 \\
B & 5 & 15 \\
\end{tabular}

\begin{verbatim}
Input =("Classroom Girls Boys
A 13 7
B 5 15
")

Matrix = as.matrix(read.table(textConnection(Input),
  header=TRUE,
  row.names=1))

fisher.test(Matrix)
\end{verbatim}
7. Why should you not rely solely on p-values to make a decision in the real world? (You should have at least two reasons.)

8. Create your own example to show the importance of considering effect size. Describe the scenario: what the research question is, and what kind of data were collected. You may make up data and provide real results, or report hypothetical results.

9. Create your own example to show the importance of weighing other practical considerations. Describe the scenario: what the research question is, what kind of data were collected, what statistical results were reached, and what other practical considerations were brought to bear.

10. What is 5e-4 in common decimal notation?

---

**Reporting Results of Data and Analyses**

Given the variety of experimental designs, potential types of data, and analytical approaches, it is relatively impossible to develop a cookbook approach to reporting data summaries and analyses. That being said, it is the intent of this chapter to give some broad and practical advice for this task.

**Packages used in this chapter**

The packages used in this chapter include:

**Fisher's Exact Test for Count Data**

\[ p\text{-value} = 0.02484 \]

```r
Matrix
rowSums(Matrix)
colSums(Matrix)
prop.table(Matrix,
margin=1)

### Proportions for each row
barplot(t(Matrix),
beside = TRUE,
legend = TRUE,
ylim   = c(0, 25),
xlab   = "Class",
ylab   = "Count")
```
The following commands will install these packages if they are not already installed:

```r
if(!require(FSA)){install.packages("FSA")}
```

Reporting analyses, results, and assumptions

The following bullets list some of the information you should include in reporting summaries and analyses. These can be included in a combination of text, plots, tables, plot captions, and table headings.

A variety of plots are shown in the Basic Plots chapter, as well as in the chapters for specific statistical analyses. Simple tables for grouped data are shown in the chapters on Descriptive Statistics, Confidence Intervals, Descriptive Statistics for Likert Data, and Confidence Intervals for Medians.

Procedures

- A description of the analysis. Give the test used, indicate the dependent variables and independent variables, and describe the experimental design or model in as much detail as is appropriate. Mention the experimental units, dates, and location.

- Model assumptions checks. Describe what assumptions about the data or residuals are made by the test and how you assessed your data’s conformity with these assumptions.

- Cite the software and packages you used.

- Cite a reference for statistical procedures or code.

Results

- A measure of the central tendency or location of the data, such as the mean or median for groups or populations

- A measure of the variation for the mean or median for each group, such standard deviation, standard error, first and third quartile, or confidence intervals

- Size of the effect. Often this is conveyed by presenting means and medians in a plot or table so that the reader can see the differences. Sometimes, specific statistics are reported to indicate “effect size”. See the “Optional technical note on effect sizes” below for more information.

- Number of observations, either for each group, or for total observations

- $p$-value from the analysis
• Goodness-of-fit statistics, if appropriate, such as \textit{r-squared}, or pseudo \textit{R-squared}.

• Any other relevant statistics, such as the predictive equation from linear regression or the critical \textit{x} value from a linear plateau model.

• Results from post-hoc analyses. Summarize the differences among groups with letters, in a plot or table. Include the \textit{alpha} value for group separations.

\textbf{Notes on different data and analyses}

\textbf{Interval/ratio or ordinal data analyzed by group}

The bullet points above should be appropriate for this kind of analysis. Data can be summarized in tables or with in a variety of plots including “plot of means”, “plot of medians”, “interaction plot”, box plot, histogram, or bar plot. For some of these, error bars can indicate measures of variation. Mean separations can be indicated with letters within plots.

\textbf{Nominal data arranged in contingency tables}

Nominal data arranged in contingency tables can be presented as frequencies in contingency tables, or in plots. Bar plots of frequencies can be used. Confidence intervals can be added as error bars to plots. Another alternative is using mosaic plots.

\textbf{Bivariate data analyses}

Bivariate relationships can be shown with a scatterplot of the two variables, often with the best fit model drawn in. These models include those from linear regression or curvilinear regression. It is usually important to present the \textit{p}-value for the model and the \textit{r-squared} or pseudo \textit{R-squared} value.

\textbf{Advice on tables and plots}

\textbf{Plots}

Some advice for producing plots is given in the “Some advice on producing plots” section of the Basic Plots chapter.

For additional advice on presenting data in plots, see McDonald (2014a) in the “References” section.

\textbf{Tables}

Table style and format will vary widely from publication to publication. As general advice, the style and format should follow that of the journals or extension publications in your field or institution, or where you hope to get published.

For additional advice on presenting data in tables, see McDonald (2014b) in the “References” section.

\textbf{Table headings and plot captions}

Both table headings and plot captions should give as much information as is practical to make the table or plot understandable if it were separated from the rest of the publication.
Example elements

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Element</th>
<th>Example</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>Description of data</td>
<td>“Mean of reading scores for program curricula”</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Experimental units</td>
<td>“for 8th grade students”</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Location</td>
<td>“in Watkins Glen, NY”</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Date</td>
<td>“1999–2000”</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Statistics</td>
<td>“Error bars represent standard error of the mean. The effect of curricula on mean reading score was significant by one-way ANOVA ($p = 0.027$). Means sharing a letter not significantly different by Tukey-adjusted mean separations ($alpha = 0.05$). Total observations = 24.”</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

Example description of statistical analysis and results

The citation information for the R software can be found with:

citation()

Citation information for individual packages can be found with, e.g.:

library(FSA)
citation("FSA")

Procedures

A study of student learning was conducted in 1999–2000 in Watkins Glen, NY. Students were randomly assigned to one of four curricula, which they studied for one-hour per week under teacher-supervised conditions, and their scores on an assessment exam were recorded at the end of the study. A one-way analysis of variance was conducted with student score as the dependent variable and curriculum as the independent variable (Mangiafico, 2016). Treatment means were separated by Tukey-adjusted comparisons. Model residuals were checked for normality and homoscedasticity by visual inspection of residual plots. Analysis of variance and post-hoc tests were conducted in R (R Core Team, 2016) with the car and emmeans packages. Data summary was conducted with the FSA package.

Results
Figure 1. Mean of reading scores for program curricula for 8th grade students in Watkins Glen, NY, 1999–2000. Error bars represent standard error of the mean. The effect of curricula on mean reading score was significant by one-way ANOVA ($p < 0.0001$). Means sharing a letter not significantly different by Tukey-adjusted mean separations ($\alpha = 0.05$). Total observations = 24.

Table 1. Mean of reading scores for program curricula for 8th grade students in Watkins Glen, NY, 1999–2000. The effect of curricula on mean reading score was significant by one-way ANOVA ($p < 0.0001$). Means sharing a letter not significantly different by Tukey-adjusted mean separations ($\alpha = 0.05$). $n$ indicates number of observations. Std. err. indicates the standard error of the mean.

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Curriculum</th>
<th>n</th>
<th>Mean score (points / 100)</th>
<th>Std. err.</th>
<th>Tukey group</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>A</td>
<td>6</td>
<td>90</td>
<td>2.89</td>
<td>a</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>B</td>
<td>6</td>
<td>60</td>
<td>2.89</td>
<td>b</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>C</td>
<td>6</td>
<td>55</td>
<td>1.29</td>
<td>b</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>D</td>
<td>6</td>
<td>80</td>
<td>2.89</td>
<td>a</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

Optional technical note on effect sizes

In this chapter, I use the term “size of the effect” in a general sense of the magnitude of differences among groups or the degree of association of variables. “Effect size” usually describes specific statistics for a given analysis, such as Cohen’s $d$, $\eta$-squared, or odds ratio.

For some examples of these statistics, see Sullivan and Feinn (2012) or IDRE (2015) in the “References” section of this chapter.
The `pwr` package can calculate the effect size for proportions, chi-square goodness-of-fit, and chi-square test of association. For the effect size for one-way ANOVA (Cohen’s $f$), see Mangiafico (2015) or IDRE (2015). For effect sizes for nonparametric tests, see Tomczak and Tomczak (2014), and King and Rosopa (2010).

**References**


[IDRE] Institute for Digital Research and Education. 2015. How is effect size used in power analysis? UCLA. [www.ats.ucla.edu/stat/mult_pkg/faq/general/effect_size_power/effect_size_power.htm/](https://www.ats.ucla.edu/stat/mult_pkg/faq/general/effect_size_power/effect_size_power.htm/).


---

**Choosing a Statistical Test**

Choosing a statistical test can be a daunting task for those starting out in the analysis of experiments. This chapter provides a table of tests and models covered in this book, as well as some general advice for approaching the analysis of your data.

**Plan your experimental design before you collect data**

It is important to have an experimental design planned out before you start collecting data, and to have some an idea of how you plan on analyzing the data. One of the most common mistakes people make in doing research is collecting a bunch of data without having thought through what questions
they are trying to answer, what specific hypotheses they want to test, and what statistical tests they can use to test these hypotheses.

**What is the hypothesis?**

The most important consideration in choosing a statistical test is determining what hypothesis you want to test. Or, more generally, what question are you are trying to answer.

Often people have a notion about the purpose of the research they are conducting, but haven’t formulated a specific hypothesis. It is possible to begin with exploratory data analysis, to see what interesting secrets the data wish to say. But ultimately, choosing a statistical test relies on having in mind a specific hypothesis to test.

For example, we may know that our goal is to determine if one curriculum works better than another. But then we must be more specific in our hypothesis. Perhaps we wish to compare the mean of scores that students get on an exam across the different curricula. Then a specific null hypothesis is, There is no difference among the mean of student scores across curricula.

In this example, we identified the dependent variable as *Student scores*, and the independent variable as *Curriculum*.

Of course, we might make things more complicated. For example, if the curricula were used in different classrooms, we might want to include *Classroom* as an independent blocking variable.

**What number and type of variables do you have?**

To a large extent, the appropriate statistical test for your data will depend upon the number and types of variables you wish to include in the analysis.

Consider the type of dependent variable you wish to include.

- If it is of interval/ratio type, you can consider parametric tests or nonparametric tests.
- However, if it is an ordinal variable, you would look toward ordinal regression models, permutation tests, nonparametric tests, or tests for ordinal tables.
- Nominal variables arranged in contingency tables can be analyzed with chi-square and similar tests. Nominal dependent variables can be related to independent variables with logistic regression.
- Count data dependent variables can be related to independent variables with Poisson regression and related models. If the dependent variable is a proportion or percentage, beta regression might be appropriate.
The number and type of independent variables will also be taken into account. As will whether there are paired observations or random blocking variables.

The table below lists the tests in this book according to their number and types of variables.

Note that each test has its own set of assumptions for appropriate data, which should be assessed before proceeding with the analysis.

Also note that the tests in this book cover cases with a single dependent variable only. There are other statistical tests, included under the umbrella of multivariate statistics that can analyze multiple dependent variables simultaneously. These include multivariate analysis of variance (MANOVA), canonical correlation, and discriminant function analysis.

The “References” and “Optional readings” sections of this chapter includes a few other guides to choosing statistical tests.

### Table of tests by variable type

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Test</th>
<th>DV type, or variable type when there is no DV</th>
<th>DV</th>
<th>IV type</th>
<th>Number of IV</th>
<th>Levels in IV</th>
<th>Test type</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>One-sample Wilcoxon</td>
<td>Ordinal or interval/ratio</td>
<td>Independent</td>
<td>Single default value</td>
<td>N/A</td>
<td>N/A</td>
<td>Nonparametric</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Sign test for one-sample</td>
<td>Ordinal or interval/ratio</td>
<td>Independent</td>
<td>Single default value</td>
<td>N/A</td>
<td>N/A</td>
<td>Nonparametric</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Two-sample Mann-Whitney</td>
<td>Ordinal or interval/ratio</td>
<td>Independent</td>
<td>Nominal</td>
<td>1, 2</td>
<td>Nonparametric</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Mood’s median test for two-sample</td>
<td>Ordinal or interval/ratio</td>
<td>Independent</td>
<td>Nominal</td>
<td>1, 2</td>
<td>Nonparametric</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Two-sample paired rank-sum</td>
<td>Ordinal or interval/ratio</td>
<td>Paired</td>
<td>Nominal</td>
<td>1, 2</td>
<td>Nonparametric</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Sign test for two-sample paired</td>
<td>Ordinal or interval/ratio</td>
<td>Paired</td>
<td>Nominal</td>
<td>1, 2</td>
<td>Nonparametric</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Kruskal–Wallis</td>
<td>Ordinal or interval/ratio</td>
<td>Independent</td>
<td>Nominal</td>
<td>1</td>
<td>2 or more</td>
<td>Nonparametric</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Mood’s median</td>
<td>Ordinal or interval/ratio</td>
<td>Independent</td>
<td>Nominal</td>
<td>2 or more</td>
<td>Nonparametric</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Friedman</td>
<td>Ordinal or interval/ratio</td>
<td>Independent blocked, or paired</td>
<td>Nominal</td>
<td>2 or more</td>
<td>Nonparametric</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Quade</td>
<td>Ordinal or interval/ratio</td>
<td>Independent blocked, or paired</td>
<td>Nominal</td>
<td>2 or more</td>
<td>Nonparametric</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Test Description</td>
<td>Data Type</td>
<td>Group Type</td>
<td>Sample Size</td>
<td>Notes</td>
<td>Methodogy</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>-------------------------------------------------------</td>
<td>----------------------------------</td>
<td>---------------------</td>
<td>-------------</td>
<td>------------------------</td>
<td>-----------</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>One-way Permutation Test of Independence</td>
<td>Ordinal or interval/ratio</td>
<td>Independent</td>
<td>Nominal</td>
<td>1</td>
<td>Permutation</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>One-way Permutation Test of Symmetry</td>
<td>Ordinal or interval/ratio</td>
<td>Independent blocked, or paired</td>
<td>Nominal</td>
<td>2 when one is blocking</td>
<td>Permutation</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Two-sample CLM</td>
<td>Ordinal</td>
<td>Independent</td>
<td>Nominal</td>
<td>1</td>
<td>Ordinal regression</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Two-sample paired CLMM</td>
<td>Ordinal</td>
<td>Paired</td>
<td>Nominal</td>
<td>2 when one is blocking</td>
<td>Ordinal regression</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>One-way ordinal regression CLM</td>
<td>Ordinal</td>
<td>Independent</td>
<td>Nominal</td>
<td>1</td>
<td>Ordinal regression</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>One-way repeated ordinal regression CLM</td>
<td>Ordinal</td>
<td>Independent</td>
<td>Nominal</td>
<td>2 when one is blocking</td>
<td>Ordinal regression</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Two-way ordinal regression CLM</td>
<td>Ordinal</td>
<td>Independent</td>
<td>Nominal</td>
<td>2</td>
<td>Ordinal regression</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Two-way repeated ordinal regression CLMM</td>
<td>Ordinal</td>
<td>Independent</td>
<td>Nominal</td>
<td>3 when one is blocking</td>
<td>Ordinal regression</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Goodness-of-fit tests for nominal variables</td>
<td>Nominal</td>
<td>Independent</td>
<td>Expected counts</td>
<td>N/A</td>
<td>Nominal</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Association tests for nominal variables</td>
<td>Nominal</td>
<td>Independent</td>
<td>Nominal</td>
<td>N/A</td>
<td>Overall: 2-way contingency table</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Tests for paired nominal data</td>
<td>Nominal</td>
<td>Paired</td>
<td>Nominal</td>
<td>N/A</td>
<td>Overall: 2-way marginal contingency table</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Cochran–Mantel–Haenszel</td>
<td>Nominal</td>
<td>Independent</td>
<td>Nominal</td>
<td>N/A</td>
<td>Overall: 3-way contingency table</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Cochran's Q</td>
<td>Nominal (2 levels only)</td>
<td>Paired</td>
<td>Nominal</td>
<td>2 when one is blocking</td>
<td>Nominal</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Linear-by-linear</td>
<td>Ordered nominal (ordinal)</td>
<td>Independent</td>
<td>Ordered nominal (ordinal)</td>
<td>N/A</td>
<td>Overall: 2-way or 3-way contingency table</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Test Description</td>
<td>Type</td>
<td>Independent</td>
<td>Nominal</td>
<td>Other Variable(s)</td>
<td>Overall</td>
<td>Parameter(s)</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>------------------------------------------------------</td>
<td>---------------</td>
<td>-------------</td>
<td>---------</td>
<td>-------------------</td>
<td>---------</td>
<td>--------------</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Cochran–Armitage (extended)</td>
<td>Ordered nominal (ordinal)</td>
<td>Independent</td>
<td>Nominal</td>
<td>N/A</td>
<td>Overall: 2-way or 3-way contingency table</td>
<td>Nominal</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Log-linear model (multiway frequency analysis)</td>
<td>Nominal</td>
<td>Independent</td>
<td>Nominal</td>
<td>N/A</td>
<td>Overall: contingency table with 2 or dimensions</td>
<td>Generalized linear model</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Logistic regression (standard)</td>
<td>Nominal with 2 levels</td>
<td>Independent</td>
<td>Interval/ratio or nominal</td>
<td>1 or more</td>
<td>2 or more</td>
<td>Generalized linear model</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Multinomial logistic regression</td>
<td>Nominal with 2 or more levels</td>
<td>Independent</td>
<td>Interval/ratio or nominal</td>
<td>1 or more</td>
<td>2 or more</td>
<td>Generalized linear model</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Mixed-effects logistic regression</td>
<td>Nominal with 2 levels</td>
<td>Independent or paired</td>
<td>Interval/ratio or nominal</td>
<td>1 or more when one is blocking or random</td>
<td>2 or more</td>
<td>Generalized linear model</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>One-sample t-test</td>
<td>Interval/ratio</td>
<td>Independent</td>
<td>Single default value</td>
<td>N/A</td>
<td>N/A</td>
<td>Parametric</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Two-sample t-test</td>
<td>Interval/ratio</td>
<td>Independent</td>
<td>Nominal</td>
<td>1</td>
<td>2</td>
<td>Parametric</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Paired t-test</td>
<td>Interval/ratio</td>
<td>Paired</td>
<td>Nominal</td>
<td>1, or 2 when one is blocking</td>
<td>2</td>
<td>Parametric</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>One-way ANOVA</td>
<td>Interval/ratio</td>
<td>Independent</td>
<td>Nominal</td>
<td>1</td>
<td>2 or more</td>
<td>Parametric</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>One-way ANOVA with blocks</td>
<td>Interval/ratio</td>
<td>Independent</td>
<td>Nominal</td>
<td>2 when one is blocking</td>
<td>2 or more</td>
<td>Parametric</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>One-way ANOVA with random blocks</td>
<td>Interval/ratio</td>
<td>Independent</td>
<td>Nominal</td>
<td>2 when one is blocking</td>
<td>2 or more</td>
<td>Parametric</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Two-way ANOVA</td>
<td>Interval/ratio</td>
<td>Independent</td>
<td>Nominal</td>
<td>2</td>
<td>2 or more</td>
<td>Parametric</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Repeated measures ANOVA</td>
<td>Interval/ratio</td>
<td>Paired across time</td>
<td>Nominal</td>
<td>2 or more when one is time effect</td>
<td>2 or more</td>
<td>Parametric</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Multiple correlation</td>
<td>Interval/ratio or ordinal, depending on type selected</td>
<td>Independent</td>
<td>Interval/ratio or ordinal, depending on type selected</td>
<td>1 or more</td>
<td>Overall: multiple vectors of interval/ratio or ordinal data</td>
<td>Parametric or nonparametric depending on type selected</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Pearson correlation</td>
<td>Interval/ratio</td>
<td>Independent</td>
<td>Interval/ratio</td>
<td>1</td>
<td>Overall: two vectors of interval/ratio data</td>
<td>Parametric</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Kendall correlation</td>
<td>Interval/ratio or ordinal</td>
<td>Independent</td>
<td>Interval/ratio or ordinal</td>
<td>1</td>
<td>Overall: two vectors of interval/ratio or ordinal data</td>
<td>Nonparametric</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Spearman correlation</td>
<td>Interval/ratio or ordinal</td>
<td>Independent</td>
<td>Interval/ratio or ordinal</td>
<td>1</td>
<td>Overall: two vectors of interval/ratio or ordinal data</td>
<td>Nonparametric</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Linear regression</td>
<td>Interval/ratio</td>
<td>Independent</td>
<td>Interval/ratio</td>
<td>1</td>
<td>N/A</td>
<td>Parametric</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>
Choosing a Statistical Test

Summary and Analysis of Extension Education Program Evaluation in R

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Polynomial regression</th>
<th>Interval/ratio</th>
<th>Independent</th>
<th>Interval/ratio</th>
<th>2 or more that are polynomial terms</th>
<th>N/A</th>
<th>Parametric</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>Nonlinear regression and curvilinear regression</td>
<td>Interval/ratio</td>
<td>Independent</td>
<td>Interval/ratio</td>
<td>1</td>
<td>N/A</td>
<td>Parametric</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Multiple regression</td>
<td>Interval/ratio</td>
<td>Independent</td>
<td>Interval/ratio</td>
<td>2 or more</td>
<td>N/A</td>
<td>Parametric</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Robust linear regression</td>
<td>Interval/ratio</td>
<td>Independent</td>
<td>Interval/ratio</td>
<td>1</td>
<td>N/A</td>
<td>Robust parametric</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Kendall–Theil regression</td>
<td>Interval/ratio</td>
<td>Independent</td>
<td>Interval/ratio</td>
<td>1</td>
<td>N/A</td>
<td>Nonparametric</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Linear plateau and quadratic plateau models</td>
<td>Interval/ratio</td>
<td>Independent</td>
<td>Interval/ratio</td>
<td>1</td>
<td>N/A</td>
<td>Parametric</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Cate–Nelson analysis</td>
<td>Interval/ratio</td>
<td>Independent</td>
<td>Interval/ratio</td>
<td>1</td>
<td>N/A</td>
<td>Mostly nonparametric</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Poisson and related regression</td>
<td>Count</td>
<td>Independent</td>
<td>Interval/ratio or nominal</td>
<td>1 or more</td>
<td>2 or more</td>
<td>Generalized linear model</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>• Hermite regression</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>• Poisson regression</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>• Negative binomial regression</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>• Zero-inflated regression</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Beta regression</td>
<td>Proportion or percentage</td>
<td>Independent</td>
<td>Interval/ratio or nominal</td>
<td>1 or more</td>
<td>2 or more</td>
<td>Generalized linear model</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

Optional discussion: Sometimes it’s all about the hypothesis

Tests that have analogous purposes, like comparing a measurement variable across two groups, may test very different hypotheses.

For example, imagine you are investigating the income of two towns. Let’s say the income of Town A is normally distributed about a mean and median of $48,000. The income of Town B has a similar median, but has right skew, with some observations close to $1 million.

What test or statistic would you use to compare the income of these two towns?

You might be tempted to compare the means of the two towns with a t-test. In this case, however, means may not be the best statistic for skewed data, and this data may not meet the assumptions of the t-test.

You might be interested in comparing the median of the income of the two towns, for example with Mood’s median test. This might make sense for some regulatory purpose that is concerned with medians.
On the other hand, looking for a systemic change in the income across the two towns may make more sense. For example, the higher incomes in Town B may give the town a different character, for example, some streets with larger homes or upscale stores. For this, you might use the Mann–Whitney test.

Another approach is to use a permutation test.

Or you might compare the overall distributions of incomes for the two towns using the Kolmogorov–Smirnov test.

Finally, you might want to compare at the 75th percentile of income for the two towns. This could be done using quantile regression.

**Example**

The following code compares some of these results for a hypothetical data set of income in two towns.

Note that the assumptions and pitfalls of these tests are not discussed here, but should be considered in real situations.

```r
### load required packages
if(!require(FSA)){install.packages("FSA")}
if(!require(psych)){install.packages("psych")}
if(!require(RVAideMemoire)){install.packages("RVAideMemoire")}
if(!require(coin)){install.packages("coin")}
if(!require(quantreg)){install.packages("quantreg")}

### Read the data frame
TwoTowns = read.table("http://rcompanion.org/documents/TwoTowns.csv",
                      header=TRUE, sep="",)

### Check the data frame
library(psych)
headTail(TwoTowns)
summary(TwoTowns)

### Summarize the data
library(FSA)
Summarize(Income ~ Town,
           data=TwoTowns,
           digits=3)

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Town</th>
<th>n</th>
<th>mean</th>
<th>sd</th>
<th>min</th>
<th>Q1</th>
<th>median</th>
<th>Q3</th>
<th>max</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>
```
Choosing a Statistical Test

SUMMARY AND ANALYSIS OF EXTENSION EDUCATION PROGRAM EVALUATION IN R

1 Town.A 101 48146.43 10851.67 23560 40970 48010 56420 77770
2 Town.B 101 115275.22 163878.17 29050 34140 47220 108200 880000

boxplot(Income ~ Town,
data=TwoTowns)

### Mood's median test
library(RVAideMemoire)
mood.medtest(Income ~ Town,
data = TwoTowns)

Mood's median test
X-squared = 0, df = 1, p-value = 1

### Mann–Whitney test
wilcox.test(Income ~ Town,
data=TwoTowns)

Wilcoxon rank sum test with continuity correction
W = 4672, p-value = 0.3029
alternative hypothesis: true location shift is not equal to 0

### Permutation test
library(coin)
independence_test(Income ~ Town,
data = TwoTowns)

Asymptotic General Independence Test
Z = -3.9545, p-value = 7.669e-05

### Kolmogorov–Smirnov test
library(FSA)
ksTest(Income ~ Town,
data = TwoTowns)

Two-sample Kolmogorov-Smirnov test
D = 0.35644, p-value = 5.349e-06
### quantile regression considering the 75th percentile

library(quantreg)

model.q = rq(Income ~ Town,
            data = TwoTowns,
            tau = 0.75)

model.null = rq(Income ~ 1,
                 data = TwoTowns,
                 tau = 0.75)

anova(model.q, model.null)

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Resid Df</th>
<th>F value</th>
<th>Pr(&gt;F)</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>200</td>
<td>5.7342</td>
<td>0.01756 *</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

References

[IDRE] Institute for Digital Research and Education. 2015. What statistical analysis should I use? UCLA. stats.idre.ucla.edu/other/mult-pkg/whatstat/


Optional readings

[Video] “Choosing which statistical test to use” from Statistics Learning Center (Dr. Nic). 2014. www.youtube.com/watch?v=rU1UAN0U3w.

Independent and Paired Values

An assumption of many statistical tests is that observations are independent of one another. This means that the value for one observation is unlikely to be influenced by the value of another observation. If we pick students at random from a class and measure their height, we can assume the height of the first student will not affect the height of the next student. These observations would be independent. If, however, we measured the height of the same students across years, we would expect that a student who is tall this year would likely be tall the next, and so on. These observations would not be independent. We might call this second set of observations non-independent, paired, dependent, or correlated.
Dependent samples commonly arise in a few situations. One is *repeated measures*, in which the same subject is measured on multiple dates. This is like the student height example described above.

A second is when we are taking multiple measurements of the *same individual*. An example of this might be if we are testing students on multiple concepts; we might suspect that if a student scores well in one section, that she is likely to score well in the other sections. Another example would be measuring the length of people’s hands. We would suspect that someone with a large left hand is likely to have a large right hand. A final example would be if student raters were measuring multiple instructors. We might suspect that a rater who scores one instructor low might be likely to score another instructor low.

A related concept is that of *blocks*. If observations can be broken into meaningful groups where values are likely to be different, this should be taken into account. For example, if we are measuring students’ scores from two classes, and we suspect scores would be lower for one class than the other. If we were testing instructional methods, we may care about the effect of the instructional methods, and not care at all about the classes *per se*, but we want to take differences due to the different classes into account.

**Packages used in this chapter**

The packages used in this chapter include:
- FSA
- rcompanion

The following commands will install these packages if they are not already installed:

```r
if(!require(FSA)){install.packages("FSA")}
if(!require(rcompanion)){install.packages("rcompanion")}
```

**An example of paired and unpaired data**

In this example we measure the length in centimeters of both the left hand and the right hand for each of 16 individuals.

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Individual</th>
<th>Hand</th>
<th>Length</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>A</td>
<td>Left</td>
<td>17.5</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>B</td>
<td>Left</td>
<td>18.4</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>C</td>
<td>Left</td>
<td>16.2</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>D</td>
<td>Left</td>
<td>14.5</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>E</td>
<td>Left</td>
<td>13.5</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>F</td>
<td>Left</td>
<td>18.9</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>G</td>
<td>Left</td>
<td>19.5</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>H</td>
<td>Left</td>
<td>21.1</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>I</td>
<td>Left</td>
<td>17.8</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>J</td>
<td>Left</td>
<td>16.8</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>K</td>
<td>Left</td>
<td>18.4</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>L</td>
<td>Left</td>
<td>17.3</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>M</td>
<td>Left</td>
<td>18.9</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>
INDEPENDENT AND PAIRED VALUES

### Summary and Analysis of Extension Education Program Evaluation in R

```
N    Left 16.4  
O    Left 17.5  
P    Left 15.0  
A    Right 17.6  
B    Right 18.5  
C    Right 15.9  
D    Right 14.9  
E    Right 13.7  
F    Right 18.9  
G    Right 19.5  
H    Right 21.5  
I    Right 18.5  
J    Right 17.1  
K    Right 18.9  
L    Right 17.5  
M    Right 19.5  
N    Right 16.5  
O    Right 17.4  
P    Right 15.6  
"
```

Data = read.table(textConnection(Input), header=TRUE)

```R
### Note: for the paired test below, data must be ordered so that
### the first observation of Group 1
### is the same subject as the first observation of Group 2

### The following will order the data frame by Hand, and then by Individual

Data = Data[order(Data$Hand, Data$Individual),]

### Check the data frame

Data
str(Data)
summary(Data)

### Remove unnecessary objects

rm(Input)
```

**Box plot and summary statistics by group**

Below, the descriptive statistics suggest that left hands and right hands had similar means, medians, and standard deviations for *Length*.

```
library(FSA)

Summarize(Length ~ Hand,
```
INDEPENDENT AND PAIRED VALUES

SUMMARY AND ANALYSIS OF EXTENSION EDUCATION PROGRAM EVALUATION IN R

```r
data=Data,
digits=3)

boxplot(Length ~ Hand,
data=Data,
ylab="Length, cm")

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Hand</th>
<th>n</th>
<th>mean</th>
<th>sd</th>
<th>min</th>
<th>Q1</th>
<th>median</th>
<th>Q3</th>
<th>max</th>
<th>percZero</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>Left</td>
<td>16</td>
<td>17.356</td>
<td>1.948</td>
<td>13.5</td>
<td>16.35</td>
<td>17.50</td>
<td>18.52</td>
<td>21.1</td>
<td>0</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Right</td>
<td>16</td>
<td>17.594</td>
<td>1.972</td>
<td>13.7</td>
<td>16.35</td>
<td>17.55</td>
<td>18.90</td>
<td>21.5</td>
<td>0</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>
```

Bar plot to show paired differences
The previous summary statistics, however, do not capture the paired nature of the data. Instead, we want to investigate the difference between left hand and right hand for each individual. We can calculate this difference, and use a bar plot to visualize the difference. For most observations, the right hand was larger, with Right – Left being greater than zero.

```r
Left_hand = Data$Length[Data$Hand=="Left"]
Right_hand = Data$Length[Data$Hand=="Right"]
Difference = Right_hand - Left_hand

barplot(Difference,
col="dark gray",
xlab="Observation",
ylab="Difference (Right - Left)"
)```
**Paired t-test and unpaired t-test**

t-tests are discussed later in this book. It isn’t important that you understand the test fully at this point. In this example, a \( t \)-test that ignores the pairing of observations found no difference between the mean length for left hand and right hand, whereas the \( t \)-test that accounts for the paired observations found a significant difference. On average the right hands were about 0.2 cm longer than their paired left hands.

\[
t.test(\text{Length} \sim \text{Hand}, \\
data = \text{Data}, \\
\text{paired} = \text{FALSE})
\]

**Welch Two Sample t-test**

\[t = -0.3427, \text{df} = 29.996, \text{p-value} = 0.7342\]

### No difference between left hand and right if length treated as not paired

\[
t.test(\text{Length} \sim \text{Hand}, \\
data = \text{Data}, \\
\text{paired} = \text{TRUE})
\]

**Paired t-test**

\[t = -3.3907, \text{df} = 15, \text{p-value} = 0.004034\]

**mean of the differences**

\[-0.2375\]

### Significant difference between left hand and right if length treated as paired
**Histogram of differences with normal curve**

To be sure our paired $t$-test was valid, we'll plot the differences in hands to be sure their distribution is approximately normal.

```r
Left_hand  = Data$Length[Data$Hand=="Left"]
Right_hand = Data$Length[Data$Hand=="Right"]
Difference = Right_hand - Left_hand

library(rcompanion)

plotNormalHistogram(Difference,
                     xlab = "Difference")
```

### Distribution of differences is probably close enough to normal
### for paired $t$-test
Introduction to Likert Data

Likert data—properly pronounced like “LICK-ert”—are ordered responses to questions or ratings. Responses could be descriptive words, such as “agree”, “neutral”, or “disagree,” or numerical, such as “On a scale of 1 to 5, where 1 is ‘not interested’ and 5 is ‘very interested’…” Likert data is commonly collected from surveys evaluating education programs, as well in a variety of opinion surveys and social science surveys.

Likert data

**Numbers of responses**
Most commonly, a 5- or 7-point scale is used for Likert items. It is believed that most people can think about or visualize 5 or 7 ordered options easily. Younger children, however, may do better with a 3-point scale or a simple dichotomous question. On the other hand, if the audience is educated about a subject and trained in the evaluation, a 10-point scale could be used.

**Symmetry**
Responses to Likert items are usually symmetrical. That is, if there are options for “agree” and “strongly agree”, there should be options for “disagree” and “strongly disagree”.

**Neutral responses**
Responses to Likert items also tend to have a neutral option, such as “neutral”, “neither agree nor disagree”. Neutral responses may also be terms like “sometimes” or “occasionally” if “never” and “rarely” on one side are balanced with “often” and “always”.

**Form of responses**
Numbered responses are typically described with descriptive terms, either for every number, for just the end points, or for the end points and the middle points, for example:

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Strongly agree</th>
<th>Agree</th>
<th>Neutral</th>
<th>Disagree</th>
<th>Strongly disagree</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>1</td>
<td>2</td>
<td>3</td>
<td>4</td>
<td>5</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Strongly agree</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>1</td>
<td>2</td>
<td>3</td>
<td>4</td>
<td>5</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>
Other options for Likert responses include faces (smiley face, neutral face, frowny face), and a line on which respondents mark their response.

**Opt-out answers**
Questions may also include opt-out responses, like “Don’t know” or “Not applicable”. These are included outside the Likert responses.

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Strongly agree</th>
<th>Neutral</th>
<th>Strongly disagree</th>
<th>Not applicable</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>1</td>
<td>2</td>
<td>3</td>
<td>4</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

I am in favor of including opt-out responses as it tends to encourage more honest responses. It seems to me it is better to allow a respondent to opt out of answering a question rather than force an inauthentic response. It is possible that a respondent has no opinion or doesn’t understand a question, or that a question is not applicable for them.

That being said, the opt-out answer “Don’t know” may not be a great choice, simply because respondents and researchers may interpret “Don’t know” as a “Neutral” answer. It may be better to choose less ambiguous opt-out answers like “Not applicable”.

**Examples of Likert item responses**
See:


**Likert items and Likert scales**

Technically, a Likert *item* is a single question with Likert responses, whereas a Likert *scale* is a group of items viewed together as a single measure. For example, one could have several Likert items with various questions about religious attitudes or behaviors, and then combine those items to a single Likert scale on religiosity.

When presenting methods and results, it is important to be clear if data were handled as Likert item data or Likert scale data.

This book will treat Likert data as individual Likert items, and will not create Likert scales.

**Analysis of Likert data**
**Likert data should be treated as ordinal data**

There is some agreement that Likert item data should generally be treated as ordinal and not treated as interval/ratio data.

One consideration is that values in interval/ratio data need to be equally spaced. That is, 2 is equally between 1 and 3, and you could average 1 and 3 and the response would be 2. But it is not clear that "agree" is equally spaced between "strongly agree" and "neutral". Nor is it clear that "strongly agree" and "neutral" could be averaged for a result of "agree". Simply numbering the response levels does not make the responses interval/ratio data.

This book will treat Likert data as ordinal data. It will avoid using parametric tests, such as t-test and ANOVA, with Likert data. Likert data typically do not meet the assumptions of those parametric tests.

Instead, we will use nonparametric tests, permutation tests, and ordinal regression.

A couple other properties suggest that Likert data should not be treated as interval/ratio data. Likert data are not continuous; that is, there typically aren't any decimal points in Likert responses. Also, the responses in Likert data are constrained at their ends; that is, on a five-point scale, the responses cannot be below 1 or above 5.

Where it is useful, this book will treat Likert data as nominal data for certain types of summaries. In general it is better to not treat ordinal data as nominal data in statistical analyses. One reason is that when treating the data as nominal data, the information about the ordered nature of the response categories is lost. However, sometimes it is useful to collapse Likert responses into categories; for example, grouping “strongly agree” and “agree” together as one category and reporting its frequency as a percentage of responses.

**Some people treat Likert data as interval/ratio data**

Not everyone agrees that Likert item data should not be treated as interval/ratio data. A quick search of the internet will produce plenty of examples of people defending treating Likert data as interval/ratio data.

Cases in which treating Likert responses as interval/ratio data may be reasonable include:

- When there are a high number of response options per question (say 10)
- When only the endpoints of the responses are indicated with text descriptors
- When response options are assumed to be equally spaced
- When respondents mark their answer on a line so that the precise location of the mark can be measured

**Analysis of Likert scale data**

When several Likert items are combined into a scale, so that there are many possible numeric outcomes, the results are often treated as interval/ratio data.

This is not entirely permissible from a theoretical point of view since Likert scales are made up of Likert items, and so have the same properties. But it is often a reasonable approach if the data meet the assumptions of the analysis. This is particularly the case if the scale data take on many values.
Analysis of Likert data

Ordinal regression
Probably the best tool for the analysis of experiments with Likert item data as the dependent variable is ordinal regression. The *ordinal* package in R provides a powerful and flexible framework for ordinal regression. It can handle a wide variety of experimental designs, including those with paired or repeated observations. Ordinal regression is relatively easy to perform in R, but might be somewhat challenging for the novice in statistical analyses. Occasionally there are problems with fitting models or checking model assumptions. These cases may be frustrating for the novice user.

Tests for ordinal tables
Another appropriate tool for the analysis of Likert item data are tests for ordinal data arranged in contingency table form. These include the linear-by-linear test, which is a test of association between two ordinal variables, and the Cochran-Armitage test, which is a test of association between an ordinal variable and a nominal variable. The major limitation to these tests is that they are limited to data arranged in a two-dimensional table. Also, these tests require the spacing between ordinal categories to be indicated. By default the tests assume that the categories are equally spaced, but the functions in R allow other spacing patterns to be used.

Permutation tests
Another tool appropriate for the analysis of Likert item data are permutation tests. The *coin* package in R provides a relatively powerful and flexible framework for permutation tests with ordinal dependent variables. It can handle models analogous to a one-way analysis of variance with stratification blocks, including paired or repeated observations. This covers more than all the designs that can be handled with the common traditional nonparametric tests.

Traditional nonparametric tests
Traditional nonparametric tests are generally considered appropriate for analyses with ordinal dependent variables. They have the advantages of being widely used and likely to be familiar for readers. One disadvantage of these tests is that the variety of designs they can handle is limited. The Kruskal–Wallis test can analyze a model analogous to a one-way analysis of variance. The Friedman and Quade tests can analyze data in an unreplicated complete block design with paired or repeated observations.

As a technical note, some authors have questioned using traditional nonparametric tests with Likert item data. One consideration is that the underlying statistics for some tests are based on the dependent variable being continuous in nature. Another consideration is that, while these tests have provisions to handle tied values, some authors worry that they may not behave well when there are many ties, as is likely for Likert data.

However, the results of the simulation studies below show that traditional nonparametric tests are good approximations for ordinal regression in most cases.

Optional: Simulated comparisons of traditional nonparametric tests and ordinal regression
These simulations used results from a 5-point Likert item as the dependent variable. Here, the results from the ordinal regression are used as the preferred standard.

**Mann–Whitney test**

When sample sizes were reasonably large and equal between groups ($n$ per group = 25), $p$-values from Mann–Whitney were closely related to those from ordinal regression, with the Mann–Whitney test being underpowered only slightly.

$p$-values from Mann–Whitney test compared to those from ordinal regression (cumulative link model) with simulated data. Dependent variable is 5-point Likert data. Both groups have equal sample sizes ($n$ per group = 25). The blue line is the 1:1 line. The red lines indicate a $p$-value of 0.05 on each axis.

**Small sample size**

When sample sizes were small ($n$ per group = 8), $p$-values from Mann–Whitney were still closely related to those from ordinal regression, but the Mann–Whitney test was underpowered compared with ordinal regression.
p-values from Mann–Whitney test compared to those from ordinal regression (cumulative link model) with simulated data. Dependent variable is 5-point Likert data. Both groups have equal sample sizes (n per group = 8). The blue line is the 1:1 line. The red lines indicate a p-value of 0.05 on each axis.

Kruskal–Wallis test
When there were more than two groups (here k = 5, with n per group = 25), p-values from Kruskal–Wallis were more dispersed relative to ordinal regression than were those from Mann–Whitney. Results from Kruskal–Wallis approximated those from ordinal regression relatively well for most cases in the region around p = 0.05 and below. In some cases, Kruskal–Wallis was underpowered in this region.
p-values from Kruskal–Wallis test compared to those from ordinal regression (cumulative link model) with simulated data. Dependent variable is 5-point Likert data. All groups have equal sample sizes (n per group = 25). The blue line is the 1:1 line. The red lines indicate a p-value of 0.05 on each axis.

Cochran–Armitage and permutation tests
Cochran–Armitage and permutation tests for ordinal data reasonably approximated results from ordinal regression for most cases in the region around p = 0.05 and below when the threshold = “equidistant” option was used for the cumulative link model. The Cochran–Armitage and permutation tests assume equal spacing of ordinal categories by default.

p-values for the methods matched less well when the threshold = “equidistant” option was not used, or when at least one group had few observations (not shown).

Results from Cochran–Armitage and permutation tests were very similar in the region around p = 0.05 and below (not shown).
Optional: Simulated comparisons of traditional nonparametric tests and exact tests and Monte Carlo approaches

These simulations used results from a 5-point Likert item as the dependent variable. Here, the results from the exact test are assumed to be the preferred standard. The exact tests were conducted with the `exactRankTests` package. The results from this package appear to agree with those from the `coin` package for exact tests. Monte Carlo simulations used 10,000 iterations.

**Mann–Whitney test**

When sample sizes were reasonably large and equal between groups (n per group = 25), p-values from Mann–Whitney were closely related to those from the exact test in the p = 0.05 region, with some variability.
Introduction to Likert Data

Summary and Analysis of Extension Education Program Evaluation in R

$p$-values from Mann–Whitney test compared to those from exact test with simulated data. Dependent variable is 5-point Likert data. Both groups have equal sample sizes ($n$ per group = 25). The blue line is the 1:1 line. The red lines indicate a $p$-value of 0.05 on each axis.

Small sample size
When sample sizes were small ($n$ per group = 8), $p$-values from Mann–Whitney were still related to those from exact test but with more scattering of values.

$p$-values from Mann–Whitney test compared to those from exact test with simulated data. Dependent variable is 5-point Likert data. Both groups have equal sample sizes ($n$ per group = 8). The blue line is the 1:1 line. The red lines indicate a $p$-value of 0.05 on each axis.
**Mann–Whitney test and Monte Carlo**

When sample sizes were reasonably large and equal between groups ($n$ per group = 25), $p$-values from Mann–Whitney were closely related to those from Monte Carlo simulations of the Mann–Whitney test, with some variability.

![Graph showing p-values from Mann–Whitney and Monte Carlo simulations](image)

$p$-values from Kruskal–Wallis test compared to those from Monte Carlo simulated Kruskal–Wallis with simulated data. Dependent variable is 5-point Likert data. All groups have equal sample sizes ($n$ per group = 25). The blue line is the 1:1 line. The red lines indicate a $p$-value of 0.05 on each axis.

**Kruskal–Wallis test and Monte Carlo**

When there were more than two groups (here $k = 3$, with $n$ per group = 25), $p$-values from Kruskal–Wallis were similar to those from Monte Carlo simulated Kruskal–Wallis, with some variability.
Descriptive Statistics for Likert Data

Median
For Likert data, the primary measure of location we will use is the median. For a set of numbers, the median is the middle value when the data are arranged in numerical order. For example, for the set of values 1, 2, 3, 4, 5, 5, 5, the median value is 4. If there are an even number of values, the two middle values are averaged.

In concept, 50% of observations are less than the median, and 50% are greater than the median (ignoring the median itself in cases of an odd number of observations). You could also find the median of ordinal data consisting just of text descriptors. For example, for the set of values:

“high school”, “associate degree”, “bachelor’s degree”, “master’s degree”, “doctorate”,

the median is “bachelor's degree”.

Using medians makes sense for ordinal data, whereas using means would in general not be appropriate.

**Count of responses and bar plot**

In order to visualize the location and variation of Likert data, we will look at the distribution of the responses. The distribution of responses can be enumerated by counting the number of responses for each response level, and can be visualized with a bar plot of these counts. This is similar to a histogram of the responses.

**Quartiles and percentiles**

As a measure of the variation of data, it is also useful to look at the quartiles of the data set. The first quartile indicates the value below which 25% of the values fall. It is equivalent to the 25th percentile. The second quartile is equivalent to the median. The third quartile indicates the value below which 75% of the values fall. It is equivalent to the 75th percentile.

**Packages used in this chapter**

The packages used in this chapter include:

- psych
- FSA
- lattice
- ggplot2
- plyr
- boot
- rcompanion

The following commands will install these packages if they are not already installed:

```r
if(!require(psych)){install.packages("psych")}
if(!require(FSA)){install.packages("FSA")}
if(!require(lattice)){install.packages("lattice")}
if(!require(ggplot2)){install.packages("ggplot2")}
if(!require(plyr)){install.packages("plyr")}
if(!require(boot)){install.packages("boot")}
if(!require(rcompanion)){install.packages("rcompanion")}
```

**Descriptive statistics for one-sample data**

Imagine a scenario in which 10 respondents are evaluating a single speaker on a single Likert item. The following example will create a data frame called Data consisting of three variables: Speaker, Rater, and Likert. The speaker is the same for all observations, and Likert represents the response on a five-point Likert item.
One-sample data

One-sample data refers to a single set of values that is not broken into groups. In this example, we have only one speaker with 10 ratings, hence one set of ratings values.

Variables and functions in this example

A new variable, \textit{Likert.f}, will be created in the data frame. It will have the same values as the \textit{Likert} variable, but we will tell R to treat it as an ordered factor variable, whereas \textit{Likert} is a numeric variable. When summarizing data as a nominal variable, \textit{Likert.f} will be used. But when summarizing data as a numeric variable, \textit{Likert} will be used.

Note that the \texttt{str} function reports that \textit{Speaker} is a factor variable, \textit{Rater} and \textit{Likert} are integer variables, and \textit{Likert.f} is an ordered factor variable. The levels of the factor variables are shown with the \texttt{level} function.

Recall that \texttt{Data$Likert} tells R to use the \textit{Likert} variable in the data frame \texttt{Data}.

```r
Input =("Speaker  Rater  Likert
'Maggie Simpson' 1       3
'Maggie Simpson' 2       4
'Maggie Simpson' 3       5
'Maggie Simpson' 4       4
'Maggie Simpson' 5       4
'Maggie Simpson' 6       4
'Maggie Simpson' 7       4
'Maggie Simpson' 8       3
'Maggie Simpson' 9       2
'Maggie Simpson' 10      5
")

Data = read.table(textConnection(Input),header=TRUE)

### Create a new variable which is the Likert scores as an ordered factor

\texttt{Data$Likert.f = factor(Data$Likert,}
\texttt{ordered = TRUE,}
\texttt{levels = c("1", "2", "3", "4", "5")}
\texttt{)}

### Double check our data frame

\texttt{library(psych)}

\texttt{headTail(Data)}

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Speaker</th>
<th>Rater</th>
<th>Likert</th>
<th>Likert.f</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>Maggie Simpson</td>
<td>1</td>
<td>3</td>
<td>3</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Maggie Simpson</td>
<td>2</td>
<td>4</td>
<td>4</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Maggie Simpson</td>
<td>3</td>
<td>5</td>
<td>5</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Maggie Simpson</td>
<td>4</td>
<td>4</td>
<td>4</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Maggie Simpson</td>
<td>5</td>
<td>4</td>
<td>4</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Maggie Simpson</td>
<td>6</td>
<td>4</td>
<td>4</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Maggie Simpson</td>
<td>7</td>
<td>4</td>
<td>4</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Maggie Simpson</td>
<td>8</td>
<td>3</td>
<td>3</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Maggie Simpson</td>
<td>9</td>
<td>2</td>
<td>2</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Maggie Simpson</td>
<td>10</td>
<td>5</td>
<td>5</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

160
Descriptive Statistics for Likert Data

Summary and Analysis of Extension Education Program Evaluation in R

... <NA> ... ... <NA>
7  Maggie Simpson 7 4 4
8  Maggie Simpson 8 3 3
9  Maggie Simpson 9 2 2
10 Maggie Simpson 10 5 5

str(Data)
'data.frame': 10 obs. of 4 variables:
$ Speaker : Factor w/ 1 level "Maggie Simpson": 1 1 1 1 1 1 1 1 1 1
$ Rater   : int 1 2 3 4 5 6 7 8 9 10
$ Likert  : int 3 4 5 4 4 4 4 3 2 5
$ Likert.f: Ord.factor w/ 5 levels "1"<"2"<"3"<"4"<..: 3 4 5 4 4 4 4 3 2 5

levels(Data$Speaker)
[1] "Maggie Simpson"

levels(Data$Likert.f)
[1] "1" "2" "3" "4" "5"

summary(Data)

### Remove unnecessary objects
rm(Input)

Summary treating Likert data as nominal data

The number of responses for each response level of Likert.f can be shown with the summary function, either on the Likert.f variable itself or as part of the whole data frame Data.

This same summary is then visualized with a bar plot.

summary(Data$Likert.f)
1 2 3 4 5
0 1 2 5 2

### The top row is the value of Likert.f,
### and the next row is the counts for each value.

summary(Data)

Speaker       Rater           Likert     Likert.f
Maggie Simpson:10   Min.   : 1.00   Min.   :2.00   1:0
1st Qu.: 3.25   1st Qu.:3.25   1st Qu.:3.25  2:1
Summary and Analysis of Extension Education Program Evaluation in R

Descriptive Statistics for Likert Data

Median : 5.50    Median :4.00    3:2
Mean : 5.50     Mean :3.80    4:5
3rd Qu.: 7.75   3rd Qu.:4.00   5:2
Max. :10.00    Max. :5.00

_xtabs and bar plot_

```r
XT = xtabs(~ Likert.f, data=Data)

XT

Likert.f
1 2 3 4 5
0 1 2 5 2

### Counts for each level of Likert.f

sum(XT)

[1] 10

### Sum of counts for whole table

prop.table(XT)

1 2 3 4 5
0.0 0.1 0.2 0.5 0.2

### Proportion of total for each count

barplot(XT, col="dark gray", xlab="Maggie's Likert", ylab="Frequency")
```

![Bar plot showing frequency distribution of Maggie's Likert responses](image-url)
**Summary treating Likert data as numeric data**

In this code the Likert response data is treated as numeric data. The `summary` function produces the median, as well as the minimum, maximum, first quartile, and third quartile for a variable. The `summary` function can be used for either a single variable or a whole data frame. The `Summarize` function in the `FSA` package produces those statistics as well as the number of observations (\( n \)).

These statistics are visualized with a box plot. Note that the heavy line in the box is the median, and the ends of the box are the first quartile and third quartile. The extent of the whiskers in the box plot defaults to being the most extreme values, but no more than 1.5 times the length of the box itself. Values beyond the extent of the whiskers will be indicated with circles. Note that in the box plot for this example that the whiskers extend to the most extreme values in the data (2 and 5), and that there are no circles in the plot.

```r
summary(Data$Likert)

Min. 1st Qu.  Median    Mean 3rd Qu.    Max.
2.00    3.25    4.00    3.80    4.00    5.00

summary(Data)

Speaker        Rater        Likert     Likert.f
Maggie Simpson:10    Min. :1.00   Min. :2.00   1:0
                   1st Qu.: 3.25   1st Qu.:3.25   2:1
                   Median :5.50   Median :4.00   3:2
                   Mean : 5.50   Mean : 3.80   4:5
                   3rd Qu.: 7.75   3rd Qu.:4.00   5:2
                   Max. :10.00   Max. : 5.00

library(FSA)

Summarize(Data$Likert,
digits=3)

n mean     sd  min   Q1 median   Q3  max percZero
10.000  3.800 0.919 2.000 3.250 4.000 4.000 5.000 0.000

Box plot

boxplot(Data$Likert,
       ylab="Likert scores",
xlab="Maggie's results")
Descriptive statistics for one-way or multi-way data

For this example, imagine that there are two speakers, each of which is being evaluated on each of three questions on 10-point Likert items. There are six raters, each of whom evaluates each speaker on each of these items.

One-way data

One-way data refers to a data set with a single measured variable, but divided into groups. In this example looking at values of Likert for Spongebob and for Patrick would be an example of one-way data. Note that for one-way data there is a single dependent variable (Likert) and a single independent factor variable (Speaker).

Looking at Likert for the three levels of Question (Information, Presentation, and Questions) would also be an example of one-way data.

Multi-way data

Multi-way data refers to looking at a single measured variable divided into groups, where the groups are defined by at least two factor variables. If we look at values of Likert for each of the two speakers for each of the three questions, we are looking at two-way data.

Variables and functions in this example

The following example will create a data frame called Data consisting of four variables: Speaker, Question, Rater, and Likert. An additional variable named Likert.f will be created as an ordered factor variable with the same value as Likert for each observation.

Note that the str function reports that Speaker, Question, and Rater are factor variables, Likert is an integer variable, and Likert.f is an ordered factor variable. The levels of the factor variables are shown with the level function.

Recall that Data$Likert tells R to use the Likert variable in the data frame Data.
Input ="
Speaker     Question        Rater  Likert
Spongebob   Information     a      5
Spongebob   Information     b      6
Spongebob   Information     c      7
Spongebob   Information     d      8
Spongebob   Information     e      6
Spongebob   Information     f      5
Spongebob   Presentation    a      8
Spongebob   Presentation    b      7
Spongebob   Presentation    c      8
Spongebob   Presentation    d      9
Spongebob   Presentation    e     10
Spongebob   Presentation    f      7
Spongebob   Questions       a      3
Spongebob   Questions       b      4
Spongebob   Questions       c      5
Spongebob   Questions       d      4
Spongebob   Questions       e      6
Spongebob   Questions       f      5
Patrick     Information     a      6
Patrick     Information     b      7
Patrick     Information     c      8
Patrick     Information     d      9
Patrick     Information     e      7
Patrick     Information     f      6
Patrick     Presentation    a      9
Patrick     Presentation    b      9
Patrick     Presentation    c     10
Patrick     Presentation    d     10
Patrick     Presentation    e      8
Patrick     Presentation    f      8
Patrick     Questions       a      5
Patrick     Questions       b      6
Patrick     Questions       c      6
Patrick     Questions       d      7
Patrick     Questions       e      5
Patrick     Questions       f      7"

Data = read.table(textConnection(Input),header=TRUE)

### Order factor levels, otherwise R will alphabetize them

Data$Speaker = factor(Data$Speaker,
                       levels=unique(Data$Speaker))

Data$Question = factor(Data$Question,
                       levels=unique(Data$Question))

### Create an ordered factor of Likert data
Data$Likert.f = factor(Data$Likert, 
    ordered=TRUE, 
    levels = c("1", "2", "3", "4", "5", 
              "6", "7", "8", "9", "10")
  )

### Examine data frame
library(psych)
headTail(Data)

  Speaker    Question Rater Likert Likert.f
  1  Spongebob Information     a        5        5
  2  Spongebob Information     b        6        6
  3  Spongebob Information     c        7        7
  4  Spongebob Information     d        8        8
  ...          <NA>        <NA>    ...     ...<NA>
  33 Patrick   Questions     c        6        6
  34 Patrick   Questions     d        7        7
  35 Patrick   Questions     e        5        5
  36 Patrick   Questions     f        7        7

str(Data)
'data.frame': 36 obs. of 5 variables:
$ Speaker : Factor w/ 2 levels "Spongebob","Patrick": 1 1 1 1 1 1 1 1 1 1 ...
$ Question: Factor w/ 3 levels "Information",...: 1 1 1 1 1 1 1 1 1 1 ...
$ Rater   : Factor w/ 6 levels "a","b","c","d","e","f": 1 2 3 4 5 6 ...
$ Likert  : int 5 6 7 8 5 6 7 8 5 6 ...
$ Likert.f: Ord.factor w/ 10 levels "1"<"2"<"3"<"4"<...: 5 6 7 8 5 6 7 8 9 ...

levels(Data$Speaker)
[1] "Spongebob" "Patrick"

levels(Data$Question)
[1] "Information" "Presentation" "Questions"

levels(Data$Rater)
[1] "a" "b" "c" "d" "e" "f"

levels(Data$Likert.f)
[1] "1" "2" "3" "4" "5" "6" "7" "8" "9" "10"
### Remove unnecessary objects

```r
rm(Input)
```

**Summary treating Likert data as nominal data**

The number of responses for each response level of `Likert.f` is shown with the `summary` function, but note that these counts are for the entire data frame.

The `xtabs` function can be used to generate counts across groups. This process is known as *cross-tabulation*, or *cross-tabs*. The `prop.table` function, with the `margin=1` option produces the proportions of observations for each row.

This same summary is then visualized with a bar plot.

```r
summary(Data)
```

```
Speaker          Question    Rater  Likert    Likert.f
Spongebob:18    Information:12 a:6  Min. : 3.000 6   :7
Patrick :18     Presentation:12 b:6  1st Qu.: 5.750 7   :7
Questions     :12     c:6  Median : 7.000 5   :6
d:6     :6  Mean : 6.833 8   :6
e:6     :6  3rd Qu.: 8.000 9   :4
f:6     :6  Max. :10.000 10   :3
(Other):3
```

```r
XT = xtabs(~ Speaker + Likert.f, data=Data)
```

```
Likert.f
Speaker   1 2 3 4 5 6 7 8 9 10
Spongebob 0 0 1 2 4 3 3 1 1
Patrick   0 0 0 0 2 4 3 3 2
```

```r
prop.table(XT,
          margin = 1)
```

```
Likert.f
Speaker   1 2 3 4 5 6 7 8 9 10
Spongebob 0.0000 0.0000 0.0556 0.1111 0.2222 0.1667 0.1667 0.0556 0.0556
Patrick   0.0000 0.0000 0.0000 0.0000 0.1111 0.2222 0.2222 0.1667 0.1667 0.1111
```

```r
sum(XT)
```

```
[1] 36
```

```r
### Sum of counts in the table
```
Descriptive Statistics for Likert Data

Summary and Analysis of Extension Education Program Evaluation in R

\[ \text{rowSums}(XT) \]

\[
\begin{array}{ll}
\text{Spongebob} & 18 \\
\text{Patrick} & 18
\end{array}
\]

### Sum of counts for each row

\[ \text{colSums}(XT) \]

\[
\begin{array}{cccccccccccc}
1 & 2 & 3 & 4 & 5 & 6 & 7 & 8 & 9 & 10 \\
0 & 0 & 1 & 2 & 6 & 7 & 7 & 6 & 4 & 3
\end{array}
\]

### Sum of counts for each column

**Bar plot by group**

\[ XT = \text{xtabs}(\sim \text{Speaker} + \text{Likert.f}, \text{data}=\text{Data}) \]

\[ XT \]

\[ \text{barplot}(XT, \text{beside=TRUE, legend=TRUE, ylim=c(0,5)}, \text{# adjust to remove legend overlap xlab="Likert score", ylab="Frequency"}) \]

\[ \text{xtabs to produce counts for two-way data} \]

### Note that the dependent variable (Likert.f)

### is the middle variable in the formula

\[ XT2 = \text{xtabs}(\sim \text{Speaker} + \text{Likert.f} + \text{Question}, \text{...}) \]
Descriptive statistics for Likert data

```
data=Data
XT2

,, Question = Information

Likert.f
Speaker  1 2 3 4 5 6 7 8 9 10
  Spongebob 0 0 0 0 2 2 1 1 0 0
  Patrick   0 0 0 0 0 2 2 1 1 0

,, Question = Presentation

Likert.f
Speaker  1 2 3 4 5 6 7 8 9 10
  Spongebob 0 0 0 0 0 2 2 1 1 0
  Patrick   0 0 0 0 0 0 2 2 2 2

,, Question = Questions

Likert.f
Speaker  1 2 3 4 5 6 7 8 9 10
  Spongebob 0 0 1 2 2 1 0 0 0 0
```

Summary treating Likert data as numeric data

In this code the Likert response data is treated as numeric data. The `summary` function produces the median, quartiles, and extremes. But note that these statistics are for all values for the whole data frame.

The `Summary` function in the FSA package can produce these summary statistics across groups for one-way data or multi-way data.

Histograms are then produced to visualize the distribution of responses across groups. Histograms for both one-way and two-way data can be produced with the `histogram` function in the `lattice` package.

Finally, box plots of the two-way data are produced.

```
library(FSA)

Summarize(Likert ~ Question,
```
Descriptive Statistics for Likert Data

Summary and Analysis of Extension Education Program Evaluation in R

```r
library(FSA)
Summarize(Likert ~ Speaker + Question,
data=Data,
digits=3)

Speaker   Question n  mean    sd min   Q1 median   Q3 max percZero
1 Spongebob Information 6 6.167 1.169   5 5.25    6.0  6.75  8        0
2   Patrick  Information 6 7.167 1.169   6 6.25    7.0  7.75  9        0
3 Spongebob Presentation 6 8.167 1.169   7 7.25    8.0  8.75 10        0
4   Patrick Presentation 6 9.000 0.894   8 8.25    9.0  9.75 10        0
5 Spongebob Questions 6 4.500 1.049   3 4.00    4.5  5.00  6        0
6   Patrick Questions 6 6.000 0.894   5 5.25    6.0  6.75  7        0
```

Bar plots by group
The `histogram` function in the `lattice` package will produce bar plots if the counted variable is ordinal in nature, as `Likert.fis`.

```r
library(lattice)
histogram(~ Likert.f | Speaker,
data=Data,
layout=c(1,2) # columns and rows of individual plots)
```
library(lattice)

histogram(~ Likert.f | Question,
    data=Data,
    layout=c(1,3)  # columns and rows of individual plots
)

171
Bar plots for two-way data

library(lattice)

histogram(~ Likert.f | Speaker + Question, 
data=Data, 
layout=c(2,3)  # columns and rows of individual plots
)

Box plots for two-way data

In general, using the names option is not necessary, but here it is useful because the default group names are long.

boxplot(Likert ~ Speaker + Question, 
data=Data, 
names=c("SB.Inf","P.Inf","SB.Pres", "P.Pres", "SB.Quest", "P.Quest"), 
ylab="Value")
### Note in this example, SB is Spongebob, P is Patrick, Inf is Information, Pres is Presentation, and Quest is Question.

**Interaction plot using medians and quartiles**

Interaction plots are useful to visualize two-way data by plotting the value of a measured variable across the interaction of two factor variables.

In this example, the median *Likert* is calculated for each level of the interaction of two factors, and the first and third quartiles are used to indicate the spread of data about each median.

The `Summarize` function in the *FSA* package creates a data frame called `Sum`. The variables *median*, *Q1*, and *Q3* in this data frame will then be used in the plot.

The interaction plot is produced with the *ggplot2* package. This package is very versatile and powerful for creating plots, but the code can be intimidating at first. Note that the code indicates that the data frame to use is `Sum`, and the use of the variables *Speaker*, *median*, *Question*, *Q1*, *Q3* from this data frame. Also note that the y axis label defined as “Median Likert score”.

### Create a data frame called Sum with median and quartiles

```r
library(FSA)
Sum = Summarize(Likert ~ Speaker + Question, 
data=Data, 
digits=3)
```

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Speaker</th>
<th>Question</th>
<th>n</th>
<th>mean</th>
<th>sd</th>
<th>min</th>
<th>Q1</th>
<th>median</th>
<th>Q3</th>
<th>max</th>
<th>percZero</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>Spongebob</td>
<td>Information</td>
<td>6</td>
<td>6.167</td>
<td>1.169</td>
<td>5</td>
<td>5.25</td>
<td>6.0</td>
<td>6.75</td>
<td>8</td>
<td>0</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Patrick</td>
<td>Information</td>
<td>6</td>
<td>7.167</td>
<td>1.169</td>
<td>6</td>
<td>6.25</td>
<td>7.0</td>
<td>7.75</td>
<td>9</td>
<td>0</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Spongebob</td>
<td>Presentation</td>
<td>6</td>
<td>8.167</td>
<td>1.169</td>
<td>7</td>
<td>7.25</td>
<td>8.0</td>
<td>8.75</td>
<td>10</td>
<td>0</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Patrick</td>
<td>Presentation</td>
<td>6</td>
<td>9.000</td>
<td>0.894</td>
<td>8</td>
<td>8.25</td>
<td>9.0</td>
<td>9.75</td>
<td>10</td>
<td>0</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Spongebob</td>
<td>Questions</td>
<td>6</td>
<td>4.500</td>
<td>1.049</td>
<td>3</td>
<td>4.00</td>
<td>4.5</td>
<td>5.00</td>
<td>6</td>
<td>0</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Patrick</td>
<td>Questions</td>
<td>6</td>
<td>6.000</td>
<td>0.894</td>
<td>5</td>
<td>5.25</td>
<td>6.0</td>
<td>6.75</td>
<td>7</td>
<td>0</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

### Produce interaction plot

```r
library(ggplot2)
pd = position_dodge(.2)

ggplot(Sum, aes(x=Speaker, 
y=median, 
color=Question)) + 
geom_errorbar(aes(ymin=Q1, 
ymax=Q3), 
width=.2, size=0.7, position=pd) + 
geom_point(shape=15, size=4, position=pd) + 
```
Interaction plot using medians and confidence intervals

An interaction plot can also use confidence intervals of the medians for its error bars. Confidence intervals are discussed in the Confidence Intervals chapter, and confidence intervals for medians are discussed in the Confidence Intervals for Medians chapter.

The function `groupwiseMedian` in the `rcompanion` package creates a data frame, called `Sum`, here that includes medians and confidence intervals of the medians for one-way or multi-way data. By default the function uses confidence intervals by the BCa method, but can produce confidence intervals by other methods.

Note that the order of speakers has changed from the previous interaction plot.

```R
library(rcompanion)

Sum = groupwiseMedian(Likert ~ Speaker + Question, 
data = Data, 
conf=0.95, 
R=5000)

Sum

Speaker  Question n Median Conf.level Bca.lower Bca.upper
1 Spongebob  Information 6  6.0 0.95 5  6.5
```
Descriptive statistics with opt-out responses

Opt-out responses include options like “don’t know” or “not applicable”. A typical approach to handling opt-out responses in Likert data is to separate them from the numeric or ordered factor responses of the question and report them separately.
For example, if responses to a question were 5, 5, 5, 4, 4, 2, ‘Don’t know’, ‘N/A’, you might report that you had 8 total responses, with 12.5% “Don’t know”, 12.5% “N/A”, and a median response of 4.5.

**Analysis for vector data**
The `xtabs` function can be used to count the levels of responses with opt-out answers, treating the data as nominal.

The `Summarize` function in the `FSA` will calculate the median for numeric data. Note that the numeric summary includes the number of observations and the number of “valid” observations, which excludes the non-numeric values.

```r
Q1 = c("5", "5", "5", "4", "4", "2", "Don't know", "N/A")
```

**Counts of responses**

```r
Q1.f = as.factor(Q1)
XT = xtabs(~Q1)
XT
```

```
Q1  2  4  5 Don't know  N/A
   1  2  3    1    1
```

```r
prop.table(XT)
```

```
Q1  2  4  5 Don't know  N/A
0.125 0.250 0.375 0.125 0.125
```

**Numerical summary of responses**

```r
Q1.n = as.numeric(Q1)
library(FSA)
Summarize(Q1.n, digits = 2)
```

```
n  nvalid  mean   sd   min  Q1  median   Q3  max
8.00 6.00  4.17 1.17  2.00 4.00  4.50  5.00 5.00
```

**Analysis for long-form data frame**

Similar summaries can be obtained for data in a long-form data frame.

Note that the `read.table` function by default reads in the values of `Likert` as a factor variable, since it
contains character values, not as a character variable. Also note that you shouldn't use `NA` for a value of “not applicable” since `NA` is reserved by R for a missing value.

```r
Input = ("Rater  Question  Likert
'1'  Q1      5
'2'  Q1      5
'3'  Q1      5
'4'  Q1      4
'5'  Q1      4
'6'  Q1      2
'7'  Q1      DDon'tKnow
'8'  Q1      NotApp
'1'  Q2      3
'2'  Q2      3
'3'  Q2      3
'4'  Q2      2
'5'  Q2      DDon'tKnow
'6'  Q2      2
'7'  Q2      DDon'tKnow
'8'  Q2      DDon'tKnow
'1'  Q3      1
'2'  Q3      2
'3'  Q3      3
'4'  Q3      2
'5'  Q3      3
'6'  Q3      1
'7'  Q3      2
'8'  Q3      3
")

Data = read.table(textConnection(Input), header=TRUE)

Counts of responses

```r
XT = xtabs(~ Question + Likert,
          data = Data)

XT

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Likert</th>
<th>Question</th>
<th>1</th>
<th>2</th>
<th>3</th>
<th>4</th>
<th>5</th>
<th>DDon'tKnow</th>
<th>NotApp</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>Q1</td>
<td></td>
<td>0</td>
<td>1</td>
<td>0</td>
<td>2</td>
<td>3</td>
<td>1</td>
<td>1</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Q2</td>
<td></td>
<td>0</td>
<td>2</td>
<td>3</td>
<td>0</td>
<td>0</td>
<td>3</td>
<td>0</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Q3</td>
<td></td>
<td>2</td>
<td>3</td>
<td>3</td>
<td>0</td>
<td>0</td>
<td>0</td>
<td>0</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

### Counts for each question

```r
prop.table(XT,
            margin=1)

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Likert</th>
<th>Question</th>
<th>1</th>
<th>2</th>
<th>3</th>
<th>4</th>
<th>5</th>
<th>DDon'tKnow</th>
<th>NotApp</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td>0</td>
<td>1</td>
<td>0</td>
<td>2</td>
<td>3</td>
<td>1</td>
<td>1</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td>0</td>
<td>2</td>
<td>3</td>
<td>0</td>
<td>0</td>
<td>3</td>
<td>0</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td>2</td>
<td>3</td>
<td>3</td>
<td>0</td>
<td>0</td>
<td>0</td>
<td>0</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

177
### Descriptive Statistics for Likert Data

**Summary and Analysis of Extension Education Program Evaluation in R**

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Question</th>
<th>1</th>
<th>2</th>
<th>3</th>
<th>4</th>
<th>5</th>
<th>DontKnow</th>
<th>NotApp</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>Q1</td>
<td>0.000</td>
<td>0.125</td>
<td>0.000</td>
<td>0.250</td>
<td>0.375</td>
<td>0.125</td>
<td>0.125</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Q2</td>
<td>0.000</td>
<td>0.250</td>
<td>0.375</td>
<td>0.000</td>
<td>0.000</td>
<td>0.375</td>
<td>0.000</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Q3</td>
<td>0.250</td>
<td>0.375</td>
<td>0.375</td>
<td>0.000</td>
<td>0.000</td>
<td>0.000</td>
<td>0.000</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

### Numerical summary of responses

```r
Data$Likert.n = as.numeric(as.character(Data$Likert))
library(FSA)
Summarize(Likert.n ~ Question, data = Data)
```

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Question</th>
<th>n</th>
<th>nvalid</th>
<th>mean</th>
<th>sd</th>
<th>min</th>
<th>Q1</th>
<th>median</th>
<th>Q3</th>
<th>max</th>
<th>percZero</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>1</td>
<td>Q1</td>
<td>8</td>
<td>4.16667</td>
<td>1.1690452</td>
<td>2</td>
<td>4.00</td>
<td>4.5</td>
<td>5</td>
<td>5</td>
<td>0</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>2</td>
<td>Q2</td>
<td>8</td>
<td>2.600000</td>
<td>0.5477226</td>
<td>2</td>
<td>2.00</td>
<td>3.0</td>
<td>3</td>
<td>3</td>
<td>0</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>3</td>
<td>Q3</td>
<td>8</td>
<td>2.125000</td>
<td>0.8345230</td>
<td>1</td>
<td>1.75</td>
<td>2.0</td>
<td>3</td>
<td>3</td>
<td>0</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

### Numerical summary

```r
Summary for whole data frame
```

```r
XT = xtabs(~Likert, data = Data)
XT
```

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Likert</th>
<th>1</th>
<th>2</th>
<th>3</th>
<th>4</th>
<th>5</th>
<th>DontKnow</th>
<th>NotApp</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>2</td>
<td>6</td>
<td>6</td>
<td>2</td>
<td>3</td>
<td>4</td>
<td>1</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

```r
prop.table(XT)
```

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Likert</th>
<th>1</th>
<th>2</th>
<th>3</th>
<th>4</th>
<th>5</th>
<th>DontKnow</th>
<th>NotApp</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>0.08333333</td>
<td>0.25000000</td>
<td>0.25000000</td>
<td>0.08333333</td>
<td>0.12500000</td>
<td>0.16666667</td>
<td>0.04166667</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

```r
sum(XT)
```

[1] 24

### Sum of counts in table
Descriptive Statistics for Likert Data

Summary and Analysis of Extension Education Program Evaluation in R

```r
Summarize(~ Likert.n,
          data = Data,
          digits = 2)
```

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>n</th>
<th>nvalid</th>
<th>mean</th>
<th>sd</th>
<th>min</th>
<th>Q1</th>
<th>median</th>
<th>Q3</th>
<th>max</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>24.00</td>
<td>19.00</td>
<td>2.89</td>
<td>1.24</td>
<td>1.00</td>
<td>2.00</td>
<td>3.00</td>
<td>3.50</td>
<td>5.00</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

Exercises G

1. Considering Maggie Simpson's data,
   a. How many Likert responses of "4" were there?
   b. What percentage of responses was that?
   c. What was the median Likert response?
   d. What was the minimum response?
   e. How would you summarize the bar plot of Maggie's responses?

2. Considering Spongebob and Patrick's workshops,
   a. How many Likert responses of "5" did Spongebob and Patrick get, respectively?
   b. What percentage of total responses for each of them were these?
   c. How would you summarize the bar plot of their responses?
   d. What were the median scores for Patrick for each of Information, Presentation, and Questions?
   e. What do the histograms for the two-way data (Spongebob and Patrick for each of Information, Presentation, and Questions) suggest to you?
   f. Are your impressions borne out by the interaction plots?
   g. Describe these results, including your opinions on the practical implications.

3. Sandy Cheeks and Squidward each delivered presentations, and were each evaluated on each of the two courses (A and B).

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Speaker</th>
<th>Course</th>
<th>Likert</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>Sandy</td>
<td>A</td>
<td>5</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Sandy</td>
<td>A</td>
<td>5</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

179
a. Summarize the data as one-way or two-way data, using at least one plot, and at least one numerical summary. Interpret your results, and describe your conclusions. Remember to use statistics that are appropriate for Likert data. Include your opinion on the practical importance.

### Descriptive Statistics with the likert Package

The \texttt{likert} package can be used to produce attractive summaries and plots of one-sample or one-way Likert data. The package is somewhat finicky with the form the data it accepts, however. Data must be in “wide” format. Long-format and wide-format data are discussed in the section “Long-format and wide-format data” in the \textit{Types of Variables} chapter. In addition, sample sizes for each level of the factor variable must be equal, but you can use \texttt{NA} values for missing observations.

#### Packages used in this chapter

The packages used in this chapter include:

- \texttt{psych}
- \texttt{likert}

The following commands will install these packages if they are not already installed:

```r
if(!require(psych)){install.packages("psych")}
if(!require(likert)){install.packages("likert")}
```
The **likert** package

```r
Input =(" 
   Pooh    Piglet    Tigger 
   3       2       4 
   5       4       4 
   4       2       4 
   4       2       4 
   4       1       5 
   4       2       3 
   4       3       5 
   4       2       4 
   5       2       4 
   5       3       3 
")
```

Data = read.table(textConnection(Input),header=TRUE)

### Change Likert scores to factor and specify levels

```r
Data$Pooh = factor(Data$Pooh, 
   levels = c("1", "2", "3", "4", "5"), 
   ordered = TRUE)
```

```r
Data$Piglet = factor(Data$Piglet, 
   levels = c("1", "2", "3", "4", "5"), 
   ordered = TRUE)
```

```r
Data$Tigger = factor(Data$Tigger, 
   levels = c("1", "2", "3", "4", "5"), 
   ordered = TRUE)
```

### Double check the data frame

```r
library(psych)
headTail(Data)
str(Data)
```

'\texttt{data.frame}': 10 obs. of 3 variables:

- \texttt{Pooh}: Ord.factor w/ 5 levels "1"<"2"<"3"<"4"<..: 3 5 4 4 4 4 4 4 5 5
- \texttt{Piglet}: Ord.factor w/ 5 levels "1"<"2"<"3"<"4"<..: 2 4 2 2 1 2 3 2 2 3
- \texttt{Tigger}: Ord.factor w/ 5 levels "1"<"2"<"3"<"4"<..: 4 4 4 5 3 5 4 4 3

`summary(Data)`

### Remove unnecessary objects
Summary statistics and plots with the *likert* package

Percent responses in each group

```r
library(likert)
likert(Data)
```

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Item</th>
<th>1</th>
<th>2</th>
<th>3</th>
<th>4</th>
<th>5</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>1 Pooh</td>
<td>0</td>
<td>0</td>
<td>10</td>
<td>60</td>
<td>30</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>2 Piglet</td>
<td>10</td>
<td>60</td>
<td>20</td>
<td>10</td>
<td>0</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>3 Tigger</td>
<td>0</td>
<td>0</td>
<td>20</td>
<td>60</td>
<td>20</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

### Note: if there are NA's, this summary doesn't tell you!

### Count responses with summary function in native stats package

```r
summary(Data)
```

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Pooh</th>
<th>Piglet</th>
<th>Tigger</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>1:0</td>
<td>1:1</td>
<td>1:0</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>2:0</td>
<td>2:6</td>
<td>2:0</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>3:1</td>
<td>3:2</td>
<td>3:2</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>4:6</td>
<td>4:1</td>
<td>4:6</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>5:3</td>
<td>5:0</td>
<td>5:2</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

### Note: if there are NA's, this summary will tell you

```r
library(likert)
Result = likert(Data)
summary(Result)
```

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Item</th>
<th>low</th>
<th>neutral</th>
<th>high</th>
<th>mean</th>
<th>sd</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>1 Pooh</td>
<td>0</td>
<td>10</td>
<td>90</td>
<td>4.2</td>
<td>0.6324555</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>2 Piglet</td>
<td>70</td>
<td>20</td>
<td>80</td>
<td>4.0</td>
<td>0.6666667</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>3 Tigger</td>
<td>0</td>
<td>20</td>
<td>10</td>
<td>2.3</td>
<td>0.8232726</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

### Note: responses are grouped into "low", "neutral", and "high"

### Note: if there are NA's, this summary doesn't tell you!

*Plots that treat Likert data like factor data*
Bar plot

```r
library(likert)
Result = likert(Data)
plot(Result, type="bar")
```

### Note: for the percent numbers,
### responses are grouped into "low", "neutral", and "high"

![Bar plot example](image)

Heat plot

```r
library(likert)
Result = likert(Data)
plot(Result, type="heat",
    low.color = "white",
    high.color = "blue",
    text.color = "black",
    text.size = 4,
    wrap = 50)
```
Plots that treat Likert data like numeric data

Density plot

```r
library(likert)

Result = likert(Data)

plot(Result,
     type="density",
     facet = TRUE,
     bw = 0.5)
```
Confidence Intervals for Medians

Confidence intervals are discussed in the *Confidence Intervals* chapter.

The methods for determining confidence intervals for medians are distinct from the traditional method for means. There are different methods for calculating confidence intervals for the median, and there are few different methods are presented in this chapter.

When data distributions are normal or uniform in distribution, and the number of observations is large (say, \(n \geq 100\)), any of the methods should work reasonably well. When distributions are heavily skewed or the number of observations is relatively small (say, \(n < 20\)), results from some methods can differ notably from others.

For routine use, I recommend the `groupwiseMedian` function in the `rcompanion` package, with either the BCa or the percentile method. These are bootstrap methods.

The BCa (bias corrected, accelerated) is often cited as the best for theoretical reasons. The percentile method is also cited as typically good. However, if you get the “extreme order statistics used as endpoints” warning message, use a different test. For small data sets, the interval from BCa may be wider than for some other methods.

For a description of the bootstrap confidence interval methods, see Carpenter and Bithell (2000) in the “References” section below.

*Technical note:* Bootstrapped confidence intervals may not be reliable for discreet data, such as the ordinal Likert data used in these examples, especially for small samples. My understanding is that the determination of the confidence intervals assumes a continuous and bell-shaped distribution of the statistic (the median, in this case) from the bootstrapped samples. This concern is not considered in the examples in this book.
Other methods used in the groupwiseMedian function include the basic, normal, exact, and wilcox methods.

Other functions that calculate a confidence interval for a median are the wilcox.test function, and the MedianCI function in the DescTools package.

Packages used in this chapter

The packages used in this chapter include:
- psych
- FSA
- boot
- DescTools
- plyr
- rcompanion

The following commands will install these packages if they are not already installed:

```r
if(!require(psych)){install.packages("psych")}
if(!require(FSA)){install.packages("FSA")}
if(!require(boot)){install.packages("boot")}
if(!require(DescTools)){install.packages("DescTools")}
if(!require(plyr)){install.packages("plyr")}
if(!require(rcompanion)){install.packages("rcompanion")}
```

Medians, quantiles, and confidence intervals for one-sample data

For one-sample data, the median and quantiles can be calculated with the median function, the summary function, and the Summarize function from the FSA package.

The function groupwiseMedian in the rcompanion package produces medians and confidence intervals for medians. It can also calculate these statistics for grouped data (one-way or multi-way).

This example will use some theoretical data for Lisa Simpson, rated on a 10-point Likert item.

```
Input =("Speaker          Rater  Likert
'Lisa Simpson'   1     8
'Lisa Simpson'   2     10
'Lisa Simpson'   3     9
'Lisa Simpson'   4     10
'Lisa Simpson'   5     6
'Lisa Simpson'   6     5
'Lisa Simpson'   7     3
'Lisa Simpson'   8     7
'Lisa Simpson'   9     8
'Lisa Simpson'   10    5
'Lisa Simpson'  11    10
```

186
Confidence Intervals for Medians

Summary and Analysis of Extension Education Program Evaluation in R

`'Lisa Simpson'  12  4
'Lisa Simpson'  13  8
'Lisa Simpson'  14  6
'Lisa Simpson'  15  9
'Lisa Simpson'  16  8
'Lisa Simpson'  17  7
'Lisa Simpson'  18  5
'Lisa Simpson'  19  8
'Lisa Simpson'  20  7
'Lisa Simpson'  21  9
'Lisa Simpson'  22  8
'Lisa Simpson'  23  7
'Lisa Simpson'  24  5
'Lisa Simpson'  25 10
'Lisa Simpson'  26  7
`

Data = read.table(textConnection(Input),header=TRUE)

### Check the data frame

library(psych)

dataHeadTail(Data)
str(Data)
summary(Data)

### Remove unnecessary objects

rData(Input)

*Produce median with median, summary, and Summarize functions*

median(Data$Likert)

[1] 7.5

summary(Data)

Speaker       Rater       Likert
Lisa Simpson:26 Min. : 1.00 Min. : 3.000
1st Qu.: 7.25 1st Qu.: 6.000
Median :13.50 Median : 7.500
Mean :13.50 Mean : 7.269
3rd Qu.:19.75 3rd Qu.: 8.750
Max. :26.00 Max. :10.000
The *Summarize* function in the *FSA* package

Note that the 1 in the formula on the right side of the tilde (˜) indicates that the function should treat the data as one-sample data.

```r
library(FSA)
Summarize(Likert ~ 1,
data = Data,
digits = 3)
```

```
   n nvalid  mean    sd min   Q1 median   Q3  max percZero
26    26 7.269 1.951  3.6   7.5   8.75  10.0        0
```

### groupwiseMedian function to produce medians and confidence intervals

In the *groupwiseMedian* function, the *basic*, *normal*, *percentile*, *bca*, *wilcox*, and *exact* options determine which types of confidence intervals will be calculated. By default, only the *bca* option is set to *TRUE*, so the other options usually don't need to be included.

Note that results for any statistic derived from an iterative process like bootstrapping may be slightly different.

Note that the 1 in the formula on the right side of the tilde (˜) indicates that the function should treat the data as one-sample data.

See `library(rcompanion); ?groupwiseMedian` for more information on this function.

If the function takes too long to complete, you can decrease the $R=$ value.

```r
library(rcompanion)

groupwiseMedian(Likert ~ 1,
data = Data, conf = 0.95, R = 5000,
percentile = TRUE, bca = FALSE,
basic = FALSE, normal = FALSE, wilcox = FALSE,
digits = 3)
```

```
   .id  n  Median Conf.level Percentile.lower Percentile.upper
1 <NA>  26    7.5  0.95          6.5             8
```

### Medians, quantiles, and confidence intervals for grouped data

The following example revisits the Pooh, Piglet and Tigger data from the *Descriptive Statistics with the likert Package* chapter.
The *Summarize* function in the *FSA* package will produce medians and quantiles for grouped data including one-way and multi-way data.

The function *groupwiseMedian* will produce medians and confidence intervals for grouped data, including one-way and multi-way data.

```r
Input =(" Speaker  Likert
   Pooh     3
   Pooh     5
   Pooh     4
   Pooh     4
   Pooh     4
   Pooh     4
   Pooh     4
   Pooh     5
   Pooh     5
   Piglet   2
   Piglet   4
   Piglet   2
   Piglet   2
   Piglet   1
   Piglet   2
   Piglet   3
   Piglet   2
   Piglet   2
   Piglet   3
   Tigger   4
   Tigger   4
   Tigger   4
   Tigger   5
   Tigger   3
   Tigger   5
   Tigger   4
   Tigger   4
   Tigger   3")

Data = read.table(textConnection(Input),header=TRUE)

*Summarize function in FSA package for grouped data*

```r
library(FSA)

Summarize(Likert ~ Speaker,
  data=Data,
  digits=3)
```

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Speaker</th>
<th>n</th>
<th>nvalid</th>
<th>mean</th>
<th>sd</th>
<th>min</th>
<th>Q1</th>
<th>median</th>
<th>Q3</th>
<th>max</th>
<th>percZero</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>Piglet</td>
<td>10</td>
<td></td>
<td>2.3</td>
<td>0.823</td>
<td>1</td>
<td>2</td>
<td>2.75</td>
<td>4</td>
<td>0</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>
Confidence Intervals for Medians

Summary and Analysis of Extension Education Program Evaluation in R

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th></th>
<th>Pooh 10</th>
<th>10</th>
<th>4.2</th>
<th>0.632</th>
<th>3</th>
<th>4</th>
<th>4.475</th>
<th>5</th>
<th>0</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>3</td>
<td>Tigger 10</td>
<td>10</td>
<td>4.0</td>
<td>0.667</td>
<td>3</td>
<td>4</td>
<td>4.400</td>
<td>5</td>
<td>0</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

**groupwiseMedian function for grouped data**

```r
library(rcompanion)
groupwiseMedian(Likert ~ Speaker,
data       = Data,
conf       = 0.95,
R          = 5000,
percentile = TRUE,
bca        = FALSE,
digits     = 3)
```

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th></th>
<th>n</th>
<th>Median</th>
<th>Conf.level</th>
<th>Percentile.lower</th>
<th>Percentile.upper</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>1</td>
<td>10</td>
<td>2</td>
<td>0.95</td>
<td>2.0</td>
<td>3.0</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>2</td>
<td>10</td>
<td>4</td>
<td>0.95</td>
<td>4.0</td>
<td>5.0</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>3</td>
<td>10</td>
<td>4</td>
<td>0.95</td>
<td>3.5</td>
<td>4.5</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

Optional methods and discussion on confidence intervals for medians

Input =("Speaker          Rater  Likert
Lisa Simpson'   1         8
'Lisa Simpson'   2        10
'Lisa Simpson'   3         9
'Lisa Simpson'   4        10
'Lisa Simpson'   5         6
'Lisa Simpson'   6         5
'Lisa Simpson'   7         3
'Lisa Simpson'   8        10
'Lisa Simpson'   9        8
'Lisa Simpson'   10        5
'Lisa Simpson'   11        10
'Lisa Simpson'   12        4
'Lisa Simpson'   13        8
'Lisa Simpson'   14        6
'Lisa Simpson'   15        9
'Lisa Simpson'   16        8
'Lisa Simpson'   17        7
'Lisa Simpson'   18        5
'Lisa Simpson'   19        8
'Lisa Simpson'   20        7
'Lisa Simpson'   21        9
'Lisa Simpson'   22        8
'Lisa Simpson'   23        7
'Lisa Simpson'   24        5
'Lisa Simpson'   25       10
'Lisa Simpson'   26        7
")
Data = read.table(textConnection(Input),header=TRUE)

Optional: Confidence interval for medians with the wilcox.test function
For one-sample data, the wilcox.test function will produce a confidence interval for the median. It will also produce a "(pseudo)median". For details on the calculations of these statistics, see ?wilcox.test.

Note that the conf.int=TRUE option must be used to produce the confidence interval, and the conf.level=0.95 option indicates that a 95% confidence interval should be calculated.

wilcox.test(Data$Likert,
            alternative="two.sided",
            correct=TRUE,
            conf.int=TRUE,
            conf.level=0.95)

  95 percent confidence interval:
  6.499961 8.000009

Optional: Median and confidence interval with the DescTools package
With the MedianCI function in the DescTools package, the method=exact option uses the confidence interval from the SignTest function in DescTools. The method=boot option uses the basic method from the boot package.

library(DescTools)

MedianCI(Data$Likert,
          conf.level = 0.95,
          na.rm = FALSE,
          method = "exact",
          R = 10000)

  median lwr.ci upr.ci
    7.5    6.0    8.0

Optional: Confidence interval for median by bootstrap
Bootstrapping is a method by which a statistic is calculated by repeated sampling the given data to better estimate the distribution of values in the population from which the sample was taken.

The boot package in R can derive various statistics with a bootstrap process. Note that the grammar of the function is somewhat complicated, but here Data$Likert is the variable we wish to get the statistics for, and R=10000 indicates the number of bootstrap replicates to use. Mboot here is defined as the result of the bootstrap. The boot.ci function produces four types of confidence intervals for the median. Note also that the displaying the result Mboot gives a standard error for the estimated median. See ?boot.ci for more details on these methods.

If the function takes too long to complete, you can decrease the R= value.
Note that results for any statistic derived from an iterative process like bootstrapping may be slightly different if the process is re-run.

```r
library(boot)

Mboot = boot(Data$Likert, 
             function(x,i) median(x[i]),
             R=10000)

boot.ci(Mboot, 
       conf = 0.95, 
       type = c("norm", "basic", "perc", "bca")
)

Intervals :
Level      Normal       Basic
95%   ( 6.510,  8.535 )   ( 7.000,  8.500 )

Level      Percentile    BCa
95%   ( 6.5,  8.0 )   ( 6.0,  8.0 )

### Other information

Mboot

hist(Mboot$t[,1],
     col = "darkgray")
```

References


Exercises H

1. Considering Lisa Simpson’s data,
   a. What was her median Likert score?

2. For Lisa Simpson’s data, what is the 95% confidence interval for the median using the following methods?
   a. wilcox
   b. normal
c. basic
d. percentile
e. BCa

3. Considering the Pooh, Piglet, and Tigger data,
   a. For Piglet, what was his median score and 95% confidence interval using the percentile method?

4. Bart Simpson and Milhouse Van Houten were each evaluated on a Likert scale. Determine the median score for each, and determine the 95% confidence interval for these median scores.
   • Be sure to state which method for the confidence interval you used.
   • How can you interpret the results? Include the practical interpretation. For example, are the differences in scores large enough to be meaningful?

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Speaker</th>
<th>Likert</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>Bart</td>
<td>7</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Bart</td>
<td>7</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Bart</td>
<td>8</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Bart</td>
<td>9</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Bart</td>
<td>5</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Bart</td>
<td>6</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Bart</td>
<td>6</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Bart</td>
<td>7</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Bart</td>
<td>8</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Bart</td>
<td>7</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Bart</td>
<td>7</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Milhouse</td>
<td>8</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Milhouse</td>
<td>8</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Milhouse</td>
<td>7</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Milhouse</td>
<td>7</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Milhouse</td>
<td>9</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Milhouse</td>
<td>9</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Milhouse</td>
<td>10</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Milhouse</td>
<td>6</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Milhouse</td>
<td>7</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Milhouse</td>
<td>8</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Milhouse</td>
<td>7</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Milhouse</td>
<td>8</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>
There are occasions when it is useful to categorize Likert scores, Likert scales, or continuous data into groups or categories. In general, there are no universal rules for converting numeric data to categories. A few methods are presented here.

**Categorizing data by a range of values**

One approach is to create categories according to logical cut-off values in the scores or measured values. An example of this is the common grading system in the U.S. in which a 90% grade or better is an “A”, 80–89% is “B”, etc. It is common in this approach to make the categories with equal spread in values. For example, there is a 10 point spread in a “B” grade and a 10 point spread in a “C” grade. But this equality is not required. Below in the “Categorize data by range of values” example, 5-point Likert data are converted into categories with 4 and 5 being “High”, 3 being “Medium”, and 1 and 2 being “Low”.

This approach relies on the chosen cut-off points being meaningful. For example, for a grade of 70–79 to be considered “sufficient”, the evaluation instruments (e.g. the tests, quizzes, and assignments) need to be calibrated so that a grade of 75 really is “sufficient”, and not “excellent” or “good”, etc. You can imagine a case where a 4 or 5 on a 5-point Likert item is considered “high”, but if all respondents scored 4 or 5 on the item, it might not be clear that these values are “high”, but may just be the typical response. Likewise, in this case, the decision to group 4 and 5 as “high” needs be compared with a decision to group 4 with 2 and 3 as “medium”. This breakdown may be closer to how people interpret a 5-point Likert scale. Either grouping could be meaningful depending on the purpose of the categorization and the interpretation of each level in the Likert item.

**Categorizing data by percentiles**

A second approach is to use percentiles to categorize data. Remember, the value for the 90th percentile is the score or measurement below which 90% of respondents scored.

The advantage to this approach is that it does not rely on the scoring system being meaningful in its absolute values. That is, students scoring above the 90th percentile are scoring higher than 90% of students. It doesn’t matter if the score for the 90th percentile is 90 out of 100 or 50 out of 100. If the groups use equally-spaced breakpoints, for example 0th, 25th, 50th, 75th, and 100th percentiles, there should be approximately an equal number of respondents in each category.

**Categorizing data with clustering**

A third approach is to use a clustering algorithm to divide data into groups with similar measurements. This is useful when there are multiple measurements for an individual. For example, if students receive scores on reading, math, and analytical thinking, an algorithm can determine if, for example, there is a group of students who do well on all three measurements, and a group of students who do well in math and analysis but who do poorly on reading. Most clustering algorithms assume that measurement data is continuous in nature. Below, the partitioning around medoids (PAM) method is used with the manhattan metric. This may be relatively more suitable for ordinal data than some other methods.

**Packages used in this chapter**

The packages used in this chapter include:
The following commands will install these packages if they are not already installed:

```r
if(!require(psych)){install.packages("psych")}
if(!require(cluster)){install.packages("cluster")}
if(!require(fpc)){install.packages("fpc")}
```

**Examples for converting numeric data to categories**

```r
Input =("Instructor  Student  Likert
Homer      a        3
Homer      b        4
Homer      c        4
Homer      d        4
Homer      e        4
Homer      f        5
Homer      g        5
Homer      h        5
Homer      i        3
Homer      j        2
Homer      k        3
Homer      l        4
Homer      m        5
Homer      n        5
Homer      o        5
Homer      p        4
Homer      q        4
Homer      r        3
Homer      s        2
Homer      t        5
Homer      u        3"
)

Data = read.table(textConnection(Input),header=TRUE)
```

```r
### Check the data frame
library(psych)
headTail(Data)
str(Data)
summary(Data)
```

```r
### Remove unnecessary objects
```
Converting numeric data to categories

Categorize data by range of values
The following example will categorize responses on a single 5-point Likert item. The algorithm will be a score of 1 or 2 will be called “low”, a score of 3 “medium”, and a score of 4 or 5 “high”.

Categorize data

```
Data$Category[Data$Likert == 1 | Data$Likert == 2] = "Low"
Data$Category[Data$Likert == 3] = "Medium"
Data$Category[Data$Likert == 4 | Data$Likert == 5] = "High"
```

Order factor levels to make output easier to read

```
Data$Category = factor(Data$Category,
levels=c("Low", "Medium", "High"))
```

Summarize counts of categories

```
XT = xtabs(~ Category + Instructor,
data = Data)
```

```
Instructor
Category Homer
Low 2
Medium 5
High 14
```

Report students in each category

```
Data$Student[Data$Category == "Low"]
[1] j s

Data$Student[Data$Category == "Medium"]
[1] a i k r u

Data$Student[Data$Category == "High"]
[1] b c d e f g h l m n o p q t
```
Alternate method with `tapply`

```r
tapply(X = Data$Student,
       INDEX = Data$Category,
       FUN = print)
```

- $Low
  - [1] j s
- $Medium
  - [1] a i k r u
- $High
  - [1] b c d e f g h l m n o p q t

**Summary table**

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Category</th>
<th>Range</th>
<th>Count</th>
<th>Students</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>Low</td>
<td>1 or 2</td>
<td>2</td>
<td>j, s</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Medium</td>
<td>3</td>
<td>5</td>
<td>a, i, k, r, u</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>High</td>
<td>4 or 5</td>
<td>14</td>
<td>b, c, d, e, f, g, h, l, m, n, o, p, q, t</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

**Categorize data by percentile**

The following example will categorize responses on a single 5-point Likert item. Respondents scoring below the 33rd percentile will be labeled “Lower third”; those between the 33rd and 67th percentile “Middle third”; and those above the 67th percentile “Upper third”.

```
Percentile_00  = min(Data$Likert)
Percentile_33  = quantile(Data$Likert, 0.33333)
Percentile_67  = quantile(Data$Likert, 0.66667)
Percentile_100 = max(Data$Likert)
```

```r
RB = rbind(Percentile_00, Percentile_33, Percentile_67, Percentile_100)
dimnames(RB)[[2]] = "Value"
```

```
RB
```

```
Value
Percentile_00  2.0000
Percentile_33  3.6666
Percentile_67  4.3334
Percentile_100 5.0000
```

```r
Data$Group[Data$Likert >= Percentile_00 & Data$Likert <  Percentile_33]  = "Lower_third"
Data$Group[Data$Likert >= Percentile_33 & Data$Likert <  Percentile_67]  = "Middle_third"
Data$Group[Data$Likert >= Percentile_67 & Data$Likert <= Percentile_100] = "Upper_third"
```
Order factor levels to make output easier to read

```r
Data$Group = factor(Data$Group,
  levels=c("Lower_third", "Middle_third", "Upper_third"))
```

Summarize counts of groups

```r
XT = xtabs(~ Group + Instructor,
  data = Data)

XT

Group    Instructor
Lower_third  Homer
  7
Middle_third  7
Upper_third  7
```

Report students in each group

```r
tapply(X     = Data$Student,
  INDEX = Data$Group,
  FUN   = print)

$Lower_third
[1] a i j k r s u

$Middle_third
[1] b c d e l p q

$Upper_third
[1] f g h m n o t
```

Summary table

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Group</th>
<th>Range</th>
<th>Count</th>
<th>Students</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>Lower third</td>
<td>1, 2, or 3</td>
<td>7</td>
<td>a, i, j, k, r, s, u</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Middle third</td>
<td>4</td>
<td>7</td>
<td>b, c, d, e, l, p, q</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Upper third</td>
<td>5</td>
<td>7</td>
<td>f, g, h, m, n, o, t</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

**Categorize data by clustering**

In the following example, each student has a score for *Happy* and for *Tired*. The students will be divided into clusters based on the similarities of their scores across both measures.

```r
Input =(""
Instructor  Student  Happy  Tired
```
CONVERTING NUMERIC DATA TO CATEGORIES

SUMMARY AND ANALYSIS OF EXTENSION EDUCATION PROGRAM EVALUATION IN R

```
Marge a 5 5
Marge b 5 5
Marge c 2 5
Marge d 2 5
Marge e 5 5
Marge f 5 5
Marge g 1 5
Marge h 1 5
Marge i 1 5
Marge j 5 5
Marge k 3 3
Marge l 3 3
Marge m 3 3
Marge n 5 2
Marge o 5 2
Marge p 5 1
Marge q 5 1
Marge r 5 1
Marge s 4 1
Marge t 4 1
```

Data = read.table(textConnection(Input),header=TRUE)

```r
# Check the data frame
library(psych)
headTail(Data)
str(Data)
summary(Data)

### Remove unnecessary objects
rm(Input)
```

Plot data
In the following plot, each letter represents a Student from the data frame. To me, this plot suggests that the data could be reasonably clustered into 4 or perhaps 7 or 8 clusters.

```
plot(jitter(Happy) ~ jitter(Tired),
     data = Data,
     pch=as.character(Data$Student))
```
Use only numeric data

```r
Data.num = Data[c("Happy", "Tired")]
```

Determine the optimal number of clusters

The `pamk` function in the `fpc` package can determine the optimum number of clusters for the *partitioning around medoids* (PAM) method. It will also complete the PAM analysis, but we'll do that separately below.

Practical considerations may override the results of the `pamk` function. In the example below, if we include 1 in the possible range of cluster numbers, the function will determine that 1 is the optimum number. Also, if we extend the range to, say, 10, the function will choose 7 as the optimum number, but this may be too many for our purposes.

```r
library(fpc)

PAMK = pamk(Data.num,
             krange = 2:5,
             metric="manhattan")

PAMK$nc

[1] 4

### This is the optimum number of clusters in the range

plot(PAMK$crit)
lines(PAMK$crit)
For the range of cluster numbers shown on the x-axis, the crit value is maximized at 4, suggesting 4 is optimum number of clusters for this range.

### Categorize data
We will use the `pam` function in the `cluster` package to divide our data into four clusters.

```r
library(cluster)

PAM = pam(x = Data.num, k = 4, metric="manhattan")

PAM

Medoids:
  ID Happy Tired
[1,] 10 5 5
[2,]  9 1 5
[3,] 13 3 3
[4,] 16 5 1

Clustering vector:
  [1] 1 1 2 2 1 1 2 2 2 1 3 3 3 4 4 4 4 4 4 4 4 4

### Add clusters to data frame

PAMClust = rep("NA", length(Data$Likert))

PAMClust[PAM$clustering == 1] = "Cluster 1"
PAMClust[PAM$clustering == 2] = "Cluster 2"
PAMClust[PAM$clustering == 3] = "Cluster 3"
PAMClust[PAM$clustering == 4] = "Cluster 4"

Data$Cluster = PAMClust
```
Order factor levels to make output easier to read

```r
Data$Cluster = factor(Data$Cluster, 
                  levels=c("Cluster 1", "Cluster 2", 
                           "Cluster 3", "Cluster 4"))
```

Summarize counts of groups

```r
XT = xtabs(~ Cluster + Instructor, 
           data = Data)

XT

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Instructor</th>
<th>Cluster</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>Marge</td>
<td>Cluster 1</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>5</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>Cluster 2</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>5</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>Cluster 3</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>3</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>Cluster 4</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>7</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>
```

Report students in each group

```r
tapply(X = Data$Student, 
       INDEX = Data$Cluster, 
       FUN = print)

$`Cluster 1`'
[1] a b e f j

$`Cluster 2`'
[1] c d g h i

$`Cluster 3`'
[1] k l m

$`Cluster 4`'
[1] n o p q r s t
```

Summary table

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Cluster</th>
<th>Interpretation</th>
<th>Count</th>
<th>Students</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>Cluster 1</td>
<td>Tired and happy</td>
<td>5</td>
<td>a, b, e, f, j</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Cluster 2</td>
<td>Tired and not happy</td>
<td>5</td>
<td>c, d, d, h, i</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Cluster 3</td>
<td>Middle of the road</td>
<td>3</td>
<td>k, l, m</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Cluster 4</td>
<td>Not tired and happy</td>
<td>7</td>
<td>n, o, p, q, r, s, t</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>
CONVERTING NUMERIC DATA TO CATEGORIES

SUMMARY AND ANALYSIS OF EXTENSION EDUCATION PROGRAM EVALUATION IN R

Final plot

```r
ggplot(Data, 
    aes(x = Tired, 
         y = Happy, 
         color = Cluster)) + 
geom_point(size=3) + 
geom_jitter(width = 0.4, height = 0.4) + 
theme_bw()
```

![Plot](image-url)
Introduction to Traditional Nonparametric Tests

Packages used in this chapter

The packages used in this chapter include:

- rcompanion

The following commands will install these packages if they are not already installed:

```r
if(!require(rcompanion)){install.packages("rcompanion")}
```

Introduction

The traditional nonparametric tests presented in this book are primarily rank-based tests. Instead of using the numeric values of the dependent variable, the dependent variable is converted into relative ranks.

For example, imagine we have the heights of eight students in centimeters.

```r
Height = c(110, 132, 137, 139, 140, 142, 142, 145)
names(Height) = letters[1:8]
Height

   a  b  c  d  e  f  g  h
  110 132 137 139 140 142 142 145

rank(Height)

   a  b  c  d  e  f  g  h
  1.0 2.0 3.0 4.0 5.0 6.5 6.5 8.0
```

`a` has the smallest height and so is ranked 1. `b` has the next smallest height and so is ranked 2. And so on. Note that `f` and `g` are tied for spots 6 and 7, and so share a rank of 6.5.

Also note that the value of `a` is quite a bit smaller than the others, but its rank is simply 1. Information about the absolute height values is lost, and only the relative ranking is retained in the ranks. That is, if the value of `a` were changed to 100 or 5 or -10, its rank would remain 1 in this data set.
The advantage of using these rank-based tests is that they don’t make many assumptions about the distribution of the data. Instead, their conclusions are based on the relative ranks of values in the groups being tested.

**Advantages of nonparametric tests**

- Most of the traditional nonparametric tests presented in this section are relatively common, and your audience is relatively likely to be familiar with them.

- They are appropriate for interval/ratio or ordinal dependent variables.

- Their nonparametric nature makes them appropriate for data that don’t meet the assumptions of parametric analyses. These include data that are skewed, non-normal, contain outliers, or possibly are censored. (Censored data is data where there is an upper or lower limit to values. For example, if ages under 5 are reported as “under 5").

**Disadvantages of nonparametric tests**

- These tests are typically named after their authors, with names like Mann–Whitney, Kruskal–Wallis, and Wilcoxon signed-rank. It may be difficult to remember these names, or to remember which test is used in which situation.

- Most of the traditional nonparametric tests presented here are limited by the types of experimental designs they can address. They are typically limited to a one-way comparison of independent groups (e.g. Kruskal–Wallis), or to unreplicated complete block design for paired samples (e.g. Friedman). The aligned-ranks approach, however, allows for more complicated designs.

- Readers are likely to find a lot of contradictory information in different sources about the hypotheses and assumptions of these tests. In particular, authors will often treat the hypotheses of some tests as corresponding to tests of medians, and then list the assumptions of the test as corresponding to these hypotheses. However, if this is not explicitly explained, the result is that different sources list different assumptions that data must meet in order for the test to be valid. This creates unnecessary confusion in the mind of students trying to correctly employ these tests.

**Interpretation of nonparametric tests**

In general, these tests determine if there is a *systematic* difference among groups. This may be due to a difference in location (e.g. median) or in the shape or spread of the distribution of the data. Tests like Mann–Whitney and Kruskal–Wallis use a null hypothesis of “stochastic equality”, with the alternative sometimes called “stochastic dominance”. It is therefore appropriate to report significant results as, e.g., "There is a significant difference between Likert scores from the pre-test and the post-test." Or, "The significant Mann–Whitney test indicates that Likert scores from the two classes come from different populations."
For the Mann-Whitney and Kruskal-Wallis tests, if the distributions of the groups have the same shape and spread, then it can be assumed that the difference between groups is a difference in medians. Otherwise, the difference is a difference in distributions.

You should look at the distributions of each group in these tests, with histograms or box plots, so that your conclusions can accurately reflect the data. You don’t want to imply that differences between two treatments are differences in medians when they are really differences in the shape or spread of the distributions. On the other hand, if it really does look like the difference is a difference in location, you may want to be clear about this.

As a point of interest, Mangiafico (2015) and McDonald (2014) in the “References” section provide an example of a significant Kruskal–Wallis test where the groups have identical medians.

**Effect size statistics**

Effect size statistics for traditional nonparametric tests include Freeman’s “coefficient of determination” (Freeman’s \( \theta \)) for Mann–Whitney and Kruskal–Wallis (Freeman, 1965), \( \varepsilon \)-squared for Kruskal–Wallis, and \( r \) for Mann–Whitney. An \( r \) value can be calculated for the paired signed-rank test as well, and Kendall’s \( W \) can be used for Friedman’s test.

A couple of accessible resources on effect sizes for these tests are Tomczak and Tomczak (2014) and King and Rosopa (2010).

Effect size statistics included here determine the degree to which one group has data with higher ranks than other groups. They tend to vary from 0 (groups have data that are stochastically equal) to 1 (one group stochastically dominates). They are related to the probability that a value from one group will be greater than a value from another group.

As rank-based measures, these effect size statistics do not indicate the difference in absolute values between groups. That is, if you were to replace the 5's in the second example below with 100's, the value of the Freeman's \( \theta \) statistic would not change, because in either case the 5's or 100's are the highest-ranked numbers. For a practical interpretation of results, it is usually important to consider the absolute values of data such as with descriptive statistics.

```
library(rcompanion)

A = c(1,1,1, 2,2,2, 3,3,3, 4,4,4)
B = c(1,1,1, 2,2,2, 3,3,3, 4,4,4)
Y = c(A, B)
G = c(rep("A", 12), rep("B", 12))
freemanTheta(Y, G)

Freeman.theta
0
```
A = c(1,1,1, 2,2,2, 3,3,3, 4,4,4)
B = c(2,2,2, 3,3,3, 4,4,4, 5,5,5)

Y = c(A, B)
G = factor(c(rep("A", 12), rep("B", 12)))

freemanTheta(Y, G)

Freeman.theta
0.438

A = c(1,1,1, 2,2,2, 3,3,3, 4,4,4)
B = c(3,3,3, 4,4,4, 5,5,5, 6,6,6)

Y = c(A, B)
G = factor(c(rep("A", 12), rep("B", 12)))

freemanTheta(Y, G)

Freeman.theta
0.75

A = c(1,1,1, 2,2,2, 3,3,3, 4,4,4)
B = c(5,5,5, 6,6,6, 7,7,7, 8,8,8)

Y = c(A, B)
G = factor(c(rep("A", 12), rep("B", 12)))

freemanTheta(Y, G)

Freeman.theta
1

Optional: Appropriate use of traditional nonparametric tests

Using traditional nonparametric tests with ordinal data
Some authors caution against using traditional nonparametric tests with ordinal dependent variables, since many of them were developed for use with continuous (interval/ratio) data. Some authors have further concerns about situations where are likely to be many ties in ranks, such as Likert data.

Other authors argue that, since these tests rank-transform data before analysis and have adjustments for tied ranks, that they are appropriate for ordinal data.

Simulations comparing traditionally nonparametric tests to ordinal regression are presented in the “Optional: Simulated comparisons of traditional nonparametric tests and ordinal regression” in the Introduction to Likert Data chapter.
Using traditional nonparametric tests with interval/ratio data
These nonparametric tests are commonly used for interval/ratio data when the data fail to meet the assumptions of parametric analysis.

Some authors discourage using common nonparametric tests for interval/ratio data in some circumstances.

- One issue is the interpretation of the results mentioned above. That is, often results are incorrectly interpreted as a difference in medians when they are really describing a stochastic difference in distributions.
- Another problem is the lack of flexibility in designs these test can handle.
- Finally, these tests may lack power relative to their parametric equivalents.

Given these considerations and the fact that that parametric statistics are often relatively robust to minor deviations in their assumptions, some authors argue that it is often better to stick with parametric analyses for interval/ratio data if it’s possible to make them work.

References


One-sample Wilcoxon Signed-rank Test

One-sample tests are not used too often, but are useful to compare a set of values to a given default value. For example, one might ask if a set of five-point Likert scores are significantly different from a “default” or “neutral” score of 3. Another use might be to compare a current set of values to a previously published value.
Appropriate data

- One-sample data
- Data are ordinal, interval, or ratio
- To be a test of the median, the data need to be relatively symmetrical about their median.

Hypotheses

If the distributions of the data are symmetric:
- Null hypothesis: The median of the data is not different than the default value.
- Alternative hypothesis (two-sided): The median of the data is different than the default value.

If the distributions of the data are not symmetric:
- Null hypothesis: The data are not stochastically different from the default value.
- Alternative hypothesis (two-sided): The data are stochastically different from the default value.

Interpretation

Reporting significant results as e.g. “Likert scores were significantly different from a neutral value of 3” is acceptable.

Notes on name of test

The names used for the one-sample Wilcoxon signed-rank test and similar tests can be confusing. “Sign test” may be used, although properly the sign test is a different test. Both “signed-rank test” and “sign test” are sometimes used to refer to either one-sample or two-sample tests.

The best advice is to use a name specific to the test being used.

Other notes and alternative tests

Some authors recommend this test only in cases where the data are symmetric. It is my understanding that this requirement is only for the test to be considered a test of the median.

If data are not symmetric, the sign test can be used as an alternative that is specific for the median.

Packages used in this chapter

The packages used in this chapter include:
- psych
- FSA
- rcompanion
- coin

The following commands will install these packages if they are not already installed:

```r
if(!require(psych)){install.packages("psych")}
if(!require(FSA)){install.packages("FSA")}
if(!require(rcompanion)){install.packages("rcompanion")}
```
One-sample Wilcoxon signed-rank test example

This example will re-visit the Maggie Simpson data from the *Descriptive Statistics for Likert Data* chapter.

The example answers the question, “Are Maggie’s scores significantly different from a ‘neutral’ score of 3?”

The test will be conducted with the `wilcox.test` function, which produces a \( p \)-value for the hypothesis, as well a pseudo-median and confidence interval.

Note that the bar plot shows that the data are relatively symmetrical in distribution.

```r
if(!require(coin)){install.packages("coin")}

Input =("Speaker          Rater  Likert
'Maggie Simpson'   1         3
'Maggie Simpson'   2         4
'Maggie Simpson'   3         5
'Maggie Simpson'   4         4
'Maggie Simpson'   5         4
'Maggie Simpson'   6         4
'Maggie Simpson'   7         4
'Maggie Simpson'   8         3
'Maggie Simpson'   9         2
'Maggie Simpson'  10         5
")

Data = read.table(textConnection(Input),header=TRUE)

### Create a new variable which is the likert scores as an ordered factor

Data$Likert.f = factor(Data$Likert, ordered = TRUE)

### Check the data frame

library(psych)
headTail(Data)
str(Data)
summary(Data)

### Remove unnecessary objects

rm(Input)
```
Summarize data treating Likert scores as factors

Note that the variable we want to count is \textit{Likert.f}, which is a factor variable. Counts for \textit{Likert.f} are cross tabulated over values of \textit{Speaker}. The \textit{prop.table} function translates a table into proportions. The \textit{margin=1} option indicates that the proportions are calculated for each row.

```r
xtabs(~ Speaker + Likert.f, data = Data)

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Likert.f</th>
<th>Speaker</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>Maggie Simpson</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>2 3 4 5</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>1 2 5 2</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>
```

```r
XT = xtabs(~ Speaker + Likert.f, data = Data)

prop.table(XT, margin = 1)

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Likert.f</th>
<th>Speaker</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>Maggie Simpson</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>2 3 4 5</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>0.1 0.2 0.5 0.2</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>
```

Bar plot

```r
XT = xtabs(~ Likert.f, data=Data)

barplot(XT, col="dark gray", xlab="Maggie's Likert", ylab="Frequency")
```

Summarize data treating Likert scores as numeric

```r
library(FSA)
```
Summarize(Likert ~ Speaker, 
data=Data, 
digits=3)

Speaker  n  mean    sd  min   Q1  median  Q3  max  percZero
1 Maggie Simpson 10 3.8 0.919 2 3.25  4  4  5  0

One-sample Wilcoxon signed-rank test
In the wilcox.test function, the mu option indicates the value of the default value to compare to. In this example Data$Likert is the one-sample set of values on which to conduct the test. For the meaning of other options, see ?wilcox.test.

wilcox.test(Data$Likert, 
mu=3, 
conf.int=TRUE, 
conf.level=0.95)

Wilcoxon signed rank test with continuity correction
V = 32.5, p-value = 0.04007

alternative hypothesis: true location is not equal to 3

### Note p-value in the output above

### You will get the "cannot compute exact p-value with ties" error
### You can ignore this, or use the exact=FALSE option.

95 percent confidence interval:
3.000044 4.500083

sample estimates:
(pseudo)median
4.000032

### Note that the output will also produce a pseudo-median value
### and a confidence interval if the conf.int=TRUE option is used.

Effect size
I am not aware of any established effect size statistic for the one-sample Wilcoxon signed-rank test. However, using a statistic analogous to the r used in the Mann-Whitney test may make sense.

The following interpretation is based on my personal intuition. It is not intended to be universal.

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th></th>
<th>Small</th>
<th>medium</th>
<th>large</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>r</td>
<td>0.10 – &lt; 0.40</td>
<td>0.40 – &lt; 0.60</td>
<td>≥ 0.60</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>
library(rcompanion)

wilcoxonOneSampleR(Data$Likert, 
mu=3)

r
0.681

Exercises I

1. Considering Maggie Simpson’s data,
   a. What was her median score?
   b. What were the first and third quartiles for her scores?
   c. Are the data reasonably symmetric about their median?
   d. Based on this, what is null hypothesis of the test?
   e. According to the one-sample Wilcoxon signed-rank test, are her scores significantly different from a neutral score of 3?
   f. Is the confidence interval output from the test useful in answering the previous question?
   g. Overall, how would you summarize her results? Be sure to address the practical implication of her scores compared with a neutral score of 3.
   h. Do these results reflect what you would expect from looking at the bar plot?

2. Brian Griffin wants to assess the education level of students in his course on creative writing for adults. He wants to know the median education level of his class, and if the education level of his class is different from the typical Bachelor’s level.

Brian used the following table to code his data.

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Code</th>
<th>Abbreviation</th>
<th>Level</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>1</td>
<td>&lt; HS</td>
<td>Less than high school</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>2</td>
<td>HS</td>
<td>High school</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>3</td>
<td>BA</td>
<td>Bachelor’s</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>4</td>
<td>MA</td>
<td>Master’s</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>5</td>
<td>PhD</td>
<td>Doctorate</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

The following are his course data.
### Sign Test for One-sample Data

For each of the following, answer the question, and *show the output from the analyses you used to answer the question*.

a. What was the median education level? (Be sure to report the education level, not just the numeric code!)

b. Are the data reasonably symmetric about their median?

c. Based on this, what is the null hypothesis of the test?

d. According to the one-sample Wilcoxon signed-rank test, are the education levels significantly different from a typical level of Bachelor’s?

e. Is the confidence interval output from the test useful in answering the previous question?

f. Overall, how would you summarize the results? Be sure to address the practical implications.

g. Plot Brian’s data in a way that helps you visualize the data.

h. Do the results reflect what you would expect from looking at the plot?

---

The sign test is similar in purpose to the one-sample Wilcoxon signed-rank test. It is often less powerful than the signed-rank test, but has the advantage of not requiring the data to be symmetric in distribution. The test compares the number of observations greater or less than the default value without accounting for magnitude of the difference between each observation and the default value.
The test is conducted with the `SIGN.test` function in the `BSDA` package or the `SignTest` function in the `DescTools` package. These functions produce a p-value for the hypothesis, as well as the median and confidence interval of the median for the data.

**Appropriate data**
- One-sample data
- Data are ordinal, interval, or ratio

**Hypotheses**
- Null hypothesis: The median of the data set is equal to the default value.
- Alternative hypothesis (two-sided): The median of the data set is not equal to the default value.

**Interpretation**
Reporting significant results as e.g. “Likert scores were significantly different from a default value of 3” is acceptable. As is e.g. “Median Likert scores were significantly different from a default value of 3”

**Packages used in this chapter**

The packages used in this chapter include:
- `BSDA`
- `DescTools`

The following commands will install these packages if they are not already installed:

```r
if(!require(psych)){install.packages("BSDA")}
if(!require(BSDA)){install.packages("DescTools")}
```

**One-sample sign test example**

For appropriate plots and data frame checking, see the One-sample Wilcoxon Signed-rank Test chapter.

```r
Input =("'
Speaker Rater Likert
'Maggie Simpson' 1 3
'Maggie Simpson' 2 4
'Maggie Simpson' 3 5
'Maggie Simpson' 4 4
'Maggie Simpson' 5 4
'Maggie Simpson' 6 4
'Maggie Simpson' 7 4
'Maggie Simpson' 8 3
'Maggie Simpson' 9 2
'Maggie Simpson' 10 5
"'
)

Data = read.table(textConnection(Input),header=TRUE)

### Check the data frame
```
library(psych)
headTail(Data)
str(Data)
summary(Data)

### Remove unnecessary objects
rm(Input)

**Sign test with the **BSDA** package**

Note that *Data$Likert* is the one-sample data, and *md=3* indicates the default value to compare to.

```r
library(BSDA)
SIGN.test(Data$Likert, 
  md = 3)
```

One-sample Sign-Test

\[ S = 7, \text{ p-value} = 0.07031 \]

*alternative hypothesis: true median is not equal to 3*

### Note the p-value in the output above

95 percent confidence interval:

\[ 3.000000 \quad 4.675556 \]

*sample estimates:*

median of x

\[ 4 \]

### Median value and confidence interval

**Sign test with the **DescTools** package**

Note that *Data$Likert* is the one-sample data, and *mu=3* indicates the default value to compare to.

```r
library(DescTools)
SignTest(Data$Likert, 
  mu = 3)
```

One-sample Sign-Test

\[ S = 7, \text{ number of differences} = 8, \text{ p-value} = 0.07031 \]
### Two-sample Mann–Whitney U Test

#### When to use this test

The two-sample Mann–Whitney U test compares values for two groups. A significant result suggests that the values for the two groups are different. It is equivalent to a two-sample Wilcoxon rank-sum test.

In the context of this book, the test is useful to compare the scores or ratings from two speakers, two different presentations, or two groups of audiences.

If the shape and spread of the distributions of values of each group is similar, then the test compares the medians of the two groups. Otherwise, the test is really testing if there is a systematic difference in the values of the two groups. This is sometimes stated as testing if one sample has stochastic dominance compared with the other.

The test assumes that the observations are independent. That is, it is not appropriate for paired observations or repeated measures data.

The test is performed with the `wilcox.test` function.

#### Appropriate data

- Two-sample data. That is, one-way data with two groups only
- Dependent variable is ordinal, interval, or ratio
- Independent variable is a factor with two levels. That is, two groups
- Observations between groups are independent. That is, not paired or repeated measures data
- In order to be a test of medians, the distributions of values for each group need to be of similar shape and spread; outliers affect the spread. Otherwise the test is a test of stochastic equality.
Hypotheses
If the distributions of the two groups are similar in shape and spread:
• Null hypothesis: The medians of values for each group are equal.
• Alternative hypothesis (two-sided): The medians of values for each group are not equal.

If the distributions of the two groups are not similar in shape and spread:
• Null hypothesis: The two groups exhibit stochastic equality.
• Alternative hypothesis (two-sided): The two groups do not exhibit stochastic equality.

Interpretation
If the distributions of the two groups are similar in shape:
Significant results can be reported as e.g. “The median value of group A was significantly different from that of group B.”

If the distributions of the two groups are not similar in shape:
Significant results can be reported as e.g. “Values for group A were significantly different from those for group B.”

Other notes and alternative tests
The Mann–Whitney U test can be considered equivalent to the Kruskal–Wallis test with only two groups.

Mood’s median test compares the medians of two groups. It is described in the next chapter.

Another alternative is to use cumulative link models for ordinal data, which are described later in this book.

Packages used in this chapter
The packages used in this chapter include:
• psych
• FSA
• lattice

The following commands will install these packages if they are not already installed:

```r
if(!require(psych)){install.packages("psych")}
if(!require(FSA)){install.packages("FSA")}
if(!require(lattice)){install.packages("lattice")}
if(!require(rcompanion)){install.packages("rcompanion")}
if(!require(coin)){install.packages("coin")}
if(!require(DescTools)){install.packages("DescTools")}
```

Two-sample Mann–Whitney U test example
This example re-visits the Pooh and Piglet data from the Descriptive Statistics with the likert Package chapter.
It answers the question, “Are Pooh’s scores significantly different from those of Piglet?”

The Mann–Whitney U test is conducted with the `wilcox.test` function, which produces a $p$-value for the hypothesis. First the data are summarized and examined using bar plots for each group.

Because the bar plots show that the distributions of scores for Pooh and Piglet are relatively similar in shape, the Mann–Whitney U test can be interpreted as a test of medians.

```r
Input =(" Speaker Likert
Pooh 3
Pooh 5
Pooh 4
Pooh 4
Pooh 4
Pooh 4
Pooh 4
Pooh 5
Pooh 5
Piglet 2
Piglet 4
Piglet 2
Piglet 2
Piglet 1
Piglet 2
Piglet 3
Piglet 2
Piglet 2
Piglet 3"
)

Data = read.table(textConnection(Input),header=TRUE)

### Create a new variable which is the Likert scores as an ordered factor

Data$Likert.f = factor(Data$Likert,
                       ordered = TRUE)

### Check the data frame

library(psych)

headTail(Data)

str(Data)

summary(Data)
```
### Remove unnecessary objects

```r
rm(Input)
```

**Summarize data treating Likert scores as factors**

Note that the variable we want to count is `Likert.f`, which is a factor variable. Counts for `Likert.f` are cross tabulated over values of `Speaker`. The `prop.table` function translates a table into proportions. The `margin=1` option indicates that the proportions are calculated for each row.

```r
xtabs(~ Speaker + Likert.f, data = Data)
```

```r
   Likert.f
Speaker   1 2 3 4 5
Piglet   1 6 2 1 0
Pooh     0 0 1 6 3
```

```r
XT = xtabs(~ Speaker + Likert.f, data = Data)
```

```r
prop.table(XT, margin = 1)
```

```r
   Likert.f
Speaker    1   2   3   4   5
Piglet 0.1 0.6 0.2 0.1 0.0
Pooh    0.0 0.0 0.1 0.6 0.3
```

**Bar plots of data by group**

```r
library(lattice)
```

```r
histogram(~ Likert.f | Speaker, data=Data, layout=c(1,2) # columns and rows of individual plots
```

---

220
Summarize data treating Likert scores as numeric

```r
library(FSA)

Summarize(Likert ~ Speaker,
           data=Data,
           digits=3)
```

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Speaker</th>
<th>n</th>
<th>mean</th>
<th>sd</th>
<th>min</th>
<th>Q1</th>
<th>median</th>
<th>Q3</th>
<th>max</th>
<th>percZero</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>Piglet</td>
<td>10</td>
<td>2.3</td>
<td>0.823</td>
<td>1</td>
<td>2</td>
<td>2.75</td>
<td>4</td>
<td>2.75</td>
<td>0</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Pooh</td>
<td>10</td>
<td>4.2</td>
<td>0.632</td>
<td>3</td>
<td>4</td>
<td>4.75</td>
<td>5</td>
<td>4.75</td>
<td>0</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

Two-sample Mann–Whitney U test example

This example uses the formula notation indicating that `Likert` is the dependent variable and `Speaker` is the independent variable. The `data=` option indicates the data frame that contains the variables. For the meaning of other options, see `?wilcox.test`.

```r
wilcox.test(Likert ~ Speaker,
            data=Data)
```

```
Wilcoxon rank sum test with continuity correction
W = 5, p-value = 0.0004713
alternative hypothesis: true location shift is not equal to 0
```

### You may get a "cannot compute exact p-value with ties" error.
### You can ignore this or use the `exact=FALSE` option.
Effect size
Statistics of effect size for the Mann–Whitney test provide the degree to which one group has data with higher ranks than the other group. They are related to the probability that a value from one group will be greater than a value from the other group. Unlike p-values, they are not affected by sample size. They are standardized to range from 0 to 1. An effect size of 0 indicates that there is no effect; that is, that the two groups are absolutely stochastically equal. An effect size of 1 indicates that the measurements for one group are entirely greater than for the other group.

Appropriate effect size statistics for the Mann–Whitney test include Freeman's theta, epsilon-squared, \( r \), and \( \tau_b \). \( r \) is probably the most common.

As written here, \( r \) varies from 0 to 1. In some formulations, it varies from \(-1\) to \(1\). Here, \( \tau_b \) varies from approximately \(-1\) to \(1\).

Cliff’s delta is another effect size that is sometimes encountered. Its absolute value will be numerically equal to Freeman’s theta. See Torchiano (2017) for sources and interpretation.

Interpretation of effect sizes necessarily varies by discipline and the expectations of the experiment, but for behavioral studies, the guidelines proposed by Cohen (1988) are sometimes followed. The following guidelines are based on the literature values and my personal intuition. They should not be considered universal.

Technical note: The interpretation values for \( r \) below are found commonly in published literature and on the internet. I suspect that this interpretation stems from the adoption of Cohen’s interpretation of values for Pearson’s \( r \). This may not be justified, but it turns out that this interpretation for the \( r \) used here is relatively reasonable. The interpretation for the other effect size statistics here are based on their values relative to those for \( r \), based on simulated data (5-point Likert items, \( n \) per group between 4 and 25). Plots for some of these simulations are shown below.

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Effect Size</th>
<th>Small</th>
<th>Medium</th>
<th>Large</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>Freeman's theta</td>
<td>0.11 – &lt; 0.34</td>
<td>0.34 – &lt; 0.58</td>
<td>≥ 0.58</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>epsilon-squared</td>
<td>0.01 – &lt; 0.08</td>
<td>0.08 – &lt; 0.26</td>
<td>≥ 0.26</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>( r )</td>
<td>0.10 – &lt; 0.30</td>
<td>0.30 – &lt; 0.50</td>
<td>≥ 0.50</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>( \tau_b )</td>
<td>0.10 – &lt; 0.30</td>
<td>0.30 – &lt; 0.50</td>
<td>≥ 0.50</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

**Freeman's theta**

```r
library(rcompanion)
freemanTheta(x = Data$Likert, g = Data$Speaker)
Freeman.theta
0.9
```
**TWO-SAMPLE MANN–WHITNEY U TEST**

**SUMMARY AND ANALYSIS OF EXTENSION EDUCATION PROGRAM EVALUATION IN R**

**epsilon-squared**

```r
library(rcompanion)

epsilonSquared(x = Data$Likert,
g = Data$Speaker)

epsilon.squared
0.658
```

**r**

```r
library(rcompanion)

wilcoxonR(x = Data$Likert,
g = Data$Speaker)

r
0.791
```

**tau-b**

```r
library(DescTools)

KendallTauB(x = Data$Likert,
y = as.numeric(Data$Speaker))

[1] 0.7397954
```

**Optional: Comparison among effect size statistics**

The follow plots show the relationship among effect size statistics discussed in this chapter. Data were 5-point Likert item responses, with \( n \) per group between 4 and 25.

Freeman’s \( \theta \) was mostly linearly related to \( r \), with variation depending on sample size and data values.

In the second figure below, the colors indicate interpretation of less-than-small, small, medium, and large as the blue becomes darker.
The relationship of epsilon-squared and Freeman’s theta was curvilinear, with variation depending on sample size and data values.

In the second figure below, the colors indicate interpretation of less-than-small, small, medium, and large as the blue becomes darker.
Kendall's $\tau$-b was relatively closely linearly related to $r$. In figure below, the colors indicate interpretation of less-than-small, small, medium, and large as the blue becomes darker.
Two-sample Mann–Whitney U Test

Summary and Analysis of Extension Education Program Evaluation in R

References


Exercises J

1. Considering Pooh and Piglet’s data,

   a. What was the median score for each instructor?

   b. What were the first and third quartiles for each instructor’s scores?

   c. Are the data for both instructors reasonably similar in shape and spread?

   d. Based on your previous answer, what is the null hypothesis for the Mann–Whitney test?

   e. According to the Mann–Whitney test, is there a difference in scores between the instructors?

   f. What was the value of \( r \) for the effect size for these data?

   g. How do you interpret this value?
h. How would you summarize the results of the descriptive statistics and tests? Include practical considerations of any differences.

2. Brian and Stewie Griffin want to assess the education level of students in their courses on creative writing for adults. They want to know the median education level for each class, and if the education level of the classes were different between instructors.

They used the following table to code his data.

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Code</th>
<th>Abbreviation</th>
<th>Level</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>1</td>
<td>&lt; HS</td>
<td>Less than high school</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>2</td>
<td>HS</td>
<td>High school</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>3</td>
<td>BA</td>
<td>Bachelor's</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>4</td>
<td>MA</td>
<td>Master's</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>5</td>
<td>PhD</td>
<td>Doctorate</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

The following are the course data.

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Instructor</th>
<th>Student</th>
<th>Education</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>'Brian Griffin'</td>
<td>a</td>
<td>3</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>'Brian Griffin'</td>
<td>b</td>
<td>2</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>'Brian Griffin'</td>
<td>c</td>
<td>3</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>'Brian Griffin'</td>
<td>d</td>
<td>3</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>'Brian Griffin'</td>
<td>e</td>
<td>3</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>'Brian Griffin'</td>
<td>f</td>
<td>3</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>'Brian Griffin'</td>
<td>g</td>
<td>4</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>'Brian Griffin'</td>
<td>h</td>
<td>5</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>'Brian Griffin'</td>
<td>i</td>
<td>3</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>'Brian Griffin'</td>
<td>j</td>
<td>4</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>'Brian Griffin'</td>
<td>k</td>
<td>3</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>'Brian Griffin'</td>
<td>l</td>
<td>2</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>'Stewie Griffin'</td>
<td>m</td>
<td>4</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>'Stewie Griffin'</td>
<td>n</td>
<td>5</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>'Stewie Griffin'</td>
<td>o</td>
<td>4</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>'Stewie Griffin'</td>
<td>p</td>
<td>4</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>'Stewie Griffin'</td>
<td>q</td>
<td>4</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>'Stewie Griffin'</td>
<td>r</td>
<td>4</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>'Stewie Griffin'</td>
<td>s</td>
<td>3</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>'Stewie Griffin'</td>
<td>t</td>
<td>5</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>'Stewie Griffin'</td>
<td>u</td>
<td>4</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>'Stewie Griffin'</td>
<td>v</td>
<td>4</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>'Stewie Griffin'</td>
<td>w</td>
<td>3</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>'Stewie Griffin'</td>
<td>x</td>
<td>2</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

For each of the following, answer the question, and show the output from the analyses you used to answer the question.

a. What was the median education level for each instructor? (Be sure to report the education level, not just the numeric code!)
b. What were the first and third quartiles for education level for each instructor?

c. Are the data for both instructors similar in shape and spread?

d. Based on your previous answer, what is the null hypothesis for the Mann–Whitney test?

e. According to the Mann–Whitney test, is there a difference in scores between the instructors?

f. What was the value of $r$ for the effect size for these data?

g. How do you interpret this value?

h. Plot Brian and Stewie’s data in a way that helps you visualize the data. Do the results reflect what you would expect from looking at the plot?

i. How would you summarize the results of the descriptive statistics and tests? Include your practical interpretation.

---

**Mood’s Median Test for Two-sample Data**

Mood’s median test compares the medians of two or more groups. It is often less powerful than the Mann–Whitney U test, but can be used when the spread of values in the groups are different due to outliers.

The test can be conducted with the `mood.medtest` function in the `RVAideMemoire` package.

**Appropriate data**
- One-way data with two or more groups
- Dependent variable is ordinal, interval, or ratio
- Independent variable is a factor with levels indicating groups
- Observations between groups are independent. That is, not paired or repeated measures data
- Distributions of values for each group are similar in shape; however, the test is not sensitive to outliers

**Hypotheses**
- Null hypothesis: The medians of values for each group are equal.
- Alternative hypothesis (two-sided): The medians of values for each group are not equal.

**Interpretation**
Significant results can be reported as “The median value of group A was significantly different from group B.”
Packages used in this chapter

The packages used in this chapter include:
- RVAideMemoire

The following commands will install these packages if they are not already installed:

```r
if(!require(RVAideMemoire)){install.packages("RVAideMemoire")}
```

Example using the RVAideMemoire package

This example uses the formula notation indicating that Likert is the dependent variable and Speaker is the independent variable. The data= option indicates the data frame that contains the variables. For the meaning of other options, see ?mood.medtest.

For appropriate plots and data frame checking, see the Two-sample Mann–Whitney U Test chapter.

```r
Input =("Speaker Likert
Pooh  3
Pooh  5
Pooh  4
Pooh  4
Pooh  4
Pooh  4
Pooh  4
Pooh  4
Piglet 2
Piglet 4
Piglet 2
Piglet 1
Piglet 2
Piglet 3
Piglet 2
Piglet 3
")
```

```r
Data = read.table(textConnection(Input),header=TRUE)
```

```r
### Check the data frame
library(psych)
headTail(Data)
```
str(Data)
summary(Data)

### Remove unnecessary objects
rm(Input)

**Mood’s Median Test**

```r
library(RVAideMemoire)
mood.medtest(Likert ~ Speaker, data = Data)
Mood's median test
p-value = 0.001093
```

---

**Two-sample Paired Signed-rank Test**

**When to use this test**

The two-sample signed-rank test for paired data is used to compare values for two groups where each observation in one group is paired with one observation in the other group.

The test is useful to compare scores on a pre-test vs. scores on a post-test, or scores or ratings from two speakers, two different presentations, or two groups of audiences when there is a reason to pair observations, such as being done by the same rater.

A discussion of paired data can be found in the *Independent and Paired Values* chapter of this book.

The test is performed with the `wilcox.test` function with the `paired=TRUE` option.

**Appropriate data**

- Two-sample paired data. That is, one-way data with two groups only, where the observations are paired between groups.
- Dependent variable is ordinal, interval, or ratio
- Independent variable is a factor with two levels. That is, two groups
- For the test to be a test of the median of the differences, the distribution of differences in paired samples needs to be symmetric

**Hypotheses**

*If the distribution of the differences is symmetric:*
• Null hypothesis: The median of the differences is not different than zero.
• Alternative hypothesis (two-sided): The median of the differences is different than zero.

**If the distributions of the data are not symmetric:**
• Null hypothesis: The differences are not stochastically different from zero.
• Alternative hypothesis (two-sided): The differences are stochastically different from zero.

**Interpretation**
Significant results can be reported as e.g. “Values for group A were significantly different from those of group B.”

**Other notes and alternative tests**
Some authors recommend this test only in cases where the distribution of the differences is symmetric. It is my understanding that this requirement is only for the test to be considered a test of the median of the differences.

If the distribution of differences between paired samples is not symmetrical, the two-sample sign test for paired data can be used.

**Packages used in this chapter**
The packages used in this chapter include:
• psych
• BSDA
• rcompanion

The following commands will install these packages if they are not already installed:

```r
if(!require(psych)){install.packages("psych")}
if(!require(BSDA)){install.packages("BSDA")}
if(!require(rcompanion)){install.packages("rcompanion")}
```

**Two-sample paired signed-rank test example**

For this example, imagine we want to compare scores for Pooh between Time 1 and Time 2. Here, we’ve recorded the identity of the student raters, and Pooh’s score for each rater. This allows us to focus on the changes for each rater between Time 1 and Time 2. This makes for a more powerful test than would the Mann–Whitney U test in cases like this where one rater might tend to rate high and another rater might tend to rate low, but there is an overall trend in how raters change their scores between Time 1 and Time 2.

Note in this example we needed to record the identity of the student rater so that a rater’s score from Time 1 can be paired with their score from Time 2. If we cannot pair data in this way—for example, if we did not record the identity of the raters—the data would have to be treated as unpaired, independent samples, for example like those in the Two-sample Mann–Whitney U Test chapter.
Also note that the data is arranged in long form. In this form, for this test, the data must be ordered so that the first observation where Time = 1 is paired to the first observation where Time = 2, and so on.

```r
Input =(" Speaker  Time  Student  Likert
Pooh      1     a        1
Pooh      1     b        4
Pooh      1     c        3
Pooh      1     d        3
Pooh      1     e        3
Pooh      1     f        3
Pooh      1     g        4
Pooh      1     h        3
Pooh      1     i        3
Pooh      1     j        3
Pooh      2     a        4
Pooh      2     b        5
Pooh      2     c        4
Pooh      2     d        5
Pooh      2     e        4
Pooh      2     f        5
Pooh      2     g        3
Pooh      2     h        4
Pooh      2     i        3
Pooh      2     j        4")
```

```r
Data = read.table(textConnection(Input),header=TRUE)

### Order data by Time and Student if not already ordered
Data = Data[order(Data$Time, Data$Student),]

### Check the data frame
library(psych)
headTail(Data)
str(Data)
summary(Data)

### Remove unnecessary objects
rm(Input)
```

*Number of observations per group*

It is helpful to check the data to be sure there is one observation per student per time.
xtabs(~Student + Time,
data = Data)

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Student</th>
<th>1</th>
<th>2</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>a</td>
<td>1</td>
<td>1</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>b</td>
<td>1</td>
<td>1</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>c</td>
<td>1</td>
<td>1</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>d</td>
<td>1</td>
<td>1</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>e</td>
<td>1</td>
<td>1</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>f</td>
<td>1</td>
<td>1</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>g</td>
<td>1</td>
<td>1</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>h</td>
<td>1</td>
<td>1</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>i</td>
<td>1</td>
<td>1</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>j</td>
<td>1</td>
<td>1</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

Plot the paired data

Scatter plot with one-to-one line
Paired data can be visualized with a scatter plot of the paired cases. In the plot below, points that fall above and to the left of the blue line indicate cases for which the value for Time 2 was greater than for Time 1.

Note that the points in the plot are jittered slightly so that points which would fall directly on top of one another can be seen.

First, two new variables, Time.1 and Time.2, are created by extracting the values of Likert for observations with the Time variable equal to 1 or 2, respectively, and then the plot is produced.

Note that for this to work correctly, the data must be ordered so that the first observation where Time = 1 is paired to the first observation where Time = 2, and so on.

Time.1 = Data$Likert[Data$Time==1]
Time.2 = Data$Likert[Data$Time==2]

plot(Time.1, jitter(Time.2),
    pch = 16, # jitter offsets points so you can see them all
    cex = 1.0, # shape of points
    xlim=c(1, 5.5), # size of points
    ylim=c(1, 5.5), # limits of x axis
    xlab="Time 1",
    ylab="Time 2"
    )
abline(0,1, col="blue", lwd=2) # line with intercept of 0 and slope of 1
Bar plot of differences
Paired data can also be visualized with a bar chart of differences. In the plot below, bars with a value greater than zero indicate cases for which values for Time 2 are greater than for Time 1.

New variables are first created for `Time.1`, `Time.2`, and their `Difference`. And then the plot is produced.

Note that for this to work correctly, the data must be ordered so that the first observation where `Time` = 1 is paired to the first observation where `Time` = 2, and so on.

```r
Time.1 = Data$Likert[Data$Time==1]
Time.2 = Data$Likert[Data$Time==2]
Difference = Time.2 - Time.1

barplot(Difference, # variable to plot
col="dark gray", # color of bars
xlab="Observation", # x-axis label
ylab="Difference (Time 2 - Time 1)" ) # y-axis label
```
Bar plot of differences
A bar plot of differences in paired data can be used to see if the differences in paired observations are symmetrical. For this example, the distribution is relatively symmetrical.

Here, new variables are created: Time.1, Time.2, Difference, and Diff.f, which has the same values as Difference but as a factor variable. The xtabs function is used to create a count of values of Diff.f. The barplot function then uses these counts.

Note that for this to work correctly, the data must be ordered so that the first observation where Time = 1 is paired to the first observation where Time = 2, and so on.

```r
Time.1 = Data$Likert[Data$Time==1]
Time.2 = Data$Likert[Data$Time==2]
Difference = Time.2 - Time.1
Diff.f = factor(Difference)
XT = xtabs(~ Diff.f)
barplot(XT,
       col="dark gray",
       xlab="Difference in Likert",
       ylab="Frequency")
```
Descriptive statistics
It is helpful to look at medians for each group and the median difference between groups in order to determine the practical importance of the differences.

```
library(FSA)
Summarize(Likert ~ Time, 
data = Data)
```

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Time</th>
<th>n</th>
<th>mean</th>
<th>sd</th>
<th>min</th>
<th>Q1</th>
<th>median</th>
<th>Q3</th>
<th>max</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>1</td>
<td>10</td>
<td>3.0</td>
<td>0.816</td>
<td>1</td>
<td>3</td>
<td>3.00</td>
<td>4</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>2</td>
<td>10</td>
<td>4.1</td>
<td>0.738</td>
<td>3</td>
<td>4</td>
<td>4.75</td>
<td>5</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

Note that for the following to work correctly, the data must be ordered so that the first observation where \( \text{Time} = 1 \) is paired to the first observation where \( \text{Time} = 2 \), and so on.

```
Time.1 = Data$Likert[Data$Time==1]
Time.2 = Data$Likert[Data$Time==2]
Difference = Time.2 - Time.1
median(Difference)

[1] 1
```

*Two-sample paired signed-rank test*
Note that if data are in long format, the data must be ordered so that the first observation of Time 1 is paired to the first observation of Time 2, and so on, because the `wilcox.test` function will take the observations in order.
This example uses the formula notation indicating that \textit{Likert} is the dependent variable and \textit{Time} is the independent variable. The \texttt{data=} option indicates the data frame that contains the variables, and \texttt{paired=}TRUE indicates that the test for paired data should be used. For the meaning of other options, see \texttt{?wilcox.test}.

```r
wilcox.test(Likert ~ Time,
data = Data,
paired = TRUE,
conf.int = TRUE,
conf.level = 0.95)
```

Wilcoxon signed rank test with continuity correction

\[ V = 3.5, \ p\text{-value} = 0.02355 \]

alternative hypothesis: true location shift is not equal to 0

### Note the p-value given in the above results

95 percent confidence interval:

\[-2.000051e+00 \text{ to } -1.458002e-05\]

### Confidence interval for the median or the location of differences

### You may get a "cannot compute exact p-value with ties" error.

### You can ignore this or use the exact=FALSE option.

\textbf{Effect size}

As written here, \( r \) varies from 0 to 1. In some formulations, it varies from \(-1\) to 1.

I am not aware of any established effect size statistic for the Wilcoxon signed-rank test. However, using a statistic analogous to the \( r \) used in the Mann–Whitney test may make sense.

The following interpretation is based on my personal intuition. It is not intended to be universal.

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th></th>
<th>small</th>
<th>medium</th>
<th>large</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>\textit{r}</td>
<td>0.10</td>
<td>(-0.40)</td>
<td>(-0.60)</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

```r
library(rcompanion)
wilcoxonPairedR(x = Data$Likert,
g = Data$Time)
```

\[ r = 0.744 \]
Exercises K

1. Considering Pooh’s data for Time 1 and Time 2,

   a. What do the plots suggest about the relative value of the scores for Time 1 and Time 2? That is, do they suggest that scores increased, decreased, or stayed the same between Time 1 and Time 2?

   b. Is the distribution of the differences between paired samples relatively symmetrical?

   c. Does the two-sample paired signed-rank test indicate that there is a significant difference between Time 1 and Time 2?

   d. Practically speaking, what do you conclude? If significant, is the difference between Time 1 and Time 2 of practical importance?

2. Lois Griffin gave proficiency scores to her students in her course on piano playing for adults. She gave a score for each student for their left hand playing and right hand playing. She wants to know if students in her class are more proficient in the right hand, left hand, or if there is no difference in hands.

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Instructor</th>
<th>Student</th>
<th>Hand</th>
<th>Score</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>'Lois Griffin'</td>
<td>a</td>
<td>left</td>
<td>8</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>'Lois Griffin'</td>
<td>a</td>
<td>right</td>
<td>9</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>'Lois Griffin'</td>
<td>b</td>
<td>left</td>
<td>6</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>'Lois Griffin'</td>
<td>b</td>
<td>right</td>
<td>5</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>'Lois Griffin'</td>
<td>c</td>
<td>left</td>
<td>7</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>'Lois Griffin'</td>
<td>c</td>
<td>right</td>
<td>9</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>'Lois Griffin'</td>
<td>d</td>
<td>left</td>
<td>6</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>'Lois Griffin'</td>
<td>d</td>
<td>right</td>
<td>7</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>'Lois Griffin'</td>
<td>e</td>
<td>left</td>
<td>7</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>'Lois Griffin'</td>
<td>e</td>
<td>right</td>
<td>7</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>'Lois Griffin'</td>
<td>f</td>
<td>left</td>
<td>9</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>'Lois Griffin'</td>
<td>f</td>
<td>right</td>
<td>9</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>'Lois Griffin'</td>
<td>g</td>
<td>left</td>
<td>4</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>'Lois Griffin'</td>
<td>g</td>
<td>right</td>
<td>6</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>'Lois Griffin'</td>
<td>h</td>
<td>left</td>
<td>5</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>'Lois Griffin'</td>
<td>h</td>
<td>right</td>
<td>8</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>'Lois Griffin'</td>
<td>i</td>
<td>left</td>
<td>5</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>'Lois Griffin'</td>
<td>i</td>
<td>right</td>
<td>6</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>'Lois Griffin'</td>
<td>j</td>
<td>left</td>
<td>7</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>'Lois Griffin'</td>
<td>j</td>
<td>right</td>
<td>8</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

   For each of the following, answer the question, and show the output from the analyses you used to answer the question.

   a. Is the distribution of the differences between paired samples relatively symmetrical?
b. Does the two-sample paired signed-rank test indicate that there is a difference between hands? If so, which hand received higher scores?

c. What can you conclude about the results of the plots, summary statistics, effect size, and statistical test?

d. Practically speaking, what do you conclude? If significant, is the difference between hands of practical importance?

e. What if Lois wanted to change the design of the experiment so that she could determine if each student were more proficient in one hand or the other? That is, is student a more proficient in left hand or right? Is student b more proficient in left hand or right? How should she change what data she’s collecting to determine this?

Sign Test for Two-sample Paired Data

The sign test for two-sample paired data can be used for a similar purpose as the paired signed-rank test, testing for equal medians in cases where the distribution of the differences is not symmetrical.

The SIGN.test function in the BSDA package requires the data to be separated into two variables, each of which is ordered so that the first observation of each are paired, and so on. Information on options for the function can be viewed with ?SIGN.test. The SignTest function in the DescTools package is similar.

For appropriate plots see the Two-sample Paired Signed-rank Test chapter.

Appropriate data

- Two-sample paired data. That is, one-way data with two groups only, where the observations are paired between groups.
- Dependent variable is ordinal, interval, or ratio
- Independent variable is a factor with two levels. That is, two groups

Hypotheses

- Null hypothesis: The median of the differences between pairs in group A and group B is zero.
- Alternative hypothesis (two-sided): The median of the differences between pairs in group A and group B is not zero.

Interpretation

Significant results can be reported as “There was a significant difference in values between group A and group B.”

Packages used in this chapter
The packages used in this chapter include:
- psych
- BSDA
- DescTools

The following commands will install these packages if they are not already installed:

```r
if(!require(psych)){install.packages("psych")}
if(!require(BSDA)){install.packages("BSDA")}
if(!require(DescTools)){install.packages("DescTools")}
```

**Sign test for paired two-sample data example**

```r
Input =("Speaker  Time  Student  Likert
Pooh  1     a        1
Pooh  1     b        4
Pooh  1     c        3
Pooh  1     d        3
Pooh  1     e        3
Pooh  1     f        3
Pooh  1     g        4
Pooh  1     h        3
Pooh  1     i        3
Pooh  1     j        3
Pooh  2     a        4
Pooh  2     b        5
Pooh  2     c        4
Pooh  2     d        5
Pooh  2     e        4
Pooh  2     f        5
Pooh  2     g        3
Pooh  2     h        4
Pooh  2     i        3
Pooh  2     j        4
")
```

Data = read.table(textConnection(Input),header=TRUE)

```r
### Check the data frame
library(psych)
headTail(Data)
str(Data)
summary(Data)
```
Two-sample sign test with BSDA package

Time.1 = Data$Likert [Data$Time == 1]
Time.2 = Data$Likert [Data$Time == 2]

library(BSDA)
SIGN.test(x = Time.1,
y = Time.2,
   alternative = "two.sided",
   conf.level = 0.95)

Dependent-samples Sign-Test
S = 1, p-value = 0.03906

### p-value reported above
95 percent confidence interval:
-2.0000000 -0.3244444

sample estimates:
median of x-y
   -1

### median of differences and confidence interval of differences

Two-sample sign test with DescTools package

Time.1 = Data$Likert [Data$Time == 1]
Time.2 = Data$Likert [Data$Time == 2]

library(DescTools)
SignTest(x = Time.1,
y = Time.2)

Dependent-samples Sign-Test
S = 1, number of differences = 9, p-value = 0.03906

### p-value reported above
alternative hypothesis: true median difference is not equal to 0
97.9 percent confidence interval:
-2 0

sample estimates:
Kruskal–Wallis Test

The Kruskal–Wallis test is a rank-based test that is similar to the Mann–Whitney U test, but can be applied to one-way data with more than two groups. The test is useful to compare the scores or ratings from multiple speakers, presentations, or groups of audiences.

If the shape and spread of the distributions of values of each group is similar, then the test compares the medians of the two groups. Otherwise, the test is really testing if there is a systematic difference in the values among the groups.

The test is performed with the `kruskal.test` function.

Post-hoc tests
The outcome of the Kruskal–Wallis test tells you if there are differences among the groups, but doesn't tell you which groups are different from other groups. In order to determine which groups are different from others, post-hoc testing can be conducted. Probably the most common post-hoc test for the Kruskal–Wallis test is the Dunn test, here conducted with the `dunnTest` function in the FSA package. An alternative to this is to conduct Mann–Whitney tests on each pair of groups. This is accomplished with `pairwise.wilcox.test` function.

Appropriate data
- One-way data
- Dependent variable is ordinal, interval, or ratio
- Independent variable is a factor with two or more levels. That is, two or more groups
- Observations between groups are independent. That is, not paired or repeated measures data
- In order to be a test of medians, the distributions of values for each group need to be of similar shape and spread. Otherwise the test is a test of stochastic equality.

Hypotheses

If the distributions of the two groups are similar in shape and spread:
- Null hypothesis: The medians of values for each group are equal.
- Alternative hypothesis (two-sided): The medians of values for each group are not equal.

If the distributions of the two groups are not similar in shape and spread:
- Null hypothesis: The groups exhibit stochastic equality.
- Alternative hypothesis (two-sided): The groups do not exhibit stochastic equality.
Interpretation

If the distributions of the two groups are similar in shape and spread:

Significant results can be reported as “There was a significant difference in median values across groups.”

Post-hoc analysis allows you to say “The median for group A was higher than the median for group B”, and so on.

If the distributions of the two groups are not similar in shape and spread:

Significant results can be reported as “There was a significant difference in values among groups.”

Other notes and alternative tests

Mood’s median test compares the medians of groups.

Packages used in this chapter

The packages used in this chapter include:

- psych
- FSA
- lattice
- multcompView
- rcompanion

The following commands will install these packages if they are not already installed:

```r
if(!require(psych)){install.packages("psych")}
if(!require(FSA)){install.packages("FSA")}
if(!require(lattice)){install.packages("lattice")}
if(!require(multcompView)){install.packages("multcompView")}
if(!require(rcompanion)){install.packages("rcompanion")}
```

Kruskal–Wallis test example

This example re-visits the Pooh, Piglet, and Tigger data from the Descriptive Statistics with the likert Package chapter.

It answers the question, “Are the scores significantly different among the three speakers?”

The Kruskal–Wallis test is conducted with the `kruskal.test` function, which produces a $p$-value for the hypothesis. First the data are summarized and examined using bar plots for each group.

Note that because the bar plot show that the distributions of scores for each of the speakers are relatively similar in shape and spread, the Kruskal–Wallis test can be interpreted as a test of medians.

Input =

```
Speaker  Likert
Pooh      3
```
Pooh      5
Pooh      4
Pooh      4
Pooh      4
Pooh      4
Pooh      4
Pooh      5
Pooh      5
Piglet    2
Piglet    4
Piglet    2
Piglet    2
Piglet    1
Piglet    2
Piglet    3
Piglet    2
Piglet    2
Piglet    3
Tigger    4
Tigger    4
Tigger    4
Tigger    4
Tigger    5
Tigger    3
Tigger    5
Tigger    4
Tigger    4
Tigger    3

Data = read.table(textConnection(Input),header=TRUE)

### Order levels of the factor; otherwise R will alphabetize them
Data$Speaker = factor(Data$Speaker,
                        levels=unique(Data$Speaker))

### Create a new variable which is the likert scores as an ordered factor
Data$Likert.f = factor(Data$Likert,
                        ordered = TRUE)

### Check the data frame
library(psych)
headTail(Data)
str(Data)
summary(Data)
### Remove unnecessary objects

```R
rm(Input)
```

**Summarize data treating Likert scores as factors**

```R
xtabs(~Speaker + Likert.f,
data = Data)
```

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Likert.f</th>
<th>Speaker</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>1 2 3 4 5</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Pooh</td>
<td>0 0 1 6 3</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Piglet</td>
<td>1 6 2 1 0</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Tigger</td>
<td>0 0 2 6 2</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

```R
XT = xtabs(~Speaker + Likert.f,
data = Data)
```

```R
prop.table(XT,
  margin = 1)
```

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Likert.f</th>
<th>Speaker</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>1 2 3 4 5</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Pooh</td>
<td>0.0 0.0 0.1 0.6 0.3</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Piglet</td>
<td>0.1 0.6 0.2 0.1 0.0</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Tigger</td>
<td>0.0 0.0 0.2 0.6 0.2</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

**Bar plots of data by group**

```R
library(lattice)
```

```R
histogram(~ Likert.f | Speaker,
data=Data,
  layout=c(1,3)  # columns and rows of individual plots)
```
Summarize data treating Likert scores as numeric

library(FSA)

Summarize(Likert ~ Speaker,
data=Data,
digits=3)

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Speaker</th>
<th>n</th>
<th>mean</th>
<th>sd</th>
<th>min</th>
<th>Q1</th>
<th>median</th>
<th>Q3</th>
<th>max</th>
<th>percZero</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>Pooh</td>
<td>10</td>
<td>4.2</td>
<td>0.63</td>
<td>2</td>
<td>3</td>
<td>4</td>
<td>4.75</td>
<td>5</td>
<td>0</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Piglet</td>
<td>10</td>
<td>2.3</td>
<td>0.82</td>
<td>1</td>
<td>2</td>
<td>2</td>
<td>2.75</td>
<td>4</td>
<td>0</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Tigger</td>
<td>10</td>
<td>4.0</td>
<td>0.67</td>
<td>3</td>
<td>4</td>
<td>4</td>
<td>4.00</td>
<td>5</td>
<td>0</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

Kruskal–Wallis test example

This example uses the formula notation indicating that Likert is the dependent variable and Speaker is the independent variable. The data= option indicates the data frame that contains the variables. For the meaning of other options, see ?kruskal.test.

kruskal.test(Likert ~ Speaker,
data = Data)

Kruskal-Wallis rank sum test

Kruskal-Wallis chi-squared = 16.842, df = 2, p-value = 0.0002202
Effect size
Statistics of effect size for the Kruskal–Wallis test provide the degree to which one group has data with higher ranks than the another group. They are related to the probability that a value from one group will be greater than a value from the another group. Unlike p-values, they are not affected by sample size. They are standardized to range from 0 to 1. An effect size of 0 indicates that there is no effect; that is, that the groups are absolutely stochastically equal. For epsilon-squared, an effect size of 1 indicates that the measurements for one group are entirely greater than for the another group. For Freeman’s theta, an effect size of 1 indicates that the measurements for each group are entirely greater or entirely less than some other group.

Appropriate effect size statistics for the Kruskal–Wallis test include Freeman’s theta and epsilon-squared. epsilon-squared is probably the most common.

Interpretation of effect sizes necessarily varies by discipline and the expectations of the experiment. The following guidelines are based on my personal intuition. They should not be considered universal.

Technical note: The values for the interpretations below were derived by keeping the interpretation for epsilon-squared constant and equal to that for the Mann–Whitney test. Interpretation values for Freeman’s theta were determined through comparing Freeman’s theta to epsilon-squared for simulated data (5-point Likert items, n per group between 4 and 25).

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Effect Size</th>
<th>Small</th>
<th>Medium</th>
<th>Large</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>epsilon-squared</td>
<td>0.01 – &lt; 0.08</td>
<td>0.08 – &lt; 0.26</td>
<td>≥ 0.26</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Freeman’s theta, k = 2</td>
<td>0.11 – &lt; 0.34</td>
<td>0.34 – &lt; 0.58</td>
<td>≥ 0.58</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Freeman’s theta, k = 3</td>
<td>0.05 – &lt; 0.26</td>
<td>0.26 – &lt; 0.46</td>
<td>≥ 0.46</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Freeman’s theta, k = 5</td>
<td>0.05 – &lt; 0.21</td>
<td>0.21 – &lt; 0.40</td>
<td>≥ 0.40</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Freeman’s theta, k = 7</td>
<td>0.05 – &lt; 0.20</td>
<td>0.20 – &lt; 0.38</td>
<td>≥ 0.38</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Freeman’s theta, k = 7</td>
<td>0.05 – &lt; 0.20</td>
<td>0.20 – &lt; 0.38</td>
<td>≥ 0.38</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

Freeman’s theta

```
library(rcompanion)
freemanTheta(x = Data$Likert,
g = Data$Speaker)

Freeman.theta
0.64
```

epsilon-squared

```
library(rcompanion)
epsilonSquared(x = Data$Likert,
g = Data$Speaker)
```
Post-hoc test: Dunn test for multiple comparisons of groups

If the Kruskal–Wallis test is significant, a post-hoc analysis can be performed to determine which groups differ from each other group.

Probably the most popular post-hoc test for the Kruskal–Wallis test is the Dunn test. The Dunn test can be conducted with the `dunnTest` function in the `FSA` package.

Because the post-hoc test will produce multiple p-values, adjustments to the p-values can be made to avoid inflating the possibility of making a type-I error. There are a variety of methods for controlling the familywise error rate or for controlling the false discovery rate. See `?p.adjust` for details on these methods.

When there are many p-values to evaluate, it is useful to condense a table of p-values to a compact letter display format. In the output, groups are separated by letters. Groups sharing the same letter are not significantly different. Compact letter displays are a clear and succinct way to present results of multiple comparisons.

```r
### Order groups by median

Data$Speaker = factor(Data$Speaker,
                      levels=c("Pooh", "Tigger", "Piglet"))

levels(Data$Speaker)

### Dunn test

library(FSA)

DT = dunnTest(Likert ~ Speaker,
               data=Data,
               method="bh")  # Adjusts p-values for multiple comparisons;

DT

Dunn (1964) Kruskal-Wallis multiple comparison
p-values adjusted with the Benjamini-Hochberg method.

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Comparison</th>
<th>Z</th>
<th>P.unadj</th>
<th>P.adj</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>1   Pooh - Tigger</td>
<td>0.4813074</td>
<td>0.6302980448</td>
<td>0.6302980448</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>2   Pooh - Piglet</td>
<td>3.7702412</td>
<td>0.0001630898</td>
<td>0.0004892695</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>3   Tigger - Piglet</td>
<td>3.2889338</td>
<td>0.0010056766</td>
<td>0.0015085149</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

### Compact letter display
PT = DT$res

PT

library(rcompanion)

cldList(P.adj ~ Comparison,
data = PT,
threshold = 0.05)

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Group</th>
<th>Letter</th>
<th>MonoLetter</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>1</td>
<td>Pooh</td>
<td>a</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>2</td>
<td>Tigger</td>
<td>a</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>3</td>
<td>Piglet</td>
<td>b</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

Groups sharing a letter not significantly different (alpha = 0.05).

**Post-hoc test: pairwise Mann–Whitney U-tests for multiple comparisons**

Another approach to post-hoc testing for the Kruskal–Wallis test is to use Mann–Whitney U-tests for each pair of groups.

This can be conducted with the *pairwise.wilcox.test* function. This produces a table of *p*-values comparing each pair of groups.

To prevent the inflation of type I error rates, adjustments to the *p*-values can be made using the *p.adjust.method* option. Here the *fdr* method is used. See *?p.adjust* for details on available *p*-value adjustment methods.

When there are many *p*-values to evaluate, it is useful to condense a table of *p*-values to a compact letter display format. This can be accomplished with a combination of the *fullPTable* function in the *rcompanion* package and the *multcompLetters* function in the *multcompView* package.

In a compact letter display, groups sharing the same letter are not significantly different.

Here the *fdr* *p*-value adjustment method is used. See *?p.adjust* for details on available methods.

The code creates a matrix of *p*-values called *PT*, then converts this to a fuller matrix called *PT1*. *PT1* is then passed to the *multcompLetters* function to be converted to a compact letter display.

Note that the *p*-value results of the pairwise Mann–Whitney U-tests differ somewhat from those of the Dunn test.

```r
### Order groups by median

Data$Speaker = factor(Data$Speaker,
levels=c("Pooh", "Tigger", "Piglet"))

Data
```
### Pairwise Mann-Whitney

\[
PT = \text{pairwise.wilcox.test}(\text{Data}$\text{Likert}, \\
\text{Data}$\text{Speaker}, \\
p\text{.adjust.method}=\text{"fdr"}) \\
# Adjusts p-values for multiple comparisons; \\
# See \text{?p.adjust} for options
\]

PT

Pairwise comparisons using Wilcoxon rank sum test

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th></th>
<th>Pooh</th>
<th>Tigger</th>
<th>Piglet</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>Pooh</td>
<td>1.00</td>
<td>0.517</td>
<td>0.001</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Tigger</td>
<td>0.52</td>
<td>1.00</td>
<td>0.001</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Piglet</td>
<td>0.00</td>
<td>0.00</td>
<td>1.00</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

P value adjustment method: fdr

### Note that the values in the table are p-values comparing each pair of groups.

### Convert PT to a full table and call it PT1

\[
PT = PT$p.value \\
### Extract p-value table
\]

library(rcompanion)

PT1 = fullPTable(PT)

PT1

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th></th>
<th>Pooh</th>
<th>Tigger</th>
<th>Piglet</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>Pooh</td>
<td>1.00</td>
<td>0.517</td>
<td>0.001</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Tigger</td>
<td>0.52</td>
<td>1.00</td>
<td>0.001</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Piglet</td>
<td>0.00</td>
<td>0.00</td>
<td>1.00</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

### Produce compact letter display

library(multcompView)

multcompLetters(PT1, 
compare=\text{"<"}, 
threshold=0.05, # p-value to use as significance threshold 
Letters=letters, 
reversed = FALSE)

Pooh Tigger Piglet
"a"  "a"  "b"

### Values sharing a letter are not significantly different
Plot of medians and confidence intervals

The following code uses the `groupwiseMedian` function to produce a data frame of medians for each speaker along with the 95% confidence intervals for each median with the percentile method.

These medians are then plotted, with their confidence intervals shown as error bars. The grouping letters from the multiple comparisons (Dunn test or pairwise Mann–Whitney U-tests) are added.

```r
library(rcompanion)

Sum = groupwiseMedian(Likert ~ Speaker,
data = Data,
conf = 0.95,
R = 5000,
percentile = TRUE,
bc = FALSE,
digits = 3)

library(ggplot2)

ggplot(Sum,
aes(x = Speaker,
y = Median)) +
ggplot(Sum, aes(x = Speaker,
y = Median)) +
geom_errorbar(aes(ymin = Percentile.lower,
ymax = Percentile.upper),
width = 0.05,
size = 0.5) +
geom_point(shape = 15,
size = 4) +
theme_bw() +
theme(axis.title = element_text(face = "bold")) +
ylab("Median Likert score") +
annotate("text",
  x = X,
  y = Y,
  label = Label)
```
Exercises L

1. Considering Pooh, Piglet, and Tigger's data,

   a. What was the median score for each instructor?

   b. Are the data for all instructors reasonably similar shape and spread?

   c. Based on your previous answer, what is the null hypothesis for the Kruskal–Wallis test?

   d. According to the Kruskal–Wallis test, is there a statistical difference in scores among the instructors?

   e. What is the value of $\epsilon^2$-squared for these data?

   f. How do you interpret this effect size?

   g. Looking at the post-hoc analysis, which speakers' scores are statistically different from which others? Who had the statistically highest scores?

   h. What do you conclude practically?
2. Brian, Stewie, and Meg want to assess the education level of students in their courses on creative writing for adults. They want to know the median education level for each class, and if the education level of the classes were different among instructors.

They used the following table to code his data.

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Code</th>
<th>Abbreviation</th>
<th>Level</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>1</td>
<td>&lt; HS</td>
<td>Less than high school</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>2</td>
<td>HS</td>
<td>High school</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>3</td>
<td>BA</td>
<td>Bachelor's</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>4</td>
<td>MA</td>
<td>Master's</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>5</td>
<td>PhD</td>
<td>Doctorate</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

The following are the course data.

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Instructor</th>
<th>Student</th>
<th>Education</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>'Brian Griffin'</td>
<td>a</td>
<td>3</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>'Brian Griffin'</td>
<td>b</td>
<td>2</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>'Brian Griffin'</td>
<td>c</td>
<td>3</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>'Brian Griffin'</td>
<td>d</td>
<td>3</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>'Brian Griffin'</td>
<td>e</td>
<td>3</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>'Brian Griffin'</td>
<td>f</td>
<td>3</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>'Brian Griffin'</td>
<td>g</td>
<td>4</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>'Brian Griffin'</td>
<td>h</td>
<td>5</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>'Brian Griffin'</td>
<td>i</td>
<td>3</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>'Brian Griffin'</td>
<td>j</td>
<td>4</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>'Brian Griffin'</td>
<td>k</td>
<td>3</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>'Brian Griffin'</td>
<td>l</td>
<td>2</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>'Stewie Griffin'</td>
<td>m</td>
<td>4</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>'Stewie Griffin'</td>
<td>n</td>
<td>5</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>'Stewie Griffin'</td>
<td>o</td>
<td>4</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>'Stewie Griffin'</td>
<td>p</td>
<td>4</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>'Stewie Griffin'</td>
<td>q</td>
<td>4</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>'Stewie Griffin'</td>
<td>r</td>
<td>4</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>'Stewie Griffin'</td>
<td>s</td>
<td>3</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>'Stewie Griffin'</td>
<td>t</td>
<td>5</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>'Stewie Griffin'</td>
<td>u</td>
<td>4</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>'Stewie Griffin'</td>
<td>v</td>
<td>4</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>'Stewie Griffin'</td>
<td>w</td>
<td>3</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>'Stewie Griffin'</td>
<td>x</td>
<td>2</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>'Meg Griffin'</td>
<td>y</td>
<td>3</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>'Meg Griffin'</td>
<td>z</td>
<td>4</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>'Meg Griffin'</td>
<td>aa</td>
<td>3</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>'Meg Griffin'</td>
<td>ab</td>
<td>3</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>'Meg Griffin'</td>
<td>ac</td>
<td>3</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>'Meg Griffin'</td>
<td>ad</td>
<td>2</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>'Meg Griffin'</td>
<td>ae</td>
<td>3</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>'Meg Griffin'</td>
<td>af</td>
<td>4</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>'Meg Griffin'</td>
<td>ag</td>
<td>2</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>'Meg Griffin'</td>
<td>ah</td>
<td>3</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>
For each of the following, answer the question, and show the output from the analyses you used to answer the question.

a. What was the median education level for each instructor's class? (Be sure to report the education level, not just the numeric code!)

b. Are the distributions of education levels for all instructors reasonably similar in shape and spread?

c. Based on your previous answer, what is the null hypothesis for the Kruskal–Wallis test?

d. According to the Kruskal–Wallis test, is there a difference in the education level of students among the instructors?

e. What is the value of epsilon-squared for these data?

f. How do you interpret this effect size?

g. Looking at the post-hoc analysis, which classes education levels are different from which others? Who had the statistically highest education level?

h. Plot Brian, Stewie, and Meg's data in a way that helps you visualize the data. Do the results reflect what you would expect from looking at the plot?

i. How would you summarize the results of the descriptive statistics and tests? What do you conclude practically?

Mood’s Median Test

Mood’s median test compares the medians of two or more groups. It is often less powerful than the Kruskal–Wallis test, but can be used when the spread of values in the groups are different.

The test can be conducted with the mood.medtest function in the RVAideMemoire package.

Post-hoc tests
The outcome of Mood’s median test tells you if there are differences among the groups, but doesn’t tell you which groups are different from other groups. In order to determine which groups are different from others, post-hoc testing can be conducted. The function pairwiseMedianTest in the rcompanion package can perform the post-hoc tests.
### Mood’s Median Test

#### Summary and Analysis of Extension Education Program Evaluation in R

---

**Appropriate data**
- One-way data with two or more groups
- Dependent variable is ordinal, interval, or ratio
- Independent variable is a factor with levels indicating groups
- Observations between groups are independent. That is, not paired or repeated measures data
- Distributions of values for each group are similar in shape; however, the test is not sensitive to outliers

**Hypotheses**
- Null hypothesis: The medians of values for each group are equal.
- Alternative hypothesis (two-sided): The medians of values for each group are not equal.

**Interpretation**
Significant results can be reported as “There was a significant difference in the median values among groups.”
Post-hoc analysis allows you to say “The median for group A was higher than the median for group B”, and so on.

**Packages used in this chapter**

The packages used in this chapter include:
- RVAideMemoire
- rcompanion

The following commands will install these packages if they are not already installed:

```r
if(!require(RVAideMemoire)){install.packages("RVAideMemoire")}
if(!require(rcompanion)){install.packages("rcompanion")}
```

**Example using the RVAideMemoire package**

This example uses the formula notation indicating that Likert is the dependent variable and Speaker is the independent variable. The `data=` option indicates the data frame that contains the variables. For the meaning of other options, see `?mood.medtest`.

A significant p-value for Mood’s median test indicates that not all medians among groups are equal.

For appropriate plots and data frame checking, see the *Kruskal–Wallis Test* chapter.

**Input =**

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Speaker</th>
<th>Likert</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>Pooh</td>
<td>3</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Pooh</td>
<td>5</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Pooh</td>
<td>4</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Pooh</td>
<td>4</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

---

255
Data = read.table(textConnection(Input), header=TRUE)

### Check the data frame

library(psych)
headTail(Data)
str(Data)
summary(Data)

### Remove unnecessary objects

rm(Input)

**Mood’s median test**

library(RVAideMemoire)
mood.medtest(Likert ~ Speaker, data = Data)
An interesting thing happened with the result here. The test counts how many observations in each group are greater than the global median for all groups together, in this case 4. It then tests if there is a significant difference in this proportion among groups. For this data set, however, both Pooh and Tigger have a majority of observations equal to the global median. Because they are equal to the global median, they are not greater than the global median, and so aren’t much different than Piglet’s scores on this count. The result in this case is a non-significant p-value.

But the test would come out differently if we were counting observation less than the global median, because Pooh and Tigger have few of these, and Piglet has relatively many.

This is a quirk with Mood’s median test, and isn’t common in statistical tests.

One solution would be to re-code the function to count observations less than the global median. This would be possible.

But it is easier to simply invert the scale we are using. This is really an arbitrary change, but for this test, it can make a difference. Imagine if our original scale interpreted 5 to be the best, and 1 to be the worst. When we designed the survey tool, we could just as easily have made 1 the best and 5 the worst. And then instead of ranking “good” with a 4, the respondents would have marked it 2, and so on. By the way the calculations are done, this arbitrary change in scale will change the results of Mood’s median test.

For a 5-point scale, we do this inversion by simply by making a new variable equal to 6 minus the original score.

With Mood’s median test, I recommend making this kind of inversion in cases where many values are equal to the global median. Then use whichever result has a lower p-value.

```
Data$Likert.inv = 6 - Data$Likert
library(psych)
headTail(Data)
```

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Speaker</th>
<th>Likert</th>
<th>Likert.inv</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>Pooh</td>
<td>3</td>
<td>3</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Pooh</td>
<td>5</td>
<td>1</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Pooh</td>
<td>4</td>
<td>2</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>&lt;NA&gt;</td>
<td>...</td>
<td>...</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Tigger</td>
<td>5</td>
<td>1</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Tigger</td>
<td>4</td>
<td>2</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Tigger</td>
<td>4</td>
<td>2</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Tigger</td>
<td>3</td>
<td>3</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>
library(RVAideMemoire)

mood.medtest(Likert.inv ~ Speaker,
data = Data)

Mood's median test
p-value = 0.000402

Post-hoc test: pairwiseMedianTest function

If Mood's median test is significant, a post-hoc analysis can be performed to determine which groups differ from each other group.

For this we will use the pairwiseMedianTest function in the rcompanion package, which conducts Mood's median test on all pairs of groups from one-way data.

Because the post-hoc test will produce multiple p-values, adjustments to the p-values can be made to avoid inflating the possibility of making a type-I error. There are a variety of methods for controlling the familywise error rate or for controlling the false discovery rate. See ?p.adjust for details on these methods.

### Order groups by median

Data$Speaker = factor(Data$Speaker,
levels=c("Pooh", "Tigger", "Piglet"))

### Pairwise median tests

library(rcompanion)

PT = pairwiseMedianTest(Likert ~ Speaker,
data = Data,
exact = NULL,
method = "fdr")

# Adjusts p-values for multiple comparisons;
# See ?p.adjust for options

PT

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Comparison</th>
<th>p.value</th>
<th>p.adjust</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>1   Pooh - Tigger = 0</td>
<td>1.00000000</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>2   Pooh - Piglet = 0</td>
<td>0.001093 0.003279</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>3   Tigger - Piglet = 0</td>
<td>0.005477 0.008216</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

### Compact letter display

library(rcompanion)

cldList(p.adjust ~ Comparison,
Friedman Test

The Friedman test determines if there are differences among groups for two-way data structured in a specific way, namely in an unreplicated complete block design. In this design, one variable serves as the treatment or group variable, and another variable serves as the blocking variable. It is the differences among treatments or groups that we are interested in. We aren’t necessarily interested in differences
among blocks, but we want our statistics to take into account differences in the blocks. In the unreplicated complete block design, each block has one and only one observation of each treatment.

For an example of this structure, look at the Belcher family data below. Rater is considered the blocking variable, and each rater has one observation for each Instructor. The test will determine if there are differences among values for Instructor, taking into account any consistent effect of a Rater. For example if Rater a rated consistently low and Rater g rated consistently high, the Friedman test can account for this statistically.

In other cases, the blocking variable might be the class where the ratings were done or the school where the ratings were done. If you were testing differences among curricula or other teaching treatments with different instructors, different instructors might be used as blocks.

If the distribution of the differences in scores between each pair of groups are all symmetrical, or if the distribution of values for each group is similar in shape and spread, the Friedman test determines if there is a difference in medians among groups. If not, the test determines if there is a systematic difference in the values among the groups.

Some people critique the Friedman test for having low power in detecting differences among groups. It has been suggested, however, that Friedman test may be powerful when there are five or more groups.

**Post-hoc tests**
The outcome of the Friedman test tells you if there are differences among the groups, but doesn’t tell you which groups are different from other groups. In order to determine which groups are different from others, post-hoc testing can be conducted.

For a post-hoc analysis, the `pairwiseSignTest` function can be used. It performs a two-sample paired sign test on each pair of groups.

**Appropriate data**
- Two-way data arranged in an unreplicated complete block design
- Dependent variable is ordinal, interval, or ratio
- Treatment or group independent variable is a factor with two or more levels. That is, two or more groups
- Blocking variable is a factor with two or more levels
- Blocks are independent of each other and have no interaction with treatments
- In order to be a test of medians, the distribution of the differences in scores between each pair of groups are all symmetrical, or the distributions of values for each group have similar shape and spread. Otherwise the test is a test of distributions.

**Hypotheses**
*If the distribution of the differences in scores between each pair of groups are all symmetrical, or the distributions of values for each group have similar shape and spread:*
- Null hypothesis: The medians of values for each group are equal.
- Alternative hypothesis (two-sided): The medians of values for each group are not equal.
If the above conditions are not met:

- Null hypothesis: The distributions of values for each group are equal.
- Alternative hypothesis (two-sided): There is systematic difference in the distribution of values for the groups.

**Interpretation**

If the distribution of the differences in scores between each pair of groups are all symmetrical, or the distributions of values for each group have similar shape and spread:

Significant results can be reported as “There was a significant difference in median values across groups.”

Post-hoc analysis allows you to say “The median for group A was higher than the median for group B”, and so on.

If the above conditions are not met:

Significant results can be reported as “There was a significant difference in values among groups.”

**Other notes and alternative tests**

The Quade test is used for the same kinds of data and hypotheses, but can be more powerful in some cases. It has been suggested that Friedman test may be preferable when there are a larger number of groups (five or more), while the Quade is preferable for fewer groups. The Quade test is described in the next chapter.

Another alternative is to use cumulative link models for ordinal data, which are described later in this book.

**Packages used in this chapter**

The packages used in this chapter include:

- psych
- FSA
- lattice
- BSDA
- multcompView
- PMCMR
- rcompanion
- DescTools

The following commands will install these packages if they are not already installed:

```r
if(!require(psych)){install.packages("psych")}
if(!require(FSA)){install.packages("FSA")}
if(!require(lattice)){install.packages("lattice")}
if(!require(BSDA)){install.packages("BSDA")}
if(!require(multcompView)){install.packages("multcompView")}
if(!require(PMCMR)){install.packages("PMCMR")}
if(!require(rcompanion)){install.packages("rcompanion")}
```
if(!require(DescTools)){install.packages("DescTools")}

**Friedman test example**

```r
Input =("        
Instructor Rater Likert
'Bob Belcher' a  4
'Bob Belcher' b  5
'Bob Belcher' c  4
'Bob Belcher' d  6
'Bob Belcher' e  6
'Bob Belcher' f  6
'Bob Belcher' g 10
'Bob Belcher' h  6
'Linda Belcher' a  8
'Linda Belcher' b  6
'Linda Belcher' c  8
'Linda Belcher' d  8
'Linda Belcher' e  8
'Linda Belcher' f  7
'Linda Belcher' g 10
'Linda Belcher' h  9
'Tina Belcher' a  7
'Tina Belcher' b  5
'Tina Belcher' c  7
'Tina Belcher' d  8
'Tina Belcher' e  8
'Tina Belcher' f  9
'Tina Belcher' g 10
'Tina Belcher' h  9
'Gene Belcher' a  6
'Gene Belcher' b  4
'Gene Belcher' c  5
'Gene Belcher' d  5
'Gene Belcher' e  6
'Gene Belcher' f  6
'Gene Belcher' g  5
'Gene Belcher' h  5
'Louise Belcher' a  8
'Louise Belcher' b  7
'Louise Belcher' c  8
'Louise Belcher' d  8
'Louise Belcher' e  9
'Louise Belcher' f  9
'Louise Belcher' g  8
'Louise Belcher' h 10
")

Data = read.table(textConnection(Input),header=TRUE)

### Order levels of the factor; otherwise R will alphabetize them

Data$Instructor = factor(Data$Instructor,

```
levels=unique(Data$Instructor))

### Create a new variable which is the likert scores as an ordered factor

Data$Likert.f = factor(Data$Likert, ordered=TRUE)

### Check the data frame

library(psych)

headTail(Data)

str(Data)

summary(Data)

### Remove unnecessary objects

rm(Input)

**Summarize data treating Likert scores as factors**

xtabs(~ Instructor + Likert.f, data = Data)

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Likert.f</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>Instructor</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Bob Belcher</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Linda Belcher</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Tina Belcher</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Gene Belcher</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Louise Belcher</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

XT = xtabs(~ Instructor + Likert.f, data = Data)

prop.table(XT, margin = 1)

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Likert.f</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>Instructor</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Bob Belcher</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Linda Belcher</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Tina Belcher</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Gene Belcher</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Louise Belcher</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>
**Bar plots by group**

Note that the bar plots don’t show the effect of the blocking variable.

```r
library(lattice)

histogram(~ Likert.f | Instructor,
          data=Data,
          layout=c(1,5) # columns and rows of individual plots
)
```

**Bar plots of differences between groups**

We can make a bar plot of the differences in values for two groups, just as we did for the sign test previously. Values for Bob and Louisa were chosen based on their bar plots having very different shapes.

The resulting plot shows a distribution that is clearly not symmetrical.

Note that the data must be ordered by the blocking variable so that the first observation for *Louisa* will be paired with the first observation for *Bob*, and so on.

Also note that we had to specify the *levels* in the *factor* function defining *Diff.f*. This is so that the values with zero counts will be displayed on the plot.
Bob = Data$Likert [Data$Instructor == "Bob Belcher"]
Louisa = Data$Likert [Data$Instructor == "Louise Belcher"]

Difference = Bob - Louisa

Diff.f = factor(Difference,
    ordered = TRUE,
    levels = c("-4", "-3", "-2", "-1", "0", "1", "2", "3", "4")
)

X = xtabs(~ Diff.f)

barplot(X,
    col="dark gray",
    xlab="Difference in Likert",
    ylab="Frequency")

pairwiseDifferences to produce bar plots of differences between all groups
The pairwiseDifferences function in the rcompanion package will create a new data frame of differences for all pairs of differences. The plotit=TRUE option will produce bar plots of the counts for each pair. Otherwise the lattice package can be used to show these plots in one large trellis plot.

Note that the data must be ordered by the blocking variable so that the first observation for Bob will be paired with the first observation for Linda, and so on.

library(rcompanion)

Data.diff=pairwiseDifferences(Likert ~ Instructor,
    data = Data,
    factorize = TRUE,
    plotit = TRUE)

library(psych)
headTail(Data.diff)

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Comparison</th>
<th>Difference</th>
<th>Difference.f</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>Bob Belcher - Linda Belcher</td>
<td>-4</td>
<td>-4</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Bob Belcher - Linda Belcher</td>
<td>-1</td>
<td>-1</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Bob Belcher - Linda Belcher</td>
<td>-4</td>
<td>-4</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Bob Belcher - Linda Belcher</td>
<td>-2</td>
<td>-2</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Gene Belcher - Louise Belcher</td>
<td>&lt;NA&gt;</td>
<td>&lt;NA&gt;</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Gene Belcher - Louise Belcher</td>
<td>-3</td>
<td>-3</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Gene Belcher - Louise Belcher</td>
<td>-3</td>
<td>-3</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Gene Belcher - Louise Belcher</td>
<td>-3</td>
<td>-3</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Gene Belcher - Louise Belcher</td>
<td>-5</td>
<td>-5</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

library(lattice)

histogram(~ Difference | Comparison, 
data=Data.diff, 
type = "count", 
layout=c(2,5)       # columns and rows of individual plots)

Summarize data treating Likert scores as numeric

library(FSA)

Summarize(Likert ~ Instructor,
data=Data,
digits=3)

Instructor n mean     sd  min   Q1 median   Q3 max percZero
1  Bob Belcher 8 5.875  1.885   4 6.00     6.00 6.00  10        0
2  Linda Belcher 8 8.000  1.195   6 8.25     8.25 8.25  10        0
3   Tina Belcher 8 7.875  1.553   5 7.00     8.00 8.00  10        0
4    Gene Belcher 8 5.250  0.707   4 5.00     6.00 6.00   6        0
5 Louise Belcher 8 8.375  0.916   7 8.00     9.00 9.00  10        0

Friedman test example
This example uses the formula notation indicating that Likert is the dependent variable, Instructor is
the independent variable, and Rater is the blocking variable. The data= option indicates the data
frame that contains the variables. For the meaning of other options, see ?friedman.test

friedman.test(Likert ~ Instructor | Rater,
             data = Data)

Friedman rank sum test
Friedman chi-squared = 23.139, df = 4, p-value = 0.0001188

Effect size
Kendall’s W, or Kendall’s coefficient of concordance, can be used as an effect size statistic for
Friedman’s test.

The following interpretations are based on personal intuition. They are not intended to be universal.

small    medium    large
Kendall’s W
k = 3     < 0.10     0.10 - < 0.30    ≥ 0.30
k = 5     < 0.10     0.10 - < 0.25    ≥ 0.25
k = 7     < 0.10     0.10 - < 0.20    ≥ 0.20
k = 9     < 0.10     0.10 - < 0.20    ≥ 0.20

XT = xtabs(Likert ~ Instructor + Rater,
          data = Data)

XT

Instructor      a b c d e f g h
Bob Belcher     4 5 4 6 6 6 10 6
Linda Belcher   8 6 8 8 8 7 10 9
Tina Belcher    7 5 7 8 8 9 10 9
Gene Belcher    6 4 5 5 6 6 5 5
Louise Belcher  8 7 8 8 9 9 8 10

267
For the *KendallW* function, groups must be in rows, and raters must be in columns.

```r
library(DescTools)
KendallW(XT, correct=TRUE, test=TRUE)
```

**Kendall's coefficient of concordance \( \text{Wt} \)**

- **Kendall chi-squared =** 23.139, **df =** 4, **subjects =** 5, **raters =** 8, **p-value =** 0.0001188
- **sample estimates:**
  - **Wt**: 0.7230903

In the output, check that the correct number of groups and raters is listed under "subjects" and "raters", respectively.

### Post-hoc test: pairwise sign test for multiple comparisons of groups

Post-hoc testing can be conducted with the functions *pairwiseSignTest* and *pairwiseSignMatrix*. These functions conduct a paired two-sample sign test on each pair of groups, and output the results as either a table or a matrix, respectively. The matrix output can be converted to a compact letter display using the *multcompLetters* function in the *multcompView* package.

To prevent the inflation of type I error rates, adjustments to the \( p \)-values can be made using the *p.adjust.method* option. See ?*p.adjust* for details on available \( p \)-value adjustment methods.

It has been suggested that the sign test may lack power in detecting differences in paired data sets. But is useful because it has few assumptions about the distributions of the data to compare, and is the test analogous to the Friedman test with two groups.

### Table format and compact letter display

Note that the data must be ordered by the blocking variable so that the first observation for *Bob* will be paired with the first observation for *Linda*, and so on.

```r
### Order groups by median
Data$Instructor = factor(Data$Instructor, levels = c("Linda Belcher", "Louise Belcher", "Tina Belcher", "Bob Belcher", "Gene Belcher"))

### Pairwise sign tests
library(rcompanion)
PT = pairwiseSignTest(Likert ~ Instructor, data = Data,
```
### Friedman Test

**Summary and Analysis of Extension Education Program Evaluation in R**

```r
method = "fdr"
# Adjusts p-values for multiple comparisons;
# See ?p.adjust for options
```

```r
PT
```

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Comparison</th>
<th>p.value</th>
<th>p.adjust</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>Linda Belcher - Louise Belcher = 0 1</td>
<td>0.375</td>
<td>0.46880</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Linda Belcher - Tina Belcher = 0 3</td>
<td>0.625</td>
<td>0.68750</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Linda Belcher - Bob Belcher = 0 7</td>
<td>0.01563</td>
<td>0.03908</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Linda Belcher - Gene Belcher = 0 8</td>
<td>0.007812</td>
<td>0.02604</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Louise Belcher - Tina Belcher = 0 5</td>
<td>0.2187</td>
<td>0.31240</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Louise Belcher - Bob Belcher = 0 7</td>
<td>0.07031</td>
<td>0.11720</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Louise Belcher - Gene Belcher = 0 8</td>
<td>0.007812</td>
<td>0.02604</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Tina Belcher - Bob Belcher = 0 6</td>
<td>0.03125</td>
<td>0.06250</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Tina Belcher - Gene Belcher = 0 8</td>
<td>0.007812</td>
<td>0.02604</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Bob Belcher - Gene Belcher = 0 4</td>
<td>0.6875</td>
<td>0.68750</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

```r
### Compact letter display
library(rcompanion)
cldList(p.adjust ~ Comparison,
  data = PT,
  threshold = 0.05)
```

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Group</th>
<th>Letter</th>
<th>MonoLetter</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>LindaBelcher</td>
<td>a</td>
<td>a</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>LouiseBelcher</td>
<td>ab</td>
<td>ab</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>TinaBelcher</td>
<td>ab</td>
<td>ab</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>BobBelcher</td>
<td>bc</td>
<td>bc</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>GeneBelcher</td>
<td>c</td>
<td>c</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

Groups sharing a letter are not significantly different (alpha = 0.05).

### Matrix format and compact letter display
Note that the data must be ordered by the blocking variable so that the first observation for Bob will be paired with the first observation for Linda, and so on.

```r
### Order groups by median
Data$Instructor = factor(Data$Instructor,
  levels = c("Linda Belcher", "Louise Belcher",
             "Tina Belcher", "Bob Belcher",
             "Gene Belcher"))
```

```r
### Pairwise sign tests
library(rcompanion)
PM = pairwiseSignMatrix(Likert ~ Instructor,
```

269
data = Data,,
method = "fdr")
  # Adjusts p-values for multiple comparisons;
  # See ?p.adjust for options

PM

$Adjusted

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th></th>
<th>Linda Belcher</th>
<th>Louise Belcher</th>
<th>Tina Belcher</th>
<th>Bob Belcher</th>
<th>Gene Belcher</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>Linda Belcher</td>
<td>1.00000</td>
<td>0.46880</td>
<td>0.68750</td>
<td>0.03908</td>
<td>0.02604</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Louise Belcher</td>
<td>0.46880</td>
<td>1.00000</td>
<td>0.31240</td>
<td>0.11720</td>
<td>0.02604</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Tina Belcher</td>
<td>0.68750</td>
<td>0.31240</td>
<td>1.00000</td>
<td>0.06250</td>
<td>0.02604</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Bob Belcher</td>
<td>0.03908</td>
<td>0.11720</td>
<td>0.06250</td>
<td>1.00000</td>
<td>0.68750</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Gene Belcher</td>
<td>0.02604</td>
<td>0.02604</td>
<td>0.02604</td>
<td>0.68750</td>
<td>1.00000</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

library(multcompView)

multcompLetters(PM$Adjusted,
compare="<",
threshold=0.05,  # p-value to use as significance threshold
Letters=letters,
reversed = FALSE)

Linda Belcher Louise Belcher Tina Belcher Bob Belcher Gene Belcher
"a"           "ab"           "ab"           "bc"           "c"

### Groups sharing a letter are not significantly different.

**Post-hoc Conover test**

A different post-hoc test for the Friedman test can be conducted with the `posthoc.friedman.conover.test` function in the `PMCMR` package. The output can be converted to a compact letter display using the `multcompLetters` function in the `multcompView` package.

### Order groups by median

Data$Instructor = factor(Data$Instructor,
levels = c("Linda Belcher", "Louise Belcher",
   "Tina Belcher", "Bob Belcher",
   "Gene Belcher"))

### Conover test

library(PMCMR)

PT = posthoc.friedman.conover.test(y      = Data$Likert,
groups = Data$Instructor,
blocks = Data$Rater,
p.adjust.method="fdr")
  # Adjusts p-values for multiple comparisons;
  # See ?p.adjust for options
The Quade test is used for similar data and hypotheses as the Friedman test, namely for unreplicated complete block designs.

While the Friedman test is a generalization of the paired sign test, the Quade test is a generalization of the two-sample signed-rank test.

Some authors indicate that the Quade test is appropriate for ordinal data, while others suggest that it is appropriate only for interval or ratio data. It is included in this section as an alternative to the Friedman test.
Post-hoc tests
The outcome of the Quade test tells you if there are differences among the groups, but doesn’t tell you which groups are different from other groups. In order to determine which groups are different from others, post-hoc testing can be conducted with the `pairwise.wilcox.test` function.

Appropriate data
- Two-way data arranged in an unreplicated complete block design
- Dependent variable is ordinal, interval, or ratio, although some authors say data must be interval or ratio only.
- Treatment or group independent variable is a factor with two or more levels. That is, two or more groups
- Blocking variable is a factor with two or more levels
- Blocks are independent of each other and have no interaction with treatments
- In order to be a test of medians, the distributions of values for each group should have similar shape and spread. If not, the test determines if there is a systematic difference in the values among the groups.

Hypotheses
If the distribution of the differences in scores between each pair of groups are all symmetrical, or the distributions of values for each group have similar shape and spread:
- Null hypothesis: The medians of values for each group are equal.
- Alternative hypothesis (two-sided): The medians of values for each group are not equal.

If the above conditions are not met:
- Null hypothesis: The distributions of values for each group are equal.
- Alternative hypothesis (two-sided): There is systematic difference in the distribution of values for the groups.

Interpretation
If the distribution of the differences in scores between each pair of groups are all symmetrical, or the distributions of values for each group have similar shape and spread:
- Significant results can be reported as “There was a significant difference in median values across groups.”
- Post-hoc analysis allows you to say “The median for group A was higher than the median for group B”, and so on.

If the above conditions are not met:
- Significant results can be reported as “There was a significant difference in values among groups.”

Other notes and alternative tests
The Friedman test is used for the same kinds of data and hypotheses, The Friedman test is described in the previous chapter.

Another alternative is to use cumulative link models for ordinal data, which are described later in this book.
Packages used in this chapter

The packages used in this chapter include:
- psych
- FSA
- lattice
- multcompView
- PMCMR
- rcompanion

The following commands will install these packages if they are not already installed:

```r
if(!require(psych)){install.packages("psych")}
if(!require(FSA)){install.packages("FSA")}
if(!require(lattice)){install.packages("lattice")}
if(!require(multcompView)){install.packages("multcompView")}
if(!require(PMCMR)){install.packages("PMCMR")}
if(!require(rcompanion)){install.packages("rcompanion")}
```

Quade test example

```r
Input =("Instructor        Rater  Likert
'Bob Belcher'        a      4
'Bob Belcher'        b      5
'Bob Belcher'        c      4
'Bob Belcher'        d      6
'Bob Belcher'        e      6
'Bob Belcher'        f      6
'Bob Belcher'        g     10
'Bob Belcher'        h      6
'Linda Belcher'      a      8
'Linda Belcher'      b      6
'Linda Belcher'      c      8
'Linda Belcher'      d      8
'Linda Belcher'      e      8
'Linda Belcher'      f      7
'Linda Belcher'      g     10
'Linda Belcher'      h      9
'Tina Belcher'       a      7
'Tina Belcher'       b      5
'Tina Belcher'       c      7
'Tina Belcher'       d      8
'Tina Belcher'       e      8
'Tina Belcher'       f      9
'Tina Belcher'       g     10
'Tina Belcher'       h      9
'Gene Belcher'       a      6
'Gene Belcher'       b      4
'Gene Belcher'       c      5
'Gene Belcher'       d      5
```
'Gene Belcher' e 6
'Gene Belcher' f 6
'Gene Belcher' g 5
'Gene Belcher' h 5
'Louise Belcher' a 8
'Louise Belcher' b 7
'Louise Belcher' c 8
'Louise Belcher' d 8
'Louise Belcher' e 9
'Louise Belcher' f 9
'Louise Belcher' g 8
'Louise Belcher' h 10

Data = read.table(textConnection(Input),header=TRUE)

### Order levels of the factor; otherwise R will alphabetize them
Data$Instructor = factor(Data$Instructor,
                      levels=unique(Data$Instructor))

### Create a new variable which is the likert scores as an ordered factor
Data$Likert.f = factor(Data$Likert,
                      ordered=TRUE)

### Check the data frame
library(psych)
headTail(Data)
str(Data)
summary(Data)

### Remove unnecessary objects
rm(Input)

**Summarize data treating Likert scores as factors**

xtabs(~ Instructor + Likert.f,
      data = Data)

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Likert.f</th>
<th>4 5 6 7 8 9 10</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>Instructor</td>
<td>Bob Belcher</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>2 1 4 0 0 0 1</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>0 0 1 1 4 1 1</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>0 1 0 2 2 2 1</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>1 4 3 0 0 0 0</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>0 0 0 1 4 2 1</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>
XT = xtabs(~ Instructor + Likert.f, 
data = Data)

prop.table(XT, 
margin = 1)

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Likert.f</th>
<th>4</th>
<th>5</th>
<th>6</th>
<th>7</th>
<th>8</th>
<th>9</th>
<th>10</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>Instructor</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Bob Belcher</td>
<td>0.250</td>
<td>0.125</td>
<td>0.500</td>
<td>0.000</td>
<td>0.000</td>
<td>0.000</td>
<td>0.125</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Linda Belcher</td>
<td>0.000</td>
<td>0.000</td>
<td>0.125</td>
<td>0.125</td>
<td>0.500</td>
<td>0.125</td>
<td>0.125</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Tina Belcher</td>
<td>0.000</td>
<td>0.125</td>
<td>0.000</td>
<td>0.250</td>
<td>0.250</td>
<td>0.250</td>
<td>0.125</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Gene Belcher</td>
<td>0.125</td>
<td>0.500</td>
<td>0.375</td>
<td>0.000</td>
<td>0.000</td>
<td>0.000</td>
<td>0.000</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Louise Belcher</td>
<td>0.000</td>
<td>0.000</td>
<td>0.000</td>
<td>0.125</td>
<td>0.500</td>
<td>0.250</td>
<td>0.125</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

**Bar plots by group**

Note that the bar plots don’t show the effect of the blocking variable.

library(lattice)

histogram(~ Likert.f | Instructor, 
data=Data, 
layout=c(1,5)  # columns and rows of individual plots)
Summarize data treating Likert scores as numeric

library(FSA)

Summarize(Likert ~ Instructor,
   data=Data,
   digits=3)

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Instructor</th>
<th>n</th>
<th>mean</th>
<th>sd</th>
<th>min</th>
<th>Q1</th>
<th>median</th>
<th>Q3</th>
<th>max</th>
<th>percZero</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>Bob Belcher</td>
<td>8</td>
<td>5.875</td>
<td>1.885</td>
<td>4</td>
<td>4.75</td>
<td>6</td>
<td>6.00</td>
<td>10</td>
<td>0</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Linda Belcher</td>
<td>8</td>
<td>8.000</td>
<td>1.195</td>
<td>6</td>
<td>7.75</td>
<td>8</td>
<td>8.25</td>
<td>10</td>
<td>0</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Tina Belcher</td>
<td>8</td>
<td>7.875</td>
<td>1.553</td>
<td>5</td>
<td>7.00</td>
<td>8</td>
<td>9.00</td>
<td>10</td>
<td>0</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Gene Belcher</td>
<td>8</td>
<td>5.250</td>
<td>0.707</td>
<td>4</td>
<td>5.00</td>
<td>5</td>
<td>6.00</td>
<td>6</td>
<td>0</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Louise Belcher</td>
<td>8</td>
<td>8.375</td>
<td>0.916</td>
<td>7</td>
<td>8.00</td>
<td>8</td>
<td>9.00</td>
<td>10</td>
<td>0</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>
**Quade test example**

This example uses the formula notation indicating that *Likert* is the dependent variable, *Instructor* is the independent variable, and *Rater* is the blocking variable. The `data=` option indicates the data frame that contains the variables. For the meaning of other options, see ?quade.test.

```r
quade.test(Likert ~ Instructor | Rater,
            data = Data)
```

Quade test

Quade $F = 8.0253$, num df = 4, denom df = 28, p-value = 0.0001924

**Post-hoc test: pairwise two-sample paired rank-sum test for multiple comparisons**

To prevent the inflation of type I error rates, adjustments to the $p$-values can be made using the `p.adjust.method` option. See ?p.adjust for details on available $p$-value adjustment methods.

Note that the data must be ordered by the blocking variable so that the first observation for *Bob* will be paired with the first observation for *Linda*, and so on.

```r
### Order groups by median

Data$Instructor = factor(Data$Instructor,
                          levels=c("Linda Belcher", "Louise Belcher",
                                    "Tina Belcher", "Bob Belcher",
                                    "Gene Belcher"))

Data

### Pairwise Mann–Whitney

PT = pairwise.wilcox.test(Data$Likert,
                           Data$Instructor,
                           p.adjust.method="fdr",
                           paired=TRUE)$p.value

# Adjusts p-values for multiple comparisons;
# See ?p.adjust for options

PT

### Convert PT to a full table and call it PT1

library(rcompanion)

PT1 = fullPTable(PT)

PT1
```

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Linda Belcher</th>
<th>Louise Belcher</th>
<th>Tina Belcher</th>
<th>Bob Belcher</th>
<th>Gene Belcher</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>Linda Belcher</td>
<td>1.00000000</td>
<td>0.61269120</td>
<td>0.85010674</td>
<td>0.05090808</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Louise Belcher</td>
<td>0.61269120</td>
<td>1.00000000</td>
<td>0.47198578</td>
<td>0.05090808</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

277
# Produce compact letter display

```r
library(multcompView)
multcompLetters(PT1,
    compare="<",
    threshold=0.05,  # p-value to use as significance threshold
    Letters=letters,
    reversed = FALSE)
```

```
Linda Belcher Louise Belcher Tina Belcher Bob Belcher Gene Belcher
  "a"            "a"            "a"           "ab"            "b"
```

### Values sharing a letter are not significantly different

**Post-hoc test: Quade post-hoc test**

A different post-hoc test for the Quade test can be conducted with the `posthoc.quade.test` function in the `PMCMR` package. The output can be converted to a compact letter display using the `multcompLetters` function in the `multcompView` package.

```r
### Order groups by median

Data$Instructor = factor(Data$Instructor,
    levels=c("Linda Belcher", "Louise Belcher",
    "Tina Belcher", "Bob Belcher",
    "Gene Belcher"))

Data
```

### Post-hoc test

```r
library(PMCMR)
PT = posthoc.quade.test(y = Data$Likert,
    groups = Data$Instructor,
    blocks = Data$Rater,
    p.adjust.method="fdr")  # Adjusts p-values for multiple comparisons;
    # See ?p.adjust for options

PT
```

```
Pairwise comparisons using posthoc-Quade test with TDist approximation

Linda Belcher Louise Belcher Tina Belcher Bob Belcher
Louise Belcher 0.00902 - - -
Tina Belcher 0.04533 0.50547 - -
```

---

**Summary and Analysis of Extension Education Program Evaluation in R**

Tina Belcher      0.85010674     0.47198578   1.00000000  0.05090808   0.04637053
Bob Belcher       0.05090808     0.05090808   0.05090808  1.00000000   0.65530421
Gene Belcher      0.04637053     0.04637053   0.04637053  0.65530421 1.00000000
The Scheirer–Ray–Hare test is a nonparametric test used for a two-way factorial design. It appears to be not well documented nor well-regarded. In my experience, the Scheirer–Ray–Hare test is less likely to find the interaction effect significant than would an ordinary least squares analysis of variance.

It has been suggested that the observations should be balanced and that each cell in the interaction should have at least five observations.

### Appropriate data
- Two-way data arranged in a factorial design
- Dependent variable is ordinal, interval, or ratio
- There are two treatment or group independent variables. Each is a factor with two or more levels
- Observations are independent. That is, they are not paired or repeated measures
Post-hoc tests
Appropriate post-hoc tests might be Dunn test or pairwise Mann–Whitney tests for each significant factor or interaction.

Packages used in this chapter

The packages used in this chapter include:
- rcompanion
- FSA

The following commands will install these packages if they are not already installed:

```r
if(!require(rcompanion)){install.packages("rcompanion")}
if(!require(FSA)){install.packages("FSA")}
```

Scheirer–Ray–Hare test examples

**Midichlorians example**

```r
### Assemble the data

Location = c(rep("Olympia" , 6), rep("Ventura", 6),
             rep("Northampton", 6), rep("Burlington", 6))

Tribe = c(rep(c("Jedi", "Sith"), 12))

Midichlorians = c(10, 4, 12, 5, 15, 4, 15, 9, 15, 11, 18, 12,
                   8, 13, 8, 15, 10, 17, 22, 22, 20, 22, 20, 25)

Data = data.frame(Tribe, Location, Midichlorians)

str(Data)

### Scheirer–Ray–Hare test

library(rcompanion)

scheirerRayHare(Midichlorians ~ Tribe + Location,
                 data = Data)
```

```
DV:  Midichlorians
Observations:  24
D:  0.9917391
MS total:  50

Df  Sum Sq    H p.value
Tribe      1  8.17 0.1647 0.68487
Location   3 746.58 15.0560 0.00177
Tribe:Location  3 315.58  6.3642 0.09517
Residuals 16  70.17
```

280
### Post-hoc test

### Order groups by median

```r
Data$Location = factor(Data$Location,
                      levels=c("Burlington", "Ventura", "Northampton", "Olympia"))
levels(Data$Location)
```

### Dunn test

```r
library(FSA)

DT = dunnTest(Midichlorians ~ Location,
               data=Data,
               method="bh")  # Adjusts p-values for multiple comparisons;
               # See ?dunnTest for options

DT
```

### Compact letter display

```r
PT = DT$res

library(rcompanion)
cldList(P.adj ~ Comparison,
        data = PT,
        threshold = 0.05)
```

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Group</th>
<th>Letter</th>
<th>MonoLetter</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>1</td>
<td>Burlington</td>
<td>a</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>2</td>
<td>Northampton</td>
<td>b</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>3</td>
<td>Olympia</td>
<td>b</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>4</td>
<td>Ventura</td>
<td>b</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

Groups sharing a letter not significantly different (alpha = 0.05).

**Example from Sokal and Rohlf**

### Assemble the data

```r
Value = c(709,679,699,657,594,677,592,538,476,508,505,539)
Sex   = c(rep("Male",3), rep("Female",3), rep("Male",3), rep("Female",3))
Fat   = c(rep("Fresh", 6), rep("Rancid", 6))

Sokal = data.frame(Value, Sex, Fat)
```
### Scheirer–Ray–Hare test

```r
library(rcompanion)
scheirerRayHare(Value ~ Sex + Fat,
data=Sokal)
```

**DV:** Value  
**Observations:** 12  
**D:** 1  
**MS total:** 13

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th></th>
<th>Df</th>
<th>Sum Sq</th>
<th>H</th>
<th>p.value</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>Sex</td>
<td>1</td>
<td>8.333</td>
<td>0.641</td>
<td>0.42334</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Fat</td>
<td>1</td>
<td>108.000</td>
<td>8.307</td>
<td>0.00395</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Sex:Fat</td>
<td>1</td>
<td>5.333</td>
<td>0.410</td>
<td>0.52184</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Residuals</td>
<td>8</td>
<td>21.333</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

*Example from Real Statistics Using Excel*


```r
### Assemble the data

```r
Wheat = c(123,156,112,100,168,135,130,176,120,155,156,180,147,146,193)  
Corn = c(128,150,174,116,109,175,132,120,187,184,186,138,178,176,190)  
Soy = c(166,178,187,153,195,140,145,159,131,126,185,206,188,165,188)  
Rice = c(151,125,117,155,158,167,183,142,167,168,175,173,154,191,169)  
Yield = c(Wheat, Corn, Soy, Rice)
```

```r
Fert = rep(c(rep("Blend X",5), rep("Blend Y",5), rep("Blend Z",5)),4)  
```

```r
Real.stats = data.frame(Yield, Fert, Crop)
```

```r
str(Real.stats)
```

```r
### Scheirer–Ray–Hare test

```r
library(rcompanion)
scheirerRayHare(Yield ~ Fert + Crop,
data=Real.stats)
```

**DV:** Yield  
**Observations:** 60  
**D:** 0.9997221  
**MS total:** 305
### Post-hoc test

### Order groups by median

```r
Real.stats$Fert = factor(Real.stats$Fert,
levels=c("Blend Z", "Blend Y", "Blend X"))
levels(Real.stats$Fert)
```

### Dunn test

```r
library(FSA)
DT = dunnTest(Yield ~ Fert,
data=Real.stats,
method="bh")  # Adjusts p-values for multiple comparisons;
# See ?dunnTest for options

DT
```

### Compact letter display

```r
PT = DT$res

library(rcompanion)
cldList(p.adj ~ Comparison,
data = PT,
threshold = 0.05)
```

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Group</th>
<th>Letter</th>
<th>MonoLetter</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>1</td>
<td>BlendX</td>
<td>a</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>2</td>
<td>BlendY</td>
<td>a</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>3</td>
<td>BlendZ</td>
<td>b</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

Groups sharing a letter not significantly different (alpha = 0.05).

**References**

Nonparametric Regression

There are different techniques that are considered to be forms of nonparametric regression. Kendall–Theil regression fits a linear model between one \( x \) variable and one \( y \) variable using a completely nonparametric approach. Quantile regression is a very flexible approach that can find a linear relationship between a dependent variable and one or more independent variables. Local regression fits a smooth curve to the dependent variable, and can accommodate multiple independent variables. Generalized additive models are a powerful and flexible approach.

Packages used in this chapter

The packages used in this chapter include:
- psych
- mblm
- quantreg
- rcompanion
- mgcv
- lmtest

The following commands will install these packages if they are not already installed:

```r
if(!require(psych)){install.packages("psych")}
if(!require(mblm)){install.packages("mblm")}
if(!require(quantreg)){install.packages("quantreg")}
if(!require(rcompanion)){install.packages("rcompanion")}
if(!require(mgcv)){install.packages("mgcv")}
if(!require(lmtest)){install.packages("lmtest")}
```

Nonparametric correlation

Nonparametric correlation is discussed in the chapter *Correlation and Linear Regression*.

Nonparametric regression examples

Data for the examples in this chapter are borrowed from the *Correlation and Linear Regression* chapter. In this hypothetical example, students were surveyed for their weight, daily caloric intake, daily sodium intake, and a score on an assessment of knowledge gain.

```
Input = ("Instructor       Grade   Weight  Calories Sodium  Score
'Brendon Small'     6      43     2069    1287      77
'Brendon Small'     6      41     1990    1164      76
'Brendon Small'     6      40     1975    1177      76
'Brendon Small'     6      44     2116    1262      84
'Brendon Small'     6      45     2161    1271      86
'Brendon Small'     6      44     2091    1222      87
```

284
'Brendon Small'  6  48  2236  1377  90
'Brendon Small'  6  47  2198  1288  78
'Brendon Small'  6  46  2190  1284  89
'Jason Penopolis'  7  45  2134  1262  76
'Jason Penopolis'  7  45  2128  1281  80
'Jason Penopolis'  7  46  2190  1305  84
'Jason Penopolis'  7  43  2070  1199  68
'Jason Penopolis'  7  48  2266  1368  85
'Jason Penopolis'  7  47  2216  1340  76
'Jason Penopolis'  7  47  2203  1273  69
'Jason Penopolis'  7  43  2190  1305  84
'Melissa Robins'  8  48  2265  1361  67
'Melissa Robins'  8  46  2184  1268  68
'Melissa Robins'  8  53  2441  1380  66
'Melissa Robins'  8  48  2234  1386  65
'Melissa Robins'  8  52  2403  1408  70
'Melissa Robins'  8  53  2438  1380  83
'Melissa Robins'  8  52  2360  1378  74
'Melissa Robins'  8  51  2344  1413  65
'Melissa Robins'  8  51  2351  1400  68
'Paula Small'  9  52  2390  1412  78
'Paula Small'  9  54  2470  1422  62
'Paula Small'  9  49  2280  1382  61
'Paula Small'  9  50  2308  1410  72
'Paula Small'  9  55  2505  1410  80
'Paula Small'  9  52  2409  1382  60
'Paula Small'  9  53  2431  1422  70
'Paula Small'  9  56  2523  1388  79
'Paula Small'  9  50  2315  1404  71
'Coach McGuirk'  10  52  2406  1420  68
'Coach McGuirk'  10  58  2699  1405  65
'Coach McGuirk'  10  57  2571  1400  64
'Coach McGuirk'  10  52  2394  1420  69
'Coach McGuirk'  10  55  2518  1379  70
'Coach McGuirk'  10  52  2379  1393  61
'Coach McGuirk'  10  59  2636  1417  70
'Coach McGuirk'  10  54  2465  1414  59
'Coach McGuirk'  10  54  2479  1383  61

Data = read.table(textConnection(Input),header=TRUE)

###  Order factors by the order in data frame
###  Otherwise, R will alphabetize them

Data$Instructor = factor(Data$Instructor,
levels=unique(Data$Instructor))

###  Check the data frame

library(psych)

headTail(Data)
Kendall–Theil Sen Siegel nonparametric linear regression

Kendall–Theil regression is a completely nonparametric approach to linear regression where there is one independent and one dependent variable. It is robust to outliers in the dependent variable. It simply computes all the lines between each pair of points, and uses the median of the slopes of these lines. This method is sometimes called Theil–Sen. A modified, and preferred, method is named after Siegel.

The method yields a slope and intercept for the fit line, and a p-value for the slope can be determined as well. Typically, no measure analogous to $r$-squared is reported.

The `mblm` function in the `mblm` package uses the Siegel method by default. The Theil–Sen procedure can be chosen with the `repeated=FALSE` option. See `library(mblm); ?mblm` for more details.

```r
library(mblm)
model.k = mblm(Calories ~ Sodium,
data=Data)
summary(model.k)
```

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Coefficients:</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>Estimate MAD V value Pr(&gt;</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>(Intercept) -208.5875 608.4540 230 0.000861 ***</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Sodium 1.8562 0.4381 1035 5.68e-14 ***</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

### Values under Estimate are used to determine the fit line.
### MAD is the median absolute deviation, a robust measure of variability

**Plot with statistics**

```r
plot(Calories ~ Sodium,
data = Data,
pch  = 16)
abline(model.k,
   col="blue",
lwd=2)
Pvalue = as.numeric(summary(model.k)$coefficients[2,4])
```
Quantile regression

While traditional linear regression models the conditional mean of the dependent variable, quantile regression models the conditional median or other quantile. Medians are most common, but for example, if the factors predicting the highest values of the dependent variable are to be investigated, a 95th percentile could be used. Likewise, models for several quantiles, e.g. 25th, 50th, 75th percentiles, could be investigated simultaneously.

Quantile regression makes no assumptions about the distribution of the underlying data, and is robust to outliers in the dependent variable. It does assume the dependent variable is continuous. However, there are functions for other types of dependent variables in the qtools package. The model assumes that the terms are linearly related. Quantile regression is sometimes considered “semiparametric”.

Quantile regression is very flexible in the number and types of independent variables that can be added to the model. The example, here, however, confines itself to a simple case with one independent variable and one dependent variable.

This example models the median of dependent variable, which is indicated with the $\tau = 0.5$ option.
A \( p \)-value for the model can be found by using the \textit{anova} function with the fit model and the null model. A pseudo \( R\)-squared value can be found with the \textit{nagelkerke} function in the \textit{rcompanion} package.

\begin{verbatim}
library(quantreg)

model.q = rq(Calories ~ Sodium, 
              data = Data, 
              tau = 0.5)

summary(model.q)

tau: [1] 0.5

Coefficients:
  coefficients lower bd   upper bd
(Intercept) -84.12409 -226.58102  134.91738
Sodium         1.76642      1.59035    1.89615

### Values under Coefficients are used to determine the fit line.
### bd appears to be a confidence interval for the coefficients

model.null = rq(Calories ~ 1, 
               data = Data, 
               tau = 0.5)

anova(model.q, model.null)

Quantile Regression Analysis of Deviance Table

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Df</th>
<th>Resid Df</th>
<th>F value</th>
<th>Pr(&gt;F)</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>1</td>
<td>43</td>
<td>187.82</td>
<td>&lt; 2.2e-16 ***</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

### p-value for model overall

library(rcompanion)

nagelkerke(model.q)

$Pseudo.R.squared.for.model.vs.null

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Pseudo.R.squared</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>McFadden</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Cox and Snell (ML)</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Nagelkerke (Cragg and Uhler)</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

\textbf{Plot with statistics}

plot(Calories ~ Sodium, 
     data = Data, 
     pch = 16)
\end{verbatim}
Local regression

There are several techniques for local regression. The idea is to fit a curve to data by averaging, or otherwise summarizing, data points that are next to one another. The amount of “wiggliness” of the curve can be adjusted.

Local regression is useful for investigating the behavior of the response variable in more detail than would be possible with a simple linear model.

The function `loess` in the native `stats` package can be used for one continuous dependent variable and up to four independent variables. The process is essentially nonparametric, and is robust to outliers in
the dependent variable. Usually no \textit{p}-value or \textit{r}-\textit{squared} are reported. Integer variables have to coerced to numeric variables.

The plot below shows a basically linear response, but also shows an increase in \textit{Calories} at the upper end of \textit{Sodium}.

```r
Data$Sodium = as.numeric(Data$Sodium)

model.l = loess(Calories ~ Sodium, 
data = Data, 
span = 0.75, # higher numbers for smoother fits
degree=2, # use polynomials of order 2
family="gaussian") # the default, use least squares to fit

summary(model.l)

Number of Observations: 45
Equivalent Number of Parameters: 4.19
Residual Standard Error: 91.97

Plot

library(rcompanion)

plotPredy(data = Data, 
x = Sodium, 
y = Calories, 
model = model.l, 
xlab = "Calories per day", 
ylab = "Sodium intake per day")
```

![Plot](image-url)
Generalized additive models

Generalized additive models are very flexible, allowing for a variety of types of independent variables and of dependent variables. A smoother function is often used to create a “wiggly” model analogous to that used in local regression. The `gam` function in the `mgcv` package uses smooth functions plus a conventional parametric component, and so would probably be classified as a semiparametric approach. The `summary` function reports an R-squared value, and p-values for the terms. The `anova` function can be used for one model, or to compare two models.

```r
library(mgcv)

model.g = gam(Calories ~ s(Sodium),
               data = Data,
               family=gaussian())

summary(model.g)

  Parametric coefficients:
     Estimate Std. Error t value Pr(>|t|)
(Intercept) 2304.87      13.62   169.2   <2e-16 ***

  Approximate significance of smooth terms:
                       edf Ref.df      F p-value
s(Sodium) 1.347  1.613 66.65 4.09e-15 ***

  R-sq.(adj) =  0.718   Deviance explained = 72.6%
  GCV = 8811.5  Scale est. = 8352      n = 45

model.null = gam(Calories ~ 1,
                 data = Data,
                 family=gaussian())

anova(model.g,
       model.null)

Analysis of Deviance Table

Model 1: Calories ~ s(Sodium)
Model 2: Calories ~ 1

 Resid. Df Resid. Dev     Df Deviance
 1    42.387      356242
 2    44.000    1301377 -1.6132   -945135

library(lmtest)

lrtest(model.g,
       model.null)
```
Likelihood ratio test

Model 1: Calories ~ s(Sodium)
Model 2: Calories ~ 1

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th></th>
<th>Df</th>
<th>LogLik</th>
<th>Chisq</th>
<th>Pr(&gt;Chisq)</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>1</td>
<td>3.346 6</td>
<td>-265.83</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>2</td>
<td>2.000 0</td>
<td>-294.98</td>
<td>-1.3466</td>
<td>58.301 2.25e-14 ***</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

Plot with statistics

```r
library(rcompanion)
plotPredy(data = Data, 
  x = Sodium, 
  y = Calories, 
  model = model.g, 
  xlab = "Calories per day", 
  ylab = "Sodium intake per day")
```

Pvalue    = 2.25e-14
R2        = 0.718

```r
t1 = paste0("p-value: ", signif(Pvalue, digits=3))
t2 = paste0("R-squared (adj.): ", signif(R2, digits=3))

text(1160, 2600, labels = t1, pos=4)
text(1160, 2500, labels = t2, pos=4)
```

```r
library(rcompanion)
plotPredy(data = Data, 
  x = Sodium, 
  y = Calories, 
  model = model.g, 
  xlab = "Calories per day", 
  ylab = "Sodium intake per day")
```

Pvalue    = 2.25e-14
R2        = 0.718

```r
t1 = paste0("p-value: ", signif(Pvalue, digits=3))
t2 = paste0("R-squared (adj.): ", signif(R2, digits=3))

text(1160, 2600, labels = t1, pos=4)
text(1160, 2500, labels = t2, pos=4)
```

```r
library(rcompanion)
plotPredy(data = Data, 
  x = Sodium, 
  y = Calories, 
  model = model.g, 
  xlab = "Calories per day", 
  ylab = "Sodium intake per day")
```

Pvalue    = 2.25e-14
R2        = 0.718

```r
t1 = paste0("p-value: ", signif(Pvalue, digits=3))
t2 = paste0("R-squared (adj.): ", signif(R2, digits=3))

text(1160, 2600, labels = t1, pos=4)
text(1160, 2500, labels = t2, pos=4)
```

```r
library(rcompanion)
plotPredy(data = Data, 
  x = Sodium, 
  y = Calories, 
  model = model.g, 
  xlab = "Calories per day", 
  ylab = "Sodium intake per day")
```

Pvalue    = 2.25e-14
R2        = 0.718

```r
t1 = paste0("p-value: ", signif(Pvalue, digits=3))
t2 = paste0("R-squared (adj.): ", signif(R2, digits=3))

text(1160, 2600, labels = t1, pos=4)
text(1160, 2500, labels = t2, pos=4)
```

### Note that the fit line is slightly curved.
Nonparametric Regression for Time Series

There are specific nonparametric techniques that are commonly used for time series data. The Mann–Kendall trend test is commonly used to determine if a trend exists, and can handle seasonal patterns within the data. The slope of the trend is often determined with Sen’s slope, which can also handle seasonality in the data. Finally, Pettitt’s test is use to determine if there is a point at which the values in the data change.

It is my understanding that the tests in this chapter do not take into consideration any autocorrelation in the data. Autocorrelation would be for example if an observation with a high value would tend to be followed by another observation with a high value. For the stage data in this chapter, since the stage of a tidal river is affected by the phase of the moon and by the direction and strength of the wind, it would be reasonable to assume that the average stage for one day would be correlated to the previous day. Due to this limitation in these tests, there are two conditions under which these they are usually used. 1) When the observations are far enough apart in time that autocorrelation is unlikely to be important. For example, in the stage data in this chapter, monthly averages are used. 2) When the values are likely to be influenced mostly by non-autocorrelated factors. For data where autocorrelation is likely to be important, other models, such as autoregressive integrated moving average (ARIMA), could be used.

Packages used in this chapter

The packages used in this chapter include:
  • mice
  • Kendall
  • trend

The following commands will install these packages if they are not already installed:

```r
if(!require(mice)){install.packages("mice")}
if(!require(Kendall)){install.packages("Kendall")}
if(!require(trend)){install.packages("trend")}
```

Nonparametric regression examples

The data used in this chapter is a times series of stage measurements of the tidal Cohansay River in Greenwich, NJ. Stage is the height of the river, in this case given in feet, with an arbitrary 0 datum. The data are from U.S. Geology Survey site 01413038, and are monthly averages.

The MannKendall and SeasonalMannKendall functions can handle missing data. However, the sens.slope, sea.sens.slope, decompose, and stl functions, at the time of writing, cannot handle missing data.

Because the data set has a few missing data points, we will impute those values with the mice function in the mice package.
The function `ts` converts data into a time series object. The user needs to be careful using this function, since it does not check for missing lines in the data. For example, if there is no observation for February, the function will simply take the March the value for February and continue. However, one could add an observation for February with a value of `NA`.

```r
Greenwich = read.table("http://rcompanion.org/documents/Greenwich.csv", header=TRUE, sep="",)
Greenwich[125:136,]
```

```
   Agency Station Parameter TS_ID Year Month Stage
125  USGS 1413038       65 97255 2010    11  0.107
126  USGS 1413038       65 97255 2010    12 -0.297
127  USGS 1413038       65 97255 2011     1  -0.350
128  USGS 1413038       65 97255 2011     2 NA
129  USGS 1413038       65 97255 2011     3 NA
130  USGS 1413038       65 97255 2011     4 NA
131  USGS 1413038       65 97255 2011     5 NA
132  USGS 1413038       65 97255 2011     6 NA
133  USGS 1413038       65 97255 2011     7 NA
134  USGS 1413038       65 97255 2011     8  0.347
135  USGS 1413038       65 97255 2011     9  0.738
136  USGS 1413038       65 97255 2011    10  0.499
library(mice)
Mousey = mice(Greenwich)
Greenwich = complete(Mousey)
```

```
Greenwich[125:136,]
```

```
   Agency Station Parameter TS_ID Year Month Stage
125  USGS 1413038       65 97255 2010    11  0.107
126  USGS 1413038       65 97255 2010    12 -0.297
127  USGS 1413038       65 97255 2011     1  -0.350
128  USGS 1413038       65 97255 2011     2  -0.076
129  USGS 1413038       65 97255 2011     3  0.176
130  USGS 1413038       65 97255 2011     4  -0.314
131  USGS 1413038       65 97255 2011     5  0.051
132  USGS 1413038       65 97255 2011     6  0.345
133  USGS 1413038       65 97255 2011     7  0.347
134  USGS 1413038       65 97255 2011     8  0.347
135  USGS 1413038       65 97255 2011     9  0.738
136  USGS 1413038       65 97255 2011    10  0.499
```

```
TS = ts(Greenwich$Stage, frequency=12, start=c(2000,4))
```
Decomposing time series objects

It is helpful to decompose time series data into seasonal and trend components. The `decompose` function in the native `stats` package uses “classical seasonal decomposition by moving averages”, and the `stl` function in the native `stats` package uses “seasonal decomposition of time series by loess”.

```
plot(decompose(TS))
```
Mann–Kendall trend test
The Mann–Kendall trend test is completely nonparametric. The MannKendall function in the Kendall package can be used with a time series object. The SeasonalMannKendall function performs the test while taking into account the seasonality of the data.

```r
library(Kendall)
MK = MannKendall(TS)
summary(MK)

Score = 1371, Var(Score) = 560382.3
denominator = 14524
tau = 0.0944, 2-sided pvalue = 0.067233

### tau is a measure of the strength of the trend
### p-value for trend is also shown
```

```r
library(Kendall)
SMK = SeasonalMannKendall(TS)
summary(SMK)

Score = 217, Var(Score) = 4227
denominator = 1133.499
tau = 0.191, 2-sided pvalue = 0.00084484

### tau is a measure of the strength of the trend
### p-value for trend is also shown
```

**Sen’s slope for time series data**

The sens.slope function in the trend package is used with a time series object. The sea.sens.slope function performs the test while taking into account the seasonality of the data.

```r
library(trend)
sens.slope(TS)

Sen's slope and intercept
slope: 0.001
95 percent confidence intervall for slope
0.002 -1e-04

intercept: -0.0475
nr. of observations: 171
```
library(trend)

sea.sens.slope(TS)

Seasonal Sen's slope and intercept
slope:  0.0175
intercept:  -1.6237
nr. of observations:  171

Pettitt's test for change in value

The `pettitt.test` function in the `trend` package identifies a point at which the values in the data change. The results here suggest that the stage values were higher after May 2009 than before.

library(trend)

pettitt.test(TS)

Pettitt's test for single change-point detection

K = 2453, p-value = 0.001526
alternative hypothesis: true change point is present in the series

sample estimates:
probable change point at tau
107

Greenwich[107,]

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Agency</th>
<th>Station</th>
<th>Parameter</th>
<th>TS_ID</th>
<th>Year</th>
<th>Month</th>
<th>Stage</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>107</td>
<td>USGS</td>
<td>1413038</td>
<td>65</td>
<td>97255</td>
<td>2009</td>
<td>-0.119</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>
Permutation tests are increasingly common tests to perform certain types of statistical analyses. They do not rely on assumptions about the distribution of the data, as some other tests do. They are therefore considered to be nonparametric tests. It is my understanding, however, that for certain tests—for example those testing a difference in means—that there are assumptions about the underlying data.

Permutation tests work by resampling the observed data many times in order to determine a p-value for the test. Recall that the p-value is defined as the probability of getting data as extreme as the observed data when the null hypothesis is true. If the data are shuffled many times in accordance with the null hypothesis being true, the number of cases with data as extreme as the observed data could be counted, and a p-value calculated.

The advantages of permutation tests are
- the lack of assumptions about the distribution of the underlying data,
- their flexibility in the kinds of data they can handle (nominal, ordinal, interval/ratio),
- and their being relatively straightforward to conduct and interpret.

The disadvantages of permutation tests are
- the limited complexity of designs they can handle
- the unfamiliarity with them for many readers.

**The coin package**
Permutation tests in this book will use the coin package, with either of two functions, independence_test and symmetry_test. This book will use permutation tests with ordinal dependent variables, but the coin package is able to handle nominal, ordinal, and interval/ratio data.

A few notes on using permutation tests:
- If the dependent variable is to be treated as an ordinal variable, it must be coded as an ordered factor variable in R. It does not need to have numerals for levels. For example it could have levels doctorate > masters > bachelors > associates > high.school. But also it could have the levels 5 > 4 > 3 > 2 > 1.

- The general interpretation for significant results of these models isn’t that there is a difference among medians, but that there is a significant effect of the independent variable on the dependent variable, or that there is a significant difference among groups.

- Post-hoc tests for factors or groups can be conducted with pairwise tests of groups. The appropriate functions in the rcompanion package are pairwisePermutationTest, pairwisePermutationMatrix, pairwisePermutationSymmetry, and pairwisePermutationSymmetryMatrix.

- Permutation tests for data arranged in contingency tables are presented in the Association Tests for Ordinal Tables chapter.
Packages used in this chapter

The packages used in this chapter include:

- coin

The following commands will install these packages if they are not already installed:

```r
if(!require(coin)){install.packages("coin")}
```

Permutation test example

The following example uses the left hand and right hand data from the *Independent and Paired Values* chapter. For this example, we are interested in comparing the length of left hands and rights from 16 individuals. First we will compare the left hands to right hands as independent samples (analogous to a Mann–Whitney test or t-test), then as paired values for each individual (analogous to a paired rank sum test or paired t-test).

```
Input = ("Individual Hand Length
A Left 17.5
B Left 18.4
C Left 16.2
D Left 14.5
E Left 13.5
F Left 18.9
G Left 19.5
H Left 21.1
I Left 17.8
J Left 16.8
K Left 18.4
L Left 17.3
M Left 18.9
N Left 16.4
O Left 17.5
P Left 15.0
A Right 17.6
B Right 18.5
C Right 15.9
D Right 14.9
E Right 13.7
F Right 18.9
G Right 19.5
H Right 21.5
I Right 18.5
J Right 17.1
K Right 18.9
L Right 17.5
M Right 19.5
N Right 16.5
O Right 17.4"
```
```r
P Right 15.6
"

Data = read.table(textConnection(Input), header=TRUE)
### Check the data frame
Data
str(Data)
summary(Data)

### Remove unnecessary objects
rm(Input)

### Summarize data
library(FSA)
Summarize(Length ~ Hand, 
data=Data, 
digits=3)

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Hand</th>
<th>n</th>
<th>nvalid</th>
<th>mean</th>
<th>sd</th>
<th>min</th>
<th>Q1</th>
<th>median</th>
<th>Q3</th>
<th>max</th>
<th>percZero</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>Left</td>
<td>16</td>
<td>16</td>
<td>17.356</td>
<td>1.948</td>
<td>13.5</td>
<td>16.35</td>
<td>17.50</td>
<td>18.52</td>
<td>21.1</td>
<td>0</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Right</td>
<td>16</td>
<td>16</td>
<td>17.594</td>
<td>1.972</td>
<td>13.7</td>
<td>16.35</td>
<td>17.55</td>
<td>18.90</td>
<td>21.5</td>
<td>0</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

**Box plot**

boxplot(Length ~ Hand, 
data=Data, 
ylab="Length, cm")

**Scatter plot with one-to-one line**

In the plot below, each point represents a pair of paired values. Points that fall above and to the left of the blue line indicate cases for which the value for Right was greater than for Left.
Permutation test of independence

This test treats the two groups (left hand and right hand) as independent samples, and tests if there is a difference in values between the two groups. The box plot above reflects the approach of this test.

```
library(coin)

independence_test(Length ~ Hand,
data = Data)
```

Asymptotic General Independence Test

\[ Z = -0.34768, \text{ p-value } = 0.7281 \]
Permutation test of symmetry
This test treats the two groups (left hand and right hand) as having paired or repeated data, paired within Individual. That is, the test looks at the difference between left hand and right hand for each individual. The scatter plot above reflects the approach of this test.

Note the use of the symmetry_test function.

```r
library(coin)

symmetry_test(Length ~ Hand | Individual,
            data = Data)

Asymptotic General Symmetry Test

Z = -2.6348, p-value = 0.008418
```

References
For more information on permutation tests and the coin package, see:


library(coin); help(package="coin")

One-way Permutation Test of Independence for Ordinal Data

When to use this test
A permutation test of independence can be used for one-way data with an ordinal dependent variable. It will determine if there is a difference in the response variable among groups. There can be two or more groups.

This test covers the designs used with Mann–Whitney, Kruskal–Wallis, two-sample t-test, one-way anova, one-way anova with blocks, and ordinal regression equivalents.

The test assumes that the observations are independent. That is, it is not appropriate for paired observations or repeated measures data. It does not make assumptions about the distribution of values.

The test is performed with the independence_test function in the coin package.
Post-hoc testing can be conducted with pairwise permutation tests across groups.

It is important that the dependent variable be specified as an ordered factor variable in R.

**Appropriate data**
- One-way data. That is, one measurement variable in two or more groups
- Dependent variable is ordinal, and specified in R as an ordered factor variable
- Independent variable is a factor with two or more levels. That is, two or more groups
- Observations between groups are independent. That is, not paired or repeated measures data

**Hypotheses**
- Null hypothesis: The values of the dependent variable among groups are equal.
- Alternative hypothesis (two-sided): The values of the dependent variable among groups are not equal.

**Interpretation**
- Reporting significant results for the omnibus test as “Significant differences were found among values for groups.” is acceptable. Alternatively, "A significant effect for Independent Variable on Dependent Variable was found.”
- Reporting significant results for mean separation post-hoc tests as “Value of Dependent Variable for group A was different than that for group B.” is acceptable.

**Other notes and alternative tests**

Ordinal regression is an alternative.

The traditional nonparametric tests Mann–Whitney U or Kruskal–Wallis are alternatives in cases where there is not a blocking variable.

**Packages used in this chapter**

The packages used in this chapter include:
- psych
- lattice
- FSA
- coin
- rcompanion
- multcompView
- ggplot2

The following commands will install these packages if they are not already installed:

```r
if(!require(psych)){install.packages("psych")}
if(!require(FSA)){install.packages("FSA")}
if(!require(lattice)){install.packages("lattice")}
if(!require(coin)){install.packages("coin")}
```
One-way ordinal permutation test example

This example re-visits the Pooh, Piglet, and Tigger data from the Descriptive Statistics with the likert Package chapter.

It answers the question, “Are the scores significantly different among the three speakers?”

Note that a new variable, Likert.f, is created for the Likert scores as an ordered factor variable. It is necessary that the dependent variable passed to independence_test be an ordered factor variable for it to be treated as an ordinal variable.

```r
Input =("Speaker  Likert
Pooh      3
Pooh      5
Pooh      4
Pooh      4
Pooh      4
Pooh      4
Pooh      4
Pooh      4
Pooh      5
Pooh      5
Piglet    2
Piglet    4
Piglet    2
Piglet    2
Piglet    1
Piglet    2
Piglet    3
Piglet    2
Piglet    2
Tigger    4
Tigger    4
Tigger    4
Tigger    4
Tigger    5
Tigger    3
Tigger    5
Tigger    4
Tigger    4
Tigger    3")
```

Data = read.table(textConnection(Input),header=TRUE)

### Order levels of the factor; otherwise R will alphabetize them
One-way Permutation Test of Independence for Ordinal Data

Summary and Analysis of Extension Education Program Evaluation in R

Data$Speaker = factor(Data$Speaker,
                      levels=unique(Data$Speaker))

### Create a new variable which is the likert scores as an ordered factor
Data$Likert.f = factor(Data$Likert,
                      ordered = TRUE)

### Check the data frame
library(psych)
headTail(Data)
str(Data)
summary(Data)

### Remove unnecessary objects
rm(Input)

Summarize data treating Likert scores as factors
Note that the variable we want to count is Likert.f, which is a factor variable. Counts for Likert.f are cross tabulated over values of Speaker. The prop.table function translates a table into proportions. The margin=1 option indicates that the proportions are calculated for each row.

xtabs(~ Speaker + Likert.f,
data = Data)

            Likert.f
Speaker  1 2 3 4 5
Pooh     0 0 1 6 3
Piglet   1 6 2 1 0
Tigger   0 0 2 6 2

XT = xtabs(~ Speaker + Likert.f,
data = Data)

prop.table(XT,
           margin = 1)

            Likert.f
Speaker  1 2 3 4 5
Pooh     0.0 0.0 0.1 0.6 0.3
Piglet   0.1 0.6 0.2 0.1 0.0
Tigger   0.0 0.0 0.2 0.6 0.2
Bar plots by group
Note that the variable we want to count is Likert.f, which is a factor variable. Counts for Likert.f are presented for values of Speaker.

```r
library(lattice)

histogram(~ Likert.f | Speaker,
data=Data,
layout=c(1,3))  # columns and rows of individual plots
```

Summarize data treating Likert scores as numeric
It may be useful to look at the minimum, first quartile, median, third quartile, and maximum for Likert for each group.

```r
library(FSA)

Summarize(Likert ~ Speaker,
data=Data,
digits=3)
```

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Speaker</th>
<th>n</th>
<th>mean</th>
<th>sd</th>
<th>min</th>
<th>Q1</th>
<th>median</th>
<th>Q3</th>
<th>max</th>
<th>percZero</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>Pooh</td>
<td>10</td>
<td>4.2</td>
<td>0.632</td>
<td>3</td>
<td>4</td>
<td>4.75</td>
<td>5</td>
<td>0</td>
<td>0</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Piglet</td>
<td>10</td>
<td>2.3</td>
<td>0.823</td>
<td>1</td>
<td>2</td>
<td>2.75</td>
<td>4</td>
<td>0</td>
<td>0</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Tigger</td>
<td>10</td>
<td>4.0</td>
<td>0.667</td>
<td>3</td>
<td>4</td>
<td>4.00</td>
<td>5</td>
<td>0</td>
<td>0</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>
One-way ordinal permutation test

Note that the dependent variable is an ordered factor variable, *Likert.f*. *Speaker* is the independent variable. The `data=` option indicates the data frame that contains the variables. For the meaning of other options, see `library(coin); ?independence_test`. There is the option of adding a blocking variable to the formula with e.g. `/ Block`.

```r
library(coin)

independence_test(Likert.f ~ Speaker,
                 data = Data)

Asymptotic General Independence Test

maxT = 4.2006, p-value = 7.685e-05
```

Post-hoc test: pairwise permutation tests

If the independence test is significant, a post-hoc analysis can be performed to determine which groups differ from which other groups.

The `pairwisePermutationTest` and `pairwisePermutationMatrix` functions in the `rcompanion` package conduct permutation tests across groups in a pairwise manner. See `library(rcompanion); ?pairwisePermutationTest` for further details.

Because the post-hoc test will produce multiple p-values, adjustments to the p-values can be made to avoid inflating the possibility of making a type-I error. Here, the method of adjustment is indicated with the `method` option. There are a variety of methods for controlling the familywise error rate or for controlling the false discovery rate. See `?p.adjust` for details on these methods.

Before conducting the pairwise tests, we will re-order the levels of the grouping variable by the median of each group. This makes interpretation of the pairwise comparisons and compact letter display easier. In the output, groups sharing a same letter are not significantly different.

Table output and compact letter display

```r
### Order groups by median

Data$Speaker = factor(Data$Speaker,
                       levels=c("Pooh", "Tigger", "Piglet"))

### Pairwise permutation tests

library(rcompanion)

PT = pairwisePermutationTest(Likert.f ~ Speaker,
                             data = Data,
                             method = "fdr")

PT

Comparison Stat   p.value p.adjust
```
### Compact letter display

```r
library(rcompanion)
cldList(p.adjust ~ Comparison,
data = PT,
threshold = 0.05)
```

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Group</th>
<th>Letter</th>
<th>MonoLetter</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>1 Pooh</td>
<td>a</td>
<td>a</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>2 Tigger</td>
<td>a</td>
<td>a</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>3 Piglet</td>
<td>b</td>
<td>b</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

Groups sharing a letter are not significantly different (alpha = 0.05).

---

**Matrix output and compact letter display**

The code creates a matrix of *p*-values called `PM`, which is then passed to the `multcompLetters` function to be converted to a compact letter display.

Here the *fdr* *p*-value adjustment method is used. See `?p.adjust` for details on available methods.

```r
### Order groups by median
Data$Speaker = factor(Data$Speaker, levels=c("Pooh", "Tigger", "Piglet"))

### Conduct pairwise permutation tests
library(rcompanion)
PM = pairwisePermutationMatrix(Likert.f ~ Speaker, data = Data, method = "fdr")$Adjusted

### Produce compact letter display
library(multcompView)
multcompLetters(PM, compare="<", threshold=0.05, Letters=letters, reversed = FALSE)
```

Pooh Tigger Piglet
Groups sharing a letter are not significantly different (alpha = 0.05).

**Plot of medians and confidence intervals**
The following code uses the `groupwiseMedian` function to produce a data frame of medians for each speaker along with the 95% confidence intervals for each median with the percentile method. See `library(rcompanion); ?groupwiseMedian` for further options.

These medians are then plotted, with their confidence intervals shown as error bars. The grouping letters from the multiple comparisons are added.

```r
### Order groups by original order
Data$Speaker = factor(Data$Speaker, 
  levels=c("Pooh", "Piglet", "Tigger"))

### Create data frame of medians and confidence intervals
library(rcompanion)
Sum = groupwiseMedian(
  Likert ~ Speaker, 
  data = Data, 
  conf = 0.95, 
  R = 5000, 
  percentile = TRUE, 
  bca = FALSE,
  digits = 3)

### Prepare labels
X = 1:3
Y = Sum$Percentile.upper + 0.2
Label = c("a", "b", "a")

### Plot
library(ggplot2)
ggplot(Sum, 
  aes(x = Speaker, 
       y = Median)) +
  geom_errorbar(aes(ymin = Percentile.lower, 
                      ymax = Percentile.upper),
                width = 0.05, 
                size = 0.5) +
```

"a"    "a"    "b"
Comparison of methods for independence tests for ordinal data

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Data</th>
<th>Test</th>
<th>p-value</th>
<th>Mean separation</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>Pooh Piglet</td>
<td>Permutation</td>
<td>0.0004</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Pooh Piglet</td>
<td>Ordinal regression</td>
<td>0.00003</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Pooh Piglet</td>
<td>Mann–Whitney</td>
<td>0.0005</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Pooh Tigger Piglet</td>
<td>Permutation</td>
<td>0.00008</td>
<td>a a b</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Pooh Tigger Piglet</td>
<td>Ordinal regression</td>
<td>0.000008</td>
<td>a a b</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Pooh Tigger Piglet</td>
<td>Kruskal–Wallis</td>
<td>0.0002</td>
<td>a a b</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>
One-way Permutation Test of Symmetry for Paired Ordinal Data

When to use this test

A permutation test of symmetry can be used for one-way data with an ordinal dependent variable where observations are paired within a blocking variable. It will determine if there is a difference in the response variable among groups when controlling for the effect of the blocking variable. There can be two or more groups.

The coin package can accommodate designs used with Friedman, Quade, paired t-test, repeated measures one-way anova, and ordinal regression equivalents.

The test does not make assumptions about the distribution of values.

The test is performed with the symmetry_test function in the coin package.

Post-hoc testing can be conducted with pairwise permutation tests across groups.

It is important that the dependent variable be specified as an ordered factor variable in R, if it is to be treated as an ordinal variable.

Appropriate data

- One-way data plus a blocking variable. That is, one measurement variable in two or more groups, where observations are paired within levels of a blocking variable
- Dependent variable is ordinal, and specified in R as an ordered factor variable
- Independent variable is a factor with two or more levels. That is, two or more groups. The blocking variable is also a factor variable
- The data is arranged in a complete block design, with one or more observations per cell

Hypotheses

- Null hypothesis: The response of the dependent variable among groups are equal.
- Alternative hypothesis (two-sided): The response of the dependent variable among groups are not equal.

Interpretation

- Reporting significant results for the omnibus test as “Significant differences were found in the response among groups.” is acceptable. Alternatively, “A significant effect for Independent Variable on Dependent Variable was found when controlling for the effect of Blocking Variable.”
- Reporting significant results for mean separation post-hoc tests as “Response of Dependent Variable for group A was different than that for group B.” is acceptable.
Other notes and alternative tests

Ordinal regression is an alternative.

The traditional nonparametric tests Friedman, Quade, Paired rank-sum test, or Sign test may be alternatives depending on the design of the experiment.

Packages used in this chapter

The packages used in this chapter include:

- psych
- lattice
- FSA
- coin
- rcompanion
- multcompView
- ggplot2

The following commands will install these packages if they are not already installed:

```r
if(!require(psych)){install.packages("psych")}
if(!require(FSA)){install.packages("FSA")}
if(!require(lattice)){install.packages("lattice")}
if(!require(coin)){install.packages("coin")}
if(!require(rcompanion)){install.packages("rcompanion")}
if(!require(multcompView)){install.packages("multcompView")}
if(!require(ggplot2)){install.packages("ggplot2")}
```

One-way ordinal permutation test of symmetry example

This example re-visits the Belcher data from the Friedman Test chapter. Note that each instructor is rated by each of eight raters. Because of this, we want to stratify the responses by Rater.

It answers the question, “Are the scores significantly different among the five speakers when controlling for the effect of the different raters?”

Note that a new variable, Likert.f, is created for the Likert scores as an ordered factor variable. It is necessary that the dependent variable passed to `symmetry_test` be an ordered factor variable for it to be treated as an ordinal variable.

```
Input =("Instructor Rater Likert
'Bob Belcher' a 4
'Bob Belcher' b 5
'Bob Belcher' c 4
'Bob Belcher' d 6
'Bob Belcher' e 6
'Bob Belcher' f 6
'Bob Belcher' g 10
```
`Bob Belcher' h 6
'Linda Belcher' a 8
'Linda Belcher' b 6
'Linda Belcher' c 8
'Linda Belcher' d 8
'Linda Belcher' e 8
'Linda Belcher' f 7
'Linda Belcher' g 10
'Linda Belcher' h 9
'Tina Belcher' a 7
'Tina Belcher' b 5
'Tina Belcher' c 7
'Tina Belcher' d 8
'Tina Belcher' e 8
'Tina Belcher' f 9
'Tina Belcher' g 10
'Tina Belcher' h 9
'Gene Belcher' a 6
'Gene Belcher' b 4
'Gene Belcher' c 5
'Gene Belcher' d 5
'Gene Belcher' e 6
'Gene Belcher' f 6
'Gene Belcher' g 5
'Gene Belcher' h 5
'Louise Belcher' a 8
'Louise Belcher' b 7
'Louise Belcher' c 8
'Louise Belcher' d 8
'Louise Belcher' e 9
'Louise Belcher' f 9
'Louise Belcher' g 8
'Louise Belcher' h 10``

```r
Data = read.table(textConnection(Input),header=TRUE)

### Order levels of the factor; otherwise R will alphabetize them
Data$Instructor = factor(Data$Instructor,
                        levels=unique(Data$Instructor))

### Create a new variable which is the likert scores as an ordered factor
Data$Likert.f = factor(Data$Likert,
                        ordered=TRUE)

### Check the data frame
library(psych)
headTail(Data)
```
### Remove unnecessary objects

```r
rm(Input)
```

---

### Summarize data treating Likert scores as factors

Note that the variable we want to count is `Likert.f`, which is a factor variable. Counts for `Likert.f` are cross tabulated over values of `Instructor`. The `prop.table` function translates a table into proportions. The `margin=1` option indicates that the proportions are calculated for each row.

```r
xtabs(~ Instructor + Likert.f, 
data = Data)
```

```
Instructor        4  5  6  7  8  9 10
Bob Belcher   2  1  4  0  0  0  1
Linda Belcher 0  0  1  4  1  1
Tina Belcher  0  1  0  2  2  2  1
Gene Belcher  1  4  3  0  0  0  0
Louise Belcher 0  0  0  1  4  2  1
```

```r
XT = xtabs(~ Instructor + Likert.f, 
data = Data)
```

```r
prop.table(XT, 
margin = 1)
```

```
Instructor        4 5 6 7 8 9 10
Bob Belcher   0.250 0.125 0.500 0.000 0.000 0.000 0.125
Linda Belcher 0.000 0.000 0.125 0.125 0.500 0.125 0.125
Tina Belcher  0.000 0.125 0.000 0.250 0.250 0.250 0.125
Gene Belcher  0.125 0.500 0.375 0.000 0.000 0.000 0.000
Louise Belcher 0.000 0.000 0.000 0.125 0.500 0.250 0.125
```

#### Bar plots by group

Note that the variable we want to count is `Likert.f`, which is a factor variable. Counts for `Likert.f` are presented for values of `Speaker`. Also note that the bar plots don't show the effect of the blocking variable.

```r
library(lattice)

histogram(~ Likert.f | Instructor, 
data=Data,
```

---

315
Summarize data treating Likert scores as numeric
It may be useful to look at the minimum, first quartile, median, third quartile, and maximum for Likert for each group.

library(FSA)

Summarize(Likert ~ Instructor,
data=Data,
digits=3)

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Instructor</th>
<th>n</th>
<th>mean</th>
<th>sd</th>
<th>min</th>
<th>Q1</th>
<th>median</th>
<th>Q3</th>
<th>max</th>
<th>percZero</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>Bob Belcher</td>
<td>8</td>
<td>5.875</td>
<td>1.885</td>
<td>4</td>
<td>4.75</td>
<td>6.00</td>
<td>6</td>
<td>10</td>
<td>0</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Linda Belcher</td>
<td>8</td>
<td>8.000</td>
<td>1.195</td>
<td>6</td>
<td>7.75</td>
<td>8.25</td>
<td>8</td>
<td>10</td>
<td>0</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Tina Belcher</td>
<td>8</td>
<td>7.875</td>
<td>1.553</td>
<td>5</td>
<td>7.00</td>
<td>8.00</td>
<td>9</td>
<td>10</td>
<td>0</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Gene Belcher</td>
<td>8</td>
<td>5.250</td>
<td>0.707</td>
<td>4</td>
<td>5.00</td>
<td>6.00</td>
<td>6</td>
<td></td>
<td>0</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Louise Belcher</td>
<td>8</td>
<td>8.375</td>
<td>0.916</td>
<td>7</td>
<td>8.00</td>
<td>9.00</td>
<td>10</td>
<td>0</td>
<td>0</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>
**Permutation symmetry test**

Note that the dependent variable is an ordered factor variable, \textit{Likert.f}. \textit{Instructor} is the independent variable, and \textit{Rater} is the blocking variable. The \textit{data=} option indicates the data frame that contains the variables. For the meaning of other options, see \textit{library(coin)}; \textit{?symmetry_test}.

```r
library(coin)

symmetry_test(Likert.f ~ Instructor | Rater, 
data = Data)

Asymptotic General Symmetry Test

maxT = 3.4036, p-value = 0.003416
```

**Post-hoc test: pairwise permutation tests**

If the symmetry test is significant, a post-hoc analysis can be performed to determine which groups differ from which other groups.

The \texttt{pairwisePermutationSymmetry} and \texttt{pairwisePermutationSymmetryMatrix} functions in the \texttt{rcompanion} package conduct permutation tests across groups in a pairwise manner. See \textit{library(rcompanion)}; \textit{?pairwisePermutationSymmetry} for further details.

Because the post-hoc test will produce multiple \textit{p}-values, adjustments to the \textit{p}-values can be made to avoid inflating the possibility of making a type-I error. Here, the method of adjustment is indicated with the \textit{method} option. There are a variety of methods for controlling the familywise error rate or for controlling the false discovery rate. See \textit{?p.adjust} for details on these methods.

Before conducting the pairwise tests, we will re-order the levels of the grouping variable by the median of each group. This makes interpretation of the pairwise comparisons and compact letter display easier.

**Table output and compact letter display**

```r
### Order groups by median

Data$Instructor = factor(Data$Instructor, 
levels = c("Linda Belcher", "Louise Belcher", 
"Tina Belcher", "Bob Belcher", 
"Gene Belcher"))

### Pairwise permutation tests

library(rcompanion)

PT = pairwisePermutationSymmetry(Likert.f ~ Instructor | Rater, 
data = Data, 
method = "fdr")

PT
```
### Compact letter display

```r
library(rcompanion)

cldList(p.adjust ~ Comparison, 
  data = PT, 
  threshold = 0.05)
```

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Group</th>
<th>Letter</th>
<th>MonoLetter</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>Linda Belcher</td>
<td>a</td>
<td>a</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Louise Belcher</td>
<td>a</td>
<td>a</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Tina Belcher</td>
<td>a</td>
<td>a</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Bob Belcher</td>
<td>b</td>
<td>b</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Gene Belcher</td>
<td>b</td>
<td>b</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

Groups sharing a letter are not significantly different (alpha = 0.05).

### Matrix output and compact letter display

A compact letter display condenses a table of p-values into a simpler format. In the output, groups sharing a same letter are not significantly different. Compact letter displays are a clear and succinct way to present results of multiple comparisons.

Here the fdr p-value adjustment method is used. See `?p.adjust` for details on available methods.

The code creates a matrix of p-values called `PM` which is then passed to the `multcompLetters` function to be converted to a compact letter display.

```r
### Order groups by median

Data$Instructor = factor(Data$Instructor, 
  levels = c("Linda Belcher", "Louise Belcher", 
             "Tina Belcher", "Bob Belcher", 
             "Gene Belcher"))
```

### Pairwise permutation tests
library(rcompanion)

PM = pairwisePermutationSymmetryMatrix(Likert.f ~ Instructor | Rater,  
data = Data,  
method = "fdr")

PM

# Produce compact letter display
library(multcompView)
multcompLetters(PM$Adjusted,  
compare="<",  
threshold=0.05,  
Letters=letters,  
reversed = FALSE)

Linda Belcher Louise Belcher Tina Belcher Bob Belcher Gene Belcher  
"a" "a" "a" "b" "b"

### Groups sharing a letter are not significantly different (alpha = 0.05).

**Plot of medians and confidence intervals**
The following code uses the `groupwiseMedian` function to produce a data frame of medians for each speaker along with the 95% confidence intervals for each median with the percentile method. See `library(rcompanion); ?groupwiseMedian` for further options.

These medians are then plotted, with their confidence intervals shown as error bars. The grouping letters from the multiple comparisons are added.

### Order groups by original order

Data$Instructor = factor(Data$Instructor,  
levels = c("Bob Belcher", "Linda Belcher", "Tina Belcher",  
"Gene Belcher", "Louise Belcher"))

### Create data frame of medians and confidence intervals

library(rcompanion)

Sum = groupwiseMedian(Likert ~ Instructor,  
data = Data,  
conf = 0.95,  
R = 5000,  
percentile = TRUE,  
bca = FALSE,  
digits = 3)

Sum
### Prepare labels

\[
X = 1:5
\]

\[
Y = \text{Sum}$\text{Percentile.upper} + 0.4
\]

\[
\text{Label} = c("b", "a", "a", "b", "a")
\]

### Plot

```r
library(ggplot2)

ggplot(Sum, aes(x = Instructor,
                y = Median)) + 
geom_errorbar(aes(ymin = Percentile.lower,
                  ymax = Percentile.upper),
                width = 0.05,
                size = 0.5) + 
geom_point(shape = 15,
            size = 4) + 
theme_bw() + 
theme(axis.title = element_text(face = "bold")) + 
ylab("Median Likert score") + 
annotate("text",
         x = X,
         y = Y,
         label = Label)
```
Comparison of methods for symmetry tests for ordinal data

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Data</th>
<th>Test</th>
<th>p-value</th>
<th>Mean separation</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>Pooh Time</td>
<td>Permutation symmetry</td>
<td>0.19</td>
<td>a a a a b b</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Pooh Time</td>
<td>Ordinal regression</td>
<td>0.002</td>
<td>a a a b b</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Pooh Time</td>
<td>Two-sample paired rank-sum</td>
<td>0.02</td>
<td>a a a a ab b</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Bob Belcher et al.</td>
<td>Permutation symmetry</td>
<td>0.003</td>
<td>a a a b b</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Bob Belcher et al.</td>
<td>Ordinal regression</td>
<td>0.00000009</td>
<td>a a a b b</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Bob Belcher et al.</td>
<td>Friedman (Conover)</td>
<td>0.0001</td>
<td>a a a b b</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Bob Belcher et al.</td>
<td>Quade (pairwise)</td>
<td>0.0002</td>
<td>a a a ab b</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>
Permutation Tests for Medians and Percentiles

Permutation tests can be used to compare medians or percentiles among groups. This is useful, for example, to compare the 25\textsuperscript{th} percentile or 75\textsuperscript{th} percentile among groups.

The examples presented here use the \texttt{percentileTest} function in the \texttt{rcompanion} package, which can compare only two groups. This approach may be more powerful than using Mood’s median test for medians. For more complicated models, quantile regression could be used.

The \texttt{percentileTest} function can also be used for means, variance, interquartile range, or proportion of observations less than a threshold value.

In general, there are not assumptions about the distributions of the data in the groups. Medians and percentiles are meaningful for ordinal or discrete data. If the data within groups is not symmetrical, means or variances may not be useful.

\textbf{Pairwise tests}

Pairwise tests across multiple groups can be conducted with the \texttt{pairwisePercentileTest} function.

\textbf{Confidence intervals for percentiles}

Confidence intervals for percentiles across groups can be determined with the \texttt{groupwisePercentile} function.

\textbf{Packages used in this chapter}

The packages used in this chapter include:

- \texttt{FSA}
- \texttt{ggplot2}
- \texttt{rcompanion}

The following commands will install these packages if they are not already installed:

\begin{verbatim}
if(!require(FSA)){install.packages("FSA")}
if(!require(ggplot2)){install.packages("ggplot2")}
if(!require(rcompanion)){install.packages("rcompanion")}
\end{verbatim}

\textbf{Examples}

The examples in this chapter will revisit the income data from the \textit{Choosing a Statistical Test} chapter, with the addition of data for a third town.

\begin{verbatim}
### Import and modify the data

twoTowns = read.table("http://rcompanion.org/documents/TwoTowns.csv", header=TRUE, sep="",")
\end{verbatim}
Town.A = TwoTowns$Income[TwoTowns$Town=="Town.A"]
Town.B = TwoTowns$Income[TwoTowns$Town=="Town.B"]
Town.C = TwoTowns$Income[TwoTowns$Town=="Town.B"] + 20000

ThreeTowns = data.frame(Town, Income)

str(ThreeTowns)

### Statistics by groups
library(FSA)
Summarize(Income ~ Town, data = ThreeTowns, digits = 3)

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Town</th>
<th>n</th>
<th>mean</th>
<th>sd</th>
<th>min</th>
<th>Q1</th>
<th>median</th>
<th>Q3</th>
<th>max</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>Town.A</td>
<td>101</td>
<td>48146.43</td>
<td>10851.67</td>
<td>23557</td>
<td>40971</td>
<td>48007</td>
<td>56421</td>
<td>77774</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Town.B</td>
<td>101</td>
<td>115275.22</td>
<td>163878.16</td>
<td>29050</td>
<td>34142</td>
<td>47223</td>
<td>108216</td>
<td>880027</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Town.C</td>
<td>101</td>
<td>135275.22</td>
<td>163878.16</td>
<td>49050</td>
<td>54142</td>
<td>67223</td>
<td>128216</td>
<td>900027</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

**Box plots**
library(ggplot2)

ggplot(ThreeTowns,
       aes(x = Town, y = Income)) +
  geom_boxplot() +
  coord_trans(y = "log10") +
  ylab("Income \n(y axis is log scaled)") +
xlab("Town")
Confidence intervals for percentiles

Note that the percentiles below match \(Q1\), median, and \(Q3\) above, respectively, except that they are rounded to three significant figures. The confidence limits are determined by bootstrap, so your values may differ from the values here.

```
library(rcompanion)

groupwisePercentile(Income ~ Town,
                      data = ThreeTowns,
                      tau  = 0.25,
                      R    = 1000)

 Town   n  tau Percentile Conf.level Bca.lower Bca.upper
    1 Town.A 101 0.25      41000       0.95     36000     43600
    2 Town.B 101 0.25      34100       0.95     31400     36700
    3 Town.C 101 0.25      54100       0.95     51400     56700


groupwisePercentile(Income ~ Town,
                      data = ThreeTowns,
                      tau  = 0.50,
                      R    = 1000)

 Town   n  tau Percentile Conf.level Bca.lower Bca.upper
    1 Town.A 101 0.5      48000       0.95     45600     50100
    2 Town.B 101 0.5      47200       0.95     40700     59800
    3 Town.C 101 0.5      67200       0.95     60800     79800
```
**Permutation Tests for Medians and Percentiles**

**Summary and Analysis of Extension Education Program Evaluation in R**

\[
\text{tau} = 0.75, \\
\text{R} = 1000
\]

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Town</th>
<th>n</th>
<th>tau</th>
<th>Percentile</th>
<th>Conf.level</th>
<th>Bca.lower</th>
<th>Bca.upper</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>Town.A</td>
<td>101</td>
<td>0.75</td>
<td>56400</td>
<td>0.95</td>
<td>52400</td>
<td>59400</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Town.B</td>
<td>101</td>
<td>0.75</td>
<td>108000</td>
<td>0.95</td>
<td>70900</td>
<td>144000</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Town.C</td>
<td>101</td>
<td>0.75</td>
<td>128000</td>
<td>0.95</td>
<td>91500</td>
<td>164000</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

**Test for percentiles between two groups**

The `percentileTest` function compares only two groups. It uses the first two levels of the grouping variable, treating it as a factor. The \( p \)-value is determined by permutation test, so your result may differ from the value here. If the test takes too long, the \( r \) value can be decreased, but a greater \( r \) value will result in a more precise \( p \)-value.

```R
percentileTest(Income ~ Town, 
                data = ThreeTowns, 
                test = "percentile", 
                tau  = 0.25, 
                r    = 5000)
```

**Result**

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>p.value</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>0.0162</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

```R
percentileTest(Income ~ Town, 
                data = ThreeTowns, 
                test = "median", 
                r    = 5000)
```

**Result**

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>p.value</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>0.7458</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>
**Test for percentiles among multiple groups**

The `pairwisePercentileTest` function will compare percentiles among multiple groups. The \( p \)-values are determined by permutation test, so your results may differ from the values here. If the test takes too long, the \( r \) value can be decreased, but a greater \( r \) value will result in a more precise \( p \)-value.

\[
PT25 = \text{pairwisePercentileTest}(Income \sim Town,
\quad \text{data} = \text{ThreeTowns},
\quad \text{test} = "percentile",
\quad \text{tau} = 0.25,
\quad r = 5000)
\]

\[
\begin{array}{cccccc}
\text{Comparison} & \text{p.value} & \text{p.adjust} \\
\hline
1 \text{ Town.A} - \text{ Town.B} & 0 & 0.0166 & 0.0166 \\
2 \text{ Town.A} - \text{ Town.C} & 0 & 0.0000 \\
3 \text{ Town.B} - \text{ Town.C} & 0 & 0.0000 \\
\end{array}
\]

\[
cldList(p.adjust \sim \text{Comparison}, \text{data} = PT25)
\]

\[
\begin{array}{cccc}
\text{Group} & \text{Letter} & \text{MonoLetter} \\
\hline
1 \text{ Town.A} & a & a \\
2 \text{ Town.B} & b & b \\
3 \text{ Town.C} & c & c \\
\end{array}
\]

\[
PT50 = \text{pairwisePercentileTest}(Income \sim Town,
\quad \text{data} = \text{ThreeTowns},
\quad \text{test} = "median",
\quad r = 5000)
\]
PT50

Comparison p.value p.adjust
1 Town.A - Town.B = 0  0.7538 0.753800
2 Town.A - Town.C = 0  0 0.000000
3 Town.B - Town.C = 0  0.00155 0.002325

\texttt{cldList(p.adjust ~ Comparison, data = PT50)}

\begin{tabular}{lll}
Group & Letter & MonoLetter \\
1 Town.A & a & a \\
2 Town.B & a & a \\
3 Town.C & b & b \\
\end{tabular}

PT75 = \texttt{pairwisePercentileTest(Income ~ Town,} \\
\hspace{1cm} \texttt{data = ThreeTowns,} \\
\hspace{1cm} \texttt{test = "percentile",} \\
\hspace{1cm} \texttt{tau = 0.75,} \\
\hspace{1cm} \texttt{r = 5000)}

PT75

Comparison p.value p.adjust
1 Town.A - Town.B = 0       0    0.000
2 Town.A - Town.C = 0       0    0.000
3 Town.B - Town.C = 0   0.456    0.456

\texttt{cldList(p.adjust ~ Comparison, data = PT75)}

\begin{tabular}{lll}
Group & Letter & MonoLetter \\
1 Town.A & a & a \\
2 Town.B & b & b \\
3 Town.C & b & b \\
\end{tabular}

Summary table of results

\begin{tabular}{|c|c|c|c|}
\hline
 & Grouping letters* & \\
\hline
25th & Median & 75th \\
percentile & & percentile \\
\hline
Town & \\
A & a & a & a \\
B & b & a & b \\
C & c & b & b \\
\hline
\end{tabular}

* Groups sharing a letter in each column are not significantly different.
Association Tests for Ordinal Tables

The linear-by-linear test can be used to test the association among variables in a contingency table with ordered categories (Agresti, 2007). This test or a test with a similar function is sometimes called "ordinal chi-square" test.

In Agresti, the method used is called the linear-by-linear association model. In R, the test can be performed by permutation test with the coin package.

An association test can also be performed on a contingency table with one ordered nominal variable and one non-ordered nominal variable. The Cochran–Armitage test is a special case of this when the non-ordered variable has only two variables.

Most of the examples in this chapter use two-dimensional tables, although the coin package can handle three-dimensional tables. For three-dimensional analyses, it may be easier to use data in the long format, as is shown in the final example in this chapter.

Packages used in this chapter

The packages used in this chapter include:

- coin
- rcompanion

The following commands will install these packages if they are not already installed:

```r
if(!require(coin)){install.packages("coin")}
if(!require(rcompanion)){install.packages("rcompanion")}
```

Linear-by-linear test for ordered contingency tables

The `lbl_test` function in the coin package with automatically treat the variables as ordered, with the levels in the table ordered from smallest to largest. By default, the levels are equally spaced, but the `scores` option can be used to specify the distance between the levels of each variable.

The null hypothesis for the linear-by-linear test is that there is no association among the variables in the table. A significant p-value suggests that there is an association. This is similar to a chi-square test, except that the categories are ordered in nature.

Example of linear-by-linear test 1

For this hypothetical example, farmers were surveyed about how often they use some best management practice. Responses are organized according to the size of the operation. Both variables in the contingency table are ordered categories.

Note the placement of the initial quote mark in the Input function.
Input =
"Adopt            Always  Sometimes  Never
Size
Hobbiest         0   1   5
Mom-and-pop  2   3   4
Small           4   4   4
Medium         3   2   0
Large          2   0   0"

Tabla = as.table(read.ftable(textConnection(Input)))

Tabla

sum (Tabla)

prop.tableTabla,  
margin = NULL)  ### proportion in the table

Size  Always  Sometimes  Never
Hobbiest  0.00000000  0.02941176  0.14705882
Mom-and-pop  0.05882353  0.08823529  0.11764706
Small       0.11764706  0.11764706  0.11764706
Medium      0.08823529  0.05882353  0.00000000
Large       0.05882353  0.00000000  0.00000000

library(coin)

spineplotTabla

Spine plot for each Size showing the proportion of Always (dark gray), Sometimes (medium gray), and Never (light gray).
library(coin)

LxL = lbl_test(Tabla)

LxL

Asymptotic Linear-by-Linear Association Test

data:  Adopt (ordered) by Size (Hobbiest < Mom-and-pop < Small < Medium < Large)

Z = -3.3276, p-value = 0.0008761

statistic(LxL)^2

11.07262

Compare to chi-square test without ordered categories

ChiSq = chisq_test(Tabla)

ChiSq

Asymptotic Pearson Chi-Squared Test

data:  Adopt by Size (Hobbiest, Mom-and-pop, Small, Medium, Large)

chi-squared = 13.495, df = 8, p-value = 0.09593

Example of linear-by-linear test 2
The following example revisits the data from Converting Numeric Data to Categories chapter. It tests if there is an association between Tired and Happy. Both variables in the contingency table are ordered categories, with the levels of each being 1, 2, 3, 4, and 5.

Input =(
"Tired 1 2 3 5
Happy
1 0 0 0 3
2 0 0 2
3 0 0 3 0
4 2 0 0
5 3 2 0 5
")

Tabla = as.table(read.ftable(textConnection(Input)))

Tabla

sum (Tabla)
prop.table(Tabla,  
    margin = NULL)   ### proportion in the table

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Tired</th>
<th>1</th>
<th>2</th>
<th>3</th>
<th>5</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>Happy</td>
<td>1</td>
<td>0.00</td>
<td>0.00</td>
<td>0.00</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>2</td>
<td>0.00</td>
<td>0.00</td>
<td>0.00</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>3</td>
<td>0.00</td>
<td>0.00</td>
<td>0.15</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>4</td>
<td>0.10</td>
<td>0.00</td>
<td>0.00</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>5</td>
<td>0.15</td>
<td>0.10</td>
<td>0.00</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

library(coin)
LxL = lbl_test(Tabla)
LxL

Asymptotic Linear-by-Linear Association Test
data:  Tired (ordered) by Happy (1 < 2 < 3 < 4 < 5)

Z = -1.8878, p-value = 0.05906

Extended Cochran–Armitage test

The \texttt{chisq.test} function in the \texttt{coin} package can be used to conduct a test of association for a contingency table with one ordered nominal variable and one non-ordered nominal variable. The Cochran–Armitage test is a special case of this where the non-ordered variable has only two categories.

The \texttt{scores} option is used to indicate which variable should be treated as ordered, and the spacing of the levels of this variable.

\textit{Example of extended Cochran–Armitage test 1}
For this hypothetical example, students were surveyed about how often they eat breakfast and how they travel to school. \textit{Breakfast} is treated as ordered, and \textit{Travel} is treated as nominal.

Note the placement of the initial quote mark in the \texttt{Input} function.

```
Input =(
  "Breakfast  Never  Rarely  Sometimes Often  Always
Travel
Walk      6   9     6   5    2
Bus       2   5     8   5    3
Drive     2   4     6   8    8"
  )
```

Tabla = as.table(read.ftable(textConnection(Input)))
Tabla

sum (Tabla)

prop.table(Tabla, margin = 1)  ### proportion in each row

Breakfast
Travel       Never     Rarely Sometimes      Often     Always
Walk  0.21428571 0.32142857 0.21428571 0.17857143 0.07142857
Bus   0.08695652 0.21739130 0.34782609 0.21739130 0.13043478
Drive 0.07142857 0.14285714 0.21428571 0.28571429 0.28571429

library(coin)
spineplot(Tabla)

library(coin)

Test = chisq_test(Tabla,
                  scores = list("Breakfast" = c(-2, -1, 0, 1, 2)))

Test

Asymptotic Generalized Pearson Chi-Squared Test
data: Breakfast (ordered) by Travel (Walk, Bus, Drive)

\[ \chi^2 = 8.6739, \text{df} = 2, \text{p-value} = 0.01308 \]

\[ + \]

Post-hoc analysis
For a contingency table with one ordered variable and one non-ordered variable, it makes sense to analyze the component tables with pairwise comparisons of the levels of the non-ordered variable.

Results of the compact letter display will be easier to interpret if the table is ordered so that the first row, in this case, ranks highest or lowest in the ordered variable, and so on.

```
library(rcompanion)
PT = pairwiseOrdinalIndependence(Tabla,
                                 compare="row")
```

```
Comparison p.value p.adjust
1   Walk : Bus 0.12800   0.1570
2 Walk : Drive 0.00462   0.0139
3  Bus : Drive 0.15700   0.1570
```

```
library(rcompanion)
cldList(p.value ~ Comparison,
data       = PT,
threshold  = 0.05)
```

```
Group Letter MonoLetter
1  Walk      a         a
2   Bus     ab         ab
3 Drive      b          b
```

**Example of extended Cochran–Armitage test 2**
This example revisits the example from Kruskal–Wallis chapter. *Likert* is treated as ordered, and *Speaker* is treated as non-ordered.

Note the placement of the initial quote mark in the *Input* function.

```
Input =(
"Likert 1 2 3 4 5
Speaker
Pooh 0 0 1 6 3
```

333
Piglet 1 6 2 1 0
Tigger 0 0 2 6 2
"

Tabla = as.table(read.ftable(textConnection(Input)))

Tabla

sum(Tabla)

prop.table(Tabla,
            margin = 1)  ### proportion in each row

  Likert
    Speaker   1   2   3   4   5
    Pooh     0.0 0.0 0.1 0.6 0.3
    Piglet   0.1 0.6 0.2 0.1 0.0
    Tigger   0.0 0.0 0.2 0.6 0.2

library(coin)

Test = chisq.test(Tabla,
                 scores = list("Likert" = c(1, 2, 3, 4, 5)))

Test

  Asymptotic Generalized Pearson Chi-Squared Test

data:  Likert (ordered) by Speaker (Pooh, Piglet, Tigger)

  chi-squared = 18.423, df = 2, p-value = 9.991e-05

library(rcompanion)

PT = pairwiseOrdinalIndependence(Tabla,
                                   compare="row")

PT

  Comparison  p.value  p.adjust
1  Pooh : Piglet 0.000310 0.000902
2  Pooh : Tigger 0.474000 0.474000
3 Piglet : Tigger 0.000601 0.000902

library(rcompanion)

cldList(p.value ~ Comparison,
        data = PT,
        threshold = 0.05)

  Group Letter MonoLetter

334
Long-form data and three-dimensional contingency tables

The tests in this chapter can also be performed on data in long format rather than in table format. Each row of data can represent a single observation, or one variable can hold counts of each category, as the Count variable does below.

For the independence_test function in the coin package to handle ordered and non-ordered variables properly, the user need only specify which variables are to be considered ordered.

The independence_test function can also handle a stratification variable. That is, a two-dimensional table within each level of the stratification variable.

```r
Input = "
Crop   Size         Adopt      Count
Nursery Hobbiest     Always         0
Nursery Hobbiest     Sometimes      1
Nursery Hobbiest     Never          3
Nursery Mom-and-pop  Always         1
Nursery Mom-and-pop  Sometimes      1
Nursery Mom-and-pop  Never          2
Nursery Small        Always         2
Nursery Small        Sometimes      3
Nursery Small        Never          2
Nursery Medium       Always         2
Nursery Medium       Sometimes      1
Nursery Medium       Never          0
Nursery Large        Always         1
Nursery Large        Sometimes      0
Nursery Large        Never          0
Vegetable Hobbiest   Always         0
Vegetable Hobbiest   Sometimes      0
Vegetable Hobbiest   Never          2
Vegetable Mom-and-pop Always         1
Vegetable Mom-and-pop Sometimes      2
Vegetable Mom-and-pop Never          2
Vegetable Small       Always         2
Vegetable Small       Sometimes      1
Vegetable Small       Never          2
Vegetable Medium      Always         1
Vegetable Medium      Sometimes      1
Vegetable Medium      Never          0
Vegetable Large       Always         1
Vegetable Large       Sometimes      0
Vegetable Large       Never          0
"

Data = read.table(textConnection(Input),header=TRUE)
```
### Tell R which variables are ordered

```r
Data$Size = factor(Data$Size, 
                   ordered = TRUE, 
                   levels=unique(Data$Size))

Data$Adopt = factor(Data$Adopt, 
                     ordered = TRUE, 
                     levels=unique(Data$Adopt))
```

### Make sure the ordered levels are in the proper order

```r
str(Data$Adopt)

Ord.factor w/ 3 levels "Always"<"Sometimes"<..: 1 2 3 1 2 3 1 2 3 1 ...

levels(Data$Adopt)

[1] "Always" "Sometimes" "Never"

str(Data$Size)

Ord.factor w/ 5 levels "Hobbiest"<"Mom-and-pop"<..: 1 1 1 2 2 2 3 3 3 4 ...

levels(Data$Size)

[1] "Hobbiest" "Mom-and-pop" "Small" "Medium" "Large"
```

**Two-dimensional table example**

```r
XT = xtabs(Count ~ Size + Adopt, 
            data = Data)

XT
```

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Size</th>
<th>Adopt</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>Always</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Hobbiest</td>
<td>0 1 5</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Mom-and-pop</td>
<td>2 3 4</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Small</td>
<td>4 4 4</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Medium</td>
<td>3 2 0</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Large</td>
<td>2 0 0</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

```r
spineplot(XT)

library(coin)

independence_test(Adopt ~ Size,
```

336
data = Data,  
weights = ~ Count)

Asymptotic General Independence Test

data:  Adopt (ordered) by Size (Hobbiest < Mom-and-pop < Small < Medium < Large)

Z = -3.3276, p-value = 0.0008761

*Three-dimensional table example*

The following example adds *Crop* as a stratification variable.

```r
ftable(xtabs(Count ~ Crop + Size + Adopt,  
data = Data))
```

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Crop</th>
<th>Size</th>
<th>Adopt</th>
<th>Always</th>
<th>Sometimes</th>
<th>Never</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>Nursery</td>
<td>Hobbiest</td>
<td>0</td>
<td>1</td>
<td>3</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>Mom-and-pop</td>
<td>1</td>
<td>1</td>
<td>2</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>Small</td>
<td>2</td>
<td>3</td>
<td>2</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>Medium</td>
<td>2</td>
<td>1</td>
<td>0</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>Large</td>
<td>1</td>
<td>0</td>
<td>0</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Vegetable</td>
<td>Hobbiest</td>
<td>0</td>
<td>0</td>
<td>2</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>Mom-and-pop</td>
<td>1</td>
<td>2</td>
<td>2</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>Small</td>
<td>2</td>
<td>1</td>
<td>2</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>Medium</td>
<td>1</td>
<td>1</td>
<td>0</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>Large</td>
<td>1</td>
<td>0</td>
<td>0</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

library(coin)

```r
independence_test(Adopt ~ Size | Crop,  
data = Data,  
weights = ~ Count)
```

Asymptotic General Independence Test

data:  Adopt (ordered) by Size (Hobbiest < Mom-and-pop < Small < Medium < Large) stratified by Crop

Z = -3.281, p-value = 0.001034

*Spine plot for two-dimensional tables*

```r
XT1 = xtabs(Count ~ Size + Adopt,  
data = Data,  
subset = Data$Crop=="Nursery")

XT1
```

```r
spineplot(XT1,  
main = "Nursery")
```
Measures of Association for Ordinal Tables

Measures of association for one ordinal variable and one nominal variable

The statistics Freeman's \( \theta \) and \( \epsilon \)-squared are used to gauge the strength of the association between one ordinal variable and one nominal variable. Both of these statistics range from 0 to 1, with 0 indicating no association and 1 indicating perfect association.

As effect sizes, these statistics are not affected by the sample size per se. \( \epsilon \)-squared is usually used as the effect size for a Kruskal–Wallis test, whereas Freeman's \( \theta \) is most often used as an effect size for data arranged in a table, such as for a Cochran–Armitage test. However, it is my understanding that neither statistic assumes or prohibits one variable being designated as the dependent variable.

Measures of association for two ordinal variables

Measures of association for ordinal variables include Somers' \( D \) (or \( \delta \)), Kendall's \( \tau \)-b, and Goodman and Kruskal's \( \gamma \).

Yule's \( Q \) is equivalent in magnitude to Goodman and Kruskal's \( \gamma \) for a 2 x 2 table, but can be either positive or negative depending on the order of the cells in the table.

Polychoric and tetrachoric correlation

Polychoric correlation is used to measure the degree of correlation between two ordinal variables with the assumption that each ordinal variable is a discrete summary of an underlying (latent) normally distributed continuous variable. For example, if an ordinal variable Height were measured as \textit{very short, short, average, tall, very tall}, one could assume that these categories represent actual height.
measurements that are continuous and normally distributed. A similar assumption might be made for Likert items, for example on an agree-disagree spectrum.

Tetrachoric correlation is a special case of polychoric correlation when both variables are dichotomous.

**Appropriate data**
- One ordinal variable and one nominal variable, or two ordinal variables. Usually expressed as a contingency table.
- Experimental units aren't paired.

**Hypotheses**
- There are no hypotheses tested directly with these statistics.

**Other notes and alternative tests**
- Cramér’s $V$ and $phi$ are used for tables with two nominal variables. Cohen’s $w$ is a variant. Goodman and Kruskal’s $lambda$ is also used.
- Tetrachoric and polychoric correlation are used for two ordinal variables when there is an assumption that the ordinal variables represent latent continuous variables underlying the ordinal variables.
- Biserial and polyserial correlation are used for one continuous variable and one ordinal (or dichotomous) variable, when there is an assumption that the ordinal variable represents a latent continuous variable.

**Packages used in this chapter**

The packages used in this chapter include:
- rcompanion
- psych
- DescTools

The following commands will install these packages if they are not already installed:

```r
if(!require(rcompanion)){install.packages("rcompanion")}
if(!require(psych)){install.packages("psych")}
if(!require(DescTools)){install.packages("DescTools")}
```

**Examples for Freeman’s theta and epsilon-squared**

The hypothetical Breakfast example from the previous chapter includes Breakfast as an ordinal variable and Travel as a nominal variable.

```
Input =(
"Breakfast  Never  Rarely  Sometimes  Often  Always
Travel
Walk       6   9   6    5    2
Bus        2   5   8    5    3
Drive      2   4   6    8    8"
```
Measures of Association for Ordinal Tables

Summary and Analysis of Extension Education Program Evaluation in R

")
Tabla = as.table(read.ftable(textConnection(Input)))

Tabla

Freeman's theta

library(rcompanion)
freemanTheta(Tabla,
group = "row")

Freeman.theta
0.312

Epsilon-squared

library(rcompanion)
esilonSquared(Tabla,
group = "row")
esilon.squared
0.11

The hypothetical example with Pooh, Piglet, and Tigger includes Likert as an ordinal variable and Speaker as a nominal variable.

Input =(
"Likert  1 2 3 4 5
Speaker
Pooh     0 0 1 6 3
Piglet   1 6 2 1 0
Tigger   0 0 2 6 2
"
)
Tabla = as.table(read.ftable(textConnection(Input)))
Tabla

Freeman's theta

library(rcompanion)
freemanTheta(Tabla,
group = "row")

Freeman.theta
0.64

340
Epsilon-squared

```r
library(rcompanion)
epsilonSquared(Tabla, 
  group = "row")
epsilon.squared
0.581
```

Additional examples for Freeman's theta and epsilon-squared

Perfect association

```
Input =(
  "Ordinal 1 2 3
Category A 10 0 0
B 0 10 0
C 0 0 10
"
)
Tabla = as.table(read.ftable(textConnection(Input)))
Tabla
```

```
library(rcompanion)
freemanTheta(Tabla)
  Freeman.theta
    1
```

```
library(rcompanion)
epsilonSquared(Tabla)
  epsilon.squared
    1
```

Zero association

```
Input =(
  "Ordinal 1 2 3
Category A 5 5 5
B 10 10 10
C 15 15 15
"
)
Examples for Somers’ D, Kendall’s tau-b, and Goodman and Kruskal’s gamma

First example

This example includes two ordinal variables, Adopt and Size.

Input = (  
"Adopt  Always  Sometimes  Never  
Size  
Hobbies  0  1  5  
Mom-and-pop  2  3  4  
Small  4  4  4  
Medium  3  2  0  
Large  2  0  0  
"
)

Tabla = as.table(read.ftable(textConnection(Input)))

Tabla

library(DescTools)

SomersDeltaTabla,  
direction = "column",  
conf.level = 0.95)

somers  lwr.ci  ups.ci
-0.4665127 -0.6452336 -0.2877918
### Somers' D for (Row | Column), with confidence interval

```r
library(DescTools)
SomersDelta(Tabla,
direction  = "row",
conf.level = 0.95)
```
```
somers   lwr.ci      ups.ci
-0.32061069 -0.68212474  0.04090337
```

### Second example

This example includes two ordinal variables, *Tired* and *Happy*.

```r
Input =("Tired  1 2 3 5
Happy
 1 0 0 0 3
 2 0 0 0 2
 3 0 0 3 0
 4 2 0 0 0
 5 3 2 0 5"
)
Tabla = as.table(read.ftable(textConnection(Input)))
Tabla
```

```r
library(DescTools)
SomersDelta(Tabla,
direction  = "row",
conf.level = 0.95)
```
```
somers   lwr.ci      ups.ci
-0.32061069 -0.68212474  0.04090337
```
library(DescTools)

KendallTauB(Tabla,  
  conf.level = 0.95)

  tau_b     lwr.ci      ups.ci 
-0.31351142 -0.67251606  0.04549322

### Kendall's tau-b with confidence interval

library(DescTools)

GoodmanKruskalGamma(Tabla,  
  conf.level = 0.95)

  gamma     lwr.ci      ups.ci 
-0.42000000 -0.87863057  0.038630

### Goodman and Kruskal's gamma with confidence interval

Examples for polychoric correlation

First example

This example includes two ordinal variables, Adopt and Size. A single correlation coefficient is produced.

Input =(
    "Adopt Always Sometimes Never
    Size Hobbiest 0 1 5
    Mom-and-pop 2 3 4
    Small 4 4 4
    Medium 3 2 0
    Large 2 0 0"
  )

Tabla = as.table(read.ftable(textConnection(Input)))

Tabla

library(psych)

polychoric(Tabla,  
  correct=FALSE)

$rho
[1] -0.678344
Second example

This example includes two ordinal variables, *Tired* and *Happy*.

```r
Input =("Tired  1 2 3 5
Happy  1 0 0 0 3
       2 0 0 0 2
       3 0 0 3 0
       4 2 0 0 0
       5 3 2 0 5")
Tabla = as.table(read.ftable(textConnection(Input)))
Tabla

library(psych)
polychoric(Tabla,
correct=FALSE)

$rho
[1] -0.495164

Third example

The following example revisits the Belcher family data. Here, we want to know if the scores among instructors are correlated. This makes sense since each rater rated each instructor.

```r
Input =("Rater  Bob Linda Tina Gene Louisa
a  4  8  7  6  8
b  5  6  5  4  7
c  4  8  7  5  8
d  6  8  8  5  8
e  6  8  8  6  9
f  6  7  9  6  9
g 10 10 10  5  8
h  6  9  9  5 10")
Data = read.table(textConnection(Input),header=TRUE)
Data.num = Data[c("Bob", "Linda", "Tina", "Gene", "Louisa")]
library(psych)
`polychoric(Data.num, correct=FALSE)`

**Polychoric correlations**

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th></th>
<th>Bob</th>
<th>Linda</th>
<th>Tina</th>
<th>Gene</th>
<th>Louis</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>Bob</td>
<td>1.00</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Linda</td>
<td>0.59</td>
<td>1.00</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Tina</td>
<td>0.88</td>
<td>0.76</td>
<td>1.00</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Gene</td>
<td>-0.03</td>
<td>0.16</td>
<td>0.37</td>
<td>1.00</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Louisa</td>
<td>0.35</td>
<td>0.47</td>
<td>0.70</td>
<td>0.64</td>
<td>1.00</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

`pairs(data = Data.num, ~ Bob + Linda + Tina + Gene + Louisa)`
Introduction to Linear Models

Linear models are used for a wide variety of statistical analyses. The basic concept is that a dependent variable can be predicted from a set of independent variables that are related in a linear fashion. This framework leads to models that are very flexible, and can include a variety of continuous or categorical independent variables.

All linear models make some assumptions about the underlying data. For one thing, the data should accord with the fact the model is composed of a linear combination of the effects. Non-linearity would suggest that the model effects be modified or that a different kind of model be used. In addition, each type of linear model usually makes some assumptions about the distribution of the data. For the reported statistics to be valid, it is essential to understand and check these assumptions for the specific type of model being used.

Types of linear models
In general, the type of model to be used is determined by the nature of the dependent variable.

General linear models
Readers may be familiar with linear regression, multiple linear regression, or analysis of variance (ANOVA).

These models can be considered part of a larger category of linear models called *general linear model*. The dependent variable is continuous interval/ratio, and there are assumptions about the distribution of the data. These models are usually called *parametric* models or tests, although technically other types of models which assume properties about the distribution of the data are also parametric in nature.

Generalized linear models
Models for other types of dependent variables can be developed in a *generalized linear model* framework. This approach is similar to general linear model approach, except that there are different assumptions about the distribution of the data.

For example, ordinal dependent variables can be modeled with cumulative link models. Binary (yes/no) dependent variables can be modeled with logistic regression. Dependent variables of discrete counted quantities can be modeled with Poisson regression and similar techniques. Percent and proportion data can be modeled with beta regression.

Other linear models
Not all linear models are included in the *general linear model* and *generalized linear model* categories. For example, common quantile regression is a type of linear model not included in these categories.

Fitting models
For any type of linear model, some method is used to find the value for the parameters for the model which best fit the data. For simple models like linear regression or a simple analysis of variance, these parameters estimates could be found by hand calculations. Luckily, more complex models can be fit by
computer algorithm. General linear models are typically fit by ordinary least squares (OLS), whereas generalized linear models are typically fit by maximum likelihood estimation (MLE). OLS is actually a specific case of MLE that is valid only when the conditional distribution of the data are normal. These approaches to estimation are generally reliable, but the reader should be aware that there are cases where MLE may fail.

**Formulae for specifying models in R**

Most packages for specifying types of models in R use a similar grammar in the model formula.

The formula

\[ y \sim x1 + x2 + x1:x2 \]

Specifies \( y \) as the dependent variables, and \( x1, x2 \), and the interaction of \( x1 \) and \( x2 \) as the independent variables.

The formula

\[ y \sim x1 \mid g \]

Specifies \( g \) as a stratification variable or as a conditional variable, that is \( x1 \) given \( g \).

The symbol \( 1 \) specifies an intercept for the model, so that

\[ y \sim x1 - 1 \]

indicates that the intercept should not be included in the model, and

\[ y \sim 1 \]

indicates that only the intercept is to be included in the right side of this model.

The King article in the “References” section has some more detail on model specification syntax in R.

**Data in data frames**

Usually the variables in the model will be taken from a data frame. For example

\[ y \sim x \]

will look for \( y \) and \( x \) in the global environment, whereas

\[ y \sim x, \ data = Data \]

will look for \( y \) and \( x \) in the data frame called \( Data \).
Random effects
The syntax varies somewhat for random effects in models across packages, but

\[ y \sim x, \text{random} = \sim 1|\text{Subject} \]

or

\[ y \sim x + (1|\text{Subject}) \]

Specifies that \( y \) is the dependent variable, \( x \) is an independent variable, and \( \text{Subject} \) is an independent variable treated as random variable, specifically with an intercept fit for each level of \( \text{Subject} \).

More on specifying random effects is discussed in the chapter *Repeated Measures ANOVA*.

Extracting model information from R

Each package varies on the methods used to extract information about the model, but some are relatively common across several packages. For other types of model objects, there may be methods to extract similar information with different functions.

Assuming that \( \text{model} \) has been defined as a model object by an appropriate function,

\[
\text{summary(model)}
\]

produces a summary of the model with estimates of the coefficients, and sometimes other useful information like a \( p \)-value for the model, or an \( r \)-squared or pseudo \( R \)-squared for the model.

\[
\text{library(car)} \\
\text{Anova(model)}
\]

for some models, will produce an analysis of variance table, or an analysis of deviance table.

\[
\text{plot(model)}
\]

will produce plots of the model, usually diagnostic plots.

\[
\text{anova(model1, model2)}
\]

will compare two models by an analysis of variance.

\[
\text{predict(model)}
\]

will report predicted values in the dependent variable from the model for each observation that went in to the model.

\[
\text{residuals(model)}
\]
will report residual values from the model.

```r
str(model)
```

reports the structure of the information stored in the model.

References


**Using Random Effects in Models**

This book will not investigate the concept of random effects in models in any substantial depth. The goal of this chapter is to empower the reader to include random effects in models in cases of paired data or repeated measures.

**Random effects in models for paired and repeated measures**

As an example, if we are measuring the left hand and right of several individuals, the measurements are paired within each individual. That is, we want to statistically match the left hand of Individual A to the right hand of Individual A, since we suppose that someone with a large left hand will have a large right hand. Therefore, the variable Individual will be included in the model as a random variable. Each Individual could be thought of as a block including a measurement for the left hand and a measurement for the right hand.

As a second example, imagine we are measuring the scores of instructors multiple times, and we can match each rater’s score at each time to the same rater’s score at the other times. So, we want to statistically match the score of Rater A at Time 1 to the score of Rater A at Time 2, since we suppose that someone who scores an instructor high at one time might score an instructor high at another time. Therefore, the variable Rater will be included in the model as a random variable. Each Rater could be thought of as a block including a measurement for each of the times.

**The concept of random variables**

Getting a firm grasp of the concept of random variables is not an easy task, so it is okay to not fret too much about completely understanding the concept at this point. It is also helpful to keep in mind that whether a variable should be considered a fixed or random variable will depend on the interpretation of the person doing the analysis.

In the previous chapter, the variable Speaker was used as a fixed effect in the model. Conceptually, the idea is that we are interested in the effect of each of the specific levels of that variable. That is, we care specifically about Pooh and Piglet and their scores.
In many cases of blocking variables, though, we don’t necessarily care about the values for those specific blocks.

For example, if we conducted a study in two different schools focusing on two different curricula, we may want to know about the effect of the curricula, but more or less chose the schools at random. We don’t really care if Springfield Elementary had a higher score than Shelbyville Elementary. The two schools represent any two random schools, not those two specific schools. But we definitely want to include the School effect in the model, because we suppose that one school could do better with both curricula than would the other school.

Another example of this is when we have instructors rated by student raters. If we are studying the performance of the instructors, we don’t necessarily care about how Nelson or Milhouse or Ralph as individuals rate instructors. They are representing students chosen at random. We just need to include the effect of the variable Rater in the model to statistically account for the fact that each rater might tend to rate all instructors lower or higher than other raters.

In these examples, School and Rater could be included in their respective models as random effects.

**Mixed effects models**
When a model includes both fixed effects and random effects, it is called a mixed effects model.

**Optional technical note: Random effects in more complex models**
For more complex models, specifying random effects can become difficult. Random effects can be crossed with one another or can be nested within one another. Also, correlation structures for the random effects can be specified. However, approaching this complexity is beyond the scope of this book.

The examples in this book treat random variables as simple intercept-only variables, as simple blocks that are not nested within other variables.

**Packages used in this chapter**
The packages used in this chapter include:

- FSA
- psych
- lme4
- lmerTest
- nlme
- car

The following commands will install these packages if they are not already installed:

```r
if(!require(FSA)){install.packages("FSA")}
if(!require(psych)){install.packages("psych")}
if(!require(lme4)){install.packages("lme4")}
if(!require(lmerTest)){install.packages("lmerTest")}
if(!require(nlme)){install.packages("nlme")}
if(!require(car)){install.packages("car")}
```
An example of a mixed model

For this example we will revisit the hand size example from the *Independent and Paired Values* chapter. The variable hand *Length* will be treated as an interval/ratio variable. We will return to using cumulative link models for Likert data in subsequent chapters.

Note that the model includes the blocking variable, *Individual*, and so data do not need to be in a certain order to match the paired observations.

Also note that mixed models may make certain assumptions about the distributions of the data. For simplicity, this example will not check if those assumption are met.

By default, an analysis of variance for a mixed model doesn’t test the significance of the random effects in the model. However, the effect of random terms can be tested by comparing the model to a model including only the fixed effects and excluding the random effects, or with the `rand` function from the *lmerTest* package if the *lme4* package is used to specify the model.

As a technical note, the *lmerTest* package has options to use Satterthwaite or Kenward–Roger degrees of freedom, and options for type-III or type-II tests in the analysis of variance, if the *lme4* package is used to specify the model.

```
Input = ("Individual  Hand  Length
A     Left      17.5
B     Left      18.4
C     Left      16.2
D     Left      14.5
E     Left      13.5
F     Left      18.9
G     Left      19.5
H     Left      21.1
I     Left      17.8
J     Left      16.8
K     Left      18.4
L     Left      17.3
M     Left      18.9
N     Left      16.4
O     Left      17.5
P     Left      15.0
A     Right     17.6
B     Right     18.5
C     Right     15.9
D     Right     14.9
E     Right     13.7
F     Right     18.9
G     Right     19.5
H     Right     21.5
I     Right     18.5
J     Right     17.1
```
Mixed model with lmer

One way to construct a mixed effects model for interval/ratio data is with the lmer function in the lme4 package. The lmerTest package is used to produce an analysis of variance with p-values for model effects.

Notice the grammar in the lmer function that defines the model: the term (1|Individual) is added to the model to indicate that Individual is the random term.

As a technical note, the 1 indicates that an intercept is to be fitted for each level of the random variable.

As another technical note, REML stands for restricted maximum likelihood. It is a method of fitting the model, and is often considered better than fitting with a conventional ML (maximum likelihood) method.

Define model and conduct analysis of variance

```r
library(lme4)
library(lmerTest)

model = lmer(Length ~ Hand + (1|Individual),
              data=Data,
              REML=TRUE)

anova(model)
```
Analysis of variance Table of type III with Satterthwaite approximation for degrees of freedom

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th></th>
<th>Sum Sq</th>
<th>Mean Sq</th>
<th>NumDF</th>
<th>DenDF</th>
<th>F.value</th>
<th>Pr(&gt;F)</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>Hand</td>
<td>0.45125</td>
<td>0.45125</td>
<td>1</td>
<td>15</td>
<td>11.497</td>
<td>0.004034 **</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

Test the random effects in the model
The `rand` function from the `lmerTest` package will test the random effects in the model.

```r
rand(model)
```

Analysis of Random effects Table

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th></th>
<th>Chi.sq</th>
<th>Chi.DF</th>
<th>p.value</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>Individual</td>
<td>58.4</td>
<td>1</td>
<td>2e-14 ***</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

**Mixed model with nlme**
Another way to construct a mixed effects model for interval/ratio data is with the `lme` function in the `nlme` package.

Notice the grammar in the `lme` function that defines the model: the option `random=~1|Individual` is added to the model to indicate that `Individual` is the random term.

As a technical note, the `1` indicates that an intercept is to be fitted for each level of the random variable.

As another technical note, `REML` stands for restricted maximum likelihood. It is a method of fitting the model, and is often considered better than fitting with a conventional `ML` (maximum likelihood) method.

**Define model and conduct analysis of deviance**

```r
library(nlme)

model = lme(Length ~ Hand, random=~1|Individual,
            data=Data,
            method="REML")

library(car)

Anova(model)
```

Analysis of Deviance Table (Type II tests)

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th></th>
<th>Chisq</th>
<th>Df</th>
<th>Pr(&gt;Chisq)</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>Hand</td>
<td>11.497</td>
<td>1</td>
<td>0.0006972 * *</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

354
Test the random effects in the model
The random effects in the model can be tested by comparing the model to a model fitted with just the fixed effects and excluding the random effects. Because there are not random effects in this second model, the `gls` function in the `nlme` package is used to fit this model.

We will use a similar method for cumulative link models.

```r
model.fixed = gls(Length ~ Hand,
data=Data,
method="REML")
```

```r
anova(model,
model.fixed)
```

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Model</th>
<th>df</th>
<th>AIC</th>
<th>BIC</th>
<th>logLik</th>
<th>Test L.Ratio</th>
<th>p-value</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>model</td>
<td>1</td>
<td>80.62586</td>
<td>86.23065</td>
<td>-36.31293</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>model.fixed</td>
<td>2</td>
<td>137.06356</td>
<td>141.26715</td>
<td>-65.53178</td>
<td>1 vs 2</td>
<td>58.4377</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

What are Estimated Marginal Means?

Estimated marginal means are means for groups that are adjusted for means of other factors in the model.

Imagine a case where you are measuring the height of 7th-grade students in two classrooms, and want to see if there is a difference between the two classrooms. You are also recording the sex of the students, and at this age girls tend to be taller than boys. Say classroom A happens to have far more girls than boys. If you were to look at the mean height in the classrooms, you might find that classroom A had a higher mean, but this may not be an effect of the different classrooms, but because of the difference in the counts of boys and girls in each. In this case, reporting estimated marginal means for the classrooms may give a more representative result. Reporting estimated marginal means for studies where there are not equal observations for each combination of treatments is sometimes recommended. We say the design of these studies is unbalanced.

The following example details this hypothetical example. Looking at the means from the `Summarize` function in `FSA`, we might think there is a meaningful difference between the classrooms, with a mean height of 153.5 cm vs. 155.0 cm. But looking at the estimated marginal means (emmmeans), which are adjusted for the difference in boys and girls in each classroom, this difference disappears. Each classroom has an estimated marginal mean of 153.5 cm, indicating the mean of classroom B was inflated due to the higher proportion of girls.

Note that the following example uses a linear model with the `lm` function. Here, `Height` is being treated as an interval/ratio variable.

This kind of analysis makes certain assumptions about the distribution of the data, but for simplicity, this example will ignore the need to determine that the data meet these assumptions.
Packages used in this chapter

The packages used in this chapter include:

- FSA
- psych
- emmeans
- car

The following commands will install these packages if they are not already installed:

```r
if(!require(FSA)){install.packages("FSA")}
if(!require(psych)){install.packages("psych")}
if(!require(emmeans)){install.packages("emmeans")}
if(!require(car)){install.packages("car")}
```

Estimated marginal means example

```r
Input =("Classroom  Sex    Height
A          Male    151
A          Male    150
A          Male    152
A          Male    149
A          Female  155
A          Female  156
A          Female  157
A          Female  158
B          Male    151
B          Male    150
B          Female  155
B          Female  156
B          Female  157
B          Female  158
B          Female  156
B          Female  157
")

Data = read.table(textConnection(Input),header=TRUE)

### Check the data frame

library(psych)
headTail(Data)
str(Data)
summary(Data)
```
### Remove unnecessary objects

```r
rm(Input)
```

**Arithmetic means**

```r
library(FSA)
Summarize(Height ~ Classroom, 
data=Data, 
digits=3)
```

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Classroom</th>
<th>n</th>
<th>mean</th>
<th>sd</th>
<th>min</th>
<th>Q1</th>
<th>median</th>
<th>Q3</th>
<th>max</th>
<th>percZero</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>A</td>
<td>8</td>
<td>153.5</td>
<td>3.423</td>
<td>149</td>
<td>150.8</td>
<td>153.5</td>
<td>156.2</td>
<td>158</td>
<td>0</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>B</td>
<td>8</td>
<td>155.0</td>
<td>2.928</td>
<td>150</td>
<td>154.0</td>
<td>156.0</td>
<td>157.0</td>
<td>158</td>
<td>0</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

**Estimated marginal means**

```r
model = lm(Height ~ Classroom + Sex + Classroom:Sex, 
data = Data)
library(emmeans)
emmeans(model, 
~ Classroom)
```

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Classroom</th>
<th>emmean</th>
<th>SE</th>
<th>df</th>
<th>lower.CL</th>
<th>upper.CL</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>A</td>
<td>153.5</td>
<td>0.4082483</td>
<td>12</td>
<td>152.6105</td>
<td>154.3895</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>B</td>
<td>153.5</td>
<td>0.4714045</td>
<td>12</td>
<td>152.4729</td>
<td>154.5271</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

Note that an analysis of variance also would have told us that there is a difference between levels of `Sex`, but not between levels of `Classroom`.

```r
library(car)
Anova(model)
```

**Anova Table (Type II tests)**

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th></th>
<th>Sum Sq</th>
<th>Df</th>
<th>F value</th>
<th>Pr(&gt;F)</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>Classroom</td>
<td>0</td>
<td>1</td>
<td>0.0</td>
<td>1</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Sex</td>
<td>126</td>
<td>1</td>
<td>94.5</td>
<td>4.857e-07***</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Classroom:Sex</td>
<td>0</td>
<td>1</td>
<td>0.0</td>
<td>1</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Residuals</td>
<td>16</td>
<td>12</td>
<td>0.0</td>
<td>1</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>
Estimated Marginal Means for Multiple Comparisons

Comparisons of values across groups in linear models, cumulative link models, and other models can be conducted easily with the *emmeans* package. Importantly, it can make comparisons among interactions of factors.

*E.M. means* stands for *estimated marginal means*. Estimated marginal means are means for treatment levels that are adjusted for means of other factors in the model. For a more complete explanation, see the *What are Estimated Marginal Means?* chapter.

**p-value adjustments for multiple comparisons**
Adjustment of *p*-values for multiple comparisons is indicated with the `adjust=` option in the `pairs`, `cld`, and `summary` functions. Options are "tukey", "scheffe", "sidak", "bonferroni", "dunnettx", "mvt", and "none". For further information on these options, see the `summary.emmGrid` function section in:


or use

```
library(emmeans)
?summary.emmGrid
```

**Confidence intervals for marginal means**
To adjust the confidence intervals for the EM means, use e.g. `summary(marginal, level=0.99)` or e.g. `cld(marginal, level=0.99)`.

**Ignore values of emmeans for clm and clmm models**
Typically you should ignore the values of the estimated marginal means themselves (*emmeans*) when using them with clm and clmm models. With default settings, the values of the estimated marginal means and the values of differences among the estimated marginal means are not easy to interpret. See “clm” in `help(models, package="emmeans")` for details and for other options.

**Packages used in this chapter**

The packages used in this chapter include:

- psych
- ordinal
- car
- RVAideMemoire
- emmeans
- multcompView
Estimated Marginal Means for Multiple Comparisons

Summary and Analysis of Extension Education Program Evaluation in R

The following commands will install these packages if they are not already installed:

```r
if(!require(psych)){install.packages("psych")}
if(!require(ordinal)){install.packages("ordinal")}
if(!require(car)){install.packages("car")}
if(!require(RVAideMemoire)){install.packages("RVAideMemoire")}
if(!require(emmeans)){install.packages("emmeans")}
if(!require(multcompView)){install.packages("multcompView")}
```

Multiple comparisons with emmeans

This example uses data set and model from the One-way Ordinal regression with CLM chapter.

```r
Input =("Speaker  Likert
Pooh      3
Pooh      5
Pooh      4
Pooh      4
Pooh      4
Pooh      4
Pooh      4
Pooh      4
Pooh      5
Piglet    2
Piglet    4
Piglet    2
Piglet    2
Piglet    1
Piglet    2
Piglet    3
Piglet    2
Piglet    2
Piglet    3
Tigger    4
Tigger    4
Tigger    4
Tigger    5
Tigger    3
Tigger    5
Tigger    4
Tigger    4
Tigger    3")

Data = read.table(textConnection(Input),header=TRUE)

```R
### Order levels of the factor; otherwise R will alphabetize them
Data$Speaker = factor(Data$Speaker,
```
### Create a new variable which is the likert scores as an ordered factor

```r
Data$Likert.f = factor(Data$Likert, ordered = TRUE)
```

### Check the data frame

```r
library(psych)
headTail(Data)
str(Data)
summary(Data)
```

### Remove unnecessary objects

```r
rm(Input)
```

**Define model and conduct analysis of deviance**

```r
library(ordinal)
model = clm(Likert.f ~ Speaker, data = Data)
library(car)
library(RVAideMemoire)
Anova(model, type = "II")
```

**Analysis of Deviance Table (Type II tests)**

```
  LR Chisq Df Pr(>Chisq)  
Speaker    23.395  2 8.315e-06 ***
```

**Group separations by emmeans in table format**

In the `emmeans` function, `model` specifies the model object that was previously fitted. Note the specialized formula where `pairwise` indicates that all pairwise comparisons should be conducted, and `Speaker` indicates the variable whose levels will be compared.

The output here compares the levels of the grouping variable. For example, a significant $p$-value in the `Pooh – Piglet` line suggests that the value of the dependent variable ($Likert.f$) is different for Pooh compared with Piglet.
Remember to ignore the *estimate*, *SE*, and *emmean* values when using *emmeans* with a clm or clmm model object, unless specific options in *emmeans* are selected.

```r
library(emmeans)

marginal = emmeans(model, ~ Speaker)
pairs(marginal, adjust="tukey")
```

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>contrast</th>
<th>estimate</th>
<th>SE</th>
<th>df</th>
<th>z.ratio</th>
<th>p.value</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>Pooh - Piglet</td>
<td>4.943822</td>
<td>1.376471</td>
<td>NA</td>
<td>3.591666</td>
<td>0.0010</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Pooh - Tigger</td>
<td>0.633731</td>
<td>0.905569</td>
<td>NA</td>
<td>0.699815</td>
<td>0.7636</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Piglet - Tigger</td>
<td>-4.310091</td>
<td>1.317329</td>
<td>NA</td>
<td>-3.271840</td>
<td>0.0031</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

P value adjustment: tukey method for comparing a family of 3 estimates

### Remember to ignore “estimate” and “SE” of differences with CLM, as well as “emmeans” in the output not shown here

**Compact letter display**

Here we’ll use the *emmeans* output called *marginal* created above, and pass this object to the *cld* function to create a compact letter display.

In the output, groups sharing a letter in the `.group` column are not significantly different, at the `alpha` level specified.

```r
library(multcompView)
cld(marginal, alpha=0.05, Letters=letters, adjust="tukey")
```

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Speaker</th>
<th>emmean</th>
<th>SE</th>
<th>df</th>
<th>asymp.LCL</th>
<th>asymp.UCL</th>
<th>.group</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>Piglet</td>
<td>-1.783599</td>
<td>0.775595</td>
<td>NA</td>
<td>-3.6355182</td>
<td>0.06832068</td>
<td>a</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Tigger</td>
<td>2.526492</td>
<td>0.841320</td>
<td>NA</td>
<td>0.5176407</td>
<td>4.53534421</td>
<td>b</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Pooh</td>
<td>3.160223</td>
<td>0.891296</td>
<td>NA</td>
<td>1.0320404</td>
<td>5.28840661</td>
<td>b</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

Confidence level used: 0.95
Conf-level adjustment: sidak method for 3 estimates
P value adjustment: tukey method for comparing a family of 3 estimates

### Groups sharing a letter in `.group` are not significantly different

### Remember to ignore “emmean”, “SE”, “LCL”, and “UCL” for CLM unless certain options are used.

---

361
Optional: Interaction plot of estimated marginal means with mean separation letters

It is often desirable to plot estimated marginal means from an analysis with either their confidence intervals or standard errors. This can be conducted as a one-way plot or an interaction plot. The `emmeans` and `ggplot2` packages make it relatively easy to extract the EM means and the group separation letters and use them for plotting.

**Input data and specify linear model**

```r
if(!require(car)){install.packages("car")}
if(!require(multcompView)){install.packages("multcompView")}
if(!require(emmeans)){install.packages("emmeans")}
if(!require(ggplot2)){install.packages("ggplot2")}

Location = c(rep("Olympia" , 6), rep("Ventura", 6),
            rep("Northampton", 6), rep("Burlington", 6))
Tribe  = c(rep(c("Jedi", "Sith"), 12))
Midichlorians = c(10,  4, 12,  5, 15,  4, 15,  9, 15, 11, 18, 12,
                  8, 13,  8, 15, 10, 17, 22, 22, 20, 22, 20, 25)

Data = data.frame(Tribe, Location, Midichlorians)
str(Data)

model = lm(Midichlorians ~ Tribe + Location + Tribe:Location,
            data = Data)
library(car)
Anova(model)

Anova Table (Type II tests)

Response: Midichlorians

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Sum Sq</th>
<th>Df</th>
<th>F value</th>
<th>Pr(&gt;F)</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>Tribe</td>
<td>8.17</td>
<td>1</td>
<td>3.0154</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Location</td>
<td>591.00</td>
<td>3</td>
<td>72.7385</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Tribe:Location</td>
<td>198.83</td>
<td>3</td>
<td>24.4718</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Residuals</td>
<td>43.33</td>
<td>16</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

One-way estimated marginal means and plot

```r
library(multcompView)
library(emmeans)

marginal = emmeans(model,
                    ~ Location)
```
CLD = cld(marginal, 
  alpha=0.05, 
  Letters=letters, 
  adjust="tukey")

CLD

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Location</th>
<th>emmean</th>
<th>SE</th>
<th>df</th>
<th>lower.CL</th>
<th>upper.CL</th>
<th>.group</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>Olympia</td>
<td>8.333</td>
<td>0.672</td>
<td>16</td>
<td>6.449596</td>
<td>10.217</td>
<td>a</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Northampton</td>
<td>11.833</td>
<td>0.672</td>
<td>16</td>
<td>9.949596</td>
<td>13.717</td>
<td>b</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Ventura</td>
<td>13.333</td>
<td>0.672</td>
<td>16</td>
<td>11.449596</td>
<td>15.217</td>
<td>b</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Burlington</td>
<td>21.833</td>
<td>0.672</td>
<td>16</td>
<td>19.949596</td>
<td>23.717</td>
<td>c</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

### Order the levels for printing

CLD$Location = factor(CLD$Location, 
  levels=c("Olympia", "Ventura", "Northampton", "Burlington"))

### Remove spaces in .group

CLD$.group=gsub(" ", ",", CLD$.group)

### Plot

library(ggplot2)

ggplot(CLD, 
  aes(x = Location, 
       y = emmean, 
       label = .group)) +
  geom_point(shape = 15, 
             size = 4) +
  geom_errorbar(aes(ymin = lower.CL, 
                   ymax = upper.CL), 
                width = 0.2, 
                size = 0.7) +
  theme_bw() +
  theme(axis.title = element_text(face = "bold"), 
        axis.text = element_text(face = "bold"), 
        plot.caption = element_text(hjust = 0)) +
  ylab("Estimated marginal mean\nmidichlorian count") +
  ggtitle("Midichlorian counts", 
           subtitle = "In four U.S. cities") +
  labs(caption = paste0("\nMidichlorian counts for four locations. ", 
                       "Boxes indicate the EM mean. 
                       Error bars indicate the 95% ", 
                       "\n"))
Interaction plot of estimated marginal means

```r
library(multcompView)
library(emmeans)

marginal = emmeans(model, ~ Tribe:Location)

CLD = cld(marginal,
    alpha=0.05,
    Letters=letters,
    adjust="tukey")

CLD
```

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Tribe</th>
<th>Location</th>
<th>emmean</th>
<th>SE</th>
<th>df</th>
<th>lower.CL</th>
<th>upper.CL</th>
<th>.group</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>Sith</td>
<td>Olympia</td>
<td>4.333333</td>
<td>0.9501462</td>
<td>16</td>
<td>1.354477</td>
<td>7.31219</td>
<td>a</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Jedi</td>
<td>Northampton</td>
<td>8.666667</td>
<td>0.9501462</td>
<td>16</td>
<td>5.687810</td>
<td>11.64552</td>
<td>ab</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Sith</td>
<td>Ventura</td>
<td>10.666667</td>
<td>0.9501462</td>
<td>16</td>
<td>7.687810</td>
<td>13.64552</td>
<td>bc</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

Confidence interval of the EM mean. Means sharing a letter are not significantly different (Tukey-adjusted comparisons).
### Order the levels for printing

```r
CLD$Location = factor(CLD$Location, levels=c("Olympia", "Ventura", "Northampton", "Burlington"))
CLD$Tribe = factor(CLD$Tribe, levels=c("Jedi", "Sith"))
```

### Remove spaces in .group

```r
CLD$.group=gsub(" ", "", CLD$.group)
```

### Plot

```r
library(ggplot2)

pd = position_dodge(0.4)  
### How much to jitter the points on the plot

ggplot(CLD, 
aes(x = Location, 
y = emmean, 
color = Tribe, 
label = .group)) + 

  geom_point(shape = 15, 
             size = 4, 
             position = pd) + 

  geom_errorbar(aes(ymin = lower.CL, 
                    ymax = upper.CL), 
                width = 0.2, 
                size = 0.7, 
                position = pd) + 

  theme_bw() + 
  theme(axis.title = element_text(face = "bold"), 
        axis.text = element_text(face = "bold"), 
        plot.caption = element_text(hjust = 0)) + 

  ylab("Estimated marginal mean\nmidichlorian count") + 
  ggtitle("Midichlorian counts for Jedi and Sith", 
           subtitle = "In four U.S. cities") + 

  labs(caption = paste0("\nMidichlorian counts for two tribes across ", 
"cities") + 

365
Factorial ANOVA: Main Effects, Interaction Effects, and Interaction Plots

Two-way or multi-way data often come from experiments with a *factorial design*. A factorial design has at least two factor variables for its independent variables, and multiple observation for every combination of these factors.

The weight gain example below show factorial data. In this example, there are three observations for each combination of *Diet* and *Country*. 
With this kind of data, we are usually interested in testing the effect of each factor variable (main effects) and then the effect of their combination (interaction effect).

For two-way data, an interaction plot shows the mean or median value for the response variable for each combination of the independent variables. This type of plot, especially if it includes error bars to indicate the variability of data within each group, gives us some understanding of the effect of the main factors and their interaction.

When main effects or interaction effects are statistically significant, post-hoc testing can be conducted to determine which groups differ significantly from other groups. With a factorial experiment, there are a few guidelines for determining when to do post-hoc testing. The following guidelines are presented for two-way data for simplicity.

- **When neither the main effects nor the interaction effect is statistically significant**, no post-hoc mean-separation testing should be conducted.

- **When one or more of the main effects are statistically significant and the interaction effect is not**, post-hoc mean-separation testing should be conducted on significant main effects only. (This is shown in the first weight gain example below)

- **When the interaction effect is statistically significant**, post-hoc mean-separation testing should be conducted on the interaction effect only. This is the case even when the main effects are also statistically significant. (This is shown in the second weight gain example below)

The final guideline above is not always followed. There are times when people will present the mean-separation tests for significant main effects even when the interaction effect is significant. In general, though, if there is a significant interaction, the mean-separation tests for interaction will better explain the results of the analysis, and the mean-separation tests for the main effects will be of less interest.

**Packages used in this chapter**

The packages used in this chapter include:

- psych
- car
- multcompView
- emmeans
- FSA
- ggplot2
- phia

The following commands will install these packages if they are not already installed:

```
if(!require(car)){install.packages("car")}
if(!require(psych)){install.packages("psych")}
if(!require(multcompView)){install.packages("multcompView")}
```
Two-way ANOVA example with interaction effect

Imagine for this example an experiment in which people were put on one of three diets to encourage weight gain. The amount of weight gained will be the dependent variable, and will be considered an interval/ratio variable. For independent variables, there are three different diets and the country in which subjects live.

The model will be fit with the `lm` function, whose syntax is similar to that of the `clm` function.

This kind of analysis makes certain assumptions about the distribution of the data, but for simplicity, this example will ignore the need to determine that the data meet these assumptions.

```r
Input =("Diet    Country  Weight_change
A       USA      0.120
A       USA      0.125
A       USA      0.112
A       UK       0.052
A       UK       0.055
A       UK       0.044
B       USA      0.096
B       USA      0.100
B       USA      0.089
B       UK       0.025
B       UK       0.029
B       UK       0.019
C       USA      0.149
C       USA      0.150
C       USA      0.142
C       UK       0.077
C       UK       0.080
C       UK       0.066
")

Data = read.table(textConnection(Input),header=TRUE)

### Order levels of the factor; otherwise R will alphabetize them

Data$Country = factor(Data$Country,
    levels=unique(Data$Country))

### Check the data frame

library(psych)

headTail(Data)
```
str(Data)

summary(Data)

### Remove unnecessary objects

rm(Input)

**Simple interaction plot**

The `interaction.plot` function creates a simple interaction plot for two-way data. The options shown indicate which variables will used for the x-axis, trace variable, and response variable. The `fun=mean` option indicates that the mean for each group will be plotted. For the meaning of other options, see `?interaction.plot`.

This style of interaction plot does not show the variability of each group mean, so it is difficult to use this style of plot to determine if there are significant differences among groups.

The plot shows that mean weight gain for each diet was lower for the UK compared with USA. And that this difference was relatively constant for each diet, as is evidenced by the lines on the plot being parallel. This suggests that there is no large or significant interaction effect. That is, the difference among diets is consistent across countries. And vice-versa, the difference in countries is consistent across diets.

A couple of other styles of interaction plot are shown at the end of this chapter.

```r
interaction.plot(x.factor     = Data$Country,
                 trace.factor = Data$Diet,
                 response     = Data$Weight_change,
                 fun = mean,
                 type="b",
                 col=c("black","red","green"),  ### Colors for levels of trace var.
                 pch=c(19, 17, 15),                 ### Symbols for levels of trace var.
                 fixed=TRUE,                       ### Order by factor order in data
                 leg.bty = "o")
```
Specify the linear model and conduct an analysis of variance

A linear model is specified with the \texttt{lm} function. \texttt{Weight\_change} is the dependent variable. \texttt{Country} and \texttt{Diet} are the independent variables, and including \texttt{Country:Diet} in the formula adds the interaction term for \texttt{Country} and \texttt{Diet} to the model.

The ANOVA table indicates that the main effects are significant, but that the interaction effect is not.

```r
model = lm(Weight\_change ~ Country + Diet + Country:Diet, data = Data)
library(car)
Anova(model, type = "II")
```

\textbf{Anova Table (Type II tests)}

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th></th>
<th>Sum Sq</th>
<th>Df</th>
<th>F value</th>
<th>Pr(&gt;F)</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>Country</td>
<td>0.022472</td>
<td>1</td>
<td>657.7171</td>
<td>7.523e-12 ***</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Diet</td>
<td>0.007804</td>
<td>2</td>
<td>114.2049</td>
<td>1.547e-08 ***</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Country:Diet</td>
<td>0.000012</td>
<td>2</td>
<td>0.1756</td>
<td>0.8411</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Residuals</td>
<td>0.000410</td>
<td>12</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

\textbf{Post-hoc testing with emmeans}

Because the main effects were significant, we will want to perform post-hoc mean separation tests for each main effect factor variable.

For this, we will use the \texttt{emmeans} package. The linear model under consideration is called \texttt{model}, created the \texttt{lm} function above. The formula in the \texttt{emmeans} function indicates that comparisons
should be conducted for the variable *Country* in the first call, and for the variable *Diet* in the second call.

```r
library(emmeans)
marginal = emmeans(model,
                   ~ Country)
pairs(marginal,
             adjust="tukey")

contrast  estimate          SE df  t.ratio  p.value
USA - UK  0.07066667 0.002755466 12  25.646  <.0001
```

```r
library(emmeans)
marginal = emmeans(model,
                   ~ Diet)
pairs(marginal,
             adjust="tukey")

contrast  estimate          SE df  t.ratio  p.value
A - B 0.025 0.003374743 12  7.408  <.0001
A - C  0.026 0.003374743 12 -7.704  <.0001
B - C  0.051 0.003374743 12  15.112  <.0001
```

**Extended example with additional country**

For the following example, the hypothetical data have been amended to include a third country, New Zealand.

```r
Input =("Diet    Country  Weight_change
A       USA      0.12
A       USA      0.125
A       USA      0.112
A       UK       0.052
A       UK       0.055
A       UK       0.044
A       NZ       0.080
A       NZ       0.090
A       NZ       0.075
B       USA      0.096
B       USA      0.100
B       USA      0.089
B       UK       0.025
B       UK       0.029
B       UK       0.019
B       NZ       0.055
B       NZ       0.065
B       NZ       0.050
C       USA      0.149
```

371
Data = read.table(textConnection(Input),header=TRUE)

### Order levels of the factor; otherwise R will alphabetize them
Data$Country = factor(Data$Country, 
                     levels=unique(Data$Country))

### Check the data frame
library(psych)
headTail(Data)
str(Data)
summary(Data)

### Remove unnecessary objects
rm(Input)

**Simple interaction plot**
The plot suggests that the effect of diet is not consistent across all three countries. While Diet C showed the greatest mean weight gain for USA and UK, for NZ it has a lower mean than Diet A. This suggests there may be a meaningful or significant interaction effect, but we will need to do a statistical test to confirm this hypothesis.

interaction.plot(x.factor = Data$Country, 
                 trace.factor = Data$Diet, 
                 response = Data$Weight_change, 
                 fun = mean, 
                 type="b", 
                 col=c("black","red","green"), 
                 pch=c(19, 17, 15), 
                 fixed=TRUE, 
                 leg.bty = "o"
Specify the linear model and conduct an analysis of variance

The ANOVA table indicates that the interaction effect is significant, as are both main effects.

```r
model = lm(Weight_change ~ Country + Diet + Country:Diet, data = Data)
library(car)
Anova(model, type = "II")
```

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Sum Sq</th>
<th>Df</th>
<th>F value</th>
<th>Pr(&gt;F)</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>Country</td>
<td>0.0256761</td>
<td>2</td>
<td>318.715</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Diet</td>
<td>0.0051534</td>
<td>2</td>
<td>63.969</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Country:Diet</td>
<td>0.0040162</td>
<td>4</td>
<td>24.926</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Residuals</td>
<td>0.0007653</td>
<td>19</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

Post-hoc testing with emmeans

Because the interaction effect was significant, we would like to compare all group means from the interaction. Even though the main effects were significant, the typical advice is to not conduct pairwise comparisons for main effects when their interaction is significant. This is because focusing on the groups in the interaction better describe the results of the analysis.

We will use the `emmeans` package, and ask for a compact letter display with the `cld` function. First we create an object, named `marginal`, with the results of the call to `emmeans`. Notice here that the formula indicates that comparisons should be conducted for the interaction of `Country` and `Diet`, indicated with `Country:Diet`. 
Be sure to read the *Estimated Marginal Means for Multiple Comparisons* chapter for correct interpretation of estimated marginal means. For lm model objects, the values for *emmean, SE, LCL,* and *UCL* values are meaningful.

```r
library(emmeans)

marginal = emmeans(model,
                    ~ Country:Diet)

pairs(marginal,
      adjust="tukey")

cld(marginal,
    alpha=0.05,
    Letters=letters,  ### Use lower-case letters for .group
    adjust="tukey"  ### Tukey-adjusted comparisons
    
    Country Diet     emmean          SE df   lower.CL   upper.CL .group
    UK      B    0.02433333 0.003664274 19 0.01291388 0.03575278  a
    UK      A    0.05033333 0.003664274 19 0.03891388 0.06175278   b
    NZ      C    0.05600000 0.003173354 19 0.04611047 0.06588953   b
    NZ      B    0.05666667 0.003664274 19 0.04524722 0.06808612   bc
    UK      C    0.07433333 0.003664274 19 0.06291388 0.08575278    cd
    NZ      A    0.08166667 0.003664274 19 0.07024722 0.09308612    de
    USA     B    0.09500000 0.003664274 19 0.08358055 0.10641945     e
    USA     A    0.11900000 0.003664274 19 0.10758055 0.13041945     f
    USA     C    0.14700000 0.003664274 19 0.13558055 0.15841945        g

Confidence level used: 0.95
Conf-level adjustment: sidak method for 9 estimates
P value adjustment: tukey method for comparing a family of 9 estimates
significance level used: alpha = 0.05

### Groups sharing a letter are not significantly different
### at the alpha = 0.05 level.

**Interaction plot with error bars using ggplot2**

The interaction plots created with the *interaction.plot* function above are handy to investigate trends in the data, but have the disadvantage of not showing the variability in data within each group.

The package *ggplot2* can be used to create attractive interaction plots with error bars. Here, we will use standard error of each mean for the error bars.

```r
### Create a data frame called Sum with means and standard deviations

library(FSA)

Sum = Summarize(Weight_change ~ Country + Diet,
                data=Data,
                digits=3)
```
### Add standard error of the mean to the Sum data frame

```r
Sum$se = Sum$sd / sqrt(Sum$n)
Sum$se = signif(Sum$se, digits=3)
```

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Country</th>
<th>Diet</th>
<th>nvalid</th>
<th>n</th>
<th>mean</th>
<th>sd</th>
<th>min</th>
<th>Q1</th>
<th>median</th>
<th>Q3</th>
<th>max</th>
<th>percZero</th>
<th>se</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>USA</td>
<td></td>
<td>3</td>
<td>3</td>
<td>0.119</td>
<td>0.007</td>
<td>0.112</td>
<td>0.116</td>
<td>0.120</td>
<td>0.122</td>
<td>0.125</td>
<td>0.00404</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>UK</td>
<td></td>
<td>3</td>
<td>3</td>
<td>0.050</td>
<td>0.006</td>
<td>0.044</td>
<td>0.048</td>
<td>0.052</td>
<td>0.054</td>
<td>0.055</td>
<td>0.00346</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>NZ</td>
<td></td>
<td>3</td>
<td>3</td>
<td>0.082</td>
<td>0.008</td>
<td>0.075</td>
<td>0.078</td>
<td>0.080</td>
<td>0.085</td>
<td>0.090</td>
<td>0.00462</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>USA</td>
<td></td>
<td>3</td>
<td>3</td>
<td>0.095</td>
<td>0.006</td>
<td>0.089</td>
<td>0.092</td>
<td>0.096</td>
<td>0.098</td>
<td>0.100</td>
<td>0.00346</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>UK</td>
<td></td>
<td>3</td>
<td>3</td>
<td>0.024</td>
<td>0.005</td>
<td>0.019</td>
<td>0.022</td>
<td>0.025</td>
<td>0.027</td>
<td>0.029</td>
<td>0.00289</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>NZ</td>
<td></td>
<td>3</td>
<td>3</td>
<td>0.057</td>
<td>0.008</td>
<td>0.050</td>
<td>0.052</td>
<td>0.055</td>
<td>0.060</td>
<td>0.065</td>
<td>0.00462</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>USA</td>
<td></td>
<td>3</td>
<td>3</td>
<td>0.147</td>
<td>0.004</td>
<td>0.142</td>
<td>0.146</td>
<td>0.149</td>
<td>0.150</td>
<td>0.150</td>
<td>0.00231</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>UK</td>
<td></td>
<td>3</td>
<td>3</td>
<td>0.074</td>
<td>0.007</td>
<td>0.066</td>
<td>0.072</td>
<td>0.077</td>
<td>0.078</td>
<td>0.080</td>
<td>0.00404</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>NZ</td>
<td></td>
<td>4</td>
<td>4</td>
<td>0.056</td>
<td>0.006</td>
<td>0.050</td>
<td>0.053</td>
<td>0.054</td>
<td>0.058</td>
<td>0.065</td>
<td>0.00300</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

### Order levels of the factor; otherwise R will alphabetize them

```r
Sum$Country = factor(Sum$Country, levels=unique(Sum$Country))
```

### Produce interaction plot

```r
library(ggplot2)
pd = position_dodge(.2)

ggplot(Sum, aes(x = Country, y = mean, color = Diet)) +
  geom_errorbar(aes(ymin = mean - se, ymax = mean + se),
                width=.2, size=0.7, position=pd) +
  geom_point(shape=15, size=4, position=pd) +
  theme_bw() +
  theme(axis.title = element_text(face = "bold")) +
  scale_colour_manual(values= c("black","red","green")) +
  ylab("Mean weight change")
```

### You may see an error, "ymax not defined"
### In this case, it does not appear to affect anything
Interaction plot with mean separation letters manually added

It is common to add mean separation letters from post-hoc analyses to interaction plots. One option is to add letters manually in either image manipulation software like Photoshop or GIMP, or in a word processor or other software that can handle graphic manipulation.

Letters can also be added to the plot by `ggplot2` with the `annotate` or `geom_text` options. See “Optional: Interaction plot of estimated marginal means with mean separation letters” in the Estimated Marginal Means for Multiple Comparisons chapter for examples.

It is probably more common for means to be lettered so that the greatest mean is indicated with $a$. However, `emmeans` by default labels the least mean with $a$. The order of letters can be reversed manually.
Plot of mean weight change for three diets in three countries. Means sharing a letter are not significantly different according to pairwise comparisons of estimated marginal means with Tukey adjustment for multiple comparisons.

**Interaction plot with the phia package**
The `phia` package can be used to create interaction plots quickly. By default the error bars indicate standard error of the means. For additional options, see `?interactionMeans`.

Note that `model` is the linear model specified above.

```r
library(phia)
IM = interactionMeans(model)
IM
```

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Country</th>
<th>Diet</th>
<th>Adjusted mean</th>
<th>std. error</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>USA</td>
<td>A</td>
<td>0.11900000</td>
<td>0.003664274</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>UK</td>
<td>A</td>
<td>0.05033333</td>
<td>0.003664274</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>NZ</td>
<td>A</td>
<td>0.08166667</td>
<td>0.003664274</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>USA</td>
<td>B</td>
<td>0.09500000</td>
<td>0.003664274</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>UK</td>
<td>B</td>
<td>0.02433333</td>
<td>0.003664274</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>NZ</td>
<td>B</td>
<td>0.05666667</td>
<td>0.003664274</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>USA</td>
<td>C</td>
<td>0.14700000</td>
<td>0.003664274</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>UK</td>
<td>C</td>
<td>0.07433333</td>
<td>0.003664274</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>NZ</td>
<td>C</td>
<td>0.05600000</td>
<td>0.003173354</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>
When developing more complex models it is often desirable to report a $p$-value for the model as a whole as well as an $R$-square for the model.

**$p$-values for models**

The $p$-value for a model determines the significance of the model compared with a null model. For a linear model, the null model is defined as the dependent variable being equal to its mean. So, the $p$-value for the model is answering the question, *Does this model explain the data significantly better than would just looking at the average value of the dependent variable?*
**R-squared and pseudo R-squared**

The *R-squared* value is a measure of how well the model explains the data. It is an example of a *goodness-of-fit* statistic.

**R-squared for linear (ordinary least squares) models**

In R, models fit with the `lm` function are linear models fit with *ordinary least squares* (OLS). For these models, *R-squared* indicates the proportion of the variability in the dependent variable that is explained by model. That is, an *R-squared* of 0.60 indicates that 60% of the variability in the dependent variable is explained by the model.

**Pseudo R-squared**

For many types of models, *R-squared* is not defined. These include relatively common models like logistic regression and the cumulative link models used in this book. For these models, pseudo *R-squared* measures can be calculated. A pseudo *R-squared* is not directly comparable to the *R-squared* for OLS models. Nor can it be interpreted as the proportion of the variability in the dependent variable that is explained by model. Instead, pseudo *R-squared* measures are relative measures among similar models indicating how well the model explains the data.

This book uses three pseudo *R-squared* measures: McFadden, Cox and Snell (also referred to as ML), Nagelkerke (also referred to as Cragg and Uhler).

In general I favor the Nagelkerke pseudo *R-squared*, but there is no agreement as to which pseudo *R-squared* measurement should be used.

**p-values and R-squared values.**

*p-values* and *R-squared* values measure different things. The *p*-value indicates if there is a significant relationship described by the model, and the *R-squared* measures the degree to which the data is explained by the model. It is therefore possible to get a significant *p*-value with a low *R-squared* value. This often happens when there is a lot of variability in the dependent variable, but there are enough data points for a significant relationship to be indicated.

**Packages used in this chapter**

The packages used in this chapter include:

- psych
- lmtest
- boot
- rcompanion

The following commands will install these packages if they are not already installed:

```
if(!require(psych)){install.packages("psych")}
if(!require(lmtest)){install.packages("lmtest")}
if(!require(boot)){install.packages("boot")}
if(!require(rcompanion)){install.packages("rcompanion")}
```
Example of model p-value, R-squared, and pseudo R-squared

The following example uses some hypothetical data of a sample of people for which typing speed (Words.per.minute) and age were measured. After plotting the data, we decide to construct a polynomial model with Words.per.minute as the dependent variable and Age and Age as the independent variables. Notice in this example that all variables are treated as interval/ratio variables, and that the independent variables are also continuous variables.

The data will first be fit with a linear model with the lm function. Passing this model to the summary function will display the p-value for the model and the R-squared value for the model.

The same data will then be fit with a generalized linear model with the glm function. This type of model allows more latitude in the types of data that can be fit, but in this example, we’ll use the family=gaussian option, which will mimic the model fit with the lm function, though the underlying math is different.

Importantly, the summary of the glm function does not produce a p-value for the model nor an R-squared for the model.

For the model fit with glm, the p-value can be determined with the anova function comparing the fitted model to a null model. The null model is fit with only an intercept term on the right side of the model. As an alternative, the nagelkerke function described below also reports a p-value for the model, using the likelihood ratio test.

There is no R-squared defined for a glm model. Instead a pseudo R-squared can be calculated. The function nagelkerke produces pseudo R-squared values for a variety of models. It reports three types: McFadden, Cox and Snell, and Nagelkerke. In general I recommend using the Nagelkerke measure, though there is no agreement on which pseudo R-squared measurement to use, if any at all.

The Nagelkerke is the same as the Cox and Snell, except that the value is adjusted upward so that the Nagelkerke has a maximum value of 1.

It has been suggested that a McFadden value of 0.2–0.4 indicates a good fit.

Note that these models makes certain assumptions about the distribution of the data, but for simplicity, this example will ignore the need to determine if the data met these assumptions.

```
Input =("Age Words.per.minute
12 23
12 32
12 25
13 27
13 30
15 29
15 33
16 37
18 29
```
```r
Data = read.table(textConnection(Input), header=TRUE)

### Check the data frame

library(psych)
headTail(Data)
str(Data)
summary(Data)

### Remove unnecessary objects

rm(Input)

Plot the data

plot(words.per.minute ~ Age,
     data = Data,
     pch=16,
     xlab = "Age",
     ylab = "Words per minute")
```

![Plot of words per minute vs age](image)
Prepare data

### Create new variable for the square of Age

```r
Data$Age2 = Data$Age ^ 2
```

### Double check data frame

```r
library(psych)
headTail(Data)
```

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Age</th>
<th>Words.per.minute</th>
<th>Age2</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>1</td>
<td>12</td>
<td>23</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>2</td>
<td>12</td>
<td>32</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>3</td>
<td>12</td>
<td>25</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>4</td>
<td>13</td>
<td>27</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>14</td>
<td>27</td>
<td>35</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>15</td>
<td>33</td>
<td>30</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>16</td>
<td>42</td>
<td>25</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>17</td>
<td>53</td>
<td>22</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

**Linear model**

```r
model = lm (Words.per.minute ~ Age + Age2, data=Data)
```

```r
summary(model)  ### Shows coefficients, p-value for model, and R-squared
```

```
Multiple R-squared:  0.5009,  Adjusted R-squared:  0.4296
F-statistic: 7.026 on 2 and 14 DF,  p-value: 0.00771
```

### p-value and (multiple) R-squared value

Simple plot of data and model

For bivariate data, the function `plotPredy` will plot the data and the predicted line for the model. It also works for polynomial functions, if the `order` option is changed.

```r
library(rcompanion)
plotPredy(data = Data, y = Words.per.minute, x = Age, x2 = Age2, model = model, order = 2,```
Generalized linear model

```r
model = glm (words.per.minute ~ Age + Age2,
             data = Data,
             family = gaussian)
```

```r
summary(model)  ### Shows coefficients
```

Calculate p-value for model

In R, the most common way to calculate the p-value for a fitted model is to compare the fitted model to a null model with the `anova` function. The null model is usually formulated with just a constant on the right side.

```r
null = glm (words.per.minute ~ 1,
            data = Data,
            family = gaussian)
```

```r
anova (model,
        null,
        test="Chisq")
```

```
Resid. Df Resid. Dev Df Deviance Pr(>Chi)
1       14     243.07
2       16     487.06 -2  -243.99 0.0008882 ***
```
Calculate pseudo $R$-squared and $p$-value for model

An alternative test for the $p$-value for a fitted model, the `nagelkerke` function will report the $p$-value for a model using the likelihood ratio test.

The `nagelkerke` function also reports the McFadden, Cox and Snell, and Nagelkerke pseudo $R$-squared values for the model.

```r
library(rcompanion)
nagelkerke(model)

$Pseudo.R.squared.for.model.vs.null
   Pseudo.R.squared
McFadden 0.112227
Cox and Snell (ML) 0.500939
Nagelkerke (Cragg and Uhler) 0.501964

$Likelihood.ratio.test
   Df.diff LogLik.diff Chisq   p.value
-2     -5.9077 11.815 0.0027184

Likelihood ratio test for $p$-value for model

The $p$-value for a model by the likelihood ratio test can also be determined with the `lrtest` function in the `lmtest` package.

```r
library(lmtest)
lrtest(model)

# Df LogLik Df Chisq Pr(>Chisq)
1   4  -46.733
2   2  -52.641 -2 11.815 0.002718 **

Simple plot of data and model

```r
library(rcompanion)
plotPredy(data = Data, 
y = Words.per.minute, 
x = Age, 
x2 = Age2, 
model = model, 
order = 2, 
xlab = "Words per minute", 
ylab = "Age", 
col = "red")
```
Optional analyses: Confidence intervals for $p$-values and R-squared values

It is relatively easy to produce confidence intervals for $p$-values, $R$-squared values, or other parameters from model fitting, such as coefficients for regression terms. This can be accomplished with bootstrapping. Here the `boot.ci` function from the `boot` package is used.

The code below is a little complicated, but relatively flexible.

`Function` can contain any function of interest, as long as it includes an input vector or data frame (`input` in this case) and an indexing variable (`index` in this case). `Stat` is set to produce the actual statistic of interest on which to perform the bootstrap (`r.squared` from the `summary` of the `lm` in this case).

The code `Function(Data, 1:n)` is there simply to test `Function` on the data frame `Data`. In this case, it will produce the output of `Function` for the first `n` rows of `Data`. Since `n` is defined as the length of the first column in `Data`, this should return the value for `Stat` for the whole data frame, if `Function` is set up correctly.

```
Input = c()
Age  words.per.minute
12   23
12   32
12   25
13   27
13   30
15   29
15   33
16   37
18   29
22   33
23   37
24   33
25   43
27   35
```
### Test Function

```r
n = length(Data[,1])
Function(Data, 1:n)

[1] 0.5009385
```

### Produce Stat estimate by bootstrap

```r
Boot = boot(Data,
            Function,
            R=5000)
```
mean(Boots[,1])

[1] 0.5754582

### Produce confidence interval by bootstrap

boot.ci(Boots,
    conf = 0.95,
    type = "perc")

### Options: "norm", "basic", "stud", "perc", "bca", "all"

BOOTSTRAP CONFIDENCE INTERVAL CALCULATIONS
Based on 1000 bootstrap replicates

Intervals:
Level       Percentile
95%  ( 0.3796,  0.7802 )
Calculations and Intervals on Original Scale

### Other information

Boot

hist(Boots[,1],
    col = "darkgray")

\textbf{p-value}

Unfortunately the \textit{p}-value for the model is not stored neatly in the \texttt{lm} model object, so it has to be calculated in the \textit{Stat} definition.

\texttt{library(boot)}

\texttt{Function = function(input, index){}
    Input = input[index,]
    Result = lm (Words.per.minute ~ Age + Age2,
               data = Input)
    Stat = pf(summary(Result)$fstatistic[1],
               summary(Result)$fstatistic[2],
               summary(Result)$fstatistic[3],
               lower.tail = FALSE)
    return(Stat)}

### Test Function

\texttt{n = length(Data[,1])}

\texttt{Function(Data, 1:n)}
### Produce Stat estimate by bootstrap

```r
Boot = boot(Data,
            Function,
            R=5000)

mean(Boot$t[,1])

[1] 0.00672866
```

### Produce confidence interval by bootstrap

```r
boot.ci(Boot,
        conf = 0.95,
        type = "perc")

### Options: "norm", "basic", "stud", "perc", "bca", "all"
```

BOOTSTRAP CONFIDENCE INTERVAL CALCULATIONS
Based on 1000 bootstrap replicates

Intervals:
Level Percentile
95% ( 0.0000, 0.0368 )
Calculations and Intervals on Original Scale

### Other information

```r
Boot

hist(Boot$t[,1],
     col = "darkgray")
```

**Generalized linear model**

**Pseudo R-squared value**

The `nagelkerke` function produces a list. The second item in the list is a matrix named `Pseudo.R.squared.for.model.vs.null`.

```r
Pseudo.R.squared.for.model.vs.null
```

The third element of this matrix is the value for the Nagelkerke pseudo R-squared. So,

```r
nagelkerke(Result, Null)[[2]][3]
```

yields the value of the Nagelkerke pseudo R-squared.
library(boot)
library(rcompanion)

Function = function(input, index){
  Input = input[index,]
  Result = glm (Words.per.minute ~ Age + Age2, 
                data = Input, 
                family="gaussian")
  Null = glm (Words.per.minute ~ 1, 
               data = Input, 
               family="gaussian")
  Stat = nagelkerke(Result, Null)[[2]][3]
  return(Stat)}

### Test Function
n = length(Data[,1])
Function(Data, 1:n)

[1] 0.501964

### Produce Stat estimate by bootstrap
Boot = boot(Data, Function, R=1000)

### In this case, even 1000 iterations can take a while
mean(Boot$t[,1])

[1] 0.5803598

### Produce confidence interval by bootstrap
boot.ci(Boot, 
       conf = 0.95, 
       type = "perc")

### Options: "norm", "basic", "stud", "perc", "bca", "all"

BOOTSTRAP CONFIDENCE INTERVAL CALCULATIONS
Based on 1000 bootstrap replicates

Intervals:
Level    Percentile
95%      ( 0.3836,  0.7860 )
Calculations and Intervals on Original Scale
### Other information

```R
Boot

hist(Boot$t[,1],
    col = "darkgray")
```

**p-value**

```R
library(boot)
library(rcompanion)

Function = function(input, index){
    Input = input[index,]
    Result = glm (Words.per.minute ~ Age + Age2,
                 data = Input,
                 family="gaussian")
    Null = glm (Words.per.minute ~ 1,
                 data = Input,
                 family="gaussian")
    Stat = nagelkerke(Result, Null)[[3]][1,4]
    return(Stat)}

### Test Function

```R
n = length(Data[,1])
Function(Data, 1:n)

[1] 0.0027184
```

### Produce Stat estimate by bootstrap

```R
Boot = boot(Data,
            Function,
            R=1000)

### In this case, even 1000 iterations can take a while

mean(Boot$t[,1])

[1] 0.002723259
```

### Produce confidence interval by bootstrap

```R
boot.ci(Boot,
        conf = 0.95,
        type = "perc")
```
### Options: "norm", "basic", "stud", "perc", "bca", "all"

BOOTSTRAP CONFIDENCE INTERVAL CALCULATIONS  
Based on 1000 bootstrap replicates

Intervals:
Level   Percentile
95% ( 0.0000,  0.0173 )
Calculations and Intervals on Original Scale

### Other information

```r
hist(Boot$t[,1],
     col = "darkgray")
```

References


---

### Accuracy and Errors for Models

Measures of accuracy and error can be used to determine how well a given model fits the data. They are distinct from the $R^2$ and pseudo $R^2$ measures discussed in the last chapter.

These statistics are useful to compare a wide variety of models where the dependent variable is continuous. In general, one would want to compare only among models with the same data for the dependent variable.

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Measure</th>
<th>Units</th>
<th>Interpretation</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>Min.max.accuracy</td>
<td>Unitless</td>
<td>1 is perfect fit</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Mean absolute error (MAE)</td>
<td>Same as variable</td>
<td>0 is perfect fit</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Mean absolute percent error (MAPE)</td>
<td>Unitless</td>
<td>0 is perfect fit</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Mean square error (MSE)</td>
<td>Square of variable units</td>
<td>0 is perfect fit</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Root mean square error (RMSE)</td>
<td>Same as variable</td>
<td>0 is perfect fit</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Normalized root mean square error (NRMSE)</td>
<td>Unitless</td>
<td>0 is perfect fit</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>NRMSE Accuracy</td>
<td>Unitless</td>
<td>1 is perfect fit</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>
Accuracy and Error for Models

Efron's R-squared

Unitless

1 is perfect fit

Packages used in this chapter

The packages used in this chapter include:
- rcompanion
- betareg
- nlme
- lme4
- quantreg
- mgcv
- MASS
- robust

The following commands will install these packages if they are not already installed:

```r
if(!require(rcompanion)){install.packages("rcompanion")}
if(!require(betareg)){install.packages("betareg")}
if(!require(nlme)){install.packages("nlme")}
if(!require(lme4)){install.packages("lme4")}
if(!require(quantreg)){install.packages("quantreg")}
if(!require(mgcv)){install.packages("mgcv")}
if(!require(MASS)){install.packages("MASS")}
if(!require(robust)){install.packages("robust")}
```

Examples of accuracy and error

The following example fits various models to the `BrendonSmall` data set in the `rcompanion` package, and then uses the `accuracy` function to produce accuracy and error statistics for these models.

Note that `model.5` has a different dependent variable than the others.

```r
### Prepare data set
library(rcompanion)
data(BrendonSmall)
BrendonSmall$Calories = as.numeric(BrendonSmall$Calories)
BrendonSmall$Sodium = as.numeric(BrendonSmall$Sodium)
BrendonSmall$Calories2 = BrendonSmall$Calories ^ 2
BrendonSmall$Sodium.ratio = BrendonSmall$Sodium / 1500
BrendonSmall$Grade = factor(BrendonSmall$Grade)
head(BrendonSmall)
```
### Fit various models

```r
model.1 = lm(Sodium ~ Calories, data = BrendonSmall)
model.2 = lm(Sodium ~ Calories + Calories2, data = BrendonSmall)
model.3 = glm(Sodium ~ Calories, data = BrendonSmall, family="Gamma")
quadplat = function(x, a, b, clx) {
  ifelse(x < clx, a + b * x + (-0.5*b/clx) * x * x,
         a + b * clx + (-0.5*b/clx) * clx * clx)
model.4 = nls(Sodium ~ quadplat(Calories, a, b, clx),
                data = BrendonSmall,
                start = list(a = 519,
                              b = 0.359,
                              clx = 2300))
library(betareg)
model.5 = betareg(Sodium.ratio ~ Calories, data = BrendonSmall)
library(nlme)
model.6 = gls(Sodium ~ Calories, data = BrendonSmall, method="REML")
model.7 = lme(Sodium ~ Calories,
              random = ~1|Instructor,
              data = BrendonSmall,
              method="REML")
library(lme4)
model.8 = lmer(Sodium ~ Calories + (1|Instructor),
               data=BrendonSmall,
               REML=TRUE)
library(lme4)
model.9 = suppressWarnings(glmer(Sodium ~ Calories + (1|Instructor),
                                   data=BrendonSmall,
                                   family = gaussian))
library(quantreg)
model.10 = rq(Sodium ~ Calories,
               data = BrendonSmall,
               tau = 0.5)
model.11 = loess(Sodium ~ Calories,
                 data = BrendonSmall,
                 span = 0.75,
```
library(mgcv)
model.12 = gam(Sodium ~ s(Calories),
data = BrendonSmall,
family=gaussian())

library(MASS)
model.13 = glm.nb(Sodium ~ Grade,
data = BrendonSmall)

library(robust)
model.14 = glmRob(Sodium ~ Grade,
data = BrendonSmall,
family = "poisson")

### Produce accuracy and error statistics

library(rcompanion)
accuracy(list(model.1, model.2, model.3, model.4, model.5, model.6,
model.7, model.8, model.9, model.10, model.11, model.12,
model.13, model.14),
plotit=TRUE, digits=3)

Note in the previous results that model.14, the glmRob model, did not fit the data well. In this case, fitting a Poisson regression model is probably not appropriate for the data here, but is included since this type of model is accepted by the accuracy function.

It is useful to examine plots of the predicted values vs. the actual values to see how well the model reflects the actual values, and to see if patterns in the plots suggest another model may be better.
The accuracy measures produced here are different in magnitude than their corresponding $R$-squared or pseudo $R$-squared measures. The following plots and captions illustrate this point.

```r
plotPredy(data = BrendonSmall, x = Calories, y = Sodium, model = model.1, xlab = "Calories", ylab = "Sodium")
summary(model.1)
```
Plot of *model.1*, a linear OLS model. *R*-squared = 0.721. Accuracy with *RMSE/median* = 0.972.

```r
plotPredy(data = BrendonSmall,
          x = Calories,
          y = Sodium,
          model = model.4,
          xlab = "Calories",
          ylab = "Sodium")

nullfunct = function(x, m){m}
m.ini = 1300

null = nls(Sodium ~ nullfunct(Calories, m),
           data = BrendonSmall,
           start = list(m = m.ini),
           trace = FALSE,
           nls.control(maxiter = 1000))
nagelkerke(model.4, null)
```
Introduction to Cumulative Link Models (CLM) for Ordinal Data

In the section on nonparametric tests in this book, each test is used for data from a specific situation or design, such as comparing groups from two-sample unpaired data, or two-sample paired data, or with an unreplicated complete block design.

Cumulative link models are a different approach to analyzing ordinal data. Models can be chosen to handle simple or more complex designs.

This approach is very powerful and flexible, and might be considered the best approach for data with ordinal dependent variables in many cases.

However, a few disadvantages to using these models are that 1) your audience may not familiar with them, 2) their results can be somewhat tricky to interpret or explain, and 3) some models won’t converge or model assumptions won’t be met for some data sets.
These models are also called *ordinal regression models*, or *proportional odds models*.

**The ordinal package**

These models and tests will use the *ordinal* package, and either of two functions, *clm* and *clmm*.

**A few notes on using cumulative link models:**

- The dependent variable must be an ordered factor variable. It does not need to have numerals for levels. For example it could have levels *doctorate > masters > bachelors > associates > high.school*. But also it could have the levels 5 > 4 > 3 > 2 > 1.

- Independent variables can be factors, ordered factors, or interval/ratio variables.

- The general interpretation for significant results of these models is that there is a significant effect of the independent variable on the dependent variable, or that there is a significant difference among groups.

- Post-hoc tests for factors or groups can be conducted with the *emmeans* package. An optional approach for post-hoc tests is to use pairwise ordinal tests of groups. These can be conducted with the functions *pairwiseOrdinalTest* and *pairwiseOrdinalPairedTest* from the *rcompanion* package.

- The *threshold = “equidistant”* and *threshold = “symmetric”* options can be used to indicate to the software that levels of the response variable are equally spaced or symmetrically spaced, respectively. This is useful to indicate when these conditions are assumed to be true, but are also useful to try if the model procedure produces errors. Likert items using symmetrical language in the range of responses could be considered symmetric. Likert items with several numbered options with anchor terms only at the ends of scale might be considered equidistant.

**Analysis of deviance**

The significance of the effects of independent variables will be tested with an *analysis of deviance* (*ANODEV*) approach. This is analogous to the *analysis of variance* (*ANOVA*) used in linear models.

**Model assumptions for CLM**

Most statistical models have some assumptions about the underlying data. In order for the model to be valid, these assumptions have to be met.

For CLM, the assumption of concern is called the *proportional odds assumption*. An explanation of this assumption can be found in the Wikipedia or IDRE articles cited below.

The ordinal package can test for the proportional odds assumption with the *nominal_test* and *scale_test* functions (Christensen 2015b). If any independent variable fails these tests (that is, a significant p-value is returned), that variable can be handled differently in the model using the *nominal* and *scale* options in the *clm* function.
Two-sample Ordinal Test with CLM

Appropriate data
- Two-sample data. That is, one-way data with two groups only
  - Dependent variable is ordered factor
  - Independent variable is a factor with two levels. That is, two groups
  - Observations between groups are independent. That is, not paired or repeated measures data

Interpretation
A significant result can be interpreted as, “There was a significant difference between groups.”
Or, “There was a significant effect of Independent Variable.”

Packages used in this chapter

The packages used in this chapter include:
- psych
- FSA
- lattice
- ordinal
- car

References

For more information on these models and the \textit{ordinal} package, see:

- Christensen, H.R.B. 2015a. \textit{Analysis of ordinal data with cumulative link models—estimation with the R-package ordinal}. \texttt{cran.r-project.org/web/packages/ordinal/vignettes/clm_intro.pdf}.
- \texttt{library(ordinal); help(package=\"ordinal\")}
- Christensen, R.H.B. 2015b. \textit{Package \textquoteleft ordinal\textquoteright}. \texttt{cran.r-project.org/web/packages/ordinal/ordinal.pdf}.
The following commands will install these packages if they are not already installed:

```r
if(!require(psych)){install.packages("psych")}
if(!require(FSA)){install.packages("FSA")}
if(!require(lattice)){install.packages("lattice")}
if(!require(ordinal)){install.packages("ordinal")}
if(!require(car)){install.packages("car")}
if(!require(RVAideMemoire)){install.packages("RVAideMemoire")}
```

**Two-sample ordinal model example**

```r
Input =("Spea\nk Likert
Pooh  3
Pooh  5
Pooh  4
Pooh  4
Pooh  4
Pooh  4
Pooh  4
Pooh  4
Pooh  4
Pooh  5
Pooh  5
Piglet 2
Piglet 4
Piglet 2
Piglet 2
Piglet 1
Piglet 2
Piglet 3
Piglet 2
Piglet 2
")
```

```r
Data = read.table(textConnection(Input),header=TRUE)
```

```r
### Create a new variable which is the Likert scores as an ordered factor

```r
Data$Likert.f = factor(Data$Likert,
                      ordered = TRUE)
```

```r
### Check the data frame

```r
library(psych)
headTail(Data)
str(Data)
```
summary(Data)

### Remove unnecessary objects
rm(Input)

**Summarize data treating Likert scores as factors**

```r
xtabs(~ Speaker + Likert.f, 
      data = Data)

Likert.f  
Speaker   1 2 3 4 5  
Piglet    1 6 2 1 0  
Pooh      0 0 1 6 3
```

```r
XT = xtabs(~ Speaker + Likert.f, 
            data = Data)

prop.table(XT,  
           margin = 1)

Likert.f  
Speaker    1   2   3   4   5  
Piglet    0.1 0.6 0.2 0.1 0.0  
Pooh      0.0 0.0 0.1 0.6 0.3
```

**Bar plots of data by group**

```r
library(lattice)

histogram(~ Likert.f | Speaker,  
          data = Data,  
          layout = c(1,2)  
          # columns and rows of individual plots
)
Summarize data treating Likert scores as numeric

```r
library(FSA)

Summarize(Likert ~ Speaker,
data=Data,
digits=3)
```

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Speaker</th>
<th>n</th>
<th>mean</th>
<th>sd</th>
<th>min</th>
<th>Q1</th>
<th>median</th>
<th>Q3</th>
<th>max</th>
<th>perczero</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>Piglet</td>
<td>10</td>
<td>2.3</td>
<td>0.823</td>
<td>1</td>
<td>2</td>
<td>2.75</td>
<td>4</td>
<td>4</td>
<td>0</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Pooh</td>
<td>10</td>
<td>4.2</td>
<td>0.632</td>
<td>3</td>
<td>4</td>
<td>4.75</td>
<td>5</td>
<td>0</td>
<td>0</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

Two-sample ordinal model example

The model is specified using formula notation. Here, \( \text{Likert.f} \) is the dependent variable and \( \text{Speaker} \) is the independent variable. The `data=` option indicates the data frame that contains the variables. For the meaning of other options, see `?clm`.

The \( p \)-value for the effect of \( \text{Speaker} \) is determined using the `Anova` function in the packages `RVAideMemoire` and `car`.

Define model

```r
library(ordinal)

model = clm(Likert.f ~ Speaker,
data = Data)
```

Analysis of deviance
library(car)

library(RVAideMemoire)

Anova(model, 
  type = "II")

Analysis of Deviance Table (Type II tests)

      LR Chisq Df Pr(>Chisq)
Speaker 17.505  1 2.866e-05 ***

Check model assumptions

nominal_test(model)

Tests of nominal effects

formula: Likert.f ~ Speaker
      Df LogLik   AIC  LRT Pr(>Chi)
<none>     -20.199 50.397
Speaker

### No p-value produced for this example.

scale_test(model)

Tests of scale effects

formula: Likert.f ~ Speaker
      Df LogLik   AIC   LRT Pr(>Chi)
<none>     -20.199 50.397
Speaker 1 -20.148 52.295 0.1019 0.7496

### No violation of model assumptions

**Two-sample Paired Ordinal Test with CLMM**

Note that the order of the data doesn't matter, as it did in the paired signed-rank test example, because here the blocking variable, *Student*, is entered explicitly in the model.

Note that the *clmm* function is used here instead of the *clm* function. The *clmm* function specifies a *mixed effects model*. This type of model is appropriate for paired and repeated measures analyses.

**Appropriate data**
- Two-sample data. That is, one-way data with two groups only
- Dependent variable is ordered factor
• Independent variable is a factor with two levels. That is, two groups
• Observations between groups are paired

Interpretation
A significant result can be interpreted as, “There was a significant difference between groups.”
Or, “There was a significant effect of Independent Variable.”

Packages used in this chapter

The packages used in this chapter include:
• psych
• ordinal
• car
• RVAideMemoire

The following commands will install these packages if they are not already installed:

```r
if(!require(psych)){install.packages("psych")}
if(!require(ordinal)){install.packages("ordinal")}
if(!require(car)){install.packages("car")}
if(!require(RVAideMemoire)){install.packages("RVAideMemoire")]}
```

Two-sample paired ordinal model example

```r
Input =("Speaker  Time  Student  Likert
Pooh  1     a        1
Pooh  1     b        4
Pooh  1     c        3
Pooh  1     d        3
Pooh  1     e        3
Pooh  1     f        3
Pooh  1     g        4
Pooh  1     h        3
Pooh  1     i        3
Pooh  1     j        3
Pooh  2     a        4
Pooh  2     b        5
Pooh  2     c        4
Pooh  2     d        5
Pooh  2     e        4
Pooh  2     f        5
Pooh  2     g        3
Pooh  2     h        4
Pooh  2     i        3
Pooh  2     j        4
")
Data = read.table(textConnection(Input),header=TRUE)
```
### Create a new variable which is the Likert scores as an ordered factor

```r
Data$Likert.f = factor(Data$Likert, 
                      ordered = TRUE)
```

### Check the data frame

```r
library(psych)
headTail(Data)
str(Data)
summary(Data)
```

### Remove unnecessary objects

```r
rm(Input)
```

**Plot the paired data**

**Scatter plot with one-to-one line**

Paired data can be visualized with a scatter plot of the paired cases. In the plot below, points that fall above and to the left of the blue line indicate cases for which the value for Time 2 was greater than for Time 1.

Note that the points in the plot are jittered slightly so that points that would fall directly on top of one another can be seen.

First, two new variables, `Time.1` and `Time.2`, are created by extracting the values of `Likert` for observations with the `Time` variable equal to 1 or 2, respectively.

Note that for this plot, the data must be ordered so that the first observation where `Time` = 1 is paired to the first observation where `Time` = 2, and so on.

```r
Time.1 = Data$Likert[Data$Time==1]
Time.2 = Data$Likert[Data$Time==2]
```

```r
plot(Time.1, jitter(Time.2), 
     pch = 16, 
     cex = 1.0, 
     xlim=c(1, 5.5), 
     ylim=c(1, 5.5), 
     xlab="Time 1", 
     ylab="Time 2")
abline(0,1, col="blue", lwd=2)  # line with intercept of 0 and slope of 1
```
Bar plot of differences
Note that for this plot, the data must be ordered so that the first observation where Time = 1 is paired to the first observation where Time = 2, and so on.

\[
\begin{align*}
\text{Time.1} &= \text{Data$Likert[Data$Time==1]} \\
\text{Time.2} &= \text{Data$Likert[Data$Time==2]} \\
\text{Difference} &= \text{Time.2} - \text{Time.1}
\end{align*}
\]

\[
\text{barplot(Difference,} \\
\text{col="dark gray",} \\
\text{xlab="Observation",} \\
\text{ylab="Difference (Time 2 – Time 1)"})
\]

Two-sample paired ordinal model
The model is specified using formula notation with the \text{clmm} function (not \text{clm}). Here, \text{Likert.f} is the dependent variable and \text{Time} is the independent variable. \text{Student} is specified as the blocking variable.
It is identified as a random variable in the mixed effects model. The \texttt{data=} option indicates the data frame that contains the variables. For the meaning of other options, see \texttt{?clmm}.

The \textit{p}-value for the effect of \textit{Time} is determined using the \textit{Anova} function in the packages \texttt{RVAideMemoire} and \texttt{car}.

\textbf{Define model}

\begin{code}
library(ordinal)
model = clmm(Likert.f ~ Time + (1|Student),
data = Data)
\end{code}

\textbf{Analysis of deviance}

\begin{code}
library(car)
library(RVAideMemoire)
Anova(model,
type = "II"
    Analysis of Deviance Table (Type II tests)
    LR Chisq Df Pr(>Chisq)
    Time  9.2033  1  0.002416 **
\end{code}

\textbf{Determine the effect of the random variable}

The effect of the random variable (\textit{Student}, in this case) can be determined by comparing the full model to a model with only the fixed effects (\textit{Time}, in this case).

First, \texttt{model.fixed} is defined, and then the two models are passed to the \texttt{anova} function.

\begin{code}
model.fixed = clm(Likert.f ~ Time,
data = Data)
anova(model,
null = model.fixed)
\end{code}

\begin{tabular}{ lrrrr }
  no.par & AIC & LogLik & LR.stat & Pr(>Chisq) \\
  model.null & 4 & 45.262 & -18.631 \\
  model & 5 & 47.242 & -18.621 & 0.02 & 1 & 0.8875 \\
\end{tabular}

\textbf{Check model assumptions}

At the time of writing, the \texttt{nominal.test} and \texttt{scale.test} functions don't work with \texttt{clmm} model objects, so we will define a similar model with \texttt{clm} and no random effects, and test the proportional odds assumption on this model. In this example, neither the \texttt{nominal.test} nor \texttt{scale.test} functions produced a \textit{p}-value, so the results of these tests are not conclusive.

\begin{code}
model.clm = clm(Likert.f ~ Time + Student,
\end{code}
One-way Ordinal Regression with CLM

Appropriate data
- One-way data with two or more groups
- Dependent variable is ordered factor
- Independent variable is a factor with at least two levels or groups
- Observations between groups are not paired or repeated measures

Interpretation
A significant result can be interpreted as, “There was a significant difference among groups.”
Or, “There was a significant effect of Independent Variable.”

A significant post-hoc analysis indicates, “There was a significant difference between Group A and Group B”, and so on.
Packages used in this chapter

The packages used in this chapter include:

- psych
- FSA
- lattice
- ordinal
- car
- RVAideMemoire
- multcompView
- emmeans
- rcompanion

The following commands will install these packages if they are not already installed:

```r
if(!require(psych)){install.packages("psych")}
if(!require(FSA)){install.packages("FSA")}
if(!require(lattice)){install.packages("lattice")}
if(!require(ordinal)){install.packages("ordinal")}
if(!require(car)){install.packages("car")}
if(!require(RVAideMemoire)){install.packages("RVAideMemoire")}
if(!require(multcompView)){install.packages("multcompView")}
if(!require(emmeans)){install.packages("emmeans")}
if(!require(rcompanion)){install.packages("rcompanion")}
```

One-way ordinal regression example

```r
Input = c("Speaker  Likert
Pooh    3
Pooh    5
Pooh    4
Pooh    4
Pooh    4
Pooh    4
Pooh    5
Pooh    5
Piglet  2
Piglet  4
Piglet  2
Piglet  2
Piglet  1
Piglet  2
Piglet  3
Piglet  2
Piglet  2
Piglet  3
Tigger  4
```

409
Tigger  4
Tigger  4
Tigger  4
Tigger  5
Tigger  3
Tigger  5
Tigger  4
Tigger  4
Tigger  3

`)  

Data = read.table(textConnection(Input),header=TRUE)

### Order levels of the factor; otherwise R will alphabetize them

Data$Speaker = factor(Data$Speaker,  
levels=unique(Data$Speaker))

### Create a new variable which is the likert scores as an ordered factor

Data$Likert.f = factor(Data$Likert,  
  ordered = TRUE)

### Check the data frame

library(psych)

headTail(Data)

str(Data)

summary(Data)

### Remove unnecessary objects

rm(Input)

---

**Summarize data treating Likert scores as factors**

xtabs(~ Speaker + Likert.f,  
data = Data)

| Likert.f | Speaker 1 2 3 4 5 | Pooh 0 0 1 6 3 | Piglet 1 6 2 1 0 | Tigger 0 0 2 6 2 |
\texttt{XT = xtabs( ~ Speaker + Likert.f, data = Data)}

\texttt{prop.table(XT, margin = 1)}

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Likert.f</th>
<th>Speaker</th>
<th>1</th>
<th>2</th>
<th>3</th>
<th>4</th>
<th>5</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>Pooh</td>
<td>0.0</td>
<td>0.0</td>
<td>0.1</td>
<td>0.6</td>
<td>0.3</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Piglet</td>
<td>0.1</td>
<td>0.6</td>
<td>0.2</td>
<td>0.1</td>
<td>0.0</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Tigger</td>
<td>0.0</td>
<td>0.0</td>
<td>0.2</td>
<td>0.6</td>
<td>0.2</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

**Bar plots by group**

\texttt{library(lattice)}

\texttt{histogram(~ Likert.f | Speaker, data=Data, layout=c(1,3) \# columns and rows of individual plots )}

**Summarize data treating Likert scores as numeric**

\texttt{library(FSA)}

\texttt{Summarize(Likert ~ Speaker, data=Data, digits=3)}
One-way ordinal regression

The model is specified using formula notation. Here, Likert.f is the dependent variable and Speaker is the independent variable. The data= option indicates the data frame that contains the variables. For the meaning of other options, see ?clm.

The p-value for the effect of Speaker is determined using the Anova function in the packages RVAideMemoire and car.

Define model

```r
library(ordinal)
model = clm(Likert.f ~ Speaker,
data = Data)
```

Analysis of deviance

```r
library(car)
library(RVAideMemoire)
Anova(model,
type = "II")
```

```
Analysis of Deviance Table (Type II tests)

           LR Chisq Df Pr(>Chisq)
Speaker 23.395  2 8.315e-06 ***
```

Post-hoc test with emmeans

In the emmeans function, model specifies the model object that was previously fitted. Note the specialized formula where pairwise indicates that all pairwise comparisons should be conducted, and Instructor indicates the variable whose levels will be compared.

Here we’ll create an object of the emmeans output called marginal. Then we’ll pass this object to the cld function to create a compact letter display.

Be sure to read the Estimated Marginal Means for Multiple Comparisons chapter for correct interpretation of estimated marginal means. For clm model objects, the emmean, SE, LCL, and UCL values should be ignored, unless specific options in emmeans are selected.

### Speaker n mean sd min Q1 median Q3 max percZero
1 Pooh 10 4.2 0.632 3 4 4.75 5 0
2 Piglet 10 2.3 0.823 1 2 2.75 4 0
3 Tigger 10 4.0 0.667 3 4 4.00 5 0
library(multcompView)
library(emmeans)

marginal = emmeans(model,
                   ~ Speaker)

pairs(marginal,
      adjust="tukey")

cld(marginal,
    alpha=0.05,
    Letters=letters,
    adjust="tukey")

Speaker  emmean        SE df  asymp.LCL  asymp.UCL .group
Piglet   -1.783599 0.7755958 NA -3.6355182 0.06832068 a
Tigger   2.526492 0.8413200 NA  0.5176407 4.53534421   b
Pooh     3.160223 0.8912968 NA  1.0320404 5.28840661   b

Confidence level used: 0.95
Conf-level adjustment: sidak method for 3 estimates
P value adjustment: tukey method for comparing a family of 3 estimates
significance level used: alpha = 0.05

### Groups sharing a letter in .group are not significantly different
### Remember to ignore “emmean”, “SE”, “LCL”, and “UCL” for CLM

Check model assumptions

nominal_test(model)

Tests of nominal effects

formula: Likert.f ~ Speaker
          Df  logLik    AIC LRT Pr(>Chi)
<none>   -30.149 72.298
Speaker

### No p-value

scale_test(model)

Tests of scale effects

formula: Likert.f ~ Speaker
          Df  logLik    AIC LRT Pr(>Chi)
<none>   -30.149 72.298
Speaker  2 -29.839 75.677 0.62096  0.7331

### No violation in assumptions

413
Optional analyses

Post-hoc test: pairwise ordinal tests for multiple comparisons of groups

Table format
Post-hoc testing can be conducted with the `pairwiseOrdinalTest` function in the `rcompanion` package, which produces a table of $p$-values comparing each pair of groups, or with `pairwiseOrdinalMatrix` function, which produces a matrix of $p$-values. This can then be converted into a compact letter display.

To prevent the inflation of type I error rates, adjustments to the $p$-values can be made using the `p.adjust.method` option. See `?p.adjust` for details on available $p$-value adjustment methods.

```r
### Order groups by median
Data$Speaker = factor(Data$Speaker, 
    levels=c("Pooh", "Tigger", "Piglet"))

### Pairwise ordinal regression tests
library(rcompanion)
PT = pairwiseOrdinalTest(Likert.f ~ Speaker, 
    data = Data, 
    method = "fdr")
# Adjusts p-values for multiple comparisons;
# See `?p.adjust` for options
PT

Comparison  p.value  p.adjust
1 Pooh - Tigger = 0  0.4763 4.763e-01
2 Pooh - Piglet = 0  2.866e-05 8.598e-05
3 Tigger - Piglet = 0  9.477e-05 1.422e-04

#### Compact letter display
library(rcompanion)
cldList(p.adjust ~ Comparison, 
    data = PT, 
    threshold = 0.05)

Group Letter MonoLetter
1 Pooh      a         a
2 Tigger      a         a
3 Piglet      b          b

Groups sharing a letter are not significantly different (alpha = 0.05).
```
Matrix format and compact letter display
Usually you would want to first order your treatment variable (Speaker) by median or other location statistic for the letters in the compact letter display to be in their proper order.

### Order groups by median

```r
Data$Speaker = factor(Data$Speaker,
                      levels=c("Pooh", "Tigger", "Piglet"))
```

### Pairwise ordinal regression tests

```r
library(rcompanion)
PM = pairwiseOrdinalMatrix(Likert.f ~ Speaker,
                           data = Data,
                           method = "fdr")
# Adjusts p-values for multiple comparisons;
# See ?p.adjust for options
PM
```

```
$Adjusted
       Pooh   Tigger  Piglet
Pooh  1.000e+00 0.4763000 8.598e-05
Tigger 4.763e-01 1.0000000 1.422e-04
Piglet 8.598e-05 0.0001422 1.000e+00
```

```r
library(multcompView)
multcompLetters(PM$Adjusted,
                compare="<",
                threshold=0.05,  # p-value to use as significance threshold
                Letters=letters,
                reversed = FALSE)
```

```
Pooh Tigger Piglet
"a"   "a"    "b"
```

### Values sharing a letter are not significantly different

---

**One-way Repeated Ordinal Regression with CLMM**
Appropriate data

- Two-way data with one treatment variable and one blocking variable
- Dependent variable is ordered factor
- Treatment variable is a factor with at least two levels or groups
- Blocking variable is a factor with at least two levels
- Observations can be paired or repeated measures within blocks

Interpretation

A significant result can be interpreted as, “There was a significant difference among groups.”
Or, “There was a significant effect of Independent Variable.”

A significant post-hoc analysis indicates e.g. “There was a significant difference between Group A and Group B”, and so on.

Packages used in this chapter

The packages used in this chapter include:

- psych
- FSA
- lattice
- ordinal
- car
- RVAideMemoire
- multcompView
- emmeans
- rcompanion

The following commands will install these packages if they are not already installed:

if(!require(psych)){install.packages("psych")}
if(!require(FSA)){install.packages("FSA")}
if(!require(lattice)){install.packages("lattice")}
if(!require(ordinal)){install.packages("ordinal")}
if(!require(car)){install.packages("car")}
if(!require(RVAideMemoire)){install.packages("RVAideMemoire")}
if(!require(multcompView)){install.packages("multcompView")}
if(!require(emmeans)){install.packages("emmeans")}
if(!require(rcompanion)){install.packages("rcompanion")}

One-way repeated ordinal regression example

In this example, we want to determine if there is a difference in scores among five instructors from the Belcher family. Because we know which rater gave each score, we will use the Rater as a blocking variable, with the suspicion that one rater might rate consistently higher than another one. If we hadn’t recorded this information about raters, we could use a one-way ordinal regression.

Input = ("
Instructor    Rater    Likert

416
'Bob Belcher' a  4  
'Bob Belcher' b  5  
'Bob Belcher' c  4  
'Bob Belcher' d  6  
'Bob Belcher' e  6  
'Bob Belcher' f  6  
'Bob Belcher' g  10 
'Bob Belcher' h  6  
'Linda Belcher' a  8  
'Linda Belcher' b  6  
'Linda Belcher' c  8  
'Linda Belcher' d  8  
'Linda Belcher' e  8  
'Linda Belcher' f  7  
'Linda Belcher' g  10 
'Linda Belcher' h  9  
'Tina Belcher' a  7  
'Tina Belcher' b  5  
'Tina Belcher' c  7  
'Tina Belcher' d  8  
'Tina Belcher' e  8  
'Tina Belcher' f  9  
'Tina Belcher' g  10 
'Tina Belcher' h  9  
'Gene Belcher' a  6  
'Gene Belcher' b  4  
'Gene Belcher' c  5  
'Gene Belcher' d  5  
'Gene Belcher' e  6  
'Gene Belcher' f  6  
'Gene Belcher' g  5  
'Gene Belcher' h  5  
'Louise Belcher' a  8  
'Louise Belcher' b  7  
'Louise Belcher' c  8  
'Louise Belcher' d  8  
'Louise Belcher' e  9  
'Louise Belcher' f  9  
'Louise Belcher' g  8  
'Louise Belcher' h  10 

Data = read.table(textConnection(Input),header=TRUE)

### Order levels of the factor; otherwise R will alphabetize them
Data$Instructor = factor(Data$Instructor, 
levels=unique(Data$Instructor))

### Create a new variable which is the likert scores as an ordered factor
Data$Likert.f = factor(Data$Likert, 
ordered=TRUE)
### Check the data frame

```r
library(psych)
headTail(Data)
str(Data)
summary(Data)
```

### Remove unnecessary objects

```r
rm(Input)
```

### Summarize data treating Likert scores as factors

```r
XT = xtabs(~ Instructor + Likert.f, 
data = Data)

XT

|| 4 | 5 | 6 | 7 | 8 | 9 | 10 |
---|---|---|---|---|---|---|----|
Bob Belcher | 2 | 1 | 4 | 0 | 0 | 0 | 1 |
Linda Belcher | 0 | 0 | 1 | 1 | 4 | 1 | 1 |
Tina Belcher | 0 | 1 | 0 | 2 | 2 | 2 | 1 |
Gene Belcher | 1 | 4 | 3 | 0 | 0 | 0 | 0 |
Louise Belcher | 0 | 0 | 0 | 1 | 4 | 2 | 1 |

prop.table(XT, 
margin = 1)

```

### Bar plots by group

Note that the bar plots don’t show the effect of the blocking variable.

```r
library(lattice)

histogram(~ Likert.f | Instructor,
```

```r
```
Summarize data treating Likert scores as numeric

library(FSA)

Summarize(Likert ~ Instructor,
data=Data,
digits=3)

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Instructor</th>
<th>n</th>
<th>mean</th>
<th>sd</th>
<th>min</th>
<th>Q1</th>
<th>median</th>
<th>Q3</th>
<th>max</th>
<th>percZero</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>Bob Belcher</td>
<td>8</td>
<td>5.875</td>
<td>1.885</td>
<td>4</td>
<td>4.75</td>
<td>6.00</td>
<td>6</td>
<td>10</td>
<td>0</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Linda Belcher</td>
<td>8</td>
<td>8.000</td>
<td>1.195</td>
<td>6</td>
<td>7.75</td>
<td>8.25</td>
<td>8</td>
<td>10</td>
<td>0</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Tina Belcher</td>
<td>8</td>
<td>7.875</td>
<td>1.553</td>
<td>5</td>
<td>7.00</td>
<td>8.00</td>
<td>8.25</td>
<td>10</td>
<td>0</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Gene Belcher</td>
<td>8</td>
<td>5.250</td>
<td>0.707</td>
<td>4</td>
<td>5.00</td>
<td>6.00</td>
<td>6</td>
<td>10</td>
<td>0</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Louise Belcher</td>
<td>8</td>
<td>8.375</td>
<td>0.916</td>
<td>7</td>
<td>8.00</td>
<td>9.00</td>
<td>9</td>
<td>10</td>
<td>0</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

One-way repeated ordinal regression

The model is specified using formula notation with the `clmm` function (not `clm`). Here, `Likert.f` is the dependent variable, and an ordered factor in R, and `Instructor` is the independent variable. `Rater` is specified as the blocking variable. Technically, it is identified as the random variable in the mixed
model. The data= option indicates the data frame that contains the variables. For the meaning of other options, see ?clmm.

The p-value for the effect of Instructor is determined using the Anova function in the packages RVAideMemoire and car.

**Define model and conduct analysis of deviance**

Here the threshold = "equidistant" option is used in order to avoid errors in the optional post-hoc tests. This option does not need to be used routinely.

```r
library(ordinal)

model = clmm(Likert.f ~ Instructor + (1|Rater),
              data = Data,
              threshold = "equidistant")

library(car)
library(RVAideMemoire)

Anova(model,
      type = "II")
```

Analysis of Deviance Table (Type II tests)

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>LR Chisq Df Pr(&gt;Chisq)</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>Instructor 38.51 4 8.794e-08 ***</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

**Determine the effect of the random variable**

The effect of the random variable (Rater, in this case) can be determined by comparing the full model to a model with only the fixed effects (Instructor, in this case).

First, model.fixed is defined, and then the two models are passed to the anova function.

```
model.fixed = clm(Likert.f ~ Instructor,
                  data = Data,
                  threshold = "equidistant")

anova(model,
       null = model.fixed)
```

Likelihood ratio tests of cumulative link models:

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>no.par AIC logLik LR.stat df Pr(&gt;Chisq)</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>model.fixed  6 135.19 -61.596</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>model  7 129.46 -57.732  7.7275 1  0.005439 **</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>
Check model assumptions
At the time of writing, the nominal_test and scale_test functions don’t work with clmm model objects, so we will define a similar model with clm and no random effects, and test the proportional odds assumption on this model.

```r
model.clm = clm(Likert.f ~ Instructor + Rater,
data = Data,
threshold = "equidistant")

nominal_test(model.clm)
```

Tests of nominal effects

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th></th>
<th>logLik</th>
<th>AIC</th>
<th>LRT</th>
<th>Pr(&gt;Chi)</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>&lt;none&gt;</td>
<td>-47.032</td>
<td>120.06</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Instructor</td>
<td>-42.680</td>
<td>119.36</td>
<td>8.7053</td>
<td>0.0689 *</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Rater</td>
<td>-39.544</td>
<td>119.09</td>
<td>14.9766</td>
<td>0.0363 *</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

### No violation in assumptions for Instructor.
### We can ignore Rater since it was a random effect in the original model.

```r
scale_test(model.clm)
```

Warning messages:
1: (-2) Model failed to converge: degenerate Hessian with 1 negative eigenvalues
In addition: maximum number of consecutive Newton modifications reached

### This test failed. It would be possible to adjust the fitting parameters, and try to get the model to converge.

**Post-hoc comparisons with emmeans**
Because the main effect of Instructor in the model was significant, we want to know which instructor has statistically different scores than which other instructors. Comparing EM means for each instructor will allow us to do this.

Be sure to read the Estimated Marginal Means for Multiple Comparisons chapter for correct interpretation of estimated marginal means. For clmm model objects, the emmean, SE, LCL, and UCL values should be ignored, unless specific options in emmeans are selected.

Here we'll create an object of the emmeans output called marginal. Then we'll pass this object to the cld function to create a compact letter display.

The ordinal model under consideration is called model, created with the clmm function above. The formula in the emmeans function indicates that pairwise comparisons should be conducted for the variable Instructor.

```r
library(multcompView)
library(emmeans)
```
### One-way Repeated Ordinal Regression with CLMM

```
marginal = emmeans(model, ~ Instructor)
pairs(marginal, adjust="tukey")
cld(marginal, alpha=0.05, Letters=letters, adjust="tukey")
```  

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Instructor</th>
<th>emmean</th>
<th>SE</th>
<th>df</th>
<th>asymp.LCL</th>
<th>asymp.UCL</th>
<th>.group</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>Gene Belcher</td>
<td>-3.957035</td>
<td>0.96</td>
<td>NA</td>
<td>-6.4257521</td>
<td>-1.4883188</td>
<td>a</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Bob Belcher</td>
<td>-2.893186</td>
<td>0.89</td>
<td>NA</td>
<td>-5.1742153</td>
<td>-0.6121576</td>
<td>a</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Tina Belcher</td>
<td>2.018826</td>
<td>0.70</td>
<td>NA</td>
<td>0.2136007</td>
<td>3.8240505</td>
<td>b</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Linda Belcher</td>
<td>2.378266</td>
<td>0.74</td>
<td>NA</td>
<td>0.4728901</td>
<td>4.2836425</td>
<td>b</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Louise Belcher</td>
<td>3.329647</td>
<td>0.85</td>
<td>NA</td>
<td>1.1538560</td>
<td>5.5054375</td>
<td>b</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

Results are averaged over the levels of: Rater  
Confidence level used: 0.95  
Conf-level adjustment: sidak method for 5 estimates  
P value adjustment: tukey method for comparing a family of 5 estimates  
significance level used: alpha = 0.05  

### Optional analyses

**Post-hoc test: pairwise paired ordinal tests for multiple comparisons**  
A post-hoc analysis can be accomplished with the `pairwiseOrdinalPairedTest` or `pairwiseOrdinalPairedMatrix` functions. These functions extract the p-values from paired cumulative link models for each pair of treatments.

Usually you would want to first order your treatment variable (`Speaker`) by median or other location statistic for the letters in the compact letter display to be in their proper order.

Note that for this function, the data must be ordered by the blocking variable so that the first observation where `Instructor = Bob` is paired to the first observation where `Instructor = Linda`, and so on.

Here the p-values for the pairwise comparisons are adjusted with the `fdr` method. See `?p.adjust` for options and details on p-value adjustment methods.

Here the `threshold = "equidistant"` option is used in order to avoid errors. This option does not need to be used routinely.

```
### Order groups by median
```
Data$Instructor = factor(Data$Instructor,
    levels = c("Linda Belcher", "Louise Belcher",
                "Tina Belcher", "Bob Belcher",
                "Gene Belcher"))

### Pairwise ordinal regression tests

library(rcompanion)

PT = pairwiseOrdinalPairedTest(Likert.f ~ Instructor | Rater,
    data      = Data,
    threshold = "equidistant",
    method    = "fdr")
# Adjusts p-values for multiple comparisons;
# See ?p.adjust for options

PT

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th></th>
<th>Comparison</th>
<th>p.value</th>
<th>p.adjust</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>1</td>
<td>Linda Belcher - Louise Belcher = 0</td>
<td>0.3565</td>
<td>4.456e-01</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>2</td>
<td>Linda Belcher - Tina Belcher = 0</td>
<td>0.5593</td>
<td>5.593e-01</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>3</td>
<td>Linda Belcher - Bob Belcher = 0</td>
<td>0.00231</td>
<td>3.850e-03</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>4</td>
<td>Linda Belcher - Gene Belcher = 0</td>
<td>1.485e-05</td>
<td>7.425e-05</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>5</td>
<td>Louise Belcher - Tina Belcher = 0</td>
<td>0.2347</td>
<td>3.353e-01</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>6</td>
<td>Louise Belcher - Bob Belcher = 0</td>
<td>0.001071</td>
<td>2.142e-03</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>7</td>
<td>Louise Belcher - Gene Belcher = 0</td>
<td>1.247e-07</td>
<td>1.247e-06</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>8</td>
<td>Tina Belcher - Bob Belcher = 0</td>
<td>0.001013</td>
<td>2.142e-03</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>9</td>
<td>Tina Belcher - Gene Belcher = 0</td>
<td>0.0001283</td>
<td>4.277e-04</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>10</td>
<td>Bob Belcher - Gene Belcher = 0</td>
<td>0.5152</td>
<td>5.593e-01</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

### Compact letter display

library(rcompanion)

cldList(p.adjust ~ Comparison,
    data = PT,
    threshold  = 0.05)

Group Letter MonoLetter
1 LindaBelcher a a
2 LouiseBelcher a a
3 TinaBelcher a a
4 BobBelcher b b
5 GeneBelcher b b

Groups sharing a letter are not significantly different (alpha = 0.05).

Matrix output and compact letter display

### Order groups by median

Data$Instructor = factor(Data$Instructor,
    levels = c("Linda Belcher", "Louise Belcher",
                "Tina Belcher", "Bob Belcher",
                "Gene Belcher"))
### Pairwise ordinal regression tests

```r
library(rcompanion)

PM = pairwiseOrdinalPairedMatrix(Likert.f ~ Instructor | Rater,
                                 data = Data,
                                 threshold = "equidistant",
                                 method = "fdr")

# Adjusts p-values for multiple comparisons;
# See ?p.adjust for options

PM
```

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Instructor</th>
<th>Linda Belcher</th>
<th>Louise Belcher</th>
<th>Tina Belcher</th>
<th>Bob Belcher</th>
<th>Gene Belcher</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>Linda Belcher</td>
<td>1.000e+00</td>
<td>4.456e-01</td>
<td>0.5593000</td>
<td>0.003850</td>
<td>7.425e-05</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Louise Belcher</td>
<td>4.456e-01</td>
<td>1.000e+00</td>
<td>0.3353000</td>
<td>0.002142</td>
<td>1.247e-06</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Tina Belcher</td>
<td>5.593e-01</td>
<td>3.353e-01</td>
<td>1.0000000</td>
<td>0.002142</td>
<td>4.277e-04</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Bob Belcher</td>
<td>3.850e-03</td>
<td>2.142e-03</td>
<td>0.0021420</td>
<td>1.000000</td>
<td>5.593e-01</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Gene Belcher</td>
<td>7.425e-05</td>
<td>1.247e-06</td>
<td>0.0004277</td>
<td>0.559300</td>
<td>1.000e+00</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

```r
library(multcompView)

multcompLetters(PM$Adjusted,
                 compare = "<",
                 threshold = 0.05,  # p-value to use as significance threshold
                 Letters = letters,
                 reversed = FALSE)
```

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Instructor</th>
<th>Linda Belcher</th>
<th>Louise Belcher</th>
<th>Tina Belcher</th>
<th>Bob Belcher</th>
<th>Gene Belcher</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>Linda Belcher</td>
<td>&quot;a&quot;</td>
<td>&quot;a&quot;</td>
<td>&quot;a&quot;</td>
<td>&quot;b&quot;</td>
<td>&quot;b&quot;</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Louise Belcher</td>
<td>&quot;a&quot;</td>
<td>&quot;a&quot;</td>
<td>&quot;a&quot;</td>
<td>&quot;b&quot;</td>
<td>&quot;b&quot;</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Tina Belcher</td>
<td>&quot;a&quot;</td>
<td>&quot;a&quot;</td>
<td>&quot;a&quot;</td>
<td>&quot;b&quot;</td>
<td>&quot;b&quot;</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Bob Belcher</td>
<td>&quot;b&quot;</td>
<td>&quot;b&quot;</td>
<td>&quot;b&quot;</td>
<td>&quot;a&quot;</td>
<td>&quot;a&quot;</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Gene Belcher</td>
<td>&quot;b&quot;</td>
<td>&quot;b&quot;</td>
<td>&quot;b&quot;</td>
<td>&quot;a&quot;</td>
<td>&quot;a&quot;</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

### Two-way Ordinal Regression with CLM

A two-way ordinal analysis of variance can address an experimental design with two independent variables, each of which is a factor variable. The main effect of each independent variable can be tested, as well as the effect of the interaction of the two factors.

The example here looks at ratings for three instructors across four different questions. The analysis will attempt to answer the questions: a) Is there a significant difference in scores for different instructors? b) Is there a significant difference in scores for different questions? c) Is there a significant interaction effect of Instructor and Question?
Main effects and interaction effects are explained further in the *Factorial ANOVA: Main Effects, Interaction Effects, and Interaction Plots* chapter.

The *clm* function can specify more complex models with multiple independent variables of different types, but this book will not explore more complex examples.

The p-values for the main and interaction effects can be determined with the *Anova* function from *RVAideMemoire*, which produces an analysis of deviance table for these effects. In addition, a p-value for the model as a whole will be determined, along with a pseudo *R*-squared for the model as a whole.

Post-hoc analysis to determine which groups are different can be conducted on each significant main effect and on the interaction effect if it is significant.

**Appropriate data**
- Two-way data
- Dependent variable is ordered factor
- Independent variables are factors with at least two levels or groups each
- Observations between groups are not paired or repeated measures

**Interpretation**
- A significant main effect can be interpreted as, “There was a significant difference among groups.” Or, “There was a significant effect of Independent Variable.”

- A significant interaction effect can be interpreted as, “There was a significant interaction effect between Independent Variable A and Independent Variable B.”

- A significant post-hoc analysis indicates, “There was a significant difference between Group A and Group B”, and so on.

**Packages used in this chapter**

The packages used in this chapter include:
- psych
- FSA
- lattice
- ggplot2
- ordinal
- car
- RVAideMemoire
- multcompView
- emmeans
- rcompanion

The following commands will install these packages if they are not already installed:

```r
if(!require(psych)){install.packages("psych")}
```
Two-way Ordinal Regression with CLM

Summary and Analysis of Extension Education Program Evaluation in R

if(!require(FSA)){install.packages("FSA")}
if(!require(lattice)){install.packages("lattice")}
if(!require(ggplot2)){install.packages("ggplot2")}
if(!require(ordinal)){install.packages("ordinal")}
if(!require(car)){install.packages("car")}
if(!require(RVAideMemoire)){install.packages("RVAideMemoire")}
if(!require(multcompView)){install.packages("multcompView")}
if(!require(emmeans)){install.packages("emmeans")}
if(!require(rcompanion)){install.packages("rcompanion")}

Two-way ordinal regression example

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Instructor</th>
<th>Question</th>
<th>Likert</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>Fuu</td>
<td>Informative</td>
<td>8</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Fuu</td>
<td>Informative</td>
<td>9</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Fuu</td>
<td>Informative</td>
<td>9</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Fuu</td>
<td>Informative</td>
<td>8</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Fuu</td>
<td>Delivery</td>
<td>10</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Fuu</td>
<td>Delivery</td>
<td>9</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Fuu</td>
<td>Delivery</td>
<td>8</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Fuu</td>
<td>Delivery</td>
<td>8</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Fuu</td>
<td>VisualAides</td>
<td>7</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Fuu</td>
<td>VisualAides</td>
<td>7</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Fuu</td>
<td>VisualAides</td>
<td>6</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Fuu</td>
<td>VisualAides</td>
<td>7</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Fuu</td>
<td>AnswerQuest</td>
<td>8</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Fuu</td>
<td>AnswerQuest</td>
<td>9</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Fuu</td>
<td>AnswerQuest</td>
<td>9</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Fuu</td>
<td>AnswerQuest</td>
<td>8</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Jin</td>
<td>Informative</td>
<td>7</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Jin</td>
<td>Informative</td>
<td>8</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Jin</td>
<td>Informative</td>
<td>6</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Jin</td>
<td>Informative</td>
<td>5</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Jin</td>
<td>Delivery</td>
<td>8</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Jin</td>
<td>Delivery</td>
<td>8</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Jin</td>
<td>Delivery</td>
<td>9</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Jin</td>
<td>Delivery</td>
<td>6</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Jin</td>
<td>VisualAides</td>
<td>5</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Jin</td>
<td>VisualAides</td>
<td>6</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Jin</td>
<td>VisualAides</td>
<td>7</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Jin</td>
<td>VisualAides</td>
<td>7</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Jin</td>
<td>AnswerQuest</td>
<td>8</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Jin</td>
<td>AnswerQuest</td>
<td>7</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Jin</td>
<td>AnswerQuest</td>
<td>6</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Jin</td>
<td>AnswerQuest</td>
<td>6</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Mugen</td>
<td>Informative</td>
<td>5</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Mugen</td>
<td>Informative</td>
<td>4</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Mugen</td>
<td>Informative</td>
<td>3</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Mugen</td>
<td>Informative</td>
<td>4</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Mugen</td>
<td>Delivery</td>
<td>8</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Mugen</td>
<td>Delivery</td>
<td>9</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Mugen</td>
<td>Delivery</td>
<td>8</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>
```r
Data = read.table(textConnection(Input), header=TRUE)

### Order levels of the factor; otherwise R will alphabetize them
Data$Instructor = factor(Data$Instructor,
                           levels=unique(Data$Instructor))

### Create a new variable which is the likert scores as an ordered factor
Data$Likert.f = factor(Data$Likert,
                          ordered = TRUE)

### Check the data frame
library(psych)
headTail(Data)
str(Data)
summary(Data)

### Remove unnecessary objects
rm(Input)

**Summarize data treating Likert scores as factors**

``xtabs(~ Instructor + Likert.f, data = Data)`

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Likert.f</th>
<th>Instructor</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>Fuu</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>3</td>
<td>0</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>4</td>
<td>0</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>5</td>
<td>0</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>6</td>
<td>1</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>7</td>
<td>3</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>8</td>
<td>6</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>9</td>
<td>5</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>10</td>
<td>1</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>
``
xtabs(~ Question + Likert.f, 
       data = Data)

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Likert.f</th>
<th>Question</th>
<th>3</th>
<th>4</th>
<th>5</th>
<th>6</th>
<th>7</th>
<th>8</th>
<th>9</th>
<th>10</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>AnswerQuest</td>
<td>0</td>
<td>0</td>
<td>0</td>
<td>4</td>
<td>3</td>
<td>3</td>
<td>2</td>
<td>0</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>Delivery</td>
<td>0</td>
<td>0</td>
<td>0</td>
<td>1</td>
<td>1</td>
<td>6</td>
<td>3</td>
<td>1</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>Informative</td>
<td>1</td>
<td>2</td>
<td>1</td>
<td>1</td>
<td>3</td>
<td>2</td>
<td>0</td>
<td>0</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>VisualAides</td>
<td>0</td>
<td>2</td>
<td>3</td>
<td>2</td>
<td>5</td>
<td>0</td>
<td>0</td>
<td>0</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

xtabs(~ Instructor + Likert.f + Question, 
       data = Data)

, , Question = AnswerQuest

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Likert.f</th>
<th>Instructor</th>
<th>3</th>
<th>4</th>
<th>5</th>
<th>6</th>
<th>7</th>
<th>8</th>
<th>9</th>
<th>10</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>Fuu</td>
<td>0</td>
<td>0</td>
<td>0</td>
<td>0</td>
<td>2</td>
<td>2</td>
<td>0</td>
<td>0</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>Jin</td>
<td>0</td>
<td>0</td>
<td>0</td>
<td>2</td>
<td>1</td>
<td>1</td>
<td>0</td>
<td>0</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>Mugen</td>
<td>0</td>
<td>0</td>
<td>0</td>
<td>2</td>
<td>2</td>
<td>0</td>
<td>0</td>
<td>0</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

, , Question = Delivery

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Likert.f</th>
<th>Instructor</th>
<th>3</th>
<th>4</th>
<th>5</th>
<th>6</th>
<th>7</th>
<th>8</th>
<th>9</th>
<th>10</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>Fuu</td>
<td>0</td>
<td>0</td>
<td>0</td>
<td>0</td>
<td>2</td>
<td>1</td>
<td>0</td>
<td>0</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>Jin</td>
<td>0</td>
<td>0</td>
<td>0</td>
<td>1</td>
<td>0</td>
<td>2</td>
<td>1</td>
<td>0</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>Mugen</td>
<td>0</td>
<td>0</td>
<td>0</td>
<td>0</td>
<td>1</td>
<td>2</td>
<td>1</td>
<td>0</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

, , Question = Informative

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Likert.f</th>
<th>Instructor</th>
<th>3</th>
<th>4</th>
<th>5</th>
<th>6</th>
<th>7</th>
<th>8</th>
<th>9</th>
<th>10</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>Fuu</td>
<td>0</td>
<td>0</td>
<td>0</td>
<td>0</td>
<td>2</td>
<td>2</td>
<td>0</td>
<td>0</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>Jin</td>
<td>0</td>
<td>0</td>
<td>0</td>
<td>1</td>
<td>1</td>
<td>1</td>
<td>0</td>
<td>0</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>Mugen</td>
<td>1</td>
<td>2</td>
<td>1</td>
<td>0</td>
<td>0</td>
<td>0</td>
<td>0</td>
<td>0</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

, , Question = VisualAides

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Likert.f</th>
<th>Instructor</th>
<th>3</th>
<th>4</th>
<th>5</th>
<th>6</th>
<th>7</th>
<th>8</th>
<th>9</th>
<th>10</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>Fuu</td>
<td>0</td>
<td>0</td>
<td>0</td>
<td>1</td>
<td>3</td>
<td>0</td>
<td>0</td>
<td>0</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>Jin</td>
<td>0</td>
<td>0</td>
<td>1</td>
<td>2</td>
<td>0</td>
<td>0</td>
<td>0</td>
<td>0</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>Mugen</td>
<td>0</td>
<td>2</td>
<td>2</td>
<td>0</td>
<td>0</td>
<td>0</td>
<td>0</td>
<td>0</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

**Bar plots by group**

library(lattice)

histogram(~ Likert.f | Instructor, 
          data=Data, 
          layout=c(1,3)    # columns and rows of individual plots )
library(lattice)

histogram(~ Likert.f | Question,
         data=Data,
         layout=c(1,4)          # columns and rows of individual plots
)
library(lattice)

histogram(~ Likert.f | Instructor + Question, 
    data=Data, 
    layout=c(3,4)        # columns and rows of individual plots)
Summarize data treating Likert scores as numeric

```R
library(FSA)
Summarize(Likert ~ Instructor,
data=Data,
digits=3)
```

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Instructor</th>
<th>n</th>
<th>mean</th>
<th>sd</th>
<th>min</th>
<th>Q1</th>
<th>median</th>
<th>Q3</th>
<th>max</th>
<th>percZero</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>Fuu</td>
<td>16</td>
<td>8.125</td>
<td>1.025</td>
<td>6</td>
<td>7.75</td>
<td>8.0</td>
<td>9</td>
<td>10</td>
<td>0</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Jin</td>
<td>16</td>
<td>6.812</td>
<td>1.167</td>
<td>5</td>
<td>6.00</td>
<td>7.0</td>
<td>8</td>
<td>9</td>
<td>0</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Mugen</td>
<td>16</td>
<td>5.750</td>
<td>1.770</td>
<td>3</td>
<td>4.00</td>
<td>5.5</td>
<td>7</td>
<td>9</td>
<td>0</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

```R
library(FSA)
Summarize(Likert ~ Question,
data=Data,
digits=3)
```

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Question</th>
<th>n</th>
<th>mean</th>
<th>sd</th>
<th>min</th>
<th>Q1</th>
<th>median</th>
<th>Q3</th>
<th>max</th>
<th>percZero</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>AnswerQuest</td>
<td>12</td>
<td>7.250</td>
<td>1.138</td>
<td>6</td>
<td>6.00</td>
<td>7.0</td>
<td>8</td>
<td>9</td>
<td>0</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>
Two-way Ordinal Regression with CLM

Summary and Analysis of Extension Education Program Evaluation in R

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th></th>
<th>Delivery 12</th>
<th>Informative 12</th>
<th>VisualAides 12</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>2</td>
<td>8.167 1.030</td>
<td>6.333 2.103</td>
<td>5.833 1.193</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>3</td>
<td>8.00 10</td>
<td>6.5 8</td>
<td>4.50 7</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

library(FSA)

Summarize(Likert ~ Instructor + Question,
          data=Data,
          digits=3)

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Instructor</th>
<th>Question</th>
<th>n</th>
<th>mean</th>
<th>sd</th>
<th>min</th>
<th>Q1</th>
<th>median</th>
<th>Q3</th>
<th>max</th>
<th>percZero</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>Fuu</td>
<td>AnswerQuest</td>
<td>4</td>
<td>8.50</td>
<td>0.577</td>
<td>8.00</td>
<td>8.5</td>
<td>9.00</td>
<td>9</td>
<td>10</td>
<td>0</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Jin</td>
<td>AnswerQuest</td>
<td>4</td>
<td>6.75</td>
<td>0.957</td>
<td>6.00</td>
<td>6.5</td>
<td>7.25</td>
<td>8</td>
<td>0</td>
<td>0</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Mugen</td>
<td>AnswerQuest</td>
<td>4</td>
<td>6.50</td>
<td>0.577</td>
<td>6.00</td>
<td>6.5</td>
<td>7.00</td>
<td>7</td>
<td>0</td>
<td>0</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Fuu</td>
<td>Delivery</td>
<td>4</td>
<td>8.75</td>
<td>0.957</td>
<td>8.00</td>
<td>8.5</td>
<td>9.25</td>
<td>10</td>
<td>0</td>
<td>0</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Jin</td>
<td>Delivery</td>
<td>4</td>
<td>7.75</td>
<td>1.258</td>
<td>7.50</td>
<td>8.0</td>
<td>8.25</td>
<td>9</td>
<td>0</td>
<td>0</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Mugen</td>
<td>Delivery</td>
<td>4</td>
<td>8.00</td>
<td>0.816</td>
<td>7.75</td>
<td>8.0</td>
<td>8.25</td>
<td>9</td>
<td>0</td>
<td>0</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Fuu</td>
<td>Informative</td>
<td>4</td>
<td>8.50</td>
<td>0.577</td>
<td>8.00</td>
<td>8.5</td>
<td>9.00</td>
<td>9</td>
<td>0</td>
<td>0</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Jin</td>
<td>Informative</td>
<td>4</td>
<td>6.50</td>
<td>1.291</td>
<td>5.75</td>
<td>6.5</td>
<td>7.25</td>
<td>8</td>
<td>0</td>
<td>0</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Mugen</td>
<td>Informative</td>
<td>4</td>
<td>4.00</td>
<td>0.816</td>
<td>3.75</td>
<td>4.0</td>
<td>4.25</td>
<td>5</td>
<td>0</td>
<td>0</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Fuu</td>
<td>VisualAides</td>
<td>4</td>
<td>6.75</td>
<td>0.500</td>
<td>6.75</td>
<td>6.5</td>
<td>7.00</td>
<td>7</td>
<td>0</td>
<td>0</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Jin</td>
<td>VisualAides</td>
<td>4</td>
<td>6.25</td>
<td>0.957</td>
<td>5.75</td>
<td>6.5</td>
<td>7.00</td>
<td>7</td>
<td>0</td>
<td>0</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Mugen</td>
<td>VisualAides</td>
<td>4</td>
<td>4.50</td>
<td>0.577</td>
<td>4.00</td>
<td>4.5</td>
<td>5.00</td>
<td>5</td>
<td>0</td>
<td>0</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

Produce interaction plot with medians and quantiles

library(FSA)

Sum = Summarize(Likert ~ Instructor + Question,
                 data=Data,
                 digits=3)

Sum

library(ggplot2)

pd = position_dodge(.2)

ggplot(Sum, aes(x=Instructor,
               y=median,
               color=Question)) +
       geom_errorbar(aes(ymin=Q1,
                          ymax=Q3),
                      width=.2, size=0.7, position=pd) +
       geom_point(shape=15, size=4, position=pd) +
       theme_bw() +
       theme(axis.title = element_text(face = "bold"))+

       ylab("Median Likert score")
**Two-way Ordinal Regression with CLM**

In the model notation in the `clm` function, here, `Likert.f` is the dependent variable and `Instructor` and `Question` are the independent variables. The term `Instructor:Question` adds the interaction effect of these two independent variables to the model. The `data=` option indicates the data frame that contains the variables. For the meaning of other options, see `?clm`.

The p-values for the two main effects and the interaction effect is determined using the `Anova` function in the packages `RVAideMemoire` and `car`.

Here the `threshold = "symmetric"` option is used in order to avoid errors. This option does not need to be used routinely.

**Define model and analyses of deviance**

```r
library(ordinal)

model = clm(Likert.f ~ Instructor + Question + Instructor:Question, 
data = Data, 
threshold="symmetric")

library(car)

library(RVAideMemoire)
```
Anova(model,
    type = "II")

Analysis of Deviance Table (Type II tests)

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th></th>
<th>LR Chisq</th>
<th>Df</th>
<th>Pr(&gt;Chisq)</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>Instructor</td>
<td>32.157</td>
<td>2</td>
<td>1.040e-07 ***</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Question</td>
<td>28.248</td>
<td>3</td>
<td>3.221e-06 ***</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Instructor:Question</td>
<td>24.326</td>
<td>6</td>
<td>0.0004548 ***</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

p-value for model and pseudo $R$-squared

The $p$-value for the model and a pseudo $R$-squared value can be determined with the `nagelkerke` function.

```r
library(rcompanion)
nagelkerke(model)
```

$pseudo.R.squared$ for model vs. null

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th></th>
<th>Pseudo.R.squared</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>McFadden</td>
<td>0.400602</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Cox and Snell (ML)</td>
<td>0.775956</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Nagelkerke (Cragg and Uhler)</td>
<td>0.794950</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

Likelihood ratio test

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Df.diff</th>
<th>LogLik.diff</th>
<th>Chisq</th>
<th>p.value</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>-11</td>
<td>-35.902</td>
<td>71.804</td>
<td>5.5398e-11</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

Post-hoc tests with `emmeans` for multiple comparisons of groups

Be sure to read the Estimated Marginal Means for Multiple Comparisons chapter for correct interpretation of estimated marginal means. For clm model objects, the `emmean`, `SE`, `LCL`, and `UCL` values should be ignored, unless specific options in `emmeans` are selected.

Because the interaction term in the model was significant, the group separation for the interaction effect is explored.

```r
library(emmeans)
marginal = emmeans(model,
                    ~ Instructor + Question)
pairs(marginal,
      adjust="tukey")
cld(marginal,
    alpha = 0.05,
)
## Two-way Ordinal Regression with CLM

Summary and Analysis of Extension Education Program Evaluation in R

Letters = letters,  ### Use lower-case letters for .group
adjust = "tukey")  ### Tukey-adjusted comparisons

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Instructor</th>
<th>Question</th>
<th>emmean</th>
<th>SE</th>
<th>df</th>
<th>asymp.LCL</th>
<th>asymp.UCL</th>
<th>.group</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>Mugen</td>
<td>Informative</td>
<td>-6.663413e+00</td>
<td>1.4186237</td>
<td>NA</td>
<td>-10.7176160</td>
<td>-2.609209</td>
<td>a</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Mugen</td>
<td>VisualAides</td>
<td>-5.262834e+00</td>
<td>1.2789949</td>
<td>NA</td>
<td>-8.9180007</td>
<td>-1.607668</td>
<td>ab</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Jin</td>
<td>VisualAides</td>
<td>-4.347138e-01</td>
<td>0.9435048</td>
<td>NA</td>
<td>-3.1311021</td>
<td>2.261675</td>
<td>bc</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Jin</td>
<td>Informative</td>
<td>-8.326673e-17</td>
<td>1.0546366</td>
<td>NA</td>
<td>-3.0139854</td>
<td>3.013985</td>
<td>bcd</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Mugen</td>
<td>AnswerQuest</td>
<td>4.718448e-16</td>
<td>0.8484277</td>
<td>NA</td>
<td>-2.4246729</td>
<td>2.424673</td>
<td>c</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Jin</td>
<td>AnswerQuest</td>
<td>4.347138e-01</td>
<td>0.9435048</td>
<td>NA</td>
<td>-2.2616745</td>
<td>3.131102</td>
<td>cde</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Fuu</td>
<td>VisualAides</td>
<td>5.525651e-01</td>
<td>0.8464847</td>
<td>NA</td>
<td>-1.8665549</td>
<td>2.971685</td>
<td>cd</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Jin</td>
<td>Delivery</td>
<td>3.490051e+00</td>
<td>1.3194708</td>
<td>NA</td>
<td>-0.2807891</td>
<td>7.260890</td>
<td>cde</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Mugen</td>
<td>Delivery</td>
<td>3.713121e+00</td>
<td>1.2254534</td>
<td>NA</td>
<td>0.2109685</td>
<td>7.215274</td>
<td>cde</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Fuu</td>
<td>AnswerQuest</td>
<td>5.262834e+00</td>
<td>1.2789949</td>
<td>NA</td>
<td>1.6076682</td>
<td>8.918001</td>
<td>de</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Fuu</td>
<td>Informative</td>
<td>5.262834e+00</td>
<td>1.2789949</td>
<td>NA</td>
<td>1.6076682</td>
<td>8.918001</td>
<td>de</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Fuu</td>
<td>Delivery</td>
<td>5.782817e+00</td>
<td>1.3782347</td>
<td>NA</td>
<td>1.8440397</td>
<td>9.721595</td>
<td>e</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

Confidence level used: 0.95
Conf-level adjustment: sidak method for 12 estimates
P value adjustment: tukey method for comparing a family of 12 estimates
significance level used: alpha = 0.05

### Groups sharing a letter in .group are not significantly different

### Remember to ignore “emmean”, “SE”, “LCL”, and “UCL” with CLM

Interaction plot with group separation letters

Group separation letters can be added manually to an interaction plot.

Groups sharing a letter are not significantly different. In this case, because so many groups share a letter, it is difficult to interpret this plot. One approach would be to look at differences among instructors for each question. Looking at AnswerQuest, Fuu’s scores are not statistically different than Jin’s (because they share the letters d and e), but Fuu’s scores are different than Mugen’s (because they share no letters). So, we can conclude for this question, that Fuu’s scores are significantly greater than Mugen’s. And so on.
Check model assumptions

nominal_test(model)

Tests of nominal effects

formula: Likert.f ~ Instructor + Question + Instructor:Question

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th></th>
<th>Df</th>
<th>logLik</th>
<th>AIC</th>
<th>LRT</th>
<th>Pr(&gt;Chi)</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>&lt;none&gt;</td>
<td></td>
<td>-53.718</td>
<td>137.44</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Instructor</td>
<td>6</td>
<td>-49.812</td>
<td>141.62</td>
<td>7.812</td>
<td>0.2522</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Question</td>
<td>9</td>
<td>-50.182</td>
<td>148.37</td>
<td>7.071</td>
<td>0.6297</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Instructor:Question</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

### No violation in assumptions.

scale_test(model)

Tests of scale effects

formula: Likert.f ~ Instructor + Question + Instructor:Question

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th></th>
<th>Df</th>
<th>logLik</th>
<th>AIC</th>
<th>LRT</th>
<th>Pr(&gt;Chi)</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>&lt;none&gt;</td>
<td></td>
<td>-53.718</td>
<td>137.44</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Instructor</td>
<td>2</td>
<td>-51.669</td>
<td>137.34</td>
<td>4.0985</td>
<td>0.12883</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Question</td>
<td>3</td>
<td>-50.534</td>
<td>137.07</td>
<td>6.3669</td>
<td>0.09506 .</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Instructor:Question</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>
Warning message:
(-1) Model failed to converge with max|grad| = 1.70325e-06 (tol = 1e-06)
In addition: maximum number of consecutive Newton modifications reached

### This test failed, but the results suggest no violation of assumptions.

Optional analyses

**Post-hoc test: pairwise ordinal tests for multiple comparisons of groups**
A different method to compare groups is to conduct pairwise ordinal tests for groups.

Here, the *threshold = "flexible"* option is used in order to avoid errors for this data set. This option does not need to be used routinely. Note that potentially important errors are produced in the pairwise post-hoc tests on the interaction factor. One reason for this is that there are few observations for each combination of *Instructor* and *Question*.

**Table format**

### Create a new variable for interaction term

```
Data$Interaction = interaction(Data$Instructor, Data$Question)
Data$Interaction = factor(Data$Interaction, levels=unique(Data$Interaction))
```

```
library(psych)
headTail(Data)
```

### Order groups by median

```
```

### Pairwise ordinal regression tests

```
library(rcompanion)
PT = pairwiseOrdinalTest(Likert.f ~ Interaction, data = Data, threshold = "flexible", method = "fdr")
# Adjusts p-values for multiple comparisons;
# See ?p.adjust for options
```

```
PT
```
### Two-way Ordinal Regression with CLM

Summary and Analysis of Extension Education Program Evaluation in R

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th></th>
<th>Fuu.AnswerQuest - Fuu.Delivery = 0</th>
<th>0.7335</th>
<th>0.795100</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>2</td>
<td>Fuu.AnswerQuest - Fuu.Informative = 0</td>
<td>1.000000</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>3</td>
<td>Fuu.AnswerQuest - Mugen.Delivery = 0</td>
<td>0.2996</td>
<td>0.380300</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

< output snipped >

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th></th>
<th>Mugen.VisualAides - Mugen.Informative = 0</th>
<th>0.2996</th>
<th>0.380300</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>65</td>
<td>Mugen.VisualAides - Jin.Informative = 0</td>
<td>0.007007</td>
<td>0.012500</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>66</td>
<td>Mugen.Informative - Jin.Informative = 0</td>
<td>0.003926</td>
<td>0.009597</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

```
warnings()

Hessian is numerically singular: parameters are not uniquely determined
In addition: Absolute convergence criterion was met, but relative criterion was not met

### Results may not be reliable for this data set for these pairwise tests

### Compact letter display

```
library(rcompanion)
cldList(p.adjust ~ Comparison,
data       = PT,
threshold  = 0.05)

Group Letter MonoLetter
1 Fuu.AnswerQuest a a
2 Fuu.Delivery a a
3 Fuu.Informative a a
4 Mugen.Delivery ab ab
5 Jin.Delivery abc abc
6 Fuu.VisualAides c c
7 Mugen.AnswerQuest c c
8 Jin.AnswerQuest bc bc
9 Jin.VisualAides c c
10 Mugen.VisualAides d d
11 Mugen.Informative d d
12 Jin.Informative bc bc
```

Groups sharing a letter are not significantly different (alpha = 0.05).

**Matrix format and compact letter display**

Usually you would want to first order your treatment variable (*Interaction*) by median or other location statistic for the letters in the compact letter display to be in their proper order.

### Create a new variable for interaction term

```
Data$Interaction = interaction(Data$Instructor, Data$Question)
```
Data$Interaction = factor(Data$Interaction, 
levels=unique(Data$Interaction))

library(psych)
headTail(Data)

### Order groups by median
Data$Interaction = factor(Data$Interaction, 
levels = c("Fuu.AnswerQuest", "Fuu.Delivery", 
"Fuu.Informative", "Mugen.Delivery", 
"Jin.Delivery", "Fuu.VisualAides", 
"Mugen.AnswerQuest", "Jin.AnswerQuest", 
"Jin.VisualAides","Jin.Informative", 
"Mugen.VisualAides", "Mugen.Informative")

### Pairwise ordinal regression tests
library(rcompanion)

PM = pairwiseOrdinalMatrix(Likert.f ~ Interaction, 
data = Data, 
threshold = "flexible", 
method = "fdr")
# Adjusts p-values for multiple comparisons;
# See ?p.adjust for options

PM

library(multcompView)
multcompLetters(PM$Adjusted, 
compare="<", 
threshold=0.05, # p-value to use as significance threshold 
Letters=letters, 
reversed = FALSE)

Fuu.AnswerQuest   Fuu.Delivery   Fuu.Informative   Mugen.Delivery 
"a"               "a"               "a"              "ab"

Jin.Delivery   Fuu.VisualAides 
"abc"               "c"

"c"               "bc"               "c"              "d"

Mugen.Informative   Jin.Informative 
"d"               "bc"

### Values sharing a letter are not significantly different
Two-way Repeated Ordinal Regression with CLMM

A two-way repeated ordinal analysis of variance can address an experimental design with two independent variables, each of which is a factor variable, plus a blocking variable. The main effect of each independent variable can be tested, as well as the effect of the interaction of the two factors.

```r
warnings()

Hessian is numerically singular: parameters are not uniquely determined
In addition: Absolute convergence criterion was met, but relative criterion was not met

### Results may not be reliable for this data set for these pairwise tests

Interaction plot with separation letters

Two-way Repeated Ordinal Regression with CLMM
The example here looks at students’ knowledge scores for three speakers across two different times. Because we know which student has each score at each time, we will use the Student as a blocking variable, with the suspicion that one student might have consistently lower knowledge than another student. If we hadn’t recorded this information about students, we could use a two-way ordinal regression.

As a matter of practical interpretation, we may not care about the absolute scores for each of the three speakers, only if the knowledge scores for students increased from Time 1 to Time 2. At Time 1, students’ knowledge scores are lower for Piglet that for the other two speakers. This isn’t the fault of Piglet; he is just speaking about a topic that the students have little knowledge of.

The clmm function can specify more complex models with multiple independent variables of different types, but this book will not explore more complex examples.

The p-values for the main and interaction effects can be determined with the Anova function from RVAideMemoire, which produces an analysis of deviance table for these effects. In addition, a p-value for the model as a whole will be determined, along with a pseudo R-squared for the model as a whole.

Post-hoc analysis to determine which groups are different can be conducted on each significant main effect and on the interaction effect if it is significant.

**Packages used in this chapter**

The packages used in this chapter include:
- psych
- FSA
- lattice
- ggplot2
- ordinal
- car
- RVAideMemoire
- emmeans
- multcompView
- plyr
- boot
- rcompanion

The following commands will install these packages if they are not already installed:

```r
if(!require(psych)){install.packages("psych")}
if(!require(FSA)){install.packages("FSA")}
if(!require(lattice)){install.packages("lattice")}
if(!require(ggplot2)){install.packages("ggplot2")}
if(!require(ordinal)){install.packages("ordinal")}
if(!require(car)){install.packages("car")}
if(!require(RVAideMemoire)){install.packages("RVAideMemoire")}
if(!require(emmeans)){install.packages("emmeans")}
if(!require(multcompView)){install.packages("multcompView")}
```
Two-way repeated ordinal regression example

```r
if(!require(plyr)){install.packages("plyr")}
if(!require(boot)){install.packages("boot")}
if(!require(rcompanion)){install.packages("rcompanion")}

Input = "

Speaker  Student  Time  Likert
Pooh    a        1      3
Pooh    b        1      5
Pooh    c        1      4
Pooh    d        1      4
Pooh    e        1      4
Pooh    f        1      3
Pooh    g        1      4
Pooh    h        1      4
Pooh    a        2      4
Pooh    b        2      5
Pooh    c        2      5
Pooh    d        2      5
Pooh    e        2      5
Pooh    f        2      4
Pooh    g        2      5
Pooh    h        2      5
Piglet  i        1      1
Piglet  j        1      2
Piglet  k        1      1
Piglet  l        1      1
Piglet  m        1      1
Piglet  n        1      2
Piglet  o        1      3
Piglet  p        1      1
Piglet  i        2      2
Piglet  j        2      4
Piglet  k        2      2
Piglet  l        2      1
Piglet  m        2      2
Piglet  n        2      2
Piglet  o        2      4
Piglet  p        2      2
Eeyore  q        1      4
Eeyore  r        1      5
Eeyore  s        1      4
Eeyore  t        1      4
Eeyore  u        1      4
Eeyore  v        1      4
Eeyore  w        1      4
Eeyore  x        1      4
```

442
### Data

```r
Data = read.table(textConnection(Input), header=TRUE)
```

### Change Time into a factor variable

```r
Data$Time = factor(Data$Time)
```

### Order levels of the factor; otherwise R will alphabetize them

```r
Data$Speaker = factor(Data$Speaker, 
    levels=unique(Data$Speaker))
```

### Create a new variable which is the likert scores as an ordered factor

```r
Data$Likert.f = factor(Data$Likert, 
    ordered = TRUE)
```

### Check the data frame

```r
library(psych)
headTail(Data)
str(Data)
summary(Data)
```

### Remove unnecessary objects

```r
rm(Input)
```

### Summarize data treating Likert scores as factors

```r
xtabs(~Time + Likert.f + Speaker, 
    data = Data)
```

```
> Likert.f
>      Time 1 2 3 4 5
> 1 0 0 2 5 1
> 2 0 0 0 2 6
```
Bar plots by group

```r
library(lattice)

histogram(~ Likert.f | Speaker,
data=Data,
layout=c(1,3) # columns and rows of individual plots
)
```

```r
library(lattice)

histogram(~ Likert.f | Time,
data=Data,
layout=c(1,2) # columns and rows of individual plots
)
```
library(lattice)

histogram(~ Likert.f | Time + Speaker, 
  data=Data, 
  layout=c(2,3)  # columns and rows of individual plots
)

library(FSA)

Summarize data treating Likert scores as numeric

library(FSA)
summarize(Likert ~ Speaker + Time,
data = Data,
digits = 3)

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Speaker</th>
<th>Time</th>
<th>n valid</th>
<th>mean</th>
<th>sd</th>
<th>min</th>
<th>Q1</th>
<th>median</th>
<th>Q3</th>
<th>max</th>
<th>percZero</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>Pooh</td>
<td>1</td>
<td>8</td>
<td>3.875</td>
<td>0.641</td>
<td>3.75</td>
<td>4.0</td>
<td>4.0</td>
<td>4.0</td>
<td>5</td>
<td>0</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Piglet</td>
<td>2</td>
<td>8</td>
<td>1.500</td>
<td>0.756</td>
<td>1.00</td>
<td>2.0</td>
<td>3.0</td>
<td>4.0</td>
<td>5</td>
<td>0</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Eeyore</td>
<td>3</td>
<td>8</td>
<td>4.125</td>
<td>0.354</td>
<td>4.00</td>
<td>4.0</td>
<td>4.0</td>
<td>4.0</td>
<td>5</td>
<td>0</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Pooh</td>
<td>4</td>
<td>8</td>
<td>4.750</td>
<td>0.463</td>
<td>4.75</td>
<td>5.0</td>
<td>5.0</td>
<td>5.0</td>
<td>5</td>
<td>0</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Piglet</td>
<td>5</td>
<td>8</td>
<td>2.375</td>
<td>1.061</td>
<td>2.00</td>
<td>2.5</td>
<td>4.0</td>
<td>4.0</td>
<td>5</td>
<td>0</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Eeyore</td>
<td>6</td>
<td>8</td>
<td>4.000</td>
<td>0.535</td>
<td>4.00</td>
<td>4.0</td>
<td>4.0</td>
<td>4.0</td>
<td>5</td>
<td>0</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

Plot Likert scores before and after

Since we are most interested in pairing scores from Time 1 to Time 2, we can plot the data in a way that pairs points.

Points above and to left of the blue line indicate cases in which the score for Time 2 is greater than that for Time 1.

Note that the data must be ordered by Student and Speaker for this code to plot the data correctly. That is, the first observation for Time==1 must be the same student and speaker as the first observation for Time==2.

Also note that the points on the plot are jittered so that multiple points with the same values will be visible.

```
Time.1 = Data$Likert[Data$Time==1]
Time.2 = Data$Likert[Data$Time==2]
Speaker = Data$Speaker[Data$Time==2]

plot(Time.1, jitter(Time.2),
pch = 16,
cex = 1,
col = Speaker,

xlab="Time 1",

ylab="Time 2")

abline(0,1, col="blue", lwd=2)

legend('bottomright',

legend = unique(Speaker),
col = 1:3,
cex = 1,
pch = 16)
```
Produce interaction plot with medians and confidence intervals

The following plot will show the interaction between Speaker and Time. The median for each Speaker \times Time combination is plotted, and the confidence intervals for each are shown with error bars. In this case some of the medians and confidence limits are the same values, so some error bars are not visible.

The plot makes it easy to see the change in median score for each speaker from Time 1 to Time 2.

```r
library(rcompanion)

Sum = groupwiseMedian(Likert ~ Speaker + Time,  
data = Data,  
conf = 0.95,  
R = 5000,  
percentile = TRUE,  
bc = FALSE,  
digits = 3)

Sum

library(ggplot2)

pd = position_dodge(.2)

ggplot(Sum, aes(x=Time,  
y=Median,  
color=Speaker)) +  
geom_errorbar(aes(ymin=Percentile.lower,  
ymax=Percentile.upper),  
width=.2, size=0.7, position=pd) +  
geom_point(shape=15, size=4, position=pd) +  
theme_bw() +  
theme(axis.title = element_text(face = "bold")) +
```
Two-way repeated ordinal regression

In the model notation in the `clmm` function, here, `Likert.f` is the dependent variable and `Speaker` and `Time` are the independent variables. The term `Time:Speaker` adds the interaction effect of these two independent variables to the model. `Student` is used as a blocking variable, and is entered as a random variable. The `data=` option indicates the data frame that contains the variables. For the meaning of other options, see `?clmm`.

The p-values for the two main effects and the interaction effect is determined using the `Anova` function in the packages `RVAideMemoire` and `car`.

Here the `threshold = "equidistant"` option is used in order to avoid errors for this data set. This option does not need to be used routinely.

Optional technical note

In the model below `Student` is treated as a simple random blocking variable, specified by `(1|Student)`. Note that in the data, students were lettered `a`–`x` straight through the `Speakers`. If the students had been lettered `a`–`h` for each `Speaker`, but there were actually 24 students, we would need to tell the model that `Student` was nested within `Speaker`, by specifying that the random effect was `(1|Speaker/Student)`, or that the random effect of interest was the interaction of `Speaker` and `Student`, by specifying `(1|Speaker:Student)`. This second specification is equivalent to that in the code below, with the original data, and will produce the same results.
I consider it a good practice to assign unique individuals with unique labels. This practice is not always followed, but following the practice will avoid mis-specifying models. In this case with 24 students, if they had been lettered a–h for each Speaker, and the original model with the \((1|Student)\) effect had been used, the results would be wrong because the model would treat Pooh’s student \(a\) as the same individual as Piglet’s student \(a\).

Define model and conduct analysis of deviance

```r
library(ordinal)

model = clmm(Likert.f ~ Time + Speaker + Time:Speaker + (1|Student),
data = Data,
threshold = "equidistant")

library(car)
library(RVAideMemoire)

Anova(model,
type = "II")
```

Analysis of Deviance Table (Type II tests)

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th></th>
<th>LR Chisq</th>
<th>Df</th>
<th>Pr(&gt;Chisq)</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>Time</td>
<td>9.774</td>
<td>1</td>
<td>0.00177 **</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Speaker</td>
<td>34.485</td>
<td>2</td>
<td>3.249e-08 ***</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Time:Speaker</td>
<td>28.202</td>
<td>2</td>
<td>7.517e-07 ***</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

*p*-value for model and pseudo *R*-squared

In order to use the `nagelkerke` function for a `clmm` model object, a null model has to be specified explicitly. (This is not the case with a `clm` model object).

We want the null model to have no fixed effects except for an intercept, indicated with a \(1\) on the right side of the \(~\). But we also may want to include the random effects, in this case \((1|Student)\).

We can compare our full model against a model with an overall intercept and an intercept for each student.

Be sure that the `threshold` option in `model.null` is the same as in the original model.

```r
model.null = clmm(Likert.f ~ 1 + (1 | Student),
data = Data,
threshold = "equidistant")

library(rcompanion)
nagelkerke(fit = model, null = model.null)
```

$Pseudo.R.squared.for.model.vs.null
Another approach to determining the \( p \)-value and pseudo \( R^2 \) for a clmm model is comparing the model to a null model with only an intercept and neither the fixed nor the random effects.

```r
model.null.2 = clm(Likert.f ~ 1,
data = Data,
threshold = "equidistant")
library(rcompanion)
nagelkerke(fit = model,
null = model.null.2)

$Pseudo.R.squared.for.model.vs.null
 Pseudo.R.squared
 McFadden 0.587734
 Cox and Snell (ML) 0.842667
 Nagelkerke (Cragg and Uhler) 0.880526

$Likelihood.ratio.test
 Df.diff LogLik.diff  Chisq   p.value
 -6   -44.385 88.771 5.4539e-17

Determine the effect of the random variable
The effect of the random variable (\textit{Student}, in this case) can be determined by comparing the full model to a model with only the fixed effects (\textit{Speaker}, \textit{Time}, and \textit{Speaker:Time} in this case).

First, \textit{model.fixed} is defined, and then the two models are passed to the \texttt{anova} function.

Be sure that the \texttt{threshold} option in \textit{model.fixed} is the same as in the original model.

```r
model.fixed = clm(Likert.f ~ Time + Speaker + Time:Speaker,
data = Data,
threshold = "equidistant")
anova(model,
model.fixed)

Likelihood ratio tests of cumulative link models:

\[
\begin{array}{cccccc}
\text{no.par} & \text{AIC} & \text{logLik} & \text{LR.stat} & \text{df} & \text{Pr(>Chisq)} \\
\hline
\text{model.fixed} & 7 & 101.197 & -43.598 & & \text{\textbullet\textbullet\textbullet} \\
\text{model} & 8 & 78.268 & -31.134 & 24.928 & 5.95e-07 \text{ \textbullet\textbullet\textbullet} \\
\end{array}
\]
Post-hoc tests with emmeans for multiple comparisons of groups

Be sure to read the Estimated Marginal Means for Multiple Comparisons chapter for correct interpretation of estimated marginal means. For clmm model objects, the emmean, SE, LCL, and UCL values should be ignored, unless specific options in emmeans are selected. See ?emmeans::models for more information.

Because the interaction term in the model was significant, the group separations for the interaction is explored.

```
library(emmeans)

marginal = emmeans(model, ~ Speaker + Time)
pairs(marginal, adjust="tukey")

cld(marginal, alpha = 0.05, Letters = letters, adjust = "tukey")
```

### Use lower-case letters for .group

### Tukey-adjusted comparisons

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Speaker</th>
<th>Time</th>
<th>emmean</th>
<th>SE</th>
<th>df</th>
<th>asymp.LCL</th>
<th>asymp.UCL</th>
<th>.group</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>Piglet</td>
<td>1</td>
<td>-36.08909</td>
<td>0.002735251</td>
<td>NA</td>
<td>-36.09629</td>
<td>-36.08190</td>
<td>a</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Piglet</td>
<td>2</td>
<td>-17.88982</td>
<td>0.003252687</td>
<td>NA</td>
<td>-17.89838</td>
<td>-17.88127</td>
<td>b</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Eeyore</td>
<td>2</td>
<td>17.46501</td>
<td>2.047095879</td>
<td>NA</td>
<td>12.07902</td>
<td>22.85100</td>
<td>c</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Pooh</td>
<td>1</td>
<td>18.19627</td>
<td>0.002535027</td>
<td>NA</td>
<td>18.18960</td>
<td>18.20294</td>
<td>c</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Eeyore</td>
<td>1</td>
<td>19.30751</td>
<td>2.030625019</td>
<td>NA</td>
<td>13.96486</td>
<td>24.65016</td>
<td>c</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Pooh</td>
<td>2</td>
<td>36.72566</td>
<td>0.002910484</td>
<td>NA</td>
<td>36.71800</td>
<td>36.73332</td>
<td>d</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

Confidence level used: 0.95
Conf-level adjustment: sidak method for 6 estimates
P value adjustment: tukey method for comparing a family of 6 estimates
significance level used: alpha = 0.05

### Groups sharing a letter in .group are not significantly different

### Remember to ignore “emmean”, “LCL”, “LCL”, and “UCL” with CLMM

Focusing on meaningful comparisons

Because we wanted to focus on the comparing each speaker at Time1 and Time 2, let’s rearrange the emmeans cld table to focus on these comparisons.

With the results in this format, it is easy to see that the scores for both Pooh and Piglet improved from Time 1 to Time 2, but that the scores for poor Eeyore did not.
Two-way Repeated Ordinal Regression with CLMM

Summary and Analysis of Extension Education Program Evaluation in R

Speaker Time | emmean | SE | df | asymp.LCL | asymp.UCL | .group
--- | --- | --- | --- | --- | --- | ---
Piglet 1 | -36.08909 | 0.002735251 | NA | -36.09629 | -36.08190 | a
Piglet 2 | -17.88982 | 0.003252687 | NA | -17.89838 | -17.88127 | b

Eeyore 1 | 19.30751 | 2.030625019 | NA | 13.96486 | 24.65016 | c
Eeyore 2 | 17.46501 | 2.0429095879 | NA | 12.07902 | 22.85100 | c

Interaction plot with group separation letters
Group separation letters can be added manually to the plot of medians.

Check model assumptions
At the time of writing, the nominal_test and scale_test functions don’t work with clmm model objects, so we will define a similar model with clm and no random effects, and test the proportional odds assumption on this model.

```r
model.clm = clm(Likert.f ~ Time + Speaker + Time:Speaker + Student, 
data = Data, 
threshold = "equidistant")
```

Warning message:
1) Hessian is numerically singular: parameters are not uniquely determined
In addition: Absolute convergence criterion was met, but relative criterion was not met.
The fitting of this model failed. We'll try a model without student.

```r
model.clm = clm(Likert.f ~ Time + Speaker + Time:Speaker,
                 data = Data,
                 threshold = "equidistant")

nominal_test(model.clm)
```

Tests of nominal effects

```
Data: Likert.f ~ Time + Speaker + Time:Speaker

Df  logLik     AIC    LRT Pr(>Chi)
<none>        -43.598 101.197
Time          1  -43.149 102.298 0.8983  0.34325
Speaker       2  -40.053  98.106 7.0903  0.02886 *
Time:Speaker  5  -39.393 102.786 8.4110  0.13499
```

There is a violation of proportional odds assumption for this model.
Results from this model fitting may not be reliable.

```r
scale_test(model.clm)
```

Warning messages:
1: (-1) Model failed to converge with max|grad| = 2.26258e-05 (tol = 1e-06)
In addition: iteration limit reached

This test failed. It would be possible to adjust the fitting parameters, and try to get the model to converge.
Introduction to Tests for Nominal Variables

The tests for nominal variables presented in this book are commonly used. They might be used to determine if there is an association between two nominal variables (“association tests”), or if counts of observations for a nominal variable match a theoretical set of proportions for that variable (“goodness-of-fit tests”).

Tests of symmetry, or marginal homogeneity, can determine if frequencies for one nominal variable are greater than that for another, or if there was a change in frequencies from sampling at one time to another. These are described here as “tests for paired nominal data.”

For tests of association, a measure of association, or effect size, should be reported.

When contingency tables include one or more ordinal variables, different tests of association are called for. (See Association Tests for Ordinal Tables). Effect sizes are specific for these situations (See Measures of Association for Ordinal Tables).

As a more advanced approach, models can be specified with nominal dependent variables. A common type of model with a nominal dependent variable is logistic regression.

Descriptive statistics and plots for nominal data

Descriptive statistics for nominal data are discussed in the “Descriptive statistics for nominal data” section in the Descriptive Statistics chapter.

Descriptive plots for nominal data are discussed in the “Examples of basic plots for nominal data” section in the Basic Plots chapter.

Contingency tables and matrices

Nominal data are often arranged in a contingency table of counts of observations for each cell of the table. For example, if there were 6 males and 4 females reading Sappho, 3 males and 4 females reading Stephen Crane, and 2 males and 5 females reading Judith Viorst, the data could be arranged as:

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Poet</th>
<th>Male</th>
<th>Female</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>Sappho</td>
<td>6</td>
<td>4</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Crane</td>
<td>3</td>
<td>4</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Viorst</td>
<td>2</td>
<td>5</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

This data can be read into R in the following manner as a matrix.

```
Input =("Poet   Male | Female
Sappho  6     | 4
```

454
Crane  3  4
Viorst  2  5
"

Matrix = as.matrix(read.table(textConnection(Input),
header=TRUE,
row.names=1))

Matrix

 Male Female
Sappho    6      4
Crane     3      4
Viorst    2      5

It is helpful to look at totals for columns and rows.

colSums(Matrix)

 Male Female
 11     13

rowSums(Matrix)

 Sappho  Crane  Viorst
 10      7      7

**Bar plots**

Simple bar charts and mosaic plots are also helpful.

barplot(Matrix,
beside = TRUE,
legend = TRUE,
ylim = c(0, 8),  ### y-axis: used to prevent legend overlapping bars
cex.names = 0.8,  ### Text size for bars
cex.axis = 0.8,  ### Text size for axis
args.legend = list(x = "topright",  ### Legend location
cex = 0.8,  ### Legend text size
bty = "n"))  ### Remove legend box
**Mosaic plots**

Mosaic plots are very useful for visualizing the association between two nominal variables, but can be somewhat tricky to interpret for those unfamiliar with them. Note that the column width is determined by the number of observation in that category. In this case, the Sappho column is wider because more students are reading Sappho than the other two poets. Note, too, that the number of observations in each cell is determined by the area of the cell, not its height. In this case, the Sappho–Female cell and the Crane–Female cell have the same count (4), and so the same area. The Crane–Female cell is taller than the Sappho–Female because it is a higher proportion of observations for that author (4 out of 7 Crane readers compared with 4 out of 10 Sappho readers).
Working with proportions

It is often useful to look at proportions of counts within nominal tables.

In this example we may want to look at the proportion of each Sex within each Poet. That is, the proportions in each row of the first table below sum to 1.

```r
Props = prop.table(Matrix, margin = 1)

Props

        Male Female
Sappho 0.6000000 0.4000000
Crane  0.4285714 0.5714286
Viorst 0.2857143 0.7142857
```

To plot these proportions, we will first transpose the table.

```r
Props.t = t(Props)

Props.t

           Sappho  Crane  Viorst
Male 0.6  0.4285714 0.2857143
Female 0.4  0.5714286 0.7142857
```

```r
barplot(Props.t, 
        beside = TRUE, 
        legend = TRUE, 
        ylim = c(0, 1), 
        cex.names = 0.8, 
        ### y-axis: used to prevent legend overlapping bars 
        ### Text size for bars
```
Optional analyses: converting among matrices, tables, counts, and cases

In R, most simple analyses for nominal data expect the data to be in a matrix format. However, data may be in a long format, either with each row representing a single observation (cases), or with each row containing a count of observations (counts).

It is relatively easy to convert among these different forms of data.

**Long-format with each row as an observation (cases)**

```r
Input =(" Poet  Sex
Sappho Male
Sappho Male
Sappho Male
Sappho Male
Sappho Female
Sappho Female
Sappho Female
Sappho Female
Crane Male
Crane Male
Crane Male
```

```r
cex.axis = 0.8,        ### Text size for axis
col = c("mediumorchid1","mediumorchid4"),
ylab = "Proportion within each Poet",
xlab = "Poet",
args.legend = list(x = "topright",      ### Legend location
    cex = 0.8,      ### Legend text size
    bty = "n"))     ### Remove box

Optional analyses: converting among matrices, tables, counts, and cases

In R, most simple analyses for nominal data expect the data to be in a matrix format. However, data may be in a long format, either with each row representing a single observation (cases), or with each row containing a count of observations (counts).

It is relatively easy to convert among these different forms of data.

**Long-format with each row as an observation (cases)**

```r
Input =(" Poet  Sex
Sappho Male
Sappho Male
Sappho Male
Sappho Male
Sappho Female
Sappho Female
Sappho Female
Sappho Female
Crane Male
Crane Male
Crane Male
```

```r
cex.axis = 0.8,        ### Text size for axis
col = c("mediumorchid1","mediumorchid4"),
ylab = "Proportion within each Poet",
xlab = "Poet",
args.legend = list(x = "topright",      ### Legend location
    cex = 0.8,      ### Legend text size
    bty = "n"))     ### Remove box

Optional analyses: converting among matrices, tables, counts, and cases

In R, most simple analyses for nominal data expect the data to be in a matrix format. However, data may be in a long format, either with each row representing a single observation (cases), or with each row containing a count of observations (counts).

It is relatively easy to convert among these different forms of data.

**Long-format with each row as an observation (cases)**

```r
Input =(" Poet  Sex
Sappho Male
Sappho Male
Sappho Male
Sappho Male
Sappho Female
Sappho Female
Sappho Female
Sappho Female
Crane Male
Crane Male
Crane Male
```
Introduction to Tests for Nominal Variables

Summary and Analysis of Extension Education Program Evaluation in R

Crane Female
Crane Female
Crane Female
Crane Female
Viorst Male
Viorst Male
Viorst Female
Viorst Female
Viorst Female
Viorst Female

Data = read.table(textConnection(Input),header=TRUE)

### Order factors by the order in data frame
### Otherwise, xtabs will alphabetize them

Data$Poet = factor(Data$Poet,
   levels=unique(Data$Poet))

Data$Sex = factor(Data$Sex,
   levels=unique(Data$Sex))

Cases to table

Table = xtabs(~ Poet + Sex,
   data=Data)

Table

Sex
Poet   Male Female
Sappho 6    4
Crane   3    4
Viorst  2    5

Cases to Counts

Table = xtabs(~ Poet + Sex,
   data=Data)

Counts = as.data.frame(Table)

Counts

Poet   Sex Freq
1 Sappho Male 6
2 Crane   Male 3
3 Viorst  Male 2
4 Sappho Female 4
5 Crane Female 4
**Long-format with counts of observations (counts)**

Input = (
```
Poet     Sex     Freq
Sappho   Male     6
Sappho   Female   4
Crane    Male     3
Crane    Female   4
Viorst   Male     2
Viorst   Female   5
```
)

Counts = read.table(textConnection(Input), header=TRUE)

### Order factors by the order in data frame
### Otherwise, xtabs will alphabetize them

Counts$Poet = factor(Counts$Poet, 
levels=unique(Counts$Poet))

Counts$Sex = factor(Counts$Sex, 
levels=unique(Counts$Sex))

**Counts to Table**

Table = xtabs(Freq ~ Poet + Sex, 
data=Counts)

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Poet</th>
<th>Sex</th>
<th>Freq</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>Sappho</td>
<td>Male</td>
<td>6</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Sappho</td>
<td>Female</td>
<td>4</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Crane</td>
<td>Male</td>
<td>3</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Crane</td>
<td>Female</td>
<td>4</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Viorst</td>
<td>Male</td>
<td>2</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Viorst</td>
<td>Female</td>
<td>5</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

**Counts to Cases**

Long = Counts[rep(row.names(Counts), Counts$Freq), c("Poet", "Sex")]

rownames(Long) = seq(1:nrow(Long))

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Poet</th>
<th>Sex</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>1</td>
<td>Sappho</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>2</td>
<td>Sappho</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>3</td>
<td>Sappho</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>4</td>
<td>Sappho</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>
Matrix form

\[
\text{Input} = (\text{\begin{tabular}{lcc}
Poet & Male & Female \\
Sappho & 6 & 4 \\
Crane & 3 & 4 \\
Viorst & 2 & 5 \\
\end{tabular}})\\
\]

\[\text{Matrix} = \text{as.matrix(read.table(textConnection(\text{Input}), header=TRUE, row.names=1))}\]

\[
\text{Matrix} = \begin{tabular}{cccc}
\text{Male} & \text{Female} \\
\text{Sappho} & 6 & 4 \\
\text{Crane} & 3 & 4 \\
\text{Viorst} & 2 & 5 \\
\end{tabular}
\]

Matrix to table

\[\text{Table} = \text{as.table(Matrix)}\]

\[
\text{Table} = \begin{tabular}{cccc}
\text{Male} & \text{Female} \\
\text{Sappho} & 6 & 4 \\
\text{Crane} & 3 & 4 \\
\text{Viorst} & 2 & 5 \\
\end{tabular}
\]
Matrix to counts

Table = as.table(Matrix)
Counts = as.data.frame(Table)
colnames(Counts) = c("Poet", "Sex", "Freq")

Counts

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Poet</th>
<th>Sex</th>
<th>Freq</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>Sappho</td>
<td>Male</td>
<td>6</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Crane</td>
<td>Male</td>
<td>3</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Viorst</td>
<td>Male</td>
<td>2</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Sappho</td>
<td>Female</td>
<td>4</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Crane</td>
<td>Female</td>
<td>4</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Viorst</td>
<td>Female</td>
<td>5</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

Matrix to Cases

Table = as.table(Matrix)
Counts = as.data.frame(Table)
colnames(Counts) = c("Poet", "Sex", "Freq")
Long = Counts[rep(row.names(Counts), Counts$Freq), c("Poet", "Sex")]
rownames(Long) = seq(1:nrow(Long))

Long

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Poet</th>
<th>Sex</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>Sappho</td>
<td>Male</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Sappho</td>
<td>Male</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Sappho</td>
<td>Male</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Sappho</td>
<td>Male</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Sappho</td>
<td>Male</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Sappho</td>
<td>Male</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Crane</td>
<td>Male</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Crane</td>
<td>Male</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Crane</td>
<td>Male</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Viorst</td>
<td>Male</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Viorst</td>
<td>Male</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Sappho</td>
<td>Female</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Sappho</td>
<td>Female</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Sappho</td>
<td>Female</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Sappho</td>
<td>Female</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Sappho</td>
<td>Female</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Crane</td>
<td>Female</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Crane</td>
<td>Female</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Crane</td>
<td>Female</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>
Table to matrix

Matrix = as.matrix(Table)

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th></th>
<th>Male</th>
<th>Female</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>Sappho</td>
<td>6</td>
<td>4</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Crane</td>
<td>3</td>
<td>4</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Viorst</td>
<td>2</td>
<td>5</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

Optional analyses: obtaining information about a matrix object

class(Matrix)

[1] "matrix"

typeof(Matrix)

[1] "integer"

attributes(Matrix)

$dim
[1] 3 2

$dimnames

$dimnames[[1]]
[1] "Sappho"  "Crane"  "Viorst"

$dimnames[[2]]
[1] "Male"    "Female"
Confidence Intervals for Proportions

A binomial proportion has counts for two levels of a nominal variable. An example would be counts of students of only two sexes, male and female. If there are 20 students in a class, and 12 are female, then the proportion of females are 12/20, or 0.6, and the proportion of males are 8/20 or 0.4. This is a binomial proportion.

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Sex</th>
<th>Count</th>
<th>Proportion</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>Female</td>
<td>12</td>
<td>0.60</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Male</td>
<td>8</td>
<td>0.40</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Total</td>
<td>20</td>
<td>1.00</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

A multinomial proportion has counts for more than two levels of a nominal variable. For example, we might have the following levels and counts for sex for students in a class:

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Sex</th>
<th>Count</th>
<th>Proportion</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>Female</td>
<td>12</td>
<td>0.60</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Male</td>
<td>6</td>
<td>0.30</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Other</td>
<td>1</td>
<td>0.05</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Prefer not to answer</td>
<td>1</td>
<td>0.05</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Total</td>
<td>20</td>
<td>1.00</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

References

Confidence intervals can be produced for either binomial or multinomial proportions.

The \texttt{binom.test} function in the native \textit{stats} package will provide the Clopper-Pearson confidence interval for a binomial proportion. Other methods for a binomial proportion are provided by the \texttt{BinomCI} function in the \textit{DescTools} package, as well as by various functions in the \textit{PropCIs} package.

Confidence intervals for multinomial proportions can be produced with the \texttt{MultinomCI} function in the \textit{DescTools} package.

**Packages used in this chapter**

The packages used in this chapter include:
- \texttt{DescTools}
- \texttt{PropCIs}

The following commands will install these packages if they are not already installed:

```r
if(!require(DescTools)){install.packages("DescTools")}
if(!require(PropCIs)){install.packages("PropCIs")}
```

**Example of confidence intervals for a binomial proportion**

As part of a demographic survey of her scrapbooking 4-H course, Seras Victoria asks students if they have ever done scrapbooking before. The following are the data from her course:

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Experience</th>
<th>Count</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>Yes</td>
<td>7</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>No</td>
<td>14</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>----------</td>
<td>---</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Total</td>
<td>21</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

Note that when calculating confidence intervals for a binomial variable, one level of the nominal variable is chosen to be the “success” level. This is an arbitrary decision, but you should be cautious to remember that the confidence interval is reported for the proportion of “success” responses. The \texttt{BinomCI} function in the \textit{DescTools} package can produce the confidence interval for both “success” and “failure” in one step.

The \texttt{binom.test} function output includes a confidence interval for the proportion, and the proportion of “success” as a decimal number. The \texttt{binom.test} function uses the Clopper–Pearson method for confidence intervals.

```r
binom.test(7, 21,
            0.5,
            alternative="two.sided",
            conf.level=0.95)
```

**95 percent confidence interval:**
The `BinomCI` function in the `DescTools` package has several methods for calculating confidence intervals for a binomial proportion.

```r
library(DescTools)

BinomCI(7, 21,
   conf.level = 0.95,
   method = "clopper-pearson")

### Methods: "wilson", "wald", "agresti-coull", "jeffreys",
### "modified wilson", "modified jeffreys",
### "clopper-pearson", "arcsine", "logit", "witting", "pratt"

   est  lwr.ci  upr.ci
[1,] 0.3333333 0.1458769 0.5696755
```

The `BinomCI` function in the `DescTools` package can also produce the confidence intervals for “success” and “failure” in one step.

```r
library(DescTools)

observed = c(7, 14)

total = sum(observed)

BinomCI(observed, total,
   conf.level = 0.95,
   method = "clopper-pearson")

### Methods: "wilson", "wald", "agresti-coull", "jeffreys",
### "modified wilson", "modified jeffreys",
### "clopper-pearson", "arcsine", "logit", "witting", "pratt"

   est  lwr.ci  upr.ci
[1,] 0.3333333 0.1458769 0.5696755
[2,] 0.6666667 0.4303245 0.8541231
```

The `PropCIs` package has functions for calculating confidence intervals for a binomial proportion. The `exactci` function uses the Clopper–Pearson exact method.
library(PropCIs)

exactci(7, 21,
       conf.level=0.95)

  95 percent confidence interval:
   0.1458769 0.5696755

The blakerci function uses the Blaker exact method.

\[
\frac{7}{21}
\]

[1] 0.3333333

library(PropCIs)

blakerci(7, 21,
         conf.level=0.95)

  95 percent confidence interval:
   0.1523669 0.5510455

Example of confidence intervals for a multinomial proportion

As part of a demographic survey of her scrapbooking 4-H course, Seras Victoria asks students to report their sex. The following are the data from her course:

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Sex</th>
<th>Count</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>Female</td>
<td>10</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Male</td>
<td>9</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Other</td>
<td>1</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>No answer</td>
<td>1</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>---------</td>
<td>-------</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Total</td>
<td>21</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

library(DescTools)

observed = c(10, 9, 1, 1)

MultinomCI(observed,
            conf.level=0.95,
            method="sisonglaz")

### Methods: "sisonglaz", "cplus1", "goodman"

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th></th>
<th>est</th>
<th>lwr.ci</th>
<th>upr.ci</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>[1,]</td>
<td>0.47619048</td>
<td>0.2857143</td>
<td>0.7009460</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>[2,]</td>
<td>0.42857143</td>
<td>0.2380952</td>
<td>0.6533270</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>
Optional analysis: confidence intervals for a difference in proportions

As part of a demographic survey of their scrapbooking 4-H courses, Seras Victoria and Integra Hellsing ask students if they have experience in scrapbooking. They want to determine the difference of proportions of students having experience in each class, and calculate a confidence interval for that difference. The following are the data:

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th></th>
<th>Seras Victoria</th>
<th></th>
<th>Integra Hellsing</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>Experience</td>
<td>Count</td>
<td>Experience</td>
<td>Count</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Yes</td>
<td>7</td>
<td>Yes</td>
<td>13</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>No</td>
<td>14</td>
<td>No</td>
<td>4</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td><strong>Total</strong></td>
<td><strong>21</strong></td>
<td><strong>Total</strong></td>
<td><strong>17</strong></td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

Two functions in the PropCIs package can determine a confidence interval for a difference for independent proportions.

\[
\frac{7}{21} - \frac{13}{17}
\]

[1] -0.4313725

```r
library(PropCIs)
diffscoreci(7, 21, 13, 17, conf.level=0.95)
95 percent confidence interval:
-0.6685985 -0.1103804

wald2ci(7, 21, 13, 17, conf.level=0.95, adjust = "wald")
```
95 percent confidence interval:
-0.7165199 -0.1462252

sample estimates:
[1] -0.4313725

References


Goodness-of-Fit Tests for Nominal Variables

Goodness-of-fit tests are used to compare proportions of levels of a nominal variable to theoretical proportions. Common goodness-of-fit tests are G-test, chi-square, and binomial or multinomial exact tests.

In general, there are no assumptions about the distribution of data for these tests. However, the results of chi-square tests and G-tests can be inaccurate if statistically expected cell counts are low. A rule of thumb is that all statistically expected cell counts should be 5 or greater for chi-square- and G-tests. For a more complete discussion, see McDonald in the “Optional Readings” section for details on what constitutes low cell counts.

One approach is to use exact tests, which are not bothered by low cell counts. However, if there are not low cell counts, using G-test or chi-square test is fine. The advantage of chi-square tests is that your audience may be more familiar with them.

G-tests are also called likelihood ratio tests, and “Likelihood Ratio Chi-Square” by SAS.

Appropriate data
- A nominal variable with two or more levels
- Theoretical, typical, or neutral values for the proportions for this variable are needed for comparison
- G-test and chi-square tests may not be appropriate if there are cells with low expected counts

Hypotheses
- Null hypothesis: The proportions for the levels for the nominal variable are not different from the theoretical proportions.
- Alternative hypothesis (two-sided): The proportions for the levels for the nominal variable are different from the theoretical proportions.
Interpretation

Significant results can be reported as “The proportions for the levels for the nominal variable were statistically different from the theoretical proportions.”

Packages used in this chapter

The packages used in this chapter include:

- EMT
- DescTools
- ggplot2
- rcompanion

The following commands will install these packages if they are not already installed:

```r
if(!require(EMT)){install.packages("EMT")}
if(!require(DescTools)){install.packages("DescTools")}
if(!require(ggplot2)){install.packages("ggplot2")}
if(!require(rcompanion)){install.packages("rcompanion")}
```

Goodness-of-fit tests for nominal variables example

As part of a demographic survey of students in his environmental issues webinar series, Alucard recorded the race and ethnicity of his students. He wants to compare the data for his class to the demographic data for Cumberland County, New Jersey as a whole.

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Race</th>
<th>Alucard’s_class</th>
<th>County_proportion</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>White</td>
<td>20</td>
<td>0.775</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Black</td>
<td>9</td>
<td>0.132</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>American Indian</td>
<td>9</td>
<td>0.012</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Asian</td>
<td>1</td>
<td>0.054</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Pacific Islander</td>
<td>1</td>
<td>0.002</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Two or more races</td>
<td>1</td>
<td>0.025</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td><strong>Total</strong></td>
<td><strong>41</strong></td>
<td><strong>1.000</strong></td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Ethnicity</th>
<th>Alucard’s_class</th>
<th>County_proportion</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>Hispanic</td>
<td>7</td>
<td>0.174</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Not Hispanic</td>
<td>34</td>
<td>0.826</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td><strong>Total</strong></td>
<td><strong>41</strong></td>
<td><strong>1.000</strong></td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

**Exact tests for goodness-of-fit**

Race data

```r
observed = c(20, 9, 9, 1, 1, 1)
theoretical = c(0.775, 0.132, 0.012, 0.054, 0.002, 0.025)

library(EMT)
```

470
multinomial.test(observed, theoretical)

### This can take a long time!

Exact Multinomial Test, distance measure: p

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Events</th>
<th>pObs</th>
<th>p.value</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>1370754</td>
<td>0</td>
<td>0</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

### A faster, approximate test by Monte Carlo simulation

observed = c(20, 9, 9, 1, 1, 1)
thecoretical = c(0.775, 0.132, 0.012, 0.054, 0.002, 0.025)

library(EMT)
multinomial.test(observed, theoretical, MonteCarlo = TRUE)

Exact Multinomial Test, distance measure: p

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Events</th>
<th>pObs</th>
<th>p.value</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>1370754</td>
<td>0</td>
<td>0</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

Ethnicity data

x = 7
n = 41
theoretical = 0.174

binom.test(x, n, theoretical)

Exact binomial test
	number of successes = 7, number of trials = 41, p-value = 1

**G-test for goodness-of-fit**

Race data

observed = c(20, 9, 9, 1, 1, 1)
thecoretical = c(0.775, 0.132, 0.012, 0.054, 0.002, 0.025)

library(DescTools)

GTest(x = observed, p = theoretical, correct="none")
### Correct: "none" "williams" "yates"

Log likelihood ratio (G-test) goodness of fit test

data: observed
G = 46.317, X-squared df = 5, p-value = 7.827e-09

**Check expected counts**

```r
Test = GTest(x = observed,
p = theoretical,
correct="none")
```

Test$expected

```
[1] 31.775  5.412  0.492  2.214  0.082  1.025
```

### Note the low expected counts: 0.492, 0.082, and 1.025, suggesting the test may not be valid.

**Ethnicity data**

```r
observed = c(7, 34)
theoretical = c(0.174, 0.826)
```

```r
library(DescTools)
GTest(x = observed,
p = theoretical,
correct = "none")
```

### Correct: "none" "williams" "yates"

Log likelihood ratio (G-test) goodness of fit test

G = 0.0030624, X-squared df = 1, p-value = 0.9559

**Check expected counts**

```r
Test = GTest(x = observed,
p = theoretical,
correct = "none")
```

Test$expected

```
[1]  7.134 33.866
```

### There are no low expected counts.
Chi-square test for goodness-of-fit

Race data

```r
observed  = c(20, 9, 9, 1, 1, 1)
theoretical = c(0.775, 0.132, 0.012, 0.054, 0.002, 0.025)

chisq.test(x = observed,
            p = theoretical)

Chi-squared test for given probabilities

x-squared = 164.81, df = 5, p-value < 2.2e-16
```

Check expected counts

```r
Test = chisq.test(x = observed,
                   p = theoretical)

Test$expected

[1] 31.775  5.412  0.492  2.214  0.082  1.025

### Note the low expected counts: 0.492, 0.082, and 1.025, 
### suggesting the test may not be valid.
```

Ethnicity data

```r
observed  = c(7, 34)
theoretical = c(0.174, 0.826)

chisq.test(x = observed,
            p = theoretical)

Chi-squared test for given probabilities

x-squared = 0.0030472, df = 1, p-value = 0.956
```

Check expected counts

```r
Test = chisq.test(x = observed,
                   p = theoretical)

Test$expected

[1]  7.134 33.866

### There are no low expected counts.
```
Effect size for goodness-of-fit tests

Cramér’s $V$, a measure of association used for 2-dimensional contingency tables, can be modified for use in goodness-of-fit tests for nominal variables. In this context, a value of Cramér’s $V$ of 0 indicates that observed values match theoretical values perfectly. If theoretical proportions are equally distributed, the maximum for value for Cramér’s $V$ is 1. However, if theoretical proportions vary among categories, Cramér’s $V$ can exceed 1.

Interpretation of effect sizes necessarily varies by discipline and the expectations of the experiment, but for behavioral studies, the guidelines proposed by Cohen (1988) are sometimes followed. The following guidelines are based on the suggestions of Cohen ($2 \leq k \leq 6$) and an extension of these values ($7 \leq k \leq 10$). They should not be considered universal.

The following table is appropriate for chi-square goodness-of-fit tests, and similar tests, where the theoretical proportions are equally distributed among categories. $k$ is the number of categories.

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>$k$</th>
<th>Small</th>
<th>Medium</th>
<th>Large</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>2</td>
<td>0.100 – &lt; 0.300</td>
<td>0.300 – &lt; 0.500</td>
<td>$\geq 0.500$</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>3</td>
<td>0.071 – &lt; 0.212</td>
<td>0.212 – &lt; 0.354</td>
<td>$\geq 0.354$</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>4</td>
<td>0.058 – &lt; 0.173</td>
<td>0.173 – &lt; 0.289</td>
<td>$\geq 0.289$</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>5</td>
<td>0.050 – &lt; 0.150</td>
<td>0.150 – &lt; 0.250</td>
<td>$\geq 0.250$</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>6</td>
<td>0.045 – &lt; 0.134</td>
<td>0.134 – &lt; 0.224</td>
<td>$\geq 0.224$</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>7</td>
<td>0.043 – &lt; 0.130</td>
<td>0.130 – &lt; 0.217</td>
<td>$\geq 0.217$</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>8</td>
<td>0.042 – &lt; 0.127</td>
<td>0.127 – &lt; 0.212</td>
<td>$\geq 0.212$</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>9</td>
<td>0.042 – &lt; 0.125</td>
<td>0.125 – &lt; 0.209</td>
<td>$\geq 0.209$</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>10</td>
<td>0.041 – &lt; 0.124</td>
<td>0.124 – &lt; 0.207</td>
<td>$\geq 0.207$</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

Examples of effect size for goodness-of-fit tests

Since the theoretical proportions in these example aren’t equally distributed among categories, these values of Cramér’s $V$ may be difficult to interpret.

Race data

```r
observed = c(20, 9, 9, 1, 1, 1)
theoretical = c(0.775, 0.132, 0.012, 0.054, 0.002, 0.025)

library(rcompanion)
cramerVFit(x = observed,
            p = theoretical)

Cramer V
0.8966
```
Ethnicity data

\[
\text{observed} = c(7, 34) \\
\text{theoretical} = c(0.174, 0.826)
\]

c\text{ramerVFit (x = observed, p = theoretical)}

\[
\text{Cramer V} \\
0.008621
\]

Simple bar plots

Race example

In order to facilitate plotting with R base graphics, the vector of counts is converted to proportions, and the theoretical and observed proportions are combined into a table, named \( XT \).

See the Introduction to Tests for Nominal Variables chapter for a few additional options for how bar plots are plotted.

\[
\text{observed} = c(20, 9, 9, 1, 1, 1) \\
\text{theoretical} = c(0.775, 0.132, 0.012, 0.054, 0.002, 0.025)
\]

\[
\text{Observed.prop} = \frac{\text{observed}}{\text{sum(observed)}} \\
\text{Theoretical.prop} = \text{theoretical}
\]

\[
\text{Observed.prop} = \text{round(Observed.prop, 3)} \\
\text{Theoretical.prop} = \text{round(Theoretical.prop, 3)}
\]

\[
\text{XT} = \text{rbind(Theoretical.prop, Observed.prop)}
\]

\[
\text{colnames(XT)} = c(\text{"White"}, \text{"Black"}, \text{"AI"}, \text{"Asian"}, \text{"PI"}, \text{"Two+"})
\]

\[
\text{XT}
\begin{array}{ccccccc}
\text{White} & \text{Black} & \text{AI} & \text{Asian} & \text{PI} & \text{Two+} \\
0.775 & 0.132 & 0.012 & 0.054 & 0.002 & 0.025 \\
0.488 & 0.220 & 0.220 & 0.024 & 0.024 & 0.024
\end{array}
\]

\[
\text{barplot(XT, beside = T, xlab = "Race", col = c("cornflowerblue","blue"), legend = rownames(XT))}
\]
In order to plot with `ggplot2`, the table `XT` will be converted into a data frame in long format.

```r
Race = c(colnames(XT), colnames(XT))
Race = factor(Race, levels=unique(colnames(XT)))
Proportion = c(rep("Theoretical", 6), rep("Observed", 6))
Value = c(XT[1,], XT[2,])
DF = data.frame(Race, Proportion, Value)
DF
```

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Race</th>
<th>Proportion</th>
<th>Value</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>White</td>
<td>Theoretical</td>
<td>0.775</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Black</td>
<td>Theoretical</td>
<td>0.132</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>AI</td>
<td>Theoretical</td>
<td>0.012</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Asian</td>
<td>Theoretical</td>
<td>0.054</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>PI</td>
<td>Theoretical</td>
<td>0.002</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Two+</td>
<td>Theoretical</td>
<td>0.025</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>White</td>
<td>Observed</td>
<td>0.488</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Black</td>
<td>Observed</td>
<td>0.220</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>AI</td>
<td>Observed</td>
<td>0.220</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Asian</td>
<td>Observed</td>
<td>0.024</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>PI</td>
<td>Observed</td>
<td>0.024</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Two+</td>
<td>Observed</td>
<td>0.024</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

```r
library(ggplot2)

ggplot(DF,
```
Ethnicity example

```r
observed = c(7, 34)
theoretical = c(0.174, 0.826)

Observed.prop = observed / sum(observed)
Theoretical.prop = theoretical

Observed.prop = round(Observed.prop, 3)
Theoretical.prop = round(Theoretical.prop, 3)

XT = rbind(Theoretical.prop, Observed.prop)
colnames(XT) = c("Hispanic", "Not hispanic")

XT
```

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th></th>
<th>Hispanic</th>
<th>Not hispanic</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>Theoretical.prop</td>
<td>0.174</td>
<td>0.826</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Observed.prop</td>
<td>0.171</td>
<td>0.829</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>
GOODNESS-OF-FIT TESTS FOR NOMINAL VARIABLES

SUMMARY AND ANALYSIS OF EXTENSION EDUCATION PROGRAM
EVALUATION IN R

barplot(XT,
    beside = T,
    xlab   = "Ethnicity",
    col    = c("firebrick1","firebrick"),
    legend = rownames(XT),
    ylim   = c(0, 1.4))

Ethnicity = c(colnames(XT), colnames(XT))
Ethnicity = factor(Ethnicity,
    levels=unique(colnames(XT)))
Proportion = c(rep("Theoretical", 2), rep("Observed", 2))
Value = c(XT[1,], XT[2,])
DF = data.frame(Ethnicity, Proportion, Value)
DF

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Ethnicity</th>
<th>Proportion</th>
<th>Value</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>1  Hispanic</td>
<td>Theoretical</td>
<td>0.174</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>2  Not hispanic</td>
<td>Theoretical</td>
<td>0.826</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>3  Hispanic</td>
<td>Observed</td>
<td>0.171</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>4  Not hispanic</td>
<td>Observed</td>
<td>0.829</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

library(ggplot2)

ggplot(DF,
    aes(x = Ethnicity, y = Value, fill = Proportion)) +
    geom_bar(stat = 'identity', position = 'dodge') +
    scale_fill_manual(values = c("firebrick1","firebrick")) +
    ylab("Proportion")
Optional: Multinomial test example with plot and confidence intervals

This is an example of a multinomial test that includes a bar plot showing confidence intervals. The data is a simple vector of counts.

For a similar example using two-way count data which is organized into a data frame, see the "Examples of basic plots for nominal data" section in the Basic Plots chapter.

Walking to the store, Jerry Coyne observed the colors of nail polish on women’s toes (Coyne, 2016). Presumably because that’s the kind of thing retired professors are apt to do. He concluded that red was a more popular color but didn’t do any statistical analysis to support his conclusion.

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Color of polish</th>
<th>Count</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>Red</td>
<td>19</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>None or clear</td>
<td>3</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>White</td>
<td>1</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Green</td>
<td>1</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Purple</td>
<td>2</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Blue</td>
<td>2</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

We will use a multinomial goodness of fit test to determine if there is an overall difference in the proportion of colors (multinomial.test function in the EMT package). The confidence intervals for each proportion can be found with the MultinomCI function in the DescTools package. The data then needs to be manipulated some so that we can plot the data as counts and not proportions.

Note here that the theoretical counts are simply 1 divided by the number of treatments. In this case the null hypothesis is that the observed proportions are all the same. In the examples above, the null
hypothesis was that the observed proportions were not different than theoretical proportions. It's two ways to think of the same null hypothesis.

The confidence intervals for each proportion can be used as a post-hoc test, to determine which proportions differ from each other, or to determine which proportions differ from 0.

```r
nail.color = c("Red", "None", "White", "Green", "Purple", "Blue")
observed = c(19, 3, 1, 1, 2, 2)
theoretical = c(1/6, 1/6, 1/6, 1/6, 1/6, 1/6)

library(EMT)

multinomial.test(observed, theoretical)

### This may take a while. Use Monte Carlo for large numbers.

Exact Multinomial Test, distance measure: p

Events  pObs  p.value
237336   0     0

library(rcompanion)
cramerVFit(observed)

### Assumes equal proportions for theoretical values.

Cramer V
0.6178

library(DescTools)

MCI = MultinomCI(observed,
                  conf.level=0.95,
                  method="sisonglaz")

MCI

      est     lwr.ci     upr.ci
[1,] 0.67857143 0.5357143 0.8423162
[2,] 0.10714286 0.0000000 0.2708876
[3,] 0.03571429 0.0000000 0.1994590
[4,] 0.03571429 0.0000000 0.1994590
[5,] 0.07142857 0.0000000 0.2351733
[6,] 0.07142857 0.0000000 0.2351733

### Order the levels, otherwise R will alphabetize them

Nail.color = factor(nail.color,
```
### For plot, Create variables of counts, and then wrap them into a data frame

```r
levels=unique(nail.color))

Total = sum(observed)
Count = observed
Lower = MCI[,\'lwr.ci\'] * Total
Upper = MCI[,\'upr.ci\'] * Total

Data = data.frame(Count, Lower, Upper)

library(ggplot2)

ggplot(Data, ### The data frame to use.
aes(x = Nail.color,
    y = Count)) +

  geom_bar(stat = "identity",
           color = "black",
           fill = "gray50",
           width = 0.7) +

  geom_errorbar(aes(ymin = Lower,
                   ymax = Upper),
                width = 0.2,
                size = 0.7,
                position = pd,
                color = "black"
           ) +

  theme_bw() +
  theme(axis.title = element_text(face = "bold")) +

  ylab("Count of observations") +
  xlab("Nail color")
```
Bar plot of the count of the color of women’s toenail polish observed by Jerry Coyne while walking to the store. Error bars indicate 95% confidence intervals (Sison and Glaz method).

Optional readings


References


Exercises Beta

1. What do you conclude about whether the race of Alucard's students match the proportions in the county? Include, as appropriate:

   - The statistical test you are using, $p$-value from that test, conclusion of the test, and any other comments on the test.
   - The effect size and interpretation, or perhaps why you don’t want to rely on that information.
   - Description of the observed counts or proportions relative to the theoretical proportions. Is there anything notable?
   - Any other practical conclusions you wish to note.

2. What do you conclude about whether the ethnicity of Alucard’s students match the proportions in the county? Include, as appropriate:

   - The statistical test you are using, $p$-value from that test, conclusion of the test, and any other comments on the test.
   - The effect size and interpretation, or perhaps why you don’t want to rely on that information.
   - Description of the observed counts or proportions relative to the theoretical proportions. Is there anything notable?
   - Any other practical conclusions you wish to note.

Association Tests for Nominal Variables

These tests for nominal variables are used to determine if two nominal variables are associated. Sometimes the term “independent” is used to mean that there is no association.

In general, there are no assumptions about the distribution of data for these tests.

Note that for these tests of association there shouldn’t be paired values. For example, if experimental units—the things you are counting—are “students before” and “students after”, or “left hands” and “right hands”, the tests in the chapter Tests for Paired Nominal Data may be more appropriate.

Also note that these tests will not be accurate if there are “structural zeros” in the contingency table. If you were counting pregnant and non-pregnant individuals across categories like male and female, the male–pregnant cell may contain a structural zero if you assume your population cannot have pregnant males.
**Low cell counts**
The results of chi-square tests and G-tests can be inaccurate if expected cell counts are low. A rule of thumb is that all expected counts should be 5 or greater for chi-square- and G-tests. For a more complete discussion, see McDonald in the “Optional Readings” section on what constitutes low cell counts.

For tables larger than 2 x 2, a rule of thumb is that all expected counts are 1 or greater and that no more than 20% of expected counts are less than 5.

One approach when there are low expected counts is to use exact tests, such as Fisher’s exact test, which are not bothered by low cell counts.

Another approach is to apply a continuity correction to the test. The `chisq.test` function automatically applies the Yates’s continuity correction for 2 x 2 tables. The `GTest` function has options for Yates or Williams corrections.

**Fisher’s exact test**
Technically, Fisher’s exact test assumes that the table has fixed margins, in at least in one dimension. As one example, if the table has counts of males and females, the test could assume that the number of males tested and the number of females tested was determined ahead of time.

It appears to me that this assumption is commonly ignored, but I don’t know if this is because of ignorance of this assumption, or just that some people assume that advantages of the exact test outweigh any violation of the assumption.

**Choosing among tests**
If there are not low expected counts, using G-test or chi-square test is fine. The advantage of chi-square tests is that your audience may be more familiar with them. That being said, some authors recommend the using Fisher’s exact test routinely unless the number of observations is so great that the analysis takes too long.

**Appropriate data**
- Two nominal variables with two or more levels each.
- Experimental units aren’t paired.
- There are no structural zeros in the contingency table.
- G-test and chi-square test may not be appropriate if there are cells with low expected counts.

**Hypotheses**
- Null hypothesis: There is no association between the two variables.
- Alternative hypothesis (two-sided): There is an association between the two variables.

**Interpretation**
Significant results can be reported as “There was a significant association between variable A and variable B.”
**Post-hoc analysis**

Post hoc analysis for tests on a contingency table larger than 2 x 2 can be conducted by conducting tests for the component 2 x n tables. A correction for multiple tests should be applied.

**Other notes and alternative tests**

- For paired data, see the tests in the chapter *Tests for Paired Nominal Data*.
- For tables with 3 dimensions, the Cochran–Mantel–Haenszel test can be used.

**Packages used in this chapter**

The packages used in this chapter include:
- DescTools
- multcompView
- rcompanion

The following commands will install these packages if they are not already installed:

```r
if(!require(DescTools)){install.packages("DescTools")}
if(!require(multcompView)){install.packages("multcompView")}
if(!require(rcompanion)){install.packages("rcompanion")}
```

**Association tests for nominal variables example**

Alexander Anderson runs the pesticide safety training course in four counties. Students must pass in order to obtain their pesticide applicator’s license. He wishes to see if there is an association between the county in which the course was held and the rate of passing the test. The following are his data.

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>County</th>
<th>Pass</th>
<th>Fail</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>Bloom County</td>
<td>21</td>
<td>5</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Cobblestone County</td>
<td>6</td>
<td>11</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Dougal County</td>
<td>7</td>
<td>8</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Heimlich County</td>
<td>27</td>
<td>5</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

**Reading the data as a matrix**

```r
Input =("County Pass Fail
Bloom 21 5
Cobblestone 6 11
Dougal 7 8
Heimlich 27 5"
)

Matrix = as.matrix(read.table(textConnection(Input),
header=TRUE,
row.names=1))

Matrix
```
Expected cell counts
The `chisq.test` function can be used to identify the expected counts for a contingency table.

Note in the results here that one cell has an expected count below 5, but that all expected counts are at least 1, and that cells with expected counts below 5 are less than 20% of cells. (1 / 8 cells = 13%).

```
Test = chisq.test(Matrix)
Test$expected
```

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th></th>
<th>Pass</th>
<th>Fail</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>Bloom</td>
<td>17.62</td>
<td>8.38</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Cobblestone</td>
<td>11.52</td>
<td>5.48</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Dougal</td>
<td>10.17</td>
<td>4.83</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Heimlich</td>
<td>21.69</td>
<td>10.31</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

Effect size
See the chapter *Measures of Association for Nominal Variables* for a discussion of effect size statistics and their interpretation for contingency tables of nominal variables.

```
library(rcompanion)
cramerV(Matrix, digits=3)
```

```
Cramer V
0.439
```

### Note: k = 2 for this table,
### as the minimum categories in one dimension is 2.

Fisher Exact test of association

```
fisher.test(Matrix)
```

```
Fisher's Exact Test for Count Data

p-value = 0.000668
alternative hypothesis: two.sided
```

Post-hoc analysis
Post-hoc analysis can be conducted with pairwise Fisher’s exact tests. The function `pairwiseNominalIndependence` in the `rcompanion` package can be used to conduct this analysis.

### Order matrix

```
Matrix = Matrix[(c("Heimlich", "Bloom", "Dougal", "Cobblestone")),]
```
### Pairwise tests of association

```r
library(rcompanion)

library(rcompanion)

PT = pairwiseNominalIndependence(Matrix,
    compare = "row",
    fisher = TRUE,
    gtest = FALSE,
    chisq = FALSE,
    method = "fdr", # see ?p.adjust for options
digits = 3)

PT
```

```
1   Heimlich : Bloom  0.740000      0.74000
2 Heimlich : Dougal  0.013100      0.02620
3 Heimlich : Cobblestone  0.000994      0.00596
4    Bloom : Dougal  0.037600      0.05640
5   Bloom : Cobblestone  0.003960      0.01190
6    Dougal : Cobblestone  0.720000      0.74000
```

### Compact letter display

```r
cldList(p.adj.Fisher ~ Comparison,
    data = PT,
    threshold = 0.05)
```

```
Group Letter MonoLetter
1    Heimlich      a        a
2       Bloom     ab        ab
3      Dougal   bc         bc
4 Cobblestone      c          c
```

The table of adjusted p-values can be summarized to a table of letters indicating which treatments are not significantly different.

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>County</th>
<th>Percent passing</th>
<th>Letter</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>Heimlich County</td>
<td>84%</td>
<td>a</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Bloom County</td>
<td>81</td>
<td>ab</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Dougal County</td>
<td>47</td>
<td>bc</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Cobblestone County</td>
<td>35</td>
<td>c</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

Counties sharing a letter are not significantly different by Fisher exact test, with p-values adjusted by FDR method for multiple comparisons (Benjamini-Hochberg false discovery rate).
This table of letters can also be found using the `pairwiseNominalMatrix` function along with the `multcompLetters` function in the `multcompView` package.

### Order matrix

```r
Matrix = Matrix[(c("Heimlich", "Bloom", "Dougal", "Cobblestone")),]
Matrix
```

### Pairwise tests of association

```r
library(rcompanion)
PM = pairwiseNominalMatrix(Matrix, 
                            compare = "row", 
                            fisher = TRUE, 
                            gtest = FALSE, 
                            chisq = FALSE, 
                            method = "fdr",  # see ?p.adjust for options 
                            digits = 3)
PM
```

```r
$Test
[1] "Fisher exact test"

$Method
[1] "fdr"

$Adjusted

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th></th>
<th>Heimlich</th>
<th>Bloom</th>
<th>Dougal</th>
<th>Cobblestone</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>Heimlich</td>
<td>1.00000</td>
<td>0.7400</td>
<td>0.0262</td>
<td>0.00596</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Bloom</td>
<td>0.74000</td>
<td>1.0000</td>
<td>0.0564</td>
<td>0.74000</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Dougal</td>
<td>0.02620</td>
<td>0.0564</td>
<td>1.0000</td>
<td>0.00596</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Cobblestone</td>
<td>0.00596</td>
<td>0.0119</td>
<td>0.7400</td>
<td>1.00000</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>
```

```r
library(multcompView)
multcompLetters(PM$Adjusted, 
                 compare="<", 
                 threshold=0.05,  ### p-value to use as significance threshold 
                 Letters=letters, 
                 reversed = FALSE)
```

```r
Heimlich       Bloom      Dougal Cobblestone
"a"            "ab"        "bc"         "c"
```

### G-test of association

```r
library(DescTools)
```

488
Association Tests for Nominal Variables

Summary and Analysis of Extension Education Program Evaluation in R

GTest(Matrix)

Log likelihood ratio (G-test) test of independence without correction

\[ G = 17.14, \chi^2 \text{-squared df} = 3, \ p\text{-value} = 0.0006615 \]

Post-hoc analysis

### Order matrix

Matrix = Matrix[(c("Heimlich", "Bloom", "Dougal", "Cobblestone")),]

Matrix

### Pairwise tests of association

pairwiseNominalIndependence(Matrix,
   compare = "row",
   fisher = FALSE,
   gtest = TRUE,
   chisq = FALSE,
   method = "fdr",  # see ?p.adjust for options
digits = 3)

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th></th>
<th></th>
<th></th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>1</td>
<td>Heimlich : Bloom</td>
<td>0.718000</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>2</td>
<td>Heimlich : Dougal</td>
<td>0.008300</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>3</td>
<td>Heimlich : Cobblestone</td>
<td>0.000506</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>4</td>
<td>Bloom : Dougal</td>
<td>0.024800</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>5</td>
<td>Bloom : Cobblestone</td>
<td>0.002380</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>6</td>
<td>Dougal : Cobblestone</td>
<td>0.513000</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

The table of adjusted p-values can be summarized to a table of letters indicating which treatments are not significantly different.

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>County</th>
<th>Percent passing</th>
<th>Letter</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>Heimlich County</td>
<td>84%</td>
<td>a</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Bloom County</td>
<td>81</td>
<td>a</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Dougal County</td>
<td>47</td>
<td>b</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Cobblestone County</td>
<td>35</td>
<td>b</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

Counties sharing a letter are not significantly different by G-test for association, with p-values adjusted by FDR method for multiple comparisons (Benjamini-Hochberg false discovery rate).

Chi-square test of association

chisq.test(Matrix)

Pearson’s Chi-squared test
$X^2 = 17.32, \ df = 3, \ p\text{-value} = 0.0006072$

**Post-hoc analysis**

```r
### Order matrix
Matrix = Matrix[(c("Heimlich", "Bloom", "Dougal", "Cobblestone")),]
Matrix
```

```r
### Pairwise tests of association
library(rcompanion)
pairwiseNominalIndependence(Matrix,
   compare = "row",
   fisher = FALSE,
   gtest = FALSE,
   chisq = TRUE,
   method = "fdr", # see ?p.adjust for options
digits = 3)

Comparison p.Chisq p.adj.Chisq
1   Heimlich : Bloom  0.99000     0.99000
2   Heimlich : Dougal 0.01910     0.03820
3 Heimlich : Cobblestone 0.00154     0.00924
4     Bloom : Dougal 0.05590     0.08380
5    Bloom : Cobblestone 0.00707     0.02120
6   Dougal : Cobblestone 0.77000     0.92400
```

The table of adjusted $p$-values can be summarized to a table of letters indicating which treatments are not significantly different.

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>County</th>
<th>Percent passing</th>
<th>Letter</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>Heimlich County</td>
<td>84%</td>
<td>a</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Bloom County</td>
<td>81</td>
<td>ab</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Dougal County</td>
<td>47</td>
<td>bc</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Cobblestone County</td>
<td>35</td>
<td>c</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

Counties sharing a letter are not significantly different by chi-square test of association, with $p$-values adjusted by FDR method for multiple comparisons (Benjamini–Hochberg false discovery rate).

**Optional readings**

References


Exercises M

1. Considering Alexander Anderson’s data,

   a. Numerically, which county had the greatest percentage of passing students?

   b. Numerically, which county had the greatest number of total students?

   c. Was there an association between county and student success? Report the test used, why you chose this test, the p-value, and the conclusion.

   d. What was the effect size? What statistic was used? What is the interpretation of this value?

   e. Statistically, which counties performed the best? Be sure to indicate which post-hoc test you are using.

   f. Statistically, which performed the worst?

   g. Plot the data in an appropriate way, and submit the plot.

   h. Practically speaking, what are your conclusions? Consider all the information above that is relevant, and include descriptive statistics and observations about your plot that support your conclusions.

2. Ryuk and Rem held a workshop on planting habitat for pollinators like bees and butterflies. They wish to know if there is an association between the profession of the attendees and their willingness to undertake a conservation planting. The following are the data.

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Profession</th>
<th>Will plant?</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>Homeowner</td>
<td>Yes  No</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Landscaper</td>
<td>13   14</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>27   6</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>
For each of the following, answer the question, and show the output from the analyses you used to answer the question.

a. Numerically, which profession had the greatest percentage of answering yes?

b. Numerically, which profession had the greatest number of total attendees?

c. Was there an association between profession and willingness to undertake a conservation planting? Report the test used, why you chose this test, the p-value, and the conclusion.

d. What was the effect size? What statistic was used? What is the interpretation of this value?

e. Statistically, which professions were most willing? Be sure to indicate which post-hoc test you are using.

f. Statistically, which were least willing?

g. Plot the data in an appropriate way, and submit the plot.

h. Practically speaking, what are your conclusions? Consider all the information above that is relevant, and include descriptive statistics and observations about your plot that support your conclusions.

Measures of Association for Nominal Variables

There are several statistics that can be used to gauge the strength of the association between two nominal variables. They are used as measures of effect size for tests of association for nominal variables.

The statistics \( \phi \) and Cramér’s \( V \) are commonly used. Cramér’s \( V \) varies from 0 to 1, with a 1 indicating a perfect association. \( \phi \) varies from \(-1\) to 1, with \(-1\) and 1 indicating perfect associations. \( \phi \) is available only for \( 2 \times 2 \) tables.

Cohen’s \( w \) is similar to Cramér’s \( V \) in use, but it’s upper value is not limited to 1.

Cohen’s \( h \) is used to compare the difference in two proportions. It can be used in \( 2 \times 2 \) contingency tables in cases where it makes sense to compare the proportions in rows or columns. It can also be used in cases where proportions are known but the actual counts are not. A value of 0 indicates no difference in proportions, and the difference between proportions of 0.00 and 1.00 results in a value of \( \pm \pi \) (c. 3.14).

Goodman and Kruskal’s \( \lambda \) statistic is also used to gauge the strength of the association between
two nominal variables. It is formulated so that one dimension on the table is considered the independent variable, and one is considered the dependent variable, so that the independent variable is used to predict the dependent variable. It varies from 0 to 1.

Another measure of association is Tschuprow’s T. It is similar to Cramér’s V, and they are equivalent for square tables (one with an equal number of rows and columns).

**Appropriate data**
- Two nominal variables with two or more levels each. Usually expressed as a contingency table.
- Experimental units aren’t paired.
- For phi, the table is 2 x 2 only.

**Hypotheses**
- There are no hypotheses tested directly with these statistics.

**Other notes and alternative tests**
- Freeman’s *theta* and *epsilon* squared are used for tables with one ordinal variable and one nominal variable.
- For tables with two ordinal variables, Kendall’s Tau-b, Goodman and Kruskal’s gamma, and Somers’ D are used.

**Interpretation of statistics**

The interpretation of measures of association is always relative to the discipline, the specific data, and the aims of the analyst. Sometimes guidelines are given for “small”, “medium”, and “large” effects—for example from Cohen (1988) for behavioral sciences—but it is important to remember that these are still relative to the discipline and type of data. A smaller effect size may be considered “large” in psychology or behavioral science, but may be considered quite small in a physical science such as chemistry. The specific conditions of the study are important as well. For example, one would expect the difference in knowledge between a group completely ignorant of a subject and one educated in the subject to be large, but the difference between two groups educated in the same subject with different manners might be small.

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th></th>
<th>Small</th>
<th>Medium</th>
<th>Large</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td><strong>Cohen’s w</strong></td>
<td>0.10 – &lt; 0.30</td>
<td>0.30 – &lt; 0.50</td>
<td>≥ 0.50</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td><strong>phi</strong></td>
<td>0.10 – &lt; 0.30</td>
<td>0.30 – &lt; 0.50</td>
<td>≥ 0.50</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td><strong>Cohen’s h</strong></td>
<td>0.20 – &lt; 0.50</td>
<td>0.50 – &lt; 0.80</td>
<td>≥ 0.80</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td><strong>Cramér’s V, k = 2</strong>*</td>
<td>0.10 – &lt; 0.30</td>
<td>0.30 – &lt; 0.50</td>
<td>≥ 0.50</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td><strong>Cramér’s V, k = 3</strong>*</td>
<td>0.07 – &lt; 0.20</td>
<td>0.20 – &lt; 0.35</td>
<td>≥ 0.35</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td><strong>Cramér’s V, k = 4</strong>*</td>
<td>0.06 – &lt; 0.17</td>
<td>0.17 – &lt; 0.29</td>
<td>≥ 0.29</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

Adapted from Cohen (1988).

* k is the minimum number of categories in either rows or columns.
Measures of Association for Nominal Variables

Summary and Analysis of Extension Education Program Evaluation in R

Packages used in this chapter

The packages used in this chapter include:

- rcompanion
- vcd
- psych
- DescTools

The following commands will install these packages if they are not already installed:

```r
if(!require(rcompanion)){install.packages("rcompanion")}
if(!require(vcd)){install.packages("vcd")}
if(!require(psych)){install.packages("psych")}
if(!require(DescTools)){install.packages("DescTools")}
```

Examples for measures of association for nominal variables

Cramér’s V

```r
Input =("County Pass Fail
Bloom 21 5
Cobblestone 6 11
Dougal 7 8
Heimlich 27 5"

Matrix = as.matrix(read.table(textConnection(Input),
header=TRUE,
row.names=1))

library(rcompanion)
cramerV(Matrix,
digits=4)

Cramer V
0.4387

library(vcd)
assocstats(Matrix)

Phi-Coefficient : NA
Cramer's V : 0.439
```
library(DescTools)

CramerV(Matrix, conf.level=0.95)

Cramer V lwr.ci upr.ci
0.4386881 0.1944364 0.6239856

\textit{phi}

Input = ("Sex Pass Fail
Male 49 64
Female 44 24")

Matrix.2 = as.matrix(read.table(textConnection(Input), header=TRUE, row.names=1))

Matrix.2

library(psych)

phi(Matrix.2, digits = 4)

[1] -0.2068

library(DescTools)

Phi(Matrix.2)

[1] 0.206808

###  It appears that DescTools always produces a positive value.

library(rcompanion)

cramerV(Matrix.2)

Cramer V
0.2068

###  Note that Cramer's V is the same as the absolute value of phi for 2 x 2 tables.
Measures of Association for Nominal Variables

Summary and Analysis of Extension Education Program Evaluation in R

Cohen's w

Input =("County Pass Fail
Bloom 21 5
Cobblestone 6 11
Dougal 7 8
Heimlich 27 5"
)

Matrix = as.matrix(read.table(textConnection(Input),
header=TRUE,
row.names=1))

library(rcompanion)
cohenW(Matrix)

Cohen w
0.4387

### Note that because the smallest dimension in the table is 2,
the value of Cohen's w is the same as that for
Cramer's V.

Cohen's h

Input =("Sex Pass Fail
Male 49 64
Female 44 24"
)

Matrix.2 = as.matrix(read.table(textConnection(Input),
header=TRUE,
row.names=1))

library(rcompanion)
cohenH(Matrix.2,
observation = "row",
digits = 3)

Group Proportion
1 Male 0.434
2 Female 0.647

496
Cohen's $h$
0.432

**Goodman Kruskal lambda**

```r
Input = ('County       Pass  Fail
Bloom         21    5
Cobblestone   6    11
Dougal        7    8
Heimlich      27    5
')
Matrix = as.matrix(read.table(textConnection(Input),
header=TRUE,
row.names=1))
Matrix = as.matrix(read.table(textConnection(Input),
header=TRUE,
row.names=1))
library(DescTools)
Lambda(Matrix,
direction="column")
[1] 0.2068966
### County predicts Pass/Fail

**Tschuprow's $T$**

```r
Input = ('County       Pass  Fail
Bloom         21    5
Cobblestone   6    11
Dougal        7    8
Heimlich      27    5
')
Matrix = as.matrix(read.table(textConnection(Input),
header=TRUE,
row.names=1))
Matrix = as.matrix(read.table(textConnection(Input),
header=TRUE,
row.names=1))
library(DescTools)
TschuprowT(Matrix)
[1] 0.3333309
```
**Optional analysis: using effect size statistics when counts are not known**

One property of effect size statistics is that they are not affected by sample size. This allows some to be used when proportions are known for a contingency table, but actual counts are not known.

As an example, we could analyze the proportions of votes for the Democratic candidate in 2016 and 2018 in Pennsylvania's 18th Congressional District. The 2016 data are for the presidential race where Hilary Clinton was the Democratic candidate. The 2018 data are for the House of Representatives election where Conor Lamb was the Democratic candidate.

Note that the effect sizes here are considered “small” by Cohen's guidelines, but notable for American politics at the national level.

```r
Input =("Democrat Not.Democrat
2016 0.380 0.620
2018 0.498 0.502"
)

Penn18 = as.matrix(read.table(textConnection(Input),
header=TRUE,
row.names=1))

library(rcompanion)
cohenH(Penn18,
observation = "row",
digits = 3)

library(psych)
phi(Penn18,
digits = 3)
```

```r

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Group</th>
<th>Proportion</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>1</td>
<td>2016</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>2</td>
<td>2018</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

Cohen's h

```

```
[1] -0.119
```
Optional analysis: Cohen’s $h$ and `prop.test` for paired data when subject matching isn’t known

In the chapter on *Tests for Paired Nominal Data*, there is an example measuring rain barrel adoption before and after a class.

In this example, the identity of subjects was matched before and after, and the table could be analyzed with McNemar’s test or a similar test, and the effect size could be determined with Cohen’s $g$.

Before       After.yes   After.no
Before.yes     9          5
Before.no      17         15

However, if the subjects identities were not recorded in a manner that allowed for this matching, we could still measure the difference in proportions with Cohen’s $h$ and with `prop.test`.

```r
Input =("Time Yes No
Before 14 32
After 26 20
")

Unmatched = as.matrix(read.table(textConnection(Input),
   header=TRUE,
   row.names=1))

library(rcompanion)
cohenH(unmatched,
   observation = "row",
   digits = 3)

Group Proportion
1 Before  0.304
2 After   0.565

Cohen's $h$
0.533
```
Yes = c(14, 26)
Trials = c(14+32, 26+20)
prop.test(Yes, Trials)

2-sample test for equality of proportions with continuity correction
data:  Yes out of Trials
X-squared = 5.3519, df = 1, p-value = 0.0207
alternative hypothesis: two.sided
95 percent confidence interval:
  -0.47806470  0.04367443
sample estimates:
  prop 1  prop 2
  0.3043478 0.5652174

Optional: Comparing phi and Cohen’s h for a 2 x 2 table

For a 2 x 2 table, Cohen’s h and phi do not follow a strictly monotonic relationship. Both statistics equal zero when there is no relationship, and Cohen’s h approaches pi as phi approaches –1. (As calculated here, the statistics have a negative relationship.) But there is variability in their values in between these endpoints for some simulated data.

In the second figure below, the colors indicate Cohen’s interpretation of less-than-small, small, medium, and large as the blue becomes darker. Note that the interpretations across the two statistics may vary for the same data, as is evidenced by the fact that the plotted values do not go through the corner of the rectangle delineating the medium and large interpretations. For example, for a phi of approximately –0.40 (medium), Cohen’s h are likely to range from 0.82 to 1.17, which would be interpreted as a large effect.
Optional analysis: changing the order of the table
Note that if we change the order of the rows in the table, the results for Cramér’s $V$, Cohen’s $w$, and $\lambda$ (with $direction=\text{column}$) do not change. This is because these statistics treat the variables as nominal and not ordinal.

```r
Input =("County               Pass   Fail
Heimlich             27      5
Bloom                21      5
Dougal                7      8
Cobblestone          6      11
")

Matrix.3 = as.matrix(read.table(textConnection(Input),
header=TRUE,
row.names=1))

Matrix.3

### Cramer's V
library(rcompanion)
cramerV(Matrix.3,
digits=4)

Cramer V
0.4387

### Cohen's w
cohenW(Matrix.3)

Cohen w
0.4387

### Goodman Kruskal lambda
library(DescTools)
Lambda(Matrix.3,
direction="column")

### Treat County as independent variable

[1] 0.2068966

Optional analysis: comparing statistics

The following examples may give some sense of the difference between Cramér’s $V$, and $\lambda$. 
Measures of Association for Nominal Variables

Summary and Analysis of Extension Education Program Evaluation in R

```r
Input =("X    Y1   Y2
       X1   10    0
       X2    0   10
"

Matrix.x = as.matrix(read.table(textConnection(Input),
       header=TRUE,
       row.names=1))

library(rcompanion)
cramerV(Matrix.x)

  Cramer V
  1

library(rcompanion)
cohenW(Matrix.x)

  Cohen w
  1

library(DescTools)
Lambda(Matrix.x,
       direction="column")

  [1] 1

Input =("X    Y1   Y2
       X1   10    0
       X2   10   10
"

Matrix.y = as.matrix(read.table(textConnection(Input),
       header=TRUE,
       row.names=1))

library(rcompanion)
cramerV(Matrix.y)

  Cramer V
  0.5

library(rcompanion)
cohenW(Matrix.y)
```

503
Cohen $w$

0.5

library(DescTools)

Lambda(Matrix.y, 
direction="column")

[1] 0

### X predicts Y.

Input =(" 
X    Y1   Y2
X1   10    0
X2   10   10
X3   10   20
X4   10   30
")

Matrix.z = as.matrix(read.table(textConnection(Input), 
header=TRUE, 
row.names=1))

library(rcompanion)

cramerV(Matrix.z)

Cramer V

0.4488

library(rcompanion)

cohenW(Matrix.z)

Cohen w

0.4488

library(DescTools)

Lambda(Matrix.z, 
direction="column")

[1] 0.25

### X predicts Y.

References

Tests for Paired Nominal Data

Tests of symmetry—or marginal homogeneity—for nominal data are used when the counts on a contingency table represent values that are paired or repeated in time.

As an example, consider a question repeated on a pre-test and a post-test. We may want to know if the number of correct responses changed from the pre-test to the post-test.

Did students have the correct answer to the question?

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th></th>
<th>Correct</th>
<th>Incorrect</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>Before</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Correct</td>
<td>2</td>
<td>0</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Incorrect</td>
<td>21</td>
<td>7</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

Note that the row names and column names have the same levels, and that counts represent paired responses. That is, for each observation you must know the individual’s response before and after.

Also note that the number of students included in the table are 30, or the sum of the cell counts.

In essence, those students with the same response before and after don’t affect the assessment of the change in responses. We would focus on the “discordant” counts. That is, How many students had incorrect answers before and correct answers after, in contrast to those who had the reverse trend. Here, because 21 changed from incorrect to correct, and 0 changed from correct to incorrect, we might suspect that there was a significant change in responses from incorrect to correct.

To grasp the difference between nominal tests of association and nominal tests of symmetry, be sure to visit the coffee and tea example below in the section “An example without repeated measures, comparing test of symmetry with test of association”.

Appropriate data
- Two nominal variables with two or more levels each, and each with the same levels.
- Observations are paired or matched between the two variables.
- McNemar and McNemar–Bowker tests may not be appropriate if discordant cells have low counts.

Hypotheses
- Null hypothesis: The contingency table is symmetric. That is, the probability of cell $[i, j]$ is equal to the probability of cell $[j, i]$.
- Alternative hypothesis (two-sided): The contingency table is not symmetric.
Interpretation

Depending on the context, significant results can be reported as e.g. “There was a significant change from answer A to answer B.” Or, “X was more popular than Y.”

Post-hoc analysis

Post hoc analysis for tests on a contingency table larger than 2 x 2 can be conducted by conducting tests for the component 2 x 2 tables. A correction for multiple tests should be applied.

Other notes and alternative tests

• For unpaired data, see the tests in the chapter Association Tests for Nominal Data.
• For multiple times or groups, Cochran’s Q test can be used.

Packages used in this chapter

The packages used in this chapter include:

• EMT
• rcompanion

The following commands will install these packages if they are not already installed:

```r
if(!require(EMT)){install.packages("EMT")}
if(!require(rcompanion)){install.packages("rcompanion")}
```

McNemar and McNemar–Bowker tests

For a 2 x 2 table, the most common test for symmetry is McNemar’s test. For larger tables, McNemar’s test is generalized as the McNemar–Bowker symmetry test. One drawback to the latter test is that it may fail if there are 0's in certain locations in the matrix.

McNemar’s test may not be reliable if there are low counts in the “discordant” cells. Authors recommend that these cells to sum to at least 5 or 10 or 25.

Exact tests

Exact tests of symmetry reduce to exact tests for goodness-of-fit. A 2 x 2 table is analyzed with a binomial exact test, and a larger table is analyzed with a multinomial exact test. Examples of these are shown in this chapter in the “Optional analyses: conducting exact tests for symmetry” section.

The nominalSymmetryTest function can conduct these exact tests easily.

Example of tests for paired data nominal data

Alucard teaches a Master Gardener training on rain gardens for stormwater management and one on rain barrels. He wishes to assess if people are more willing to install these green infrastructure practices after attending the training. His data follow. Note that there are 46 attendees answering each question.

Are you planning to install a rain barrel?
Summary and Analysis of Extension Education Program Evaluation in R

Tests for Paired Nominal Data

Are you planning to install a rain garden?

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th></th>
<th>Yes</th>
<th>No</th>
<th>Maybe</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>Before</td>
<td>9</td>
<td>17</td>
<td>11</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>After</td>
<td>6</td>
<td>5</td>
<td>11</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

Rain barrel

Input =("Before	After.yes	After.no
Before.yes	9	5
Before.no	17	15")

Matrix.1 = as.matrix(read.table(textConnection(Input),
header=TRUE,
row.names=1))

Matrix.1

sum(Matrix.1)

[1] 46

Rain garden

Input =("Before	Yes.after	No.after	Maybe.after
Yes.before	6	0	1
No.before	5	3	7
Maybe.before	11	1	12")

Matrix.2 = as.matrix(read.table(textConnection(Input),
header=TRUE,
row.names=1))

Matrix.2

sum(Matrix.2)

[1] 46
Exact tests for symmetry

Rain barrel

```r
library(rcompanion)

nominalSymmetryTest(Matrix.1,
  digits = 3)

$Global.test.for.symmetry

  Dimensions p.value
  1      2 x 2  0.0169
```

Rain garden

```r
library(rcompanion)

nominalSymmetryTest (Matrix.2,
  method="fdr",
  digits = 3)

### Note: This may take a long time
###       Use MonteCarlo option for large matrices or counts

$Global.test.for.symmetry

  Dimensions p.value
  1      3 x 3   2e-04

$Pairwise.symmetry.tests

  Comparison p.value p.adjust
  1   Yes.before/Yes.after : No.before/No.after  0.0625   0.0703
  2 Yes.before/Yes.after : Maybe.before/Maybe.after 0.00635   0.0190
  3 No.before/No.after : Maybe.before/Maybe.after  0.0703   0.0703

$p.adjustment

  Method
  1  fdr

Maybe to Yes, p.value = 0.0190

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Before</th>
<th>Yes.after</th>
<th>No.after</th>
<th>Maybe.after</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>Yes.before</td>
<td>6</td>
<td>0</td>
<td>1</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>No.before</td>
<td>5</td>
<td>3</td>
<td>7</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Maybe.before</td>
<td>11</td>
<td>1</td>
<td>12</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>
Effect size

Appropriate effect sizes for data subjected to McNemar, McNemar–Bowker, or equivalent exact tests include Cohen’s $g$ and odds ratio.

Considering a 2 x 2 table, with $a$ and $d$ being the concordant cells and $b$ and $c$ being the discordant cells, the odds ratio is simply the greater of $(b/c)$ or $(c/b)$, and $P$ is the greater of $b/(b+c)$ or $(c/b+c)$). Cohen’s $g$ is $P – 0.5$. These statistics can be extended to larger tables.

Cohen (1988) lists interpretations for Cohen’s $g$. These can easily translated into interpretations for the odds ratio. For example, the cutoff for the “small” interpretation is $g \geq 0.05$, which would be $0.55 : 0.45$ odds, or $0.55/0.45$, or $1.22$.

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th></th>
<th>Small</th>
<th>Medium</th>
<th>Large</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td><strong>Cohen’s $g$</strong></td>
<td>$0.05 – &lt; 0.15$</td>
<td>$0.15 – &lt; 0.25$</td>
<td>$\geq 0.25$</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td><strong>Odds ratio (OR)</strong></td>
<td>$1.22 – &lt; 1.86$</td>
<td>$1.86 – &lt; 3.00$</td>
<td>$\geq 3.00$</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

Rain barrel

In the output, OR is the odds ratio, and $g$ is Cohen’s $g$.

```r
library(rcompanion)
cohenG(Matrix.1)
```

```r
$Global.statistics
Dimensions  OR     P     g
 1    2 x 2 3.4 0.773 0.273
```

Rain garden

```r
library(rcompanion)
cohenG(Matrix.2)
```

```r
$Global.statistics
Dimensions  OR     P     g
 1    3 x 3 11.5 0.92 0.42
```

```r
$Pairwise.statistics
Comparison   OR     P     g
 1 Yes.before/Yes.after : No.before/No.after Inf 1 0.5
 2 Yes.before/Yes.after : Maybe.before/Maybe.after 11 0.917 0.417
 3 No.before/No.after : Maybe.before/Maybe.after 7 0.875 0.375
```

McNemar and McNemar–Bowker chi-square tests for symmetry

Rain barrel

```r
mcnemar.test(Matrix.1)
```
Tests for Paired Nominal Data

Summary and Analysis of Extension Education Program Evaluation in R

McNemar's Chi-squared test with continuity correction

McNemar's chi-squared = 5.5, df = 1, p-value = 0.01902

Rain garden

mcnemar.test(Matrix.2)

McNemar's Chi-squared test

McNemar's chi-squared = 17.833, df = 3, p-value = 0.0004761

An example without repeated measures, comparing test of symmetry with test of association

As another example, consider a survey of tea and coffee drinking, in which each respondent is asked both if they drink coffee, and if they drink tea.

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Coffee</th>
<th>Tea</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>Yes</td>
<td>Yes</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Yes</td>
<td>No</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>No</td>
<td>Yes</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>No</td>
<td>No</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

We would use a test of symmetry in this case if the question we wanted to answer was, Is coffee more popular than tea? That is, is it more common for someone to drink coffee and not tea than to drink tea and not coffee? (Those who drink both or drink neither are not relevant to this question.)

This is an example of using a test of symmetry to test the relative frequency of two dichotomous variables when the same subjects are surveyed.

Input =("Coffee   Yes   No
Yes      37    17
No        9    25")

Matrix.3 = as.matrix(read.table(textConnection(Input),
                        header=TRUE,
                        row.names=1))

mcnemar.test(Matrix.3)

McNemar's Chi-squared test with continuity correction

McNemar's chi-squared = 1.8846, df = 1, p-value = 0.1698

### Neither coffee nor tea is more popular, specifically because
### neither the 9 nor the 17 in the table are large relative to the other.

A test of association answers a very different question. Namely, Is coffee drinking associated with tea drinking? That is, is someone more likely to drink tea if they drink coffee?

```r
chisq.test(Matrix.3)
```

**Pearson's Chi-squared test with Yates' continuity correction**

\[ X^{2} = 13.148, \text{ df} = 1, p\text{-value} = 0.0002878 \]

### Coffee drinking and tea drinking are associated, in this case people who drink coffee are likely to drink tea. This is a positive association.
### A negative association could also be significant.

**Optional analysis: a 4 x 4 example with several 0’s**

As an additional example, imagine a religious caucusing event in which advocates try to sway attendees to switch their religions.

Matrix row names are the attendees’ original religions, and the column names, with a “2” added, are attendees’ new religions after the caucus. Note there are several 0 counts in the matrix.

Note first that the `mcnemar.test` function fails, namely because of the position of some 0 counts in the matrix.

Second, note that the `multinomial.test` function used by the `nominalSymmetryTest` function would take a long time to calculate an exact \( p \)-value for this matrix, so the `MonteCarlo=TRUE` option is used. The number of samples used in the Monte Carlo approach can be adjusted with the `ntrial` option. Some of the \( p \)-values in the post-hoc analysis cannot be produced because of the placement of 0 counts, but these should also be considered non-significant results.

```r
Input =("Before     Pastafarian 2  Discordiant 2  Dudist 2  Jedi 2
Pastafarian  7  0  23  0
Discordiant  0  7  0  33
Dudist       3  0  7  1
Jedi         0  1  0  7"
"
Matrix.4 = as.matrix(read.table(textConnection(Input),
header=TRUE,
row.names=1))
```

```r
Matrix.4
```
McNemar–Bowker test

\[ \text{mcnemar.test}(\text{Matrix.4}) \]

McNemar's Chi-squared test

McNemar's chi-squared = NaN, df = 6, p-value = NA

Exact test

\[ \text{library(rcompanion)} \]

\[ \text{nominalSymmetryTest}(\text{Matrix.4}, \text{method}="\text{fdr}", \text{digits}=3, \text{MonteCarlo} = \text{TRUE}, \text{ntrial} = 100000) \]

$\text{Global.test.for.symmetry}$

Dimensions p.value
1 4 x 4 0

$\text{Pairwise.symmetry.tests}$

\begin{tabular}{llll}
\hline
Comparison & p.value & p.adjust \\
\hline
1 Pastafarian/Pastafarian2 : Discordiant/Discordiant2 & <NA> & NA \\
2 Pastafarian/Pastafarian2 : Dudist/Dudist2 & 8.8e-05 & 1.32e-04 \\
3 Pastafarian/Pastafarian2 : Jedi/Jedi2 & <NA> & NA \\
4 Discordiant/Discordiant2 : Dudist/Dudist2 & <NA> & NA \\
5 Discordiant/Discordiant2 : Jedi/Jedi2 & 4.07e-09 & 1.22e-08 \\
6 Dudist/Dudist2 : Jedi/Jedi2 & 1 & 1.00e+00 \\
\hline
\end{tabular}

$p\text{.adjustment}$

Method
1 fdr

A look at the significant results

Pastafarian to Dudist, p-value = 0.000132

\begin{tabular}{lcccc}
Before & Pastafarian2 & Discordiant2 & Dudist2 & Jedi2 \\
\hline
Pastafarian & 7 & 0 & 23 & 0 \\
Discordiant & 0 & 7 & 0 & 33 \\
Dudist & 3 & 0 & 7 & 1 \\
Jedi & 0 & 1 & 0 & 7 \\
\hline
\end{tabular}

Discordiant to Jedi, p-value < 0.0001

\begin{tabular}{lcccc}
Before & Pastafarian2 & Discordiant2 & Dudist2 & Jedi2 \\
\hline
Pastafarian & 7 & 0 & 23 & 0 \\
Discordiant & 0 & 7 & 0 & 33 \\
\hline
\end{tabular}
Optional analyses: conducting exact tests for symmetry

The exact symmetry tests can be conducted directly with the *binom.test* and *multinomial.test* functions. These results match the results of the *nominalSymmetryTest* function.

Rain barrel

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th></th>
<th>Yes</th>
<th>No</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>Before</td>
<td>9</td>
<td>5</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Yes</td>
<td>9</td>
<td>5</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>No</td>
<td>17</td>
<td>15</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

Rain garden

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th></th>
<th>Yes</th>
<th>No</th>
<th>Maybe</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>Before</td>
<td>6</td>
<td>0</td>
<td>1</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Yes</td>
<td>6</td>
<td>0</td>
<td>1</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>No</td>
<td>5</td>
<td>3</td>
<td>7</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Maybe</td>
<td>11</td>
<td>1</td>
<td>12</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

Rain barrel
For a 2 x 2 matrix, $x =$ the count in one of the discordant cells, and $n =$ the sum of the counts in discordant cells. The *expected* proportion is 0.50.

You could also follow the method for an $n$ x $n$ matrix below.

\[
x = 5 \\
\text{observed} = c(0, 1, 5, 7, 11, 1) \\
\text{expected} = c(1/6, 1/6, 1/6, 1/6, 1/6, 1/6) \\
\]

```r
library(EMT)
multinomial.test(observed, expected)
```

Rain garden
For an $n$ x $n$ matrix, *observed* = a vector of the counts of discordant cells. *Expected* is a vector of length $(n^* n - n)$, with each value equal to $(1 / (n^* n - n))$.

\[
\text{observed} = c(0, 1, 5, 7, 11, 1) \\
\text{expected} = c(1/6, 1/6, 1/6, 1/6, 1/6, 1/6) \\
\]
Exact Multinomial Test, distance measure: p

Events   pObs   p.value
142506   0   2e-04

Yes–No
For post-hoc testing, reduce the matrix to a 2 x 2 matrix.

\[
x = 0 \\
n = 0 + 5 \\
\text{expected} = 0.50
\]

\[
\text{binom.test}(x, n, \text{expected})
\]

Exact binomial test

number of successes = 0, number of trials = 5, p-value = 0.0625

Yes–Maybe

\[
x = 1 \\
n = 1 + 11 \\
\text{expected} = 0.50
\]

\[
\text{binom.test}(x, n, \text{expected})
\]

Exact binomial test

number of successes = 1, number of trials = 12, p-value = 0.006348

No–Maybe

\[
x = 7 \\
n = 7 + 1 \\
\text{expected} = 0.50
\]

\[
\text{binom.test}(x, n, \text{expected})
\]

Exact binomial test

number of successes = 7, number of trials = 8, p-value = 0.07031

Optional: Comparing odds ratio and Cohen’s g

For a 2 x 2 table of matched counts, odds ratio and Cohen’s g are precisely related, and their interpretations according to Cohen will always coincide. An odds ratio value of 1 corresponds to a Cohen’s g of 0. Cohen’s g approaches 0.5 as odds ratio approaches infinity. In the second figure below,
the colors indicate Cohen’s interpretation of less-than-small, small, medium, and large as the blue becomes darker.

References

Exercises N

1. Considering Alucard’s data,
   a. How many students responded to the *rain barrel* question?
   b. How many students changed their answer on the *rain barrel* question from no to yes?
   c. What do you conclude about the results on the *rain barrel* question? Include:
      • The statistical test you are using, *p*-value from that test, conclusion of the test, and any other comments on the test.
      • The effect size and interpretation.
      • Description of the observed counts or proportions. Is there anything notable?
      • Any other practical conclusions you wish to note.
   d. What do you conclude about the results of the *global test* of the *rain garden* question?
   e. What do you conclude about the results of the *post-hoc* analysis of the *rain garden* question?

2. Considering the coffee and tea example, Do you understand the difference between the hypotheses for tests of association and tests of symmetry? Would you be comfortable choosing the correct approach?

3. Ryuk and Rem held a workshop on planting habitat for pollinators like bees and butterflies. They wish to know if attendees were more likely to do a planting after the workshop than before.
   Will plant?

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th></th>
<th>Before</th>
<th>After</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>Yes</td>
<td>17</td>
<td>0</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>No</td>
<td>5</td>
<td>9</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Maybe</td>
<td>15</td>
<td>0</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

For each of the following, answer the question, and *show the output from the analyses you used to answer the question*.

   a. How many students responded to this question?
   b. How many students changed their answer from no to yes?
   c. What do you conclude about the results of the *global test*?
d. What do you conclude about the results of the post-hoc analysis?

Cochran–Mantel–Haenszel Test for 3-Dimensional Tables

The Cochran–Mantel–Haenszel test is an extension of the chi-square test of association. It is used for multiple chi-square tests across multiple groups or times. The data are stratified so that each chi-square table is within one group or time.

The following data investigate whether there is a link between listening to podcasts and using public transportation to get to work, collected across three cities. This can be thought of as a $2 \times 2$ contingency table in each of the three cities.

Data can be arranged in a table of counts or can be arranged in long-format with or without counts. If a table is used for input, it should follow R’s ftable format, as shown.

Table format

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th></th>
<th></th>
<th></th>
<th></th>
<th></th>
<th></th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>Podcast</td>
<td>Drive</td>
<td></td>
<td>13</td>
<td>17</td>
<td>5</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>Public</td>
<td></td>
<td>27</td>
<td>25</td>
<td>27</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>No.podcast</td>
<td>Drive</td>
<td></td>
<td>23</td>
<td>22</td>
<td>17</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>Public</td>
<td></td>
<td>44</td>
<td>31</td>
<td>22</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

Long-format with counts

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>City</th>
<th>Listen</th>
<th>Transport</th>
<th>Count</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>Bikini.Bottom</td>
<td>Podcast</td>
<td>Drive</td>
<td>13</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Bikini.Bottom</td>
<td>Podcast</td>
<td>Public</td>
<td>27</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Bikini.Bottom</td>
<td>No.podcast</td>
<td>Drive</td>
<td>23</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Bikini.Bottom</td>
<td>No.podcast</td>
<td>Public</td>
<td>44</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Frostbite.Falls</td>
<td>Podcast</td>
<td>Drive</td>
<td>17</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Frostbite.Falls</td>
<td>Podcast</td>
<td>Public</td>
<td>25</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Frostbite.Falls</td>
<td>No.podcast</td>
<td>Drive</td>
<td>22</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Frostbite.Falls</td>
<td>No.podcast</td>
<td>Public</td>
<td>31</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>New.New.York</td>
<td>No.podcast</td>
<td>Drive</td>
<td>17</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>New.New.York</td>
<td>No.podcast</td>
<td>Public</td>
<td>22</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

The test can be conducted with the mantelhaen.test function in the native stats package.
One assumption of the test is that there are no three-way interactions in the data. This is confirmed with a non-significant result from a test such as the Woolf test or Breslow–Day test.

Post-hoc analysis can include looking at the individual chi-square, Fisher exact, or G-test for association for each time or group.

The component $n \times n$ tables can be $2 \times 2$ or larger.

**Appropriate data**
- Three nominal variables with two or more levels each.
- Data can be stratified as $n \times n$ tables with the third time or grouping variable

**Hypotheses**
- Null hypothesis: There is no association between the two inner variables.
- Alternative hypothesis (two-sided): There is an association between the two inner variables.

**Interpretation**
Significant results can be reported as “There was a significant association between variable A and variable B [across groups].”

**Post-hoc analysis**
Post-hoc analysis can include looking at the individual chi-square, Fisher exact, or g-test for association for each time or group.

**Packages used in this chapter**
The packages used in this chapter include:
- psych
- vcd
- DescTools
- rcompanion

The following commands will install these packages if they are not already installed:

```r
if(!require(psych)){install.packages("psych")}
if(!require(vcd)){install.packages("vcd")}
if(!require(DescTools)){install.packages("DescTools")}
if(!require(rcompanion)){install.packages("rcompanion")}
```

**C–M–H test example: long-format with counts**
Alexander Anderson is concerned that there is a bias in his teaching methods for his pesticide applicator’s course. He wants to know if there is an association between students’ sex and passing the course across the four counties in which he teaches. The following are his data.

```
Input = ("
County       Sex     Result Count
Bloom        Female  Pass   9
```

518
Cochran–Mantel–Haenszel Test for 3-Dimensional Tables

Summary and Analysis of Extension Education Program Evaluation in R

Bloom Female Fail 5
Bloom Male Pass 7
Bloom Male Fail 17
Cobblestone Female Pass 11
Cobblestone Female Fail 4
Cobblestone Male Pass 9
Cobblestone Male Fail 21
Dougal Female Pass 9
Dougal Female Fail 7
Dougal Male Pass 19
Dougal Male Fail 9
Heimlich Female Pass 15
Heimlich Female Fail 8
Heimlich Male Pass 14
Heimlich Male Fail 17

Data = read.table(textConnection(Input),header=TRUE)

### Order factors otherwise R will alphabetize them

Data$County = factor(Data$County,
                      levels=unique(Data$County))

Data$Sex = factor(Data$Sex,
                  levels=unique(Data$Sex))

Data$Result = factor(Data$Result,
                     levels=unique(Data$Result))

### Check the data frame

library(psych)
headTail(Data)
str(Data)
summary(Data)

### Remove unnecessary objects

rm(Input)

Convert data to a table

Table = xtabs(Count ~ Sex + Result + County,
              data=Data)

### Note that the grouping variable is last in the xtabs function
Cochran–Mantel–Haenszel Test for 3-Dimensional Tables

Summary and Analysis of Extension Education Program Evaluation in R

ftable(Table) # Display a flattened table

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th></th>
<th>County</th>
<th>Bloom</th>
<th>Cobblestone</th>
<th>Dougal</th>
<th>Heimlich</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>Sex</td>
<td>Result</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>----</td>
<td>--------</td>
<td>-------</td>
<td>-------------</td>
<td>--------</td>
<td>----------</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Female</td>
<td>Pass</td>
<td>9</td>
<td>11</td>
<td>9</td>
<td>15</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>Fail</td>
<td>5</td>
<td>4</td>
<td>7</td>
<td>8</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Male</td>
<td>Pass</td>
<td>7</td>
<td>9</td>
<td>19</td>
<td>14</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>Fail</td>
<td>17</td>
<td>21</td>
<td>9</td>
<td>17</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

Cochran–Mantel–Haenszel test

mantelhaen.test(Table)

Mantel-Haenszel chi-squared test with continuity correction

Mantel-Haenszel X-squared = 6.7314, df = 1, p-value = 0.009473

alternative hypothesis: true common odds ratio is not equal to 1

Woolf test

library(vcd)

woolf_test(Table)

### Woolf test for homogeneity of odds ratios across strata.
### If significant, C-M-H test is not appropriate

Woolf-test on Homogeneity of Odds Ratios (no 3-Way assoc.)

X-squared = 7.1376, df = 3, p-value = 0.06764

Post-hoc analysis
The groupwiseCMH function will conduct analysis of the component \( n \times n \) tables with Fisher exact, g-test, or chi-square tests of association. It accepts only a 3-dimensional table. The group option indicates which dimension should be considered the grouping variable (1, 2, or 3). It will conduct only one type of test at a time. That is, if multiple of the options fisher, gtest, or chisq are set to TRUE, it will conduct only one of them. As usual, method is the \( p \)-value adjustment method (see ?p.adjust for options), and digits indicates the number of digits in the output. The correct option is used by the chi-square test function.

library(rcompanion)

groupwiseCMH(Table, 
  group    = 3, 
  fisher   = TRUE, 
  gtest    = FALSE, 
  chisq    = FALSE, 
  method   = "fdr", 

520
Cochran's Q Test for Paired Nominal Data

Cochran's Q test is an extension of the McNemar test, when the response variable is dichotomous and there are either multiple times for a repeated measure or multiple categories with paired responses. A dichotomous variable is a nominal variable with only two levels.

One case would be extending the rain barrel question from the previous chapter to multiple times. A more common case would be extending the coffee and tea example to multiple beverages. In this case, we would test among several beverages which is more popular that the others.

```r
correct = "none",
digits = 3)

Group   Test p.value  adj.p
1       Bloom Fisher  0.0468 0.0936
2 Cobblestone Fisher  0.0102 0.0408
3      Dougal Fisher  0.5230 0.5230
4    Heimlich Fisher  0.1750 0.2330

C–M–H test example: table format

The `read.ftable` function can be very fussy about the formatting of the input. 1) It seems to not like a blank first line, so the double quote symbol in the input should be on the same line as the column names. 2) It doesn't like leading spaces on the input lines. These may appear when you paste the code in to the RStudio Console or R Script area. One solution is to manually delete these spaces. R Script files that are saved without these leading spaces should be able to be opened and run without further modification.

The Cochran–Mantel–Haenszel test, Woolf test, and post-hoc analysis would be the same as those conducted on Table above.

```r
Input =("County Bloom Cobblestone Dougal Heimlich
Sex   Result
Female Pass   9   11   9  15
Fail   5   4   7   8
Male  Pass   7   9  19  14
Fail  17  21   9  17"

Table = as.table(read.ftable(textConnection(Input)))
ftable(Table)

### Display a flattened table
Data are not typically arranged in a contingency table, but are either organized in long-format, with each row representing a single observation, or organized in a short-format matrix with each row representing an experimental unit with the repeated measures across columns.

**Long-format**

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Student</th>
<th>Beverage</th>
<th>Response</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>a</td>
<td>Coffee</td>
<td>Yes</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>a</td>
<td>Tea</td>
<td>Yes</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>a</td>
<td>Cola</td>
<td>No</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>b</td>
<td>Coffee</td>
<td>No</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>b</td>
<td>Tea</td>
<td>No</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>b</td>
<td>Cola</td>
<td>Yes</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>c</td>
<td>Coffee</td>
<td>Yes</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>c</td>
<td>Tea</td>
<td>No</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>c</td>
<td>Cola</td>
<td>No</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

**Short-format**

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Student</th>
<th>Coffee</th>
<th>Tea</th>
<th>Cola</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>a</td>
<td>Yes</td>
<td>Yes</td>
<td>No</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>b</td>
<td>No</td>
<td>No</td>
<td>Yes</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>c</td>
<td>Yes</td>
<td>No</td>
<td>No</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

Data need to be arranged in an unreplicated complete block design. That is, for each experimental unit (Student in this case) there needs to be one and only one response per question or time.

The package *RVAideMemoire* has a function *cochran.qtest* which will conduct Cochran’s Q test on long-format data. The function *symmetry_test* in the *coin* package will also conduct the test using permutation, which is a type of resampling technique.

A word of caution about the *symmetry_test* function: be sure not to use it in cases where the response variable is multinomial; that is, where there are more than two levels in the response. The function will return a result, but it is not the same kind of symmetry result as the McNemar–Bowker test. I suspect that for a multinomial response variable, *coin* treats it like an ordered factor, not like a nominal variable.

When there are two questions or times, Cochran’s Q test is equivalent to the McNemar test.

Post-hoc analysis can be conducted with pairwise McNemar or exact tests on 2 x 2 tables. The function *pairwiseMcncemar* in the *rcompanion* package will conduct pairwise McNemar, exact, or permutation tests.

**Appropriate data**

- The response variable is a dichotomous nominal variable.
- The responses are paired by experimental unit.
- The responses are measured across two or more times or factors.
• The data follow an unreplicated complete block design, with each experimental unit treated as the block.

Hypotheses
• Null hypothesis: The marginal probability of a [positive] response is unchanged across the times or factors. That is, a positive response is equally likely across times or factors.
• Alternative hypothesis: Positive responses are not equally likely across times or factors.

Interpretation
Significant results can be reported as “There was a significant difference in the proportion of positive responses across times or factors.” Or, “A positive response for X was more likely than a positive response for Y.”

Post-hoc analysis
Post hoc analysis can be conducted by conducting tests for the component 2 x 2 tables. A correction for multiple tests should be applied.

Packages used in this chapter
The packages used in this chapter include:
• psych
• RVAideMemoire
• coin
• reshape2
• rcompanion

The following commands will install these packages if they are not already installed:

```r
if(!require(psych)){install.packages("psych")}
if(!require(RVAideMemoire)){install.packages("RVAideMemoire")}
if(!require(coin)){install.packages("coin")}
if(!require(reshape2)){install.packages("reshape2")}
if(!require(rcompanion)){install.packages("rcompanion")}
```

Cochran's Q test example: long-format
Hayley Smith teaches an extension course on environmentally-friendly lawn care. After the course, she surveys her students about their willingness to adopt good practices: Soil testing, measuring the amount of irrigation, raising the mowing height, and returning the grass clippings to the lawn. She wants to know which practice students were more willing to adopt.

```
Input = ("n
Practice     Student   Response
SoilTest     a         Yes
SoilTest     b         No
SoilTest     c         Yes
SoilTest     d         Yes
SoilTest     e         No
```
SoilTest  f     Yes
SoilTest  g     Yes
SoilTest  h     Yes
SoilTest  i     No
SoilTest  j     Yes
SoilTest  k     Yes
SoilTest  l     Yes
SoilTest  m     Yes
SoilTest  n     Yes
Irrigation a   Yes
Irrigation b   No
Irrigation c   No
Irrigation d   No
Irrigation e   No
Irrigation f   No
Irrigation g   No
Irrigation h   No
Irrigation i   Yes
Irrigation j   No
Irrigation k   No
Irrigation l   No
Irrigation m   No
Irrigation n   No
MowHeight  a     Yes
MowHeight  b     No
MowHeight  c     Yes
MowHeight  d     Yes
MowHeight  e     Yes
MowHeight  f     Yes
MowHeight  g     Yes
MowHeight  h     Yes
MowHeight  i     No
MowHeight  j     Yes
MowHeight  k     Yes
MowHeight  l     Yes
MowHeight  m     Yes
MowHeight  n     Yes
Clippings  a     Yes
Clippings  b     No
Clippings  c     No
Clippings  d     Yes
Clippings  e     Yes
Clippings  f     No
Clippings  g     No
Clippings  h     Yes
Clippings  i     Yes
Clippings  j     Yes
Clippings  k     Yes
Clippings  l     No
Clippings  m     Yes
Clippings  n     No
"

Data = read.table(textConnection(Input),header=TRUE)
### Order factors otherwise R will alphabetize them

```r
Data$Practice = factor(Data$Practice, 
levels=unique(Data$Practice))
```

```r
Data$Response = factor(Data$Response, 
levels=c("Yes", "No"))
```

### Check the data frame

```r
library(psych)
headTail(Data)
str(Data)
summary(Data)
```

### Remove unnecessary objects

```r
rm(Input)
```

### View data as a table

```r
Data$Response.n = as.numeric(Data$Response) - 1  ### Creates a new numeric variable
### that is Response as a 0 or 1

Table = xtabs(Response.n ~ Student + Practice, 
data=Data)
```

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Practice</th>
<th>Student</th>
<th>SoilTest</th>
<th>Irrigation</th>
<th>MowHeight</th>
<th>Clippings</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>a</td>
<td>0</td>
<td>0</td>
<td>0</td>
<td>0</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>b</td>
<td>1</td>
<td>1</td>
<td>1</td>
<td>1</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>c</td>
<td>0</td>
<td>1</td>
<td>0</td>
<td>1</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>d</td>
<td>0</td>
<td>1</td>
<td>0</td>
<td>0</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>e</td>
<td>1</td>
<td>1</td>
<td>0</td>
<td>0</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>f</td>
<td>0</td>
<td>1</td>
<td>0</td>
<td>1</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>g</td>
<td>0</td>
<td>1</td>
<td>0</td>
<td>1</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>h</td>
<td>0</td>
<td>1</td>
<td>0</td>
<td>0</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>i</td>
<td>1</td>
<td>0</td>
<td>1</td>
<td>0</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>j</td>
<td>0</td>
<td>1</td>
<td>0</td>
<td>0</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>k</td>
<td>0</td>
<td>1</td>
<td>0</td>
<td>0</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>l</td>
<td>0</td>
<td>1</td>
<td>0</td>
<td>1</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>m</td>
<td>0</td>
<td>1</td>
<td>0</td>
<td>0</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>n</td>
<td>0</td>
<td>1</td>
<td>0</td>
<td>1</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>
## Cochran's Q Test for Paired Nominal Data

### View counts of responses

```r
taxabs(~ Practice + Response, data=Data)
```

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Practice</th>
<th>Response</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>SoilTest</td>
<td>Yes 11</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>SoilTest</td>
<td>No 3</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Irrigation</td>
<td>Yes 2</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Irrigation</td>
<td>No 12</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>MowHeight</td>
<td>Yes 12</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>MowHeight</td>
<td>No 2</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Clippings</td>
<td>Yes 8</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Clippings</td>
<td>No 6</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

### Create bar plot

```r
Table = xtabs(~ Response + Practice, data=Data)
barplot(Table, beside = TRUE, legend = TRUE, ylim = c(0, 12),
        cex.names = 0.8, cex.axis = 0.8,
        args.legend = list(x = "topright", cex = 0.8,
                             bty = "n"))
```

![Bar plot of response counts](image)

### Cochran's Q test

```r
library(RVAideMemoire)
```
Cochran's Q Test for Paired Nominal Data

Summary and Analysis of Extension Education Program Evaluation in R

cochran.qtest(Response ~ Practice | Student, 
data = Data)

Cochran's Q test

Q = 16.9535, df = 3, p-value = 0.0007225

### Note that the function also gives you proportion of responses for the positive response, which is always the second of the nominal response, which in this case is "no", or the response coded as "1".

### I wouldn't use the post-hoc analysis included with the output of the function in RVAideMemoire

library(coin)
symmetry_test(Response ~ Practice | Student, 
data = Data, 
teststat = "quad")

Asymptotic General Symmetry Test

chi-squared = 16.953, df = 3, p-value = 0.0007225

Post-hoc analysis for Cochran's Q test

The pairwiseMcnemar function will conduct pairwise McNemar, binomial exact, or permutation tests analogous to uncorrected McNemar tests. The permutation tests require the coin package. As usual, method is the p-value adjustment method (see ?p.adjust for options), and digits indicates the number of digits in the output. The correct option is used by the chi-square test function.

### Order groups

Data$Practice = factor(Data$Practice, 
levels = c("MowHeight", "SoilTest", 
"Clippings", "Irrigation"))

### Pairwise McNemar tests

library(rcompanion)

PT = pairwiseMcnemar(Response ~ Practice | Student, 
data = Data, 
test = "permutation", 
method = "fdr", 
digits = 3)

PT

$Pairwise

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Comparison</th>
<th>p.value</th>
<th>p.adjust</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>MowHeight - SoilTest</td>
<td>0.317</td>
<td>0.3170</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

527
### Compact letter display

```
PT = PT$Pairwise

library(rcompanion)

cldList(p.adjust ~ Comparison,
data = PT,
threshold = 0.05)
```

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Group</th>
<th>Letter</th>
<th>MonoLetter</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>MowHeight</td>
<td>a</td>
<td>a</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>SoilTest</td>
<td>a</td>
<td>a</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Clippings</td>
<td>a</td>
<td>a</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Irrigation</td>
<td>b</td>
<td>b</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

**Table of results**

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Group</th>
<th>Proportion &quot;Yes&quot;</th>
<th>Grouping letter</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>MowHeight</td>
<td>0.86</td>
<td>a</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>SoilTest</td>
<td>0.79</td>
<td>a</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Clippings</td>
<td>0.57</td>
<td>a</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Irrigation</td>
<td>0.14</td>
<td>b</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

Optional analysis: Converting a matrix of $p$-values to a compact letter display

This compact letter display could also be generated with the `multcompView` package. To perform this well, it is helpful to first order the factors by the numeric order of their results, in this case by proportion of "yes" responses. Then the data need to be arranged into a matrix of pairwise $p$-values.

```
Input =("Column      MowHeight  SoilTest  Clippings  Irrigation
MowHeight   NA         0.317     0.153      0.0200
SoilTest    NA         NA        0.308      0.0200
Clippings   NA         NA        NA         0.0286
Irrigation  NA         NA        NA         NA
")
```

```
PT = as.matrix(read.table(textConnection(Input),
header=TRUE,
row.names=1))

PT
```

### Transform the upper matrix to a full matrix
diag(PT) = 1
PT1 = t(PT)
PT[lower.tri(PT)] = PT1[lower.tri(PT1)]
PT

### Produce compact letter display
library(multcompView)
multcompLetters(PT, 
    compare="<", 
    threshold=0.05, ### p-value to use as significance threshold 
    Letters=letters, 
    reversed = FALSE)

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>MowHeight</th>
<th>SoilTest</th>
<th>Clippings</th>
<th>Irrigation</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>a</td>
<td>a</td>
<td>a</td>
<td>b</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

Cochran's Q test example: short-format in matrix

Input =(" 
<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Student</th>
<th>SoilTest</th>
<th>Irrigation</th>
<th>MowHeight</th>
<th>Clippings</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>a</td>
<td>0</td>
<td>0</td>
<td>0</td>
<td>0</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>b</td>
<td>1</td>
<td>1</td>
<td>1</td>
<td>1</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>c</td>
<td>0</td>
<td>1</td>
<td>0</td>
<td>1</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>d</td>
<td>0</td>
<td>1</td>
<td>0</td>
<td>0</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>e</td>
<td>1</td>
<td>1</td>
<td>0</td>
<td>0</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>f</td>
<td>0</td>
<td>1</td>
<td>0</td>
<td>1</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>g</td>
<td>0</td>
<td>1</td>
<td>0</td>
<td>1</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>h</td>
<td>0</td>
<td>1</td>
<td>0</td>
<td>0</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>i</td>
<td>1</td>
<td>0</td>
<td>1</td>
<td>0</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>j</td>
<td>0</td>
<td>1</td>
<td>0</td>
<td>0</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>k</td>
<td>0</td>
<td>1</td>
<td>0</td>
<td>0</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>l</td>
<td>0</td>
<td>1</td>
<td>0</td>
<td>1</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>m</td>
<td>0</td>
<td>1</td>
<td>0</td>
<td>0</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>n</td>
<td>0</td>
<td>1</td>
<td>0</td>
<td>1</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>
")

Matrix = as.matrix(read.table(textConnection(Input), 
    header=TRUE, 
    row.names=1))

### Add names to matrix dimensions that will be names of variables in long-format
names(dimnames(Matrix))[1] = "Student"
names(dimnames(Matrix))[2] = "Practice"

Matrix
### Convert matrix to long-format

```r
library(reshape2)
Data = melt(Matrix)
```

### View data frame

```r
library(psych)
headTail(Data)
```

```
Student  Practice value
1         a  SoilTest     0
2         b  SoilTest     1
3         c  SoilTest     0
4         d  SoilTest     0
...    <NA>      <NA>   ...
53        k Clippings     0
54        l Clippings     1
55        m Clippings     0
56        n Clippings     1
```

### Note response variable is called "value"

**Cochran's Q test**

```r
library(RVAideMemoire)
cochran.qtest(value ~ Practice | Student,  
               data = Data)
```

Cochran's Q test

```
Q = 16.9535, df = 3, p-value = 0.0007225
```

```r
library(coin)
symmetry_test(value ~ Practice | Student,  
               data = Data,  
               teststat = "quad")
```

Asymptotic General Symmetry Test

```
chi-squared = 16.953, df = 3, p-value = 0.0007225
```
Post-hoc analysis for Cochran’s Q test

### Order groups

```r
Data$Practice = factor(Data$Practice,
                       levels = c("MowHeight", "SoilTest",
                                   "Clippings", "Irrigation"))
```

### Pairwise McNemar tests

```r
library(rcompanion)

pairwiseMcnemar(Response ~ Practice | Student,
                 data   = Data,
                 test   = "permutation",
                 method = "fdr",
                 digits = 3)
```

### test = "exact", "mcnemar", "permutation"
### method: p-value adjustment, see ?p.adjust
### correct: TRUE, to apply continuity correction for McNemar test

```
$Pairwise
   Comparison     p.value p.adjust
1  MowHeight - SoilTest = 0  0.317   0.3170
2  MowHeight - Clippings = 0  0.102   0.1530
3  MowHeight - Irrigation = 0 0.00389   0.0200
4   SoilTest - Clippings = 0  0.257   0.3080
5   SoilTest - Irrigation = 0 0.00666   0.0200
6   Clippings - Irrigation = 0  0.0143   0.0286
```

---

## Models for Nominal Data

### Packages used in this chapter

The packages used in this chapter include:
- car
- multcompView
- emmeans
- VGAM
- lmtest
- psych
- lme4
- MASS
- rcompanion

The following commands will install these packages if they are not already installed:
if(!require(car)){install.packages("car")}
if(!require(multcompView)){install.packages("multcompView")}
if(!require(emmeans)){install.packages("emmeans")}
if(!require(VGAM)){install.packages("VGAM")}
if(!require(lmtest)){install.packages("lmtest")}
if(!require(psych)){install.packages("psych")}
if(!require(lme4)){install.packages("lme4")}
if(!require(MASS)){install.packages("MASS")}
if(!require(rcompanion)){install.packages("rcompanion")}

Log-linear models for tests of association

Analysis of contingency tables with two or more dimensions can be accomplished with log-linear models. These will test for association. When there are multiple dimensions, this approach is sometimes called multiway frequency analysis. It is analogous to chi-square tests for two-way tables or Cochran–Mantel–Haenszel test for three-way tables.

One advantage of log-linear models is that they handle tables with a higher number of dimensions.

Another advantage is that the models can be specified to test for more complicated patterns of association. When each term in the model is included, and there are no interactions, the model tests for mutual independence of the terms. Models can also test for conditional independence and partial independence.

For more information on specifying models for conditional independence or partial independence, see:


For a more complete discussion of log-linear models for multiway frequency analysis see:


Zero frequencies in cells may cause the maximum likelihood estimation to fail, or may cause bias in the results.

Structural zeros can be handled with the start argument in the loglm function. See library(MASS); ?loglm, library(MASS); ?loglm1, and ?loglin.

Log-linear model example

The following example revisits Alexander Anderson’s data of passing grades by sex within counties, for which we had used the Cochran–Mantel–Haenszel test. Here we use a log-linear model with the loglm function in the MASS package.

Input = ("
<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>County</th>
<th>Sex</th>
<th>Result</th>
<th>Count</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>Bloom</td>
<td>Female</td>
<td>Pass</td>
<td>9</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Bloom</td>
<td>Female</td>
<td>Fail</td>
<td>5</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Bloom</td>
<td>Male</td>
<td>Pass</td>
<td>7</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Bloom</td>
<td>Male</td>
<td>Fail</td>
<td>17</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Cobblestone</td>
<td>Female</td>
<td>Pass</td>
<td>11</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Cobblestone</td>
<td>Female</td>
<td>Fail</td>
<td>4</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Cobblestone</td>
<td>Male</td>
<td>Pass</td>
<td>9</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Cobblestone</td>
<td>Male</td>
<td>Fail</td>
<td>21</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Dougal</td>
<td>Female</td>
<td>Pass</td>
<td>9</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Dougal</td>
<td>Female</td>
<td>Fail</td>
<td>7</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Dougal</td>
<td>Male</td>
<td>Pass</td>
<td>19</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Dougal</td>
<td>Male</td>
<td>Fail</td>
<td>9</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Heimlich</td>
<td>Female</td>
<td>Pass</td>
<td>15</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Heimlich</td>
<td>Female</td>
<td>Fail</td>
<td>8</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Heimlich</td>
<td>Male</td>
<td>Pass</td>
<td>14</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Heimlich</td>
<td>Male</td>
<td>Fail</td>
<td>17</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

```R
Data = read.table(textConnection(Input),header=TRUE)

### Order factors otherwise R will alphabetize them

Data$County = factor(Data$County,
                     levels=unique(Data$County))

Data$Sex = factor(Data$Sex,
                   levels=unique(Data$Sex))

Data$Result = factor(Data$Result,
                      levels=unique(Data$Result))

### Check the data frame

library(psych)

headTail(Data)

str(Data)

summary(Data)

### Remove unnecessary objects

rm(Input)

Create table

Table = xtabs(Count ~ Sex + Result + County,
              data=Data)
```
ftable(Table)       # Display a flattened table

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th></th>
<th>County</th>
<th>Bloom</th>
<th>Cobblestone</th>
<th>Dougal</th>
<th>Heimlich</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>Sex</td>
<td>Female</td>
<td>Fail</td>
<td>Male</td>
<td>Fail</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>Result</td>
<td>Pass</td>
<td>Fail</td>
<td>Pass</td>
<td>Fail</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td>9</td>
<td>5</td>
<td>7</td>
<td>17</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td>11</td>
<td>4</td>
<td>9</td>
<td>21</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td>9</td>
<td>7</td>
<td>19</td>
<td>9</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td>15</td>
<td>8</td>
<td>14</td>
<td>17</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

Log-linear model
The model here tests for mutual independence of the three variables.

library(MASS)

loglm(~ Sex + Result + County, Table)

Statistics:

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th></th>
<th>X^2</th>
<th>df</th>
<th>P(&gt; X^2)</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>Likelihood Ratio</td>
<td>20.96662</td>
<td>10</td>
<td>0.0213275</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Pearson</td>
<td>20.79050</td>
<td>10</td>
<td>0.0226027</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

Post-hoc analysis
For a post-hoc analysis, you could slice up a multi-dimensional table in any way that makes sense for the hypotheses you want to test. Here, we'll look for an association of Sex and Result within each county.

Third dimension in our table is County, so Table[,1] yields the piece of the table where the third dimension is equal to 1, that is, where County = Bloom. And so on.

Bloom = Table[,1]

loglm(~ Sex + Result, Bloom)

Statistics:

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th></th>
<th>X^2</th>
<th>df</th>
<th>P(&gt; X^2)</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>Likelihood Ratio</td>
<td>4.504069</td>
<td>1</td>
<td>0.03381429</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Pearson</td>
<td>4.473688</td>
<td>1</td>
<td>0.03442062</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

Cobblestone = Table[,2]

loglm(~ Sex + Result, Cobblestone)

Statistics:

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th></th>
<th>X^2</th>
<th>df</th>
<th>P(&gt; X^2)</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>Likelihood Ratio</td>
<td>7.777229</td>
<td>1</td>
<td>0.005290890</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Pearson</td>
<td>7.605000</td>
<td>1</td>
<td>0.005820666</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>
M
d
ODELS FOR
 NOMINAL DATA
S
UMMARY AND A
NALYSIS OF E
XTENSION E
DUATION P
ROGRAM
EVALUATION IN R

Dougal = Table[,,3]

loglm(~ Sex + Result,
Dougal)

\[ X^2 df P(> X^2) \]
Likelihood Ratio 0.5876125 1 0.4433438
Pearson 0.5927934 1 0.4413410

Heimlich = Table[,,4]

loglm(~ Sex + Result,
Heimlich)

\[ X^2 df P(> X^2) \]
Likelihood Ratio 2.158817 1 0.1417538
Pearson 2.136182 1 0.1438595

Summary of analysis from Cochran–Mantel–Haenszel tests and log-linear models

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>County</th>
<th>C-H-M</th>
<th>log-linear</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>p-value</td>
<td>p-value (lr)</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Bloom</td>
<td>0.0468</td>
<td>0.03381</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Cobblestone</td>
<td>0.0102</td>
<td>0.00529</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Dougai</td>
<td>0.5230</td>
<td>0.4433</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Heimlich</td>
<td>0.1750</td>
<td>0.14175</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

Logistic regression

Logistic regression is a common option for building models with a nominal dependent variable. For standard logistic regression, the dependent variable must have only two levels. That is, it must be dichotomous.

The following references should be useful for conducting logistic regression.


Logistic regression example
Note that model assumptions and pitfalls of logistic regression are not discussed here. The reader is urged to read the preceding references or other appropriate materials before proceeding.

The following example revisits Alexander Anderson pesticide safety training course data across sex and four counties, for which we had used the Cochran–Mantel–Haenszel Test.

```r
Input = ("County       Sex     Result  Count
Bloom        Female  Pass     9
Bloom        Female  Fail     5
Bloom        Male    Pass     7
Bloom        Male    Fail    17
Cobblestone  Female  Pass    11
Cobblestone  Female  Fail     4
Cobblestone  Male    Pass     9
Cobblestone  Male    Fail    21
Dougal       Female  Pass     9
Dougal       Female  Fail     7
Dougal       Male    Pass    19
Dougal       Male    Fail     9
Heimlich     Female  Pass    15
Heimlich     Female  Fail     8
Heimlich     Male    Pass    14
Heimlich     Male    Fail    17"
)

Data = read.table(textConnection(Input),header=TRUE)

### Order factors otherwise R will alphabetize them
Data$County = factor(Data$County,
                      levels=unique(Data$County))

Data$Sex    = factor(Data$Sex,
                      levels=unique(Data$Sex))

Data$Result = factor(Data$Result,
                      levels=unique(Data$Result))

### Check the data frame
library(psych)
headTail(Data)
str(Data)
summary(Data)

### Remove unnecessary objects
```
Logistic regression can be conducted with the `glm` function in the native `stats` package. The `summary` function will return coefficients for the model. A $p$-value and a pseudo $R^2$ value for the model can be produced with the `nagelkerke` function. The `Anova` function in the `car` package will produce an analysis of deviance table with either likelihood ratio, Wald, or F tests.

```r
model = glm(Result ~ County + Sex + County:Sex,
            weight = Count,
            data = Data,
            family = binomial(link="logit")
)
summary(model)

library(rcompanion)
nagelkerke(model)

$Pseudo.R.squared.for.model.vs.null

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Pseudo.R.squared for model vs. null</th>
<th>Pseudo.R.squared</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>McFadden</td>
<td>0.0797857</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Cox and Snell (ML)</td>
<td>0.7136520</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Nagelkerke (Cragg and Uhler)</td>
<td>0.7136520</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

$Likelihood.ratio.test

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Df.diff</th>
<th>LogLik.diff</th>
<th>Chisq</th>
<th>p.value</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>-7</td>
<td>-10.004</td>
<td>20.009</td>
<td>0.0055508</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

library(car)

Anova(model,
      type="II",
      test="LR")

Analysis of Deviance Table (Type II tests)

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>LR</th>
<th>Chisq</th>
<th>Df</th>
<th>Pr(&gt;Chisq)</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>County</td>
<td>4.9627</td>
<td>3</td>
<td>0.174548</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Sex</td>
<td>7.8108</td>
<td>1</td>
<td>0.005193 **</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>County:Sex</td>
<td>7.2169</td>
<td>3</td>
<td>0.065296 .</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

Post-hoc analysis
Post-hoc analysis can be conducted with the `emmeans` package. Note that estimates for emmeans, differences, or standard errors are on a log or logit scale. For notes on using emmeans with different model types, see `?emmeans::models`.
For this example, no adjustment in p-values was made for multiple comparisons. Typically, an adjustment such as Tukey would be applied. See `emmeans::summary` for p-value adjustment options in `emmeans`. Note that the adjustment should be applied for each output; that is, for each of `pairs` and `cld`.

Also note that normally, because the County x Sex interaction was not significant, we wouldn’t want to explore the mean separations of the County x Sex interaction.

The results are truncated to emphasize the differences between sexes within counties.

```r
library(multcompView)
library(emmeans)

marginal = emmeans(model, ~ County:Sex)
pairs(marginal, adjust="none")  ### No adjustment for multiple comparisons

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>contrast</th>
<th>estimate</th>
<th>SE</th>
<th>df</th>
<th>z.ratio</th>
<th>p.value</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>Bloom,Female - Bloom,Male</td>
<td>-1.475</td>
<td>0.716</td>
<td>NA</td>
<td>-2.060</td>
<td>0.0394</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Cobblestone,Female - Cobblestone,Male</td>
<td>-1.859</td>
<td>0.707</td>
<td>NA</td>
<td>-2.630</td>
<td>0.0085</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Dougal,Female - Dougal,Male</td>
<td>0.496</td>
<td>0.646</td>
<td>NA</td>
<td>0.767</td>
<td>0.4429</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Heimlich,Female - Heimlich,Male</td>
<td>-0.823</td>
<td>0.567</td>
<td>NA</td>
<td>-1.450</td>
<td>0.1470</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

Results are given on the log (not the response) scale.
Tests are performed on the log scale

```cld(marginal, alpha=0.05, Letters=letters, adjust="none")  ### Use lower-case letters for .group

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>County</th>
<th>Sex</th>
<th>emmean</th>
<th>SE</th>
<th>df</th>
<th>asymp.LCL</th>
<th>asymp.UCL</th>
<th>.group</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>Cobblestone</td>
<td>Female</td>
<td>-1.011</td>
<td>0.584</td>
<td>NA</td>
<td>-2.156</td>
<td>0.133</td>
<td>a</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Dougal</td>
<td>Male</td>
<td>-0.747</td>
<td>0.405</td>
<td>NA</td>
<td>-1.540</td>
<td>0.046</td>
<td>a</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Heimlich</td>
<td>Female</td>
<td>-0.629</td>
<td>0.438</td>
<td>NA</td>
<td>-1.497</td>
<td>0.220</td>
<td>a</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Bloom</td>
<td>Female</td>
<td>0.588</td>
<td>0.558</td>
<td>NA</td>
<td>-1.681</td>
<td>0.505</td>
<td>a</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Dougal</td>
<td>Female</td>
<td>-0.253</td>
<td>0.504</td>
<td>NA</td>
<td>-1.239</td>
<td>0.736</td>
<td>ab</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Heimlich</td>
<td>Male</td>
<td>0.194</td>
<td>0.361</td>
<td>NA</td>
<td>-0.513</td>
<td>0.901</td>
<td>ab</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Cobblestone</td>
<td>Male</td>
<td>0.847</td>
<td>0.398</td>
<td>NA</td>
<td>0.066</td>
<td>1.628</td>
<td>b</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Bloom</td>
<td>Male</td>
<td>0.887</td>
<td>0.449</td>
<td>NA</td>
<td>0.007</td>
<td>1.767</td>
<td>b</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

Results are given on the logit (not the response) scale.
Confidence level used: 0.95
Tests are performed on the log scale

538
significance level used: alpha = 0.05

Summary table of results

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Comparison</th>
<th>p-value</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>Bloom–Female - Bloom–Male</td>
<td>0.039</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Cobblestone–Female - Cobblestone–Male</td>
<td>0.0085</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Dougal–Female - Dougal–Male</td>
<td>0.44</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Heimlich–Female - Heimlich–Male</td>
<td>0.15</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

p.value = c(0.039, 0.0085, 0.44, 0.15)

p.adj = p.adjust(p.value, method = "fdr")

p.adj = signif(p.adj, 2)

p.adj

[1] 0.078 0.034 0.440 0.200

Multinominal logistic regression

If the nominal dependent variable has more than two levels, multinominal logistic regression can be used.

VGAM package
The VGAM package provides a flexible framework for building models with categorical data. The vignette for the package provides an overview of the package, as well as brief overview of categorical analysis in R.

Yee, T.W.  The VGAM package for Categorical Data Analysis. The Comprehensive R Archive Network. cran.r-project.org/web/packages/VGAM/vignettes/categoricalVGAM.pdf

The following article may also be helpful for those interested in using the VGAM package.


The VGAM package can be explored through the help files for the package.
if(!require(VGAM)){install.packages("VGAM")}

help(package="VGAM")

And multinomial regression is discussed specifically in the entry for *multinomial*.

library(VGAM)

?multinomial

*mlogit and nnet packages*

Two other packages that can perform multinomial regression are *mlogit* and *nnet*. The packages can be explored with the following vignette, article, and the package help files.

Croissant, Y. Estimation of multinomial logit models in R: The mlogit Packages. cran.r-project.org/web/packages/mlogit/vignettes/mlogit.pdf

if(!require(mlogit)){install.packages("mlogit")}
help(package="mlogit")


if(!require(nnet)){install.packages("nnet")}
help(package="nnet")

*Multinomial regression example*

The following example revisits Alexander Anderson’s data of passing grades by sex within counties, for which we had used the Cochran–Mantel–Haenszel Test.

Because the dependent variable, *Result*, has only two levels, it could be modeled with standard binomial regression. However, a multinomial approach with VGAM will be used here as an example. Note that in multinomial regression, a reference level for the dependent variable must be specified. Coefficients of the model will change if a different reference level is specified.

Note that model assumptions and pitfalls of this approach are not discussed here. The reader is urged to understand the assumptions of this kind of modeling before proceeding.

The *summary* function will provide estimates of coefficients and standard errors for the coefficients. A *p*-value for the overall model as well as pseudo *R*-squared value is provided by the *nagelkerke* function.

The *lrtest* function in *VGAM* can be used to compare two nested models with likelihood ratio test. If only one model is given, it provides a *p*-value for the overall model, compared with a null model. The *Anova* function in the *car* package will provide chi-square tests for individual factors in the model. The user might prefer to use likelihood ratio tests with nested models instead of chi-square tests. This
could be accomplished with the \texttt{lrtest} function in the \textit{lmtest} package, or by specifying the second model with the \texttt{null=} option in the \textit{nagelkerke} function.

\begin{verbatim}
Input = ("County       Sex   Result  Count
Bloom        Female Pass    9
Bloom        Female Fail    5
Bloom        Male   Pass    7
Bloom        Male   Fail    17
Cobblestone  Female Pass    11
Cobblestone  Female Fail    4
Cobblestone  Male   Pass    9
Cobblestone  Male   Fail    21
Dougal       Female Pass    9
Dougal       Female Fail    7
Dougal       Male   Pass    19
Dougal       Male   Fail    9
Heimlich     Female Pass    15
Heimlich     Female Fail    8
Heimlich     Male   Pass    14
Heimlich     Male   Fail    17")

Data = read.table(textConnection(Input),header=TRUE)

### Order factors otherwise R will alphabetize them

Data$County = factor(Data$County,
                      levels=unique(Data$County))

Data$Sex    = factor(Data$Sex,
                      levels=unique(Data$Sex))

Data$Result = factor(Data$Result,
                      levels=unique(Data$Result))

### Check the data frame

library(psych)

headTail(Data)

str(Data)

summary(Data)

### Remove unnecessary objects

rm(Input)
\end{verbatim}
Multinomial regression

```
library(VGAM)

model = vglm(Result ~ Sex + County + Sex:County, 
             family=multinomial(refLevel=1), 
             weights = Count, 
             data = Data)

summary(model)

library(car)

Anova(model, 
      type="II", 
      test="Chisq")

Analysis of Deviance Table (Type II tests)

  Response: Result 
   Df  Chisq Pr(>Chisq)
  Sex      1 6.7132 0.00957 **
  County   3 4.1947 0.24120
  Sex:County 3 7.1376 0.06764 .

library(rcompanion)

nagelkerke(model)

$Pseudo.R.squared.for.model.vs.null

  Pseudo.R.squared
MCFadden      0.0797857
Cox and Snell (ML) 0.7136520
Nagelkerke (Cragg and Uhler) 0.7136520

$Likelihood.ratio.test

    Df.diff LogLik.diff  Chisq   p.value
    7    -10.004   20.009  0.0055508

library(lmtest)

lrtest(model)

Likelihood ratio test

Model 1: Result ~ Sex + County + Sex:County
Model 2: Result ~ 1

  #Df  LogLik  Df Chisq  Pr(>Chisq)
  1  8  -115.39
  2 15  -125.39  7  20.009  0.005551 **
```
Post-hoc analysis
At the time of writing, the *emmeans* package cannot be used with *vglm* models.

One option for post-hoc analysis would be to conduct analyses on reduced models, including only two levels of a factor. For example, if the variable *County x Sex* term had been significant, the following code could be used to create a reduced dataset with only Bloom–Female and Bloom–Male, and analyze this data with *vglm*.

```r
Data.b = Data[Data$County=="Bloom" & (Data$Sex=="Female"| Data$Sex=="Male"), ]
Data.b$County = factor(Data.b$County)
Data.b$Sex = factor(Data.b$Sex)
summary(Data.b)

library(VGAM)
model.b = vglm(Result ~ Sex,
family=multinomial(refLevel=1),
weights = Count,
data = Data.b)
lrtest(model.b)
```

Summary table of results

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Comparison</th>
<th>p-value</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>Bloom–Female – Bloom–Male</td>
<td>0.034</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Cobblestone–Female – Cobblestone–Male</td>
<td>0.0052</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Dougal–Female – Dougal–Male</td>
<td>0.44</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Heimlich–Female – Heimlich–Male</td>
<td>0.14</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>
Mixed-effects logistic regression example

A mixed-effects generalized linear model, as in the case of logistic regression with random effects, can be specified. This example revisits Hayley Smith's friendly lawn care course, for which we had used Cochran's Q test.

This example uses the `glmer` function in the package `mle4`, which can fit binomial dependent variables, with the `binomial` family of models, or other families of models. As far as I know, it will not fit multinomial regression. For more information on families of models, see `?family` and `?glm`. For more information on `glmer`, see `?glmer`. For a list of methods used to extract information from the model object, see `methods(class="merMod")`.

The `Anova` function in the `car` package will provide chi-square tests for individual factors in the model. The user might prefer to use likelihood ratio tests with nested models instead of chi-square tests. This could be accomplished with the `anova` function, or by specifying the second model with the `null=` option in the `nagelkerke` function.

```r
Input = ("Practice Student Response
SoilTest a Yes
SoilTest b No
SoilTest c Yes
SoilTest d Yes
SoilTest e No
SoilTest f Yes
SoilTest g Yes
SoilTest h Yes
SoilTest i No
SoilTest j Yes
SoilTest k Yes
SoilTest l Yes
SoilTest m Yes
"
```

```r
p.value = c(0.034, 0.0052, 0.44, 0.14)
p.adj = p.adjust(p.value,
method = "fdr")
p.adj = signif(p.adj,
2)
p.adj

[1] 0.068 0.021 0.440 0.190
```

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Comparison</th>
<th>p-value</th>
<th>p.adj</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>Bloom–Female – Bloom–Male</td>
<td>0.034</td>
<td>0.068</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Cobblestone–Female – Cobblestone–Male</td>
<td>0.0052</td>
<td>0.021</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Dougal–Female – Dougal–Male</td>
<td>0.44</td>
<td>0.44</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Heimlich–Female – Heimlich–Male</td>
<td>0.14</td>
<td>0.19</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>
SoilTest n Yes
Irrigation a Yes
Irrigation b No
Irrigation c No
Irrigation d No
Irrigation e No
Irrigation f No
Irrigation g No
Irrigation h No
Irrigation i Yes
Irrigation j No
Irrigation k No
Irrigation l No
Irrigation m No
Irrigation n No
MowHeight a Yes
MowHeight b No
MowHeight c Yes
MowHeight d Yes
MowHeight e Yes
MowHeight f Yes
MowHeight g Yes
MowHeight h Yes
MowHeight i No
MowHeight j Yes
MowHeight k Yes
MowHeight l Yes
MowHeight m Yes
MowHeight n Yes
Clippings a Yes
Clippings b No
Clippings c No
Clippings d Yes
Clippings e Yes
Clippings f No
Clippings g No
Clippings h Yes
Clippings i Yes
Clippings j Yes
Clippings k Yes
Clippings l No
Clippings m Yes
Clippings n No
"}

Data = read.table(textConnection(Input),header=TRUE)

### Order factors otherwise R will alphabetize them

Data$Practice = factor(Data$Practice, 
    levels=unique(Data$Practice))

Data$Response = factor(Data$Response, 
    levels=c("Yes", "No"))
### Check the data frame

```r
library(psych)
headTail(Data)
str(Data)
summary(Data)
```

### Remove unnecessary objects

```r
rm(Input)
```

**Mixed-effects logistic regression**

```r
library(lme4)

model = glmer(Response ~ Practice + (1 | Student),
               data = Data,
               family = binomial,
               nAGQ = 1)  ### Must be 1 to compare with glm model objects

summary(model)

library(car)

Anova(model,
       type="II",
       test="Chisq")
```

**Analysis of Deviance Table (Type II Wald chisquare tests)**

```
  Chisq Df Pr(>Chisq)
Practice 10.713 3 0.01338 *
```

### p-value for model and pseudo R-squared

```r
model.null = glm(Response ~ 1,
                  data = Data,
                  family = binomial)

library(rcompanion)
nagelkerke(model,
            model.null)

$Pseudo.R.squared.for.model.vs.null
  Pseudo.R.squared
```

546
### Test the random effects

```r
cmodel = glm(Response ~ Practice,
    data = Data,
    family = binomial)

anova(model, model.fixed)
```

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th></th>
<th>Df</th>
<th>AIC</th>
<th>BIC</th>
<th>logLik</th>
<th>deviance</th>
<th>Chisq</th>
<th>Chi Df</th>
<th>Pr(&gt;Chisq)</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>model.fixed</td>
<td>4</td>
<td>66.247</td>
<td>76.374</td>
<td>-28.124</td>
<td>56.247</td>
<td>0.389</td>
<td>1</td>
<td>0.5329</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>model</td>
<td>5</td>
<td>66.636</td>
<td>72.738</td>
<td>-28.318</td>
<td>56.636</td>
<td>0.00060164</td>
<td>0.00060164</td>
<td>0.6086</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

### Post-hoc analysis

Post-hoc analysis can be conducted with the `emmeans` package. Note that estimates for emmeans, differences, or standard errors are on a log or logit scale. For notes on using emmeans with different model types, see `?emmeans::models`.

```r
library(multcompView)
library(emmeans)
marginal = emmeans(model, ~ Practice)
pairs(marginal, adjust="tukey")
```

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>contrast</th>
<th>estimate</th>
<th>SE</th>
<th>df</th>
<th>z.ratio</th>
<th>p.value</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>SoilTest - Irrigation</td>
<td>-3.400498</td>
<td>1.1888138</td>
<td>NA</td>
<td>-2.860</td>
<td>0.0220</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>SoilTest - MowHeight</td>
<td>0.5256967</td>
<td>1.0384143</td>
<td>NA</td>
<td>0.506</td>
<td>0.9576</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>SoilTest - Clippings</td>
<td>-1.116523</td>
<td>0.9087443</td>
<td>NA</td>
<td>-1.229</td>
<td>0.2181</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Irrigation - MowHeight</td>
<td>3.926195</td>
<td>1.2853129</td>
<td>NA</td>
<td>3.055</td>
<td>0.0121</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Irrigation - Clippings</td>
<td>2.283975</td>
<td>1.0431115</td>
<td>NA</td>
<td>2.190</td>
<td>0.1261</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>MowHeight - Clippings</td>
<td>-1.642219</td>
<td>1.0071891</td>
<td>NA</td>
<td>-1.630</td>
<td>0.3614</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

Results are given on the log (not the response) scale.
P value adjustment: tukey method for comparing a family of 4 estimates
Tests are performed on the log scale.
MODELS FOR NOMINAL DATA

SUMMARY AND ANALYSIS OF EXTENSION EDUCATION PROGRAM EVALUATION IN R

cld(marginal,  
alpha=0.05,  
Letters=letters,  ### Use lower-case letters for .group  
adjust="tukey")  ### Tukey adjustment for multiple comparisons

MowHeight -1.9640077 0.8712261 NA -4.1341580 0.2061426 a  
SoilTest -1.4383110 0.7498776 NA -3.3061924 0.4295705 a  
Clippings -0.3217883 0.6055520 NA -1.8301670 1.1865905 ab  
Irrigation  1.9621870 0.8672121 NA -0.1979648 4.1223388 b

Results are given on the logit (not the response) scale.  
Confidence level used: 0.95

P value adjustment: Tukey method for comparing a family of 4 estimates  
Tests are performed on the log scale  
Significance level used: alpha = 0.05

Other tools for categorical analysis

The vcd package has several function that are useful when working with categorical data. The package can be explored with the following vignette and the package help files.


if(!require(vcd)){install.packages("vcd")}  
help(package="vcd")
Introduction to Parametric Tests

Packages used in this chapter

The packages used in this chapter include:

- psych
- rcompanion

The following commands will install these packages if they are not already installed:

```r
if(!require(psych)){install.packages("psych")}
if(!require(rcompanion)){install.packages("rcompanion")}
```

When to use parametric tests

Parametric statistical tests are among the most common you'll encounter. They include $t$-test, analysis of variance, and linear regression.

They are used when the dependent variable is an interval/ratio data variable. This might include variables measured in science such as fish length, child height, crop yield weight, or pollutant concentration in water.

One advantage of using parametric statistical tests is that your audience will likely be familiar with the techniques and interpretation of the results. These tests are also often more flexible and more powerful than their nonparametric analogues.

Their major drawback is that all parametric tests assume something about the distribution of the underlying data. If these assumptions are violated, the resultant test statistics will not be valid, and the tests will not be as powerful as for cases when assumptions are met.

Count data may not be appropriate for common parametric tests

A frequent error is to use common parametric models and tests with count data for the dependent variable. Instead, count data could be analyzed either by using tests for nominal data or by using regression methods appropriate for count data. These include Poisson regression, negative binomial regression, and zero-inflated Poisson regression. See the Hermite and Poisson Regression for Count Data chapter.

When to use parametric tests for count data

It is sometimes permissible to use common parametric tests for count data or other discrete data. They can be used in cases where counts are used as a type of measurement of some property of subjects, provided that 1) the distribution of data or residuals from the analysis meet test assumptions; and 2) there are few or no counts at or close to zero, or close to a maximum, if one exists. Permissible examples might include test scores, age, or number of steps taken during the day. Technically, each of these measurements is bound by zero, and are discrete rather than continuous.
measurements. However, if other conditions are met, it is reasonable to handle them as if they were continuous measurement variables.

This kind of count data will sometimes need to be transformed to meet the assumptions of parametric analysis. Square root and logarithmic transformations are common. However, if there are many counts at or near zero, transformation is unlikely to help. It is usually not worth the effort to attempt to force count data to meet the assumptions of parametric analysis with transformations, since there are more appropriate methods available.

**Percentage and proportion data**

Percentage and proportion data are often inappropriate for parametric statistics for the same reasons given for count data. They will often not meet the assumptions of the tests, and are particularly problematic if there are some or many observations close to 0 or 1. The arcsine transformation was used traditionally, but logistic regression or beta regression may be more appropriate.

**Assumptions in parametric statistics**

All parametric analyses have assumptions about the underlying data, and these assumptions should always be confirmed when using these tests. If these assumptions are violated, the resulting statistics and conclusions will not be valid, and the tests may lack power relative to alternative tests.

The assumptions vary among tests, but a general discussion follows.

For examples in this section, we'll revisit the Catbus data.

```r
Input = ("Student  Sex     Teacher  Steps  Rating
a        female  Catbus    8000   7
b        female  Catbus    9000  10
c        female  Catbus 10000   9
d        female  Catbus    7000   5
e        female  Catbus    6000   4
f        female  Catbus    8000   8
g        male    Catbus    7000   6
h        male    Catbus    5000   5
i        male    Catbus  9000  10
j        male    Catbus    7000   8
k        female  Satsuki  8000   7
l        female  Satsuki  9000   8
m        female  Satsuki  9000   8
n        female  Satsuki  8000   9
o        male    Satsuki  6000   5
p        male    Satsuki  8000   9
q        male    Satsuki  7000   6
r        female  Totoro 10000  10
s        female  Totoro  9000  10
t        female  Totoro  8000   8
u        female  Totoro  8000   7
v        female  Totoro  6000   7
w        male    Totoro  6000   8
x        male    Totoro  8000  10
t)
```
Random sampling
All statistical tests assume that the data captured in the sample are randomly chosen from the population as a whole. Selection bias will obviously affect the validity of the outcome of the analysis.

Independent observations
Tests will also assume that observations are independent of one another, except when the analysis takes non-independence into account. One common case of non-independent observations is in repeated measures experiments, in which the same subject is observed over time. If you were measuring test scores of students over time, you might expect students with a high test score on one date to have a high test score on subsequent dates. In this case the observation on one date would not be independent of observations on other dates.

The independence of observation is often assumed from good experimental design. Also, data or residuals can be plotted, for example to see if observations from one date are correlated to those for another date.

Normal distribution of data or residuals
Parametric tests assume that the data come from a population of known distribution. In particular, the tests discussed in this section assume that the distribution of the data are conditionally normal in distribution. That is, the data are normally distributed once the effects of the variables in the model are taken into account. Practically speaking, this means that the residuals from the analysis should be normally distributed. This will usually be assessed with a histogram of residuals, a density plot as shown below, or with quantile-quantile plot.
A select number of tests will require that data itself be normally distributed. This will be limited to one-sample t-test, two-sample t-test, and paired t-test. For other tests, the distribution of the residuals will be investigated.

Residuals from an analysis are also commonly called *errors*. They are the difference between the observations and the value predicted by the model. For example, if the calculated mean of a sample is 10, and one observation is 12, the residual for this observation is 2. If another observation is 7, the residual for this observation is −3.

Be careful not to get confused about this assumption. You may see discussion about how "data" should be normally distributed for parametric tests. This is usually wrong-headed. The t-test assumes that the observations for each group are normally distributed, but if there is a difference in the groups, we might expect a bi-modal distribution, not a simple normal distribution, for the combined data. This is why in most cases we look at the distribution of the residuals, not the raw data.

Optional: Considering the distributions of data for groups and their residuals
The following code is just to illustrate this principle, and isn’t normally used in analysis. First, the distributions of *Steps* by *Sex* in the *Catbus* data set are examined, and then the distribution of residuals — group means subtracted from each observation — is examined.

```r
### Density plot of observations by sex for Catbus data set

ggplot(Data,
   aes(Steps, fill = Sex)) +
   geom_density(position="dodge",
                alpha = 0.6)
```

The following code creates a variable *Mean* for *Steps* for each *Sex* in the *Catbus* data set, and then subtracts *Steps* from each mean, calling the result *Residual*.

```
M1 = mean(Data$Steps[Data$Sex=="female"])
```
**Homogeneity of variance**

Parametric analyses will also assume a homogeneity of variance among groups. That is, for Student's t-test comparing two groups, each group should have the same variance.

A good approach to assess this assumption is to plot residuals vs. predicted values. The residuals should have approximately the same spread across all predicted values.

Homogeneity of variance is also called *homoscedasticity*. The opposite is *heteroscedasticity*.

```r
M2 = mean(Data$Steps[Data$Sex=="male"])  
Data$Mean[Data$Sex=="female"]  = M1  
Data$Mean[Data$Sex=="male"]   = M2  
Data$Residual = Data$Steps - Data$Mean
```

### Residuals from mean for each sex vs. mean for Catbus data set

```r
plot(jitter(Residual) ~ Mean,  
data = Data)
```
As a technical note, by default R conducts a variant of the $t$-test called Welch’s $t$-test. This test does not assume homogeneity of variance and so can be used to compare two groups with unequal variances.

**Additivity of treatment effects**
Models for two-way analysis of variance and similar analyses are constructed as linear models in which the dependent variable is predicted as a linear combination of the independent variables.

A violation of this assumption is sometimes indicated when a plot of residuals versus predicted values exhibits a curved pattern.

**Outliers**
Outliers are observations whose value is far outside what is expected. They can play havoc with parametric analyses since they affect the distribution of the data and strongly influence the mean.

There are a variety of formal tests for detecting outliers, but they will not be discussed here. The best approach is one that looks at residuals after an analysis. Good tools are the “Residuals vs. leverage” plot and other plots in the “Other diagnostic plots” section below.

It’s my opinion that outliers should not be removed from data unless there is a good reason, usually when a value is impossible or a measurement error of some kind is suspected.

**Parametric tests are somewhat robust**
Some parametric tests are somewhat robust to violations of certain assumptions. For example, the $t$-test is reasonably robust to violations of normality for symmetric distributions, but not to samples having unequal variances (unless Welch’s $t$-test is used). A one-way analysis of variance is likewise reasonably robust to violations in normality.

The upshot is that model assumptions should always be checked, but you may be able to tolerate small violations in the distribution of residuals or homoscedasticity. Large violations will make the test invalid, though. It is important to be honest with your assessments when checking model
Assessing model assumptions

For this example, we’ll revisit the Catbus data. We’ll then define a linear model where Steps is the dependent variable and Sex and Teacher are the independent variables.

```
Input = ("Student  Sex     Teacher  Steps  Rating
a        female  Catbus    8000   7
b        female  Catbus    9000   10
c        female  Catbus   10000   9
d        female  Catbus    7000   5
e        female  Catbus    6000   4
f        female  Catbus    8000   8
g        male    Catbus    7000   6
h        male    Catbus    5000   5
i        male    Catbus    9000  10
j        male    Catbus    7000   8
k        female  Satsuki   8000   7
l        female  Satsuki   9000   8
m        female  Satsuki   9000   8
n        female  Satsuki   8000   9
o        male    Satsuki   6000   5
p        male    Satsuki   8000   9
q        male    Satsuki   7000   6
r        female  Totoro   10000  10
s        female  Totoro    9000  10
t        female  Totoro    8000   8
u        female  Totoro    8000   7
v        female  Totoro    6000   7
w        male    Totoro    6000   8
x        male    Totoro    8000  10
y        male    Totoro    7000   7
z        male    Totoro    7000   7")

Data = read.table(textConnection(Input),header=TRUE)

### Check the data frame

library(psych)

headTail(Data)

str(Data)

summary(Data)

### Remove unnecessary objects

```
Define a linear model

```r
model = lm(Steps ~ Sex + Teacher,
data = Data)
```

**Using formal tests to assess normality of residuals**
There are formal tests to assess the normality of residuals. Common tests include Shapiro-Wilk, Anderson-Darling, Kolmogorov-Smirnov, and D'Agostino-Pearson. These are presented in the "Optional analyses: formal tests for normality" section.

In general, I don’t recommend using these tests because their results are dependent on sample size. When the sample size is large, the tests may indicate a statistically significant departure from normality, even if that departure is small. And when sample sizes are small, they won’t detect departures from normality.

The article from the *Fells Stats* blog, in the “References” section has pretty convincing examples of these problems.

**Skew and kurtosis**
There are no definitive guidelines as to what range of skew or kurtosis are acceptable for considering residuals to be normally distributed.

In general, I would not recommend relying on skew and kurtosis calculations, but instead use histograms and other plots.

If I were forced to give advice for skewness calculations, I might say, be cautious if the absolute value is > 0.5, and consider it not normally distributed if the absolute value is > 1.0. Some authors use 2.0 as a cutoff for normality, and others use a higher limit for kurtosis.

```r
x = residuals(model)
library(psych)
describe(x,
type=2)       # Type of skew and kurtosis

vars       n mean      sd median trimmed     mad     min     max   range  skew kurtosis
1 1  26  1132.26 -39.58   11.07  1114.18 -2202.4 2123.25 4325.65 -0.13  -0.11
```

**Using visual inspection to assess the normality of residuals**
Usually, the best method to see if model residuals meet the assumptions of normal distribution and homoscedasticity are to plot them and inspect the plots visually.
**Histogram with normal curve**
A histogram of the residuals should be approximately normal, without excessive skew or kurtosis. Adding a normal curve with the same mean and standard deviation as the data helps to assess the histogram.

```r
x = residuals(model)
library(rcompanion)
plotNormalHistogram(x)
```

![Histogram with normal curve](image)

**Kernel density plot with normal curve**
A kernel density plot is similar to a histogram, but is smoothed into a curve. Sometimes a density plot gives a better representation of the distribution of data, because the appearance of the histogram depends upon how many bins are used.

The `plotNormalDensity` function will produce this plot. Options include those for the `plot` function, as well as `adjust`, `bw`, and `kernel` which are passed to the `density` function. `col1`, `col2`, and `col3` change plot colors, and `lwd` changes line thickness.

```r
x = residuals(model)
library(rcompanion)
plotNormalDensity(x, adjust = 1)  ### Decrease this number
### to make line less smooth
```
Plot of residuals vs. fitted values
Patterns in the plot of residuals versus fitted values can indicate a lack of homoscedasticity or that errors are not independent of fitted values.

```
plot(fitted(model), residuals(model))
```

Examples of residual plots and histograms
In the four plots below, A) Residuals.a show normally distributed and homoscedastic residuals, suggesting model assumptions were met. B) Residuals.b show a non-normal distribution of residuals. C) Residuals.c show that the residuals are not independent of the fitted values. In this case, the model needs to be modified in order to describe the data well. D) Residuals.d show heteroscedasticity, since variability in the residuals is greater for large fitted values than for small fitted values. (Adapted from similar plots in Tabachnick, 2001).
The following plots are histograms of the same residuals shown in the previous plots. A) Residuals.a are reasonably-close to normally distributed. B) Residuals.b are highly skewed (left, or negative). C) Residuals.c are moderately negatively skewed. This distribution would probably not cause too much havoc with most parametric tests, but, depending on the circumstances, I would probably try to transform a variable or find a better-fitting model. D) Residuals.d are symmetric, but leptokurtic. I probably wouldn't be too concerned with the distribution.

Results from the `describe` function in the `psych` package are shown below the histograms.
### describe(Residuals.a)

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>vars</th>
<th>n</th>
<th>mean</th>
<th>sd</th>
<th>median</th>
<th>trimmed</th>
<th>mad</th>
<th>min</th>
<th>max</th>
<th>range</th>
<th>skew</th>
<th>kurtosis</th>
<th>se</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>1</td>
<td>1</td>
<td>200</td>
<td>6.82</td>
<td>0.63</td>
<td>0.07</td>
<td>6.91</td>
<td>-20</td>
<td>18.51</td>
<td>38.51</td>
<td>-0.14</td>
<td>0.03</td>
<td>0.48</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

### describe(Residuals.b)

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>vars</th>
<th>n</th>
<th>mean</th>
<th>sd</th>
<th>median</th>
<th>trimmed</th>
<th>mad</th>
<th>min</th>
<th>max</th>
<th>range</th>
<th>skew</th>
<th>kurtosis</th>
<th>se</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>1</td>
<td>1</td>
<td>200</td>
<td>3.77</td>
<td>1.38</td>
<td>0.86</td>
<td>1.62</td>
<td>-20</td>
<td>2.62</td>
<td>22.62</td>
<td>-2.53</td>
<td>7.2</td>
<td>0.27</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

### describe(Residuals.c)

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>vars</th>
<th>n</th>
<th>mean</th>
<th>sd</th>
<th>median</th>
<th>trimmed</th>
<th>mad</th>
<th>min</th>
<th>max</th>
<th>range</th>
<th>skew</th>
<th>kurtosis</th>
<th>se</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>1</td>
<td>1</td>
<td>200</td>
<td>6.79</td>
<td>1.25</td>
<td>0.48</td>
<td>7.75</td>
<td>-20</td>
<td>12.88</td>
<td>32.88</td>
<td>-0.54</td>
<td>-0.42</td>
<td>0.48</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

### describe(Residuals.d)

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>vars</th>
<th>n</th>
<th>mean</th>
<th>sd</th>
<th>median</th>
<th>trimmed</th>
<th>mad</th>
<th>min</th>
<th>max</th>
<th>range</th>
<th>skew</th>
<th>kurtosis</th>
<th>se</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>1</td>
<td>1</td>
<td>200</td>
<td>5.53</td>
<td>0.11</td>
<td>0.21</td>
<td>3.83</td>
<td>-20</td>
<td>16.57</td>
<td>36.57</td>
<td>-0.48</td>
<td>1.94</td>
<td>0.39</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

**Other diagnostic plots**

Using the `plot` function for most common types of models will show diagnostic plots or other useful plots for the model. For linear models, the `plot` function produces plots of 1) residuals vs. fitted values; 2) normal quantile-quantile plot; 3) square root of standardized residuals vs. fitted values; and 4) standardized residuals vs. leverage.

While these are useful diagnostic plots, their interpretation will not be discussed here.

`plot(model)`
Steps to handle violations of assumptions
If residuals show heteroscedasticity or a non-normal distribution, the analysis must be modified in some way to get valid results. Some options include the following.

1. Select the correct parametric test and check assumptions

2. Change your model
Problems with distribution of residuals is sometimes related to the model not describing the data well. Adding or removing terms from the model may correct this. As an example, imagine you had plotted bivariate data and they formed a shape like a parabola. If you fit a straight line to this data, you might get residuals that look like Residuals.c above. Adding an $x^2$ term, or other term to add curvature to the fitted model, might correct this. A similar situation can be encountered in analysis of variance and similar tests; it is sometimes helpful to add other terms or covariates.

3. Transform data and repeat your original analysis
The dependent variable, or other variables, can be transformed so that model assumptions are met. The tests are then performed on these transformed data. See the Transforming Data chapter for details.

4. Use nonparametric tests
Nonparametric tests include those discussed in the Traditional Nonparametric Tests section of this book and those chapters on permutation tests. Quantile regression and generalized additive model may be options as well.

5. Use robust methods
There are other statistical methods which are robust to violations of parametric assumptions or are nonparametric. See Mangiafico (2015a) and (2015b) in the “References” section for examples.

Descriptive Statistics for Parametric Statistics

Descriptive statistics for interval/ratio data are discussed in the “Descriptive statistics for interval/ratio data” section in the Descriptive Statistics chapter.
Descriptive plots for interval/ratio data are discussed in the “Examples of basic plots for interval/ratio and ordinal data” section in the Basic Plots chapter.

**Optional readings**


**References**


**Optional analyses: formal tests for normality**

Code for conducting formal tests of normality are included here. I don’t recommend using them, but they may be instructive in training the eye to interpret histograms and Q-Q plots, or to respond to a less-savvy reviewer.

In each case, the null hypothesis is that the data distribution is not different from normal. That is, a significant *p*-value (*p* < 0.05) suggests that data are not normally distributed.

As mentioned previously, a limitation to using these tests is that as the number of observations are increased, the ability of the test to return a significant *p*-value increases, even for small deviations from a normal distribution.

```
Input = ("Student Sex Teacher Steps Rating
a female Catbus 8000  7
b female Catbus 9000  10
c female Catbus 10000  9
d female Catbus 7000  5
```

563
### Check the data frame

```r
library(psych)
headTail(Data)
str(Data)
summary(Data)
```

### Remove unnecessary objects

```r
rm(Input)
```

**Define a linear model**

```r
model = lm(Steps ~ Sex + Teacher, 
data = Data)
```

**Shapiro–Wilk normality test**

```r
x = residuals(model)
shapiro.test(x)
```
Shapiro-Wilk normality test
W = 0.96256, p-value = 0.4444

Anderson-Darling normality test

if(!require(nortest)){install.packages("nortest")}
library(nortest)
x = residuals(model)
ad.test(x)

Anderson-Darling normality test
A = 0.39351, p-value = 0.3506

One-sample Kolmogorov-Smirnov test

x = residuals(model)
ks.test(x,  "pnorm",
       mean = mean(x),
       sd = sd(x))

One-sample Kolmogorov-Smirnov test
D = 0.1399, p-value = 0.6889

D'Agostino Normality Test

if(!require(fBasics)){install.packages("fBasics")}
library(fBasics)
x = residuals(model)
dagoTest(x)

Title:
D'Agostino Normality Test

Test Results:
STATISTIC:
   Chi2  | Omnibus: 0.1071
   Z3    | Skewness: -0.3132
   Z4    | Kurtosis: 0.0948
P VALUE:
Optional analyses: formal tests for homogeneity of variance

Code for formal tests of homogeneity of variance among groups is presented here. I don’t recommend using them, but instead recommend using diagnostic plots.

In each case, the null hypothesis is that the variance among groups is not different. That is, a significant p-value ($p < 0.05$) suggests that the variance among groups is different.

```r
Input = ("Student Sex Teacher Steps Rating
a female Catbus 8000 7
b female Catbus 9000 10
c female Catbus 10000 9
d female Catbus 7000 5
e female Catbus 6000 4
f female Catbus 8000 8
g male Catbus 7000 6
h male Catbus 5000 5
i male Catbus 9000 10
j male Catbus 7000 8
k female Satsuki 8000 7
l female Satsuki 9000 8
m female Satsuki 9000 8
n female Satsuki 8000 9
o male Satsuki 6000 5
p male Satsuki 8000 9
q male Satsuki 7000 6
r female Totoro 10000 10
s female Totoro 9000 10
t female Totoro 8000 8
u female Totoro 8000 7
v female Totoro 6000 7
w male Totoro 6000 8
x male Totoro 8000 10
y male Totoro 7000 7
z male Totoro 7000 7")

Data = read.table(textConnection(Input),header=TRUE)

### Check the data frame

library(psych)

headTail(Data)

str(Data)
```
summary(Data)

### Remove unnecessary objects
rm(Input)

Define a linear model

```r
model = lm(Steps ~ Sex + Teacher, 
data = Data)
```

**Bartlett’s test for homogeneity of variance**

Bartlett’s test is known to be sensitive to non-normality in samples. That is, non-normal samples can result in a significant test due to the non-normality.

```r
x = residuals(model)
bartlett.test(x ~ interaction(Sex, Teacher), 
data=Data)

Bartlett test of homogeneity of variances
Bartlett's K-squared = 3.7499, df = 5, p-value = 0.586
```

**Levene’s test for homogeneity of variance**

Levene’s test is an alternative to Bartlett’s that is supposedly less sensitive to departures from normality in the data.

```r
if(!require(car)){install.packages("car")}
library(car)
x = residuals(model)
leveneTest(x ~ Sex * Teacher 
data=Data, 
center=mean) ### Use the original Levene's test

Levene's Test for Homogeneity of Variance (center = mean)

Df F value Pr(>F) 
group  5  0.4457 0.8113 
20
**Brown–Forsythe or robust Levene’s test**
The Brown–Forsythe modification of Levene’s test makes it more robust to departures in normality of the data.

```r
if(!require(car)){install.packages("car")}
library(car)
x = residuals(model)
leveneTest(x ~ Sex * Teacher, data=Data)

Levene's Test for Homogeneity of Variance (center = median)

Df F value Pr(>F)
group 5 0.4015 0.842
20

if(!require(lawstat)){install.packages("lawstat")}
library(lawstat)
x = residuals(model)
levene.test(x, interaction(Data$Sex, Data$Teacher))

modified robust Brown-Forsythe Levene-type test based on the absolute deviations from the median

Test Statistic = 0.4015, p-value = 0.842
```

**Fligner-Killeen test**
The Fligner-Killeen test is another test for homogeneity of variances that is robust to departures in normality of the data.

```r
x = residuals(model)
fligner.test(x ~ interaction(Sex, Teacher), data=Data)

Fligner-Killeen test of homogeneity of variances

Fligner-Killeen:med chi-squared = 2.685, df = 5, p-value = 0.7484
```

---

**One-sample t-test**
One-sample tests are not used too often, but are useful to compare a set of values to a given default value. For example, one might ask if a set of student scores are significantly different from a “default” or “neutral” score of 75.

**Appropriate data**
- One-sample data
- Data are interval/ratio, and are continuous
- Data are normally distributed
- Moderate skewness is permissible if the data distribution is unimodal without outliers

**Hypotheses**
- Null hypothesis: The mean is equal to the default value.
- Alternative hypothesis (two-sided): The mean is not equal to the default value.

**Interpretation**
Reporting significant results as, e.g., “Mean score for Variable A was significantly different from a default value of 75” is acceptable.

**Other notes and alternative tests**
- The nonparametric analogue for this test is the one-sample Wilcoxon signed-rank test.
- Power analysis for the one-sample t-test can be found at [Mangiafico (2015)](https://journal.r-project.org/archive/2015-1/index.html) in the References section.

**Packages used in this chapter**
The packages used in this chapter include:
- psych
- rcompanion
- lsr
- ggplot2

The following commands will install these packages if they are not already installed:

```r
if(!require(psych)){install.packages("psych")}
if(!require(rcompanion)){install.packages("rcompanion")}
if(!require(lsr)){install.packages("lsr")}
if(!require(ggplot2)){install.packages("ggplot2")}
```

**One-sample t-test example**
In the following example, Brendon Small has his SNAP-Ed students keep diaries of what they eat for a week, and then calculate the daily sodium intake in milligrams. As a first step in the analysis, he wants to compare mean sodium intake by his students to the American Heart Association recommendation of 1500 mg.
A one-sample t-test can be conducted with the `t.test` function in the native `stats` package. Conveniently the output includes the mean of the sample, a confidence interval for that mean, and a p-value for the t-test.

We will use a histogram with an imposed normal curve to confirm data are approximately normal.

```r
Input = ('"Instructor    Student Sodium
'Brendon Small' a 1200
'Brendon Small' b 1400
'Brendon Small' c 1350
'Brendon Small' d 950
'Brendon Small' e 1400
'Brendon Small' f 1150
'Brendon Small' g 1300
'Brendon Small' h 1325
'Brendon Small' i 1425
'Brendon Small' j 1500
'Brendon Small' k 1250
'Brendon Small' l 1150
'Brendon Small' m 950
'Brendon Small' n 1150
'Brendon Small' o 1600
'Brendon Small' p 1300
'Brendon Small' q 1050
'Brendon Small' r 1300
'Brendon Small' s 1700
'Brendon Small' t 1300
"')

Data = read.table(textConnection(Input),header=TRUE)

## Check the data frame

library(psych)
headTail(Data)
str(Data)
summary(Data)

## Remove unnecessary objects

rm(Input)

Histogram of data
A histogram of the data can be examined to determine if the data are sufficiently normal.

```r
x = Data$Sodium
```
library(rcompanion)

plotNormalHistogram(x)

Normal quantile plot of data

x = Data$Sodium

qqnorm(x)
qqline(x, col="red")

One-sample t-test

t.test(Data$Sodium,
      mu = 1500)

One Sample t-test
Effect size

Cohen's $d$ can be used as an effect size statistic for a one-sample $t$-test. It is calculated as the difference between the mean of the data and $\mu$, the default value, all divided by the standard deviation of the data.

It ranges from 0 to infinity, with 0 indicating no effect where the mean equals $\mu$. In some versions, Cohen's $d$ can be positive or negative depending on whether the mean is greater than or less than $\mu$.

A Cohen's $d$ of 0.5 suggests that the mean and $\mu$ differ by one-half the standard deviation of the data. A Cohen's $d$ of 1.0 suggests that the mean and $\mu$ differ by one standard deviation of the data.

**Interpretation of Cohen's $d$**

Interpretation of effect sizes necessarily varies by discipline and the expectations of the experiment, but for behavioral studies, the guidelines proposed by Cohen (1988) are sometimes followed. They should not be considered universal.

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Small</th>
<th>Medium</th>
<th>Large</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>$d$</td>
<td>$0.2 - &lt; 0.5$</td>
<td>$0.5 - &lt; 0.8$</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>


**Cohen's $d$ for one-sample $t$-test**

The `cohensD` function in the `lsr` package has an option for the one-sample $t$-test. The grammar follows that of the `t.test` function. Note that this function reports the value as a positive number.

```r
library(lsr)
cohensD(Data$Sodium, mu = 1500)
```

```
[1] 1.096864
```

It could also be calculated manually from the mean, $\mu$, and standard deviation.

```r
Mean = mean(Data$Sodium)
```
Mean

1287.5

Mu   = 1500
Sd   = sd(Data$Sodium)
Diff = Mean - Mu
Diff

-212.5

CohenD = (Mean - Mu) / Sd
CohenD

[1] -1.096864

Box plot with default value

library(ggplot2)

ggplot(data=Data,
       aes(x = Instructor, y = Sodium)) +
geom_boxplot() +
geom_point(aes(x = 1, y = 1500),
          colour="blue",
          size = 8,
          shape = "+") +
theme_bw() +
theme(axis.title = element_text(face = "bold")) +
theme(axis.text = element_text(face = "bold"))
Box plot of daily sodium intake in milligrams recorded in student diaries. The blue cross indicates the American Heart Association recommendation of 1500 mg.

**References**


**Exercises O**

1. Considering Brendon Small’s data,
   
   a. What was the mean sodium intake?
   
   b. Is the data distribution reasonably normal?
   
   c. Was the mean sodium intake significantly different from the American Heart Association recommendation or 1500 mg per day?
   
   d. What do you conclude practically? Include a description of the difference between the mean of the data and the American Heart Association recommendation. If they’re different, which is higher? Include effect size, any other relevant summary statistics, and your practical conclusions.
2. As part of a professional skills program, a 4-H club tests its members for typing proficiency. Dr. Katz wants to test his students’ mean typing speed against a nominal speed of 40 words per minute.

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Instructor</th>
<th>Student</th>
<th>Words per minute</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>'Dr. Katz Professional Therapist'</td>
<td>a</td>
<td>35</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>'Dr. Katz Professional Therapist'</td>
<td>b</td>
<td>50</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>'Dr. Katz Professional Therapist'</td>
<td>c</td>
<td>55</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>'Dr. Katz Professional Therapist'</td>
<td>d</td>
<td>60</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>'Dr. Katz Professional Therapist'</td>
<td>e</td>
<td>65</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>'Dr. Katz Professional Therapist'</td>
<td>f</td>
<td>60</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>'Dr. Katz Professional Therapist'</td>
<td>g</td>
<td>70</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>'Dr. Katz Professional Therapist'</td>
<td>h</td>
<td>55</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>'Dr. Katz Professional Therapist'</td>
<td>i</td>
<td>45</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>'Dr. Katz Professional Therapist'</td>
<td>j</td>
<td>55</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>'Dr. Katz Professional Therapist'</td>
<td>k</td>
<td>60</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>'Dr. Katz Professional Therapist'</td>
<td>l</td>
<td>45</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>'Dr. Katz Professional Therapist'</td>
<td>m</td>
<td>65</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>'Dr. Katz Professional Therapist'</td>
<td>n</td>
<td>55</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>'Dr. Katz Professional Therapist'</td>
<td>o</td>
<td>50</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>'Dr. Katz Professional Therapist'</td>
<td>p</td>
<td>60</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

For each of the following, answer the question, and show the output from the analyses you used to answer the question.

a. What was the mean typing speed?

b. Is the data distribution reasonably normal?

c. Was the mean typing speed significantly different from the nominal rate of 40 words per minute?

d. What do you conclude practically? Include a description of the difference between the mean of the data and the 40 words per minute standard. If they’re different, which is higher? Include effect size, any other relevant summary statistics, and your practical conclusions.

---

**Two-sample t-test**

The two-sample unpaired t-test is a commonly used test that compares the means of two samples.

**Appropriate data**

- Two-sample data. That is, one measurement variable in two groups or samples
- Dependent variable is interval/ratio, and is continuous
- Independent variable is a factor with two levels. That is, two groups
- Data for each population are normally distributed
For the traditional test, the two samples need to have the same variance. However, Welch’s t-test, which is used by default in R, does not assume equal variances.
Observations between groups are independent. That is, not paired or repeated measures data
Moderate skewness is permissible if the data distribution is unimodal without outliers

Hypotheses
- Null hypothesis: The means of the measurement variable for each sample are equal.
- Alternative hypothesis (two-sided): The means of the measurement variable for each sample are not equal.

Interpretation
Reporting significant results as “Mean of variable Y for group A was different than that for group B.” is acceptable.

Other notes and alternative tests
- The nonparametric analogue for this test is the two-sample Mann–Whitney U Test. Another option is to use a permutation test. See Mangiafico (2015b) in the “References” section.
- Power analysis for the two-sample t-test can be found at Mangiafico (2015a) in the “References” section.

Packages used in this chapter
The packages used in this chapter include:
- psych
- FSA
- lattice
- lsr

The following commands will install these packages if they are not already installed:

```r
if(!require(psych)){install.packages("psych")}
if(!require(FSA)){install.packages("FSA")}
if(!require(lattice)){install.packages("lattice")}
if(!require(lsr)){install.packages("lsr")}
```

Two-sample t-test example
In the following example, Brendon Small and Coach McGuirk have their SNAP-Ed students keep diaries of what they eat for a week, and then calculate the daily sodium intake in milligrams. Since the classes have received different nutrition education programs, they want to see if the mean sodium intake is the same for both classes.

A two-sample t-test can be conducted with the `t.test` function in the native `stats` package. The default is to use Welch’s t-test, which doesn’t require equal variance between groups. Conveniently the output
includes the mean of each sample, a confidence interval for the difference in means, and a $p$-value for the $t$-test.

We will use histograms with imposed normal curves to confirm data are approximately normal.

```r
Input = ("Instructor   Student Sodium
'Brendon Small' a 1200
'Brendon Small' b 1400
'Brendon Small' c 1350
'Brendon Small' d 950
'Brendon Small' e 1400
'Brendon Small' f 1150
'Brendon Small' g 1300
'Brendon Small' h 1325
'Brendon Small' i 1425
'Brendon Small' j 1500
'Brendon Small' k 1250
'Brendon Small' l 1150
'Brendon Small' m 950
'Brendon Small' n 1150
'Brendon Small' o 1600
'Brendon Small' p 1300
'Brendon Small' q 1050
'Brendon Small' r 1300
'Brendon Small' s 1700
'Brendon Small' t 1300
'Coach McGuirk' u 1100
'Coach McGuirk' v 1200
'Coach McGuirk' w 1250
'Coach McGuirk' x 1050
'Coach McGuirk' y 1200
'Coach McGuirk' z 1250
'Coach McGuirk' aa 1350
'Coach McGuirk' ab 1350
'Coach McGuirk' ac 1325
'Coach McGuirk' ad 1525
'Coach McGuirk' ae 1225
'Coach McGuirk' af 1125
'Coach McGuirk' ag 1000
'Coach McGuirk' ah 1125
'Coach McGuirk' ai 1400
'Coach McGuirk' aj 1200
'Coach McGuirk' ak 1150
'Coach McGuirk' al 1400
'Coach McGuirk' am 1500
'Coach McGuirk' an 1200")
```

```r
Data = read.table(textConnection(Input),header=TRUE)
```

```r
### Check the data frame
```
library(psych)
headTail(Data)
str(Data)
summary(Data)

### Remove unnecessary objects
rm(Input)

**Summarize data by group**

library(FSA)

Summarize(Sodium ~ Instructor,
data=Data,
digits=3)

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Instructor</th>
<th>n</th>
<th>nvalid</th>
<th>mean</th>
<th>sd</th>
<th>min</th>
<th>Q1</th>
<th>median</th>
<th>Q3</th>
<th>max</th>
<th>percZero</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>Brendon Small</td>
<td>20</td>
<td>20</td>
<td>1287.5</td>
<td>193.7</td>
<td>950</td>
<td>1150</td>
<td>1300</td>
<td>1400</td>
<td>1700</td>
<td>0</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Coach McGuirk</td>
<td>20</td>
<td>20</td>
<td>1246.25</td>
<td>142.4</td>
<td>1000</td>
<td>1144</td>
<td>1212</td>
<td>1350</td>
<td>1525</td>
<td>0</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

**Histograms for data by group**

Histograms of each group could be examined.

The `right = FALSE` option is used with the McGuirk data to improve the appearance of the plot in this particular case.

Brendon = Data$Sodium[Data$Instructor == "Brendon Small"]

McGuirk = Data$Sodium[Data$Instructor == "Coach McGuirk"]

library(rcompanion)

plotNormalHistogram(Brendon)
The *lattice* package could also be used, but adding normal curves to histograms by groups requires some extra code.

```r
library(lattice)

histogram(~ Sodium | Instructor,
  data = Data,
  type = "density",
  layout = c(1,2),
  panel=function(x, ...) {
    panel.histogram(x, ...)
    panel.mathdensity(dmath = dnorm,
                     col = "blue",
                     lwd = 2,
                     args = list(mean=mean(x),
                                  sd=sd(x)), ...))
```

---

579
Two-sample t-test

Box plots for data by group

```r
boxplot(Sodium ~ Instructor,
       data = Data)
```

Two-sample unpaired t-test

```r
t.test(Sodium ~ Instructor,
       data = Data)
```

Welch Two Sample t-test

data: Sodium by Instructor
t = 0.76722, df = 34.893, p-value = 0.4481

alternative hypothesis: true difference in means is not equal to 0

95 percent confidence interval:
-67.91132 150.41132
**Sample estimates:**
- Mean in group Brandon Small: 1287.50
- Mean in group Coach McGuirk: 1246.25

**Effect size**

Cohen’s $d$ can be used as an effect size statistic for a two-sample $t$-test. It is calculated as the difference between the means of each group, all divided by the pooled standard deviation of the data.

It ranges from 0 to infinity, with 0 indicating no effect where the means are equal. In some versions, Cohen’s $d$ can be positive or negative depending on which mean is greater.

A Cohen’s $d$ of 0.5 suggests that the means differ by one-half the standard deviation of the data. A Cohen’s $d$ of 1.0 suggests that the means differ by one standard deviation of the data.

**Interpretation of Cohen’s $d$**

Interpretation of effect sizes necessarily varies by discipline and the expectations of the experiment, but for behavioral studies, the guidelines proposed by Cohen (1988) are sometimes followed. They should not be considered universal.

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th></th>
<th>Small</th>
<th>Medium</th>
<th>Large</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>Cohen’s $d$</td>
<td>$0.2 – &lt; 0.5$</td>
<td>$0.5 – &lt; 0.8$</td>
<td>$&gt; 0.8$</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>


**Cohen’s $d$ for two-sample $t$-test**

The grammar in the `cohensD` function in the `lsr` package follows that of the `t.test` function. Note that this function reports the value as a positive number.

```r
library(lsr)
cohensD(Sodium ~ Instructor, data = Data)
```

[1] 0.2426174

**Optional readings**


**References**

**Exercises P**

1. Considering Brendon and McGuirk’s data,

   a. What was the mean sodium intake for each class?

   b. Are the data distributions for each sample reasonably normal?

   c. Was the mean sodium intake significantly different between classes?

   d. What do you conclude practically? Include a description of the difference between the means of the data. If they’re different, which is higher? Include effect size, any other relevant summary statistics, and your practical conclusions.

2. As part of a professional skills program, a 4-H club tests its members for typing proficiency. Dr. Katz and Laura want to compare their students’ mean typing speed between their classes.

```r
Instructor                              Student Words.per.minute
'Dr. Katz Professional Therapist'      a    35
'Dr. Katz Professional Therapist'      b    50
'Dr. Katz Professional Therapist'      c    55
'Dr. Katz Professional Therapist'      d    60
'Dr. Katz Professional Therapist'      e    65
'Dr. Katz Professional Therapist'      f    60
'Dr. Katz Professional Therapist'      g    70
'Dr. Katz Professional Therapist'      h    55
'Dr. Katz Professional Therapist'      i    45
'Dr. Katz Professional Therapist'      j    55
'Dr. Katz Professional Therapist'      k    60
'Dr. Katz Professional Therapist'      l    45
'Dr. Katz Professional Therapist'      m    65
'Dr. Katz Professional Therapist'      n    55
'Dr. Katz Professional Therapist'      o    50
'Dr. Katz Professional Therapist'      p    60
'Laura the Receptionist'               q    55
'Laura the Receptionist'               r    60
'Laura the Receptionist'               s    75
'Laura the Receptionist'               t    65
'Laura the Receptionist'               u    60
'Laura the Receptionist'               v    70
'Laura the Receptionist'               w    75
'Laura the Receptionist'               x    70
'Laura the Receptionist'               y    65
'Laura the Receptionist'               z    72
'Laura the Receptionist'               aa   73
'Laura the Receptionist'               ab   65
```
For each of the following, answer the question, and show the output from the analyses you used to answer the question.

a. What was the mean typing speed for each class?

b. Are the data distributions for each sample reasonably normal?

c. Was the mean typing speed significantly different between the classes?

d. What do you conclude practically? Include a description of the difference between the means of the data. If they’re different, which is higher? Include effect size, any other relevant summary statistics, and your practical conclusions.

Paired t-test

The paired t-test is commonly used. It compares the means of two populations of paired observations by testing if the difference between pairs is statistically different from zero.

Appropriate data

- Two-sample data. That is, one measurement variable in two groups or samples
- Dependent variable is interval/ratio, and is continuous
- Independent variable is a factor with two levels. That is, two groups
- Data are paired. That is, the measurement for each observation in one group can be paired logically or by subject to a measurement in the other group
- The distribution of the difference of paired measurements is normally distributed
- Moderate skewness is permissible if the data distribution is unimodal without outliers

Hypotheses

- Null hypothesis: The difference between paired observations is equal to zero.
- Alternative hypothesis (two-sided): The difference between paired observations is not equal to zero.

Interpretation

Reporting significant results as “Mean of variable Y for group A was different than that for group B.” or “Variable Y increased from before to after” is acceptable.

Other notes and alternative tests

- The nonparametric analogue for this test is the two-sample paired rank-sum test.
• Power analysis for the paired t-test can be found at Mangiafico (2015) in the “References” section.

Packages used in this chapter

The packages used in this chapter include:
• psych
• rcompanion
• lsr

The following commands will install these packages if they are not already installed:

```r
if(!require(psych)){install.packages("psych")}
if(!require(rcompanion)){install.packages("rcompanion")}
if(!require(lsr)){install.packages("lsr")}
```

Paired t-test example

In the following example, Dumbland Extension had adult students fill out a financial literacy knowledge questionnaire both before and after completing a home financial management workshop. Each student's score before and after was paired by student.

Note in the following data that the students’ names are repeated, so that there is a before score for student a and an after score for student a.

Since the data is in long form, we’ll order by Time, then Student to be sure the first observation for Before is student a and the first observation for After is student a, and so on.

```
Input = ("Time  Student  Score
Before  a       65
Before  b       75
Before  c       86
Before  d       69
Before  e       60
Before  f       81
Before  g       88
Before  h       53
Before  i       75
Before  j       73
After   a       77
After   b       98
After   c       92
After   d       77
After   e       65
After   f       77
After   g       100
After   h       73
After   i       93
```
After j 75
"

Data = read.table(textConnection(Input),header=TRUE)

### Order data by Time and Student
Data = Data[order(Time, Student),]

### Check the data frame
library(psych)
headTail(Data)
str(Data)
summary(Data)

### Remove unnecessary objects
rm(Input)

**Check the number of paired observations**
It is helpful to create a table of the counts of observations to be sure that there is one observation for each student for each time period.

xtabs(~ Student + Time,
  data = Data)

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th></th>
<th>Time</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>After</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>a</td>
<td>1</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>b</td>
<td>1</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>c</td>
<td>1</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>d</td>
<td>1</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>e</td>
<td>1</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>f</td>
<td>1</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>g</td>
<td>1</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>h</td>
<td>1</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>i</td>
<td>1</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>j</td>
<td>1</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

**Histogram of difference data**
A histogram with a normal curve imposed will be used to check if the paired differences between the two populations is approximately normal in distribution.
First, two new variables, *Before* and *After*, are created by extracting the values of *Score* for observations with the *Time* variable equal to *Before* or *After*, respectively.

Note that for this code to make sense, the first observation for *Before* is student *a* and the first observation for *After* is student *a*, and so on.

```r
Before = Data$Score[Data$Time=="Before"]
After  = Data$Score[Data$Time=="After"]
Difference = After - Before
x = Difference

library(rcompanion)
plotNormalHistogram(x,
    xlab="Difference (After - Before)"
)
```

**Plot the paired data**

**Scatter plot with one-to-one line**

Paired data can be visualized with a scatter plot of the paired cases. In the plot below, points that fall above and to the left of the blue line indicate cases for which the value for *After* was greater than for *Before*.

Note that the points in the plot are jittered slightly so that points that would fall directly on top of one another can be seen.

First, two new variables, *Before* and *After*, are created by extracting the values of *Score* for observations with the *Time* variable equal to *Before* or *After*, respectively.
Note that for this code to make sense, the first observation for *Before* is student *a* and the first observation for *After* is student *a*, and so on.

A variable *Names* is also created for point labels.

```r
Before = Data$Score[Data$Time=="Before"]
After = Data$Score[Data$Time=="After"]
Names = Data$Student[Data$Time=="Before"]

plot(Before, jitter(After),
    pch = 16,         # shape of points
    cex = 1.0,        # size of points
    xlim=c(50, 110),  # limits of x-axis
    ylim=c(50, 110),  # limits of y-axis
    xlab="Before",   # label for x-axis
    ylab="After")    # label for y-axis

text(Before, After, labels=Names,
     pos=3, cex=1.0)  # Label text position and size

abline(0, 1, col="blue", lwd=2) # line with intercept of 0 and slope of 1
```

Bar plot of differences
Paired data can also be visualized with a bar chart of differences. In the plot below, bars with a value greater than zero indicate cases for which the value for *After* was greater than for *Before*.

New variables are first created for *Before, After,* and their *Difference*.

Note that for this code to make sense, the first observation for *Before* is student *a* and the first observation for *After* is student *a*, and so on.
A variable *Names* is also created for bar labels.

```r
Before = Data$Score[Data$Time=='Before']
After = Data$Score[Data$Time=='After']
Difference = After - Before
Names = Data$Student[Data$Time=='Before']
```

```r
barplot(Difference, # variable to plot
   col="dark gray", # color of bars
   xlab="Observation", # x-axis label
   ylab="Difference (After - Before)", # y-axis label
   names.arg=Names) # labels for bars
```

**Paired t-test**

Note that the output shows the *p*-value for the test, and the simple difference in the means for the two groups.

Note that for this test to be conducted correctly, the first observation for *Before* is student *a* and the first observation for *After* is student *a*, and so on.

```r
t.test(Score ~ Time,
   data = Data,
   paired = TRUE)
```

**Paired t-test**

\[ t = 3.8084, \; \text{df} = 9, \; \text{p-value} = 0.004163 \]

*alternative hypothesis: true difference in means is not equal to 0"*
95 percent confidence interval:
4.141247 16.258753

sample estimates:
mean of the differences
10.2

Effect size

Cohen’s $d$ can be used as an effect size statistic for a paired $t$-test. It is calculated as the difference between the means of each group, all divided by the standard deviation of the data. The standard deviation used could be calculated from the differences between observations, or, for observations across two times, the observations in the “before” group.

It ranges from 0 to infinity, with 0 indicating no effect where the means are equal. In some versions, Cohen’s $d$ can be positive or negative depending on which mean is greater.

A Cohen’s $d$ of 0.5 suggests that the means differ by one-half the standard deviation of the data. A Cohen’s $d$ of 1.0 suggests that the means differ by one standard deviation of the data.

**Interpretation of Cohen’s $d$**

Interpretation of effect sizes necessarily varies by discipline and the expectations of the experiment, but for behavioral studies, the guidelines proposed by Cohen (1988) are sometimes followed. They should not be considered universal.

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th></th>
<th>Small</th>
<th>Medium</th>
<th>Large</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td><strong>Cohen’s $d$</strong></td>
<td>0.2 – &lt; 0.5</td>
<td>0.5 – &lt; 0.8</td>
<td>&gt; 0.8</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>


**Cohen’s $d$ for paired $t$-test**

Standard deviation calculated from differences in observations

Note that for this code to make sense, the first observation for Before is student $a$ and the first observation for After is student $a$, and so on.

```r
library(lsr)
cohensD(Score ~ Time,
data = Data,
method = "paired")
```

[1] 1.204314

Or we can calculate the value manually.
Before = Data$Score[Data$Time=="Before"]
After  = Data$Score[Data$Time=="After"]
Difference = After - Before

mean(Before)
[1] 72.5

mean(After)
[1] 82.7

mean(Before) - mean(After)
[1] -10.2

( mean(Before) - mean(After) ) / sd(Difference)
[1] -1.204314

Standard deviation calculated from the “before” observations
Note that for this code to make sense, the “before” observations must correspond to the second level of the Time variable, corresponding to y.sd in the function.

library(lsr)

cohensD(Score ~ Time,
       data = Data,
       method = "y.sd")

[1] 0.9174268

( mean(Before) - mean(After) ) / sd(Before)
[1] -0.9174268

Optional readings


References

Exercises Q

1. Consider the Dumbland Extension data. Report for each answer *How you know*, when appropriate, by reporting the values of the statistic you are using or other information you used.

   a. What was the mean of the differences in score before and after the training?

   b. Was this an increase or a decrease?

   c. Is the data distribution for the paired differences reasonably normal?

   d. Was the mean score significantly different before and after the training?

   e. What do you conclude practically? As appropriate, report the means before and after, the mean difference, the effect size and interpretation, whether the difference is large relative to the scoring system, anything notable on plots, and your practical conclusions.

2. Residential properties in Dougal County rarely need phosphorus for good turfgrass growth. As part of an extension education program, Early and Rusty Cuyler asked homeowners to report their phosphorus fertilizer use, in pounds of P₂O₅ per acre, before the program and then one year later.

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Date</th>
<th>Homeowner</th>
<th>P2O5</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>'2014-01-01'</td>
<td>a</td>
<td>0.81</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>'2014-01-01'</td>
<td>b</td>
<td>0.86</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>'2014-01-01'</td>
<td>c</td>
<td>0.79</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>'2014-01-01'</td>
<td>d</td>
<td>0.59</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>'2014-01-01'</td>
<td>e</td>
<td>0.71</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>'2014-01-01'</td>
<td>f</td>
<td>0.88</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>'2014-01-01'</td>
<td>g</td>
<td>0.63</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>'2014-01-01'</td>
<td>h</td>
<td>0.72</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>'2014-01-01'</td>
<td>i</td>
<td>0.76</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>'2014-01-01'</td>
<td>j</td>
<td>0.58</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>'2015-01-01'</td>
<td>a</td>
<td>0.67</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>'2015-01-01'</td>
<td>b</td>
<td>0.83</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>'2015-01-01'</td>
<td>c</td>
<td>0.81</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>'2015-01-01'</td>
<td>d</td>
<td>0.50</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>'2015-01-01'</td>
<td>e</td>
<td>0.71</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>'2015-01-01'</td>
<td>f</td>
<td>0.72</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>'2015-01-01'</td>
<td>g</td>
<td>0.67</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>'2015-01-01'</td>
<td>h</td>
<td>0.67</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>'2015-01-01'</td>
<td>i</td>
<td>0.48</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>'2015-01-01'</td>
<td>j</td>
<td>0.68</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

For each of the following, answer the question, and *show the output from the analyses you used to answer the question.*
a. What was mean of the differences in P₂O₅ before and after the training?

b. Is this an increase or a decrease?

c. Is the data distribution for the paired differences reasonably normal?

d. Was the mean P₂O₅ use significantly different before and after the training?

f. What do you conclude practically? As appropriate, report the means before and after, the mean difference, the effect size and interpretation, whether the difference is large relative to the values, anything notable on plots, and your practical conclusions.

---

**One-way ANOVA**

A one-way analysis of variance (ANOVA) is similar to an independent t-test, except that it is capable of comparing more than two groups.

We will conduct the ANOVA by constructing a general linear model with the `lm` function in the native `stats` package. The general linear model is the basis for more advanced parametric models that can include multiple independent variables that can be continuous or factor variables.

**Appropriate data**
- One-way data. That is, one measurement variable in two or more groups
- Dependent variable is interval/ratio, and is continuous
- Independent variable is a factor with two or more levels. That is, two or more groups
- In the general linear model approach, residuals are normally distributed
- In the general linear model approach, groups have the same variance. That is, homoscedasticity
- Observations among groups are independent. That is, not paired or repeated measures data
- Moderate deviation from normally-distributed residuals is permissible

**Hypotheses**
- Null hypothesis: The means of the measurement variable for each group are equal.
- Alternative hypothesis (two-sided): The means of the measurement variable for among groups are not equal.

**Interpretation**
- Reporting significant results for the omnibus test as “Significant differences were found among means for groups.” is acceptable. Alternatively, “A significant effect for Independent Variable on Dependent Variable was found.”
- Reporting significant results for mean separation post-hoc tests as “Mean of variable Y for group A was different than that for group B.” is acceptable.
Other notes and alternative tests

- The nonparametric analogue for this test is the Kruskal–Wallis test. Another nonparametric approach is to use a permutation test. See Mangiafico (2015b) in the “References” section.
- Power analysis for one-way anova can be found at Mangiafico (2015a) in the “References” section.

Packages used in this chapter

The packages used in this chapter include:

- psych
- FSA
- Rmisc
- ggplot2
- car
- multcompView
- emmeans
- rcompanion

The following commands will install these packages if they are not already installed:

```r
if(!require(psych)){install.packages("psych")}
if(!require(FSA)){install.packages("FSA")}
if(!require(Rmisc)){install.packages("Rmisc")}
if(!require(ggplot2)){install.packages("ggplot2")}
if(!require(car)){install.packages("car")}
if(!require(multcompView)){install.packages("multcompView")}
if(!require(emmeans)){install.packages("emmeans")}
if(!require(rcompanion)){install.packages("rcompanion")}
```

One-way ANOVA example

In the following example, Brendon Small, Coach McGuirk, and Melissa Robbins have their SNAP-Ed students keep diaries of what they eat for a week, and then calculate the daily sodium intake in milligrams. Since the classes have received different nutrition education programs, they want to see if the mean sodium intake is the same among classes.

The analysis will be conducted by constructing a general linear model with the `lm` function in the native `stats` package, and conducting the analysis of variance with the `Anova` function in the `car` package.

Plots will be used to check model assumptions for normality of residuals and homoscedasticity.

Finally, if the effect of Instructor is significant, a mean comparison test will be conducted to determine which group means differ from which others.

```r
Input = c("Instructor" , "Student" , "Sodium")
'Brendon Small' a 1200
'Brendon Small' b 1400
'Brendon Small' c 1350
'Brendon Small' d 950
'Brendon Small' e 1400
'Brendon Small' f 1150
'Brendon Small' g 1300
'Brendon Small' h 1325
'Brendon Small' i 1425
'Brendon Small' j 1500
'Brendon Small' k 1250
'Brendon Small' l 1150
'Brendon Small' m 950
'Brendon Small' n 1150
'Brendon Small' o 1600
'Brendon Small' p 1300
'Brendon Small' q 1050
'Brendon Small' r 1300
'Brendon Small' s 1700
'Brendon Small' t 1300
'Coach McGuirk' u 1100
'Coach McGuirk' v 1200
'Coach McGuirk' w 1250
'Coach McGuirk' x 1050
'Coach McGuirk' y 1200
'Coach McGuirk' z 1250
'Coach McGuirk' aa 1350
'Coach McGuirk' ab 1350
'Coach McGuirk' ac 1325
'Coach McGuirk' ad 1525
'Coach McGuirk' ae 1225
'Coach McGuirk' af 1125
'Coach McGuirk' ag 1000
'Coach McGuirk' ah 1125
'Coach McGuirk' ai 1400
'Coach McGuirk' aj 1200
'Coach McGuirk' ak 1150
'Coach McGuirk' al 1400
'Coach McGuirk' am 1500
'Coach McGuirk' an 1200
'Melissa Robins' ao 900
'Melissa Robins' ap 1100
'Melissa Robins' aq 1150
'Melissa Robins' ar 950
'Melissa Robins' as 1100
'Melissa Robins' at 1150
'Melissa Robins' au 1250
'Melissa Robins' av 1250
'Melissa Robins' aw 1225
'Melissa Robins' ax 1325
'Melissa Robins' ay 1125
'Melissa Robins' az 1025
'Melissa Robins' ba 950
'Melissa Robins' bc 925
'Melissa Robins' bd 1200
'Melissa Robins' be 1100
'Melissa Robins'  bf  950
'Melissa Robins'  bg  1300
'Melissa Robins'  bh  1400
'Melissa Robins'  bi  1100

Data = read.table(textConnection(Input),header=TRUE)

### Order factors by the order in data frame
### Otherwise, R will alphabetize them
Data$Instructor = factor(Data$Instructor,
                        levels=unique(Data$Instructor))

### Check the data frame
library(psych)
headTail(Data)
str(Data)
summary(Data)

### Remove unnecessary objects
rm(Input)

Summarize data by group

library(FSA)
Summarize(Sodium ~ Instructor,
          data=Data,
          digits=3)

           Instructor n nvalid  mean     sd    min   Q1 median   Q3  max percZero
 1     Brendon Small 20     20 1287.50 193.734  950 1150   1300 1400 1700        0
 2    Coach McGuirk 20     20 1246.25 142.412 1000 1144   1212 1350 1525        0
 3 Melissa Robins 20     20 1123.75 143.149  900 1006   1112 1231 1400        0

Box plots for data by group

boxplot(Sodium ~ Instructor,
        data = Data)
Plot of means and confidence intervals
For this plot, a data frame called `Sum` will be created with the mean sodium intake and confidence interval for this mean for each instructor.

```r
library(rcompanion)
Sum = groupwiseMean(Sodium ~ Instructor,
data = Data,
conf = 0.95,
digits = 3,
traditional = FALSE,
percentile = TRUE)
```

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Instructor</th>
<th>n</th>
<th>Mean</th>
<th>Conf.level</th>
<th>Percentile.lower</th>
<th>Percentile.upper</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>Brendon Small</td>
<td>20</td>
<td>1290</td>
<td>0.95</td>
<td>1200</td>
<td>1370</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Coach McGuirk</td>
<td>20</td>
<td>1250</td>
<td>0.95</td>
<td>1190</td>
<td>1310</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Melissa Robins</td>
<td>20</td>
<td>1120</td>
<td>0.95</td>
<td>1060</td>
<td>1180</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

library(ggplot2)

```r
ggplot(Sum, 
### The data frame to use.
aes(x = Instructor,
y = Mean)) + 
geom_errorbar(aes(ymin = Percentile.lower,
ymax = Percentile.upper),
width = 0.05,
size = 0.5) +
geom_point(shape = 15,
size = 4) +
theme_bw() +
theme(axis.title = element_text(face = "bold")) +
ylab("Mean sodium, mg")
```
Define linear model
The model for the analysis of variance is specified with the `lm` function. Typical formula notation is used, in this case with `Sodium` as the dependent variable, `Instructor` as the independent variable, and `Data` as the data frame containing these variables.

The `summary` function will report the coefficients for the model, including the intercept and other terms. Factor variables are shown with their dummy coding. For each term, an estimate, standard error of the estimate, and t- and p-values for the estimates are given. These are helpful for other linear models, but are often ignored in the case of anova.

The `summary` function also reports the p-value and r-squared value for the model as a whole. These are occasionally used in reporting results of anova.

```r
model = lm(Sodium ~ Instructor,
           data = Data)

summary(model)  ### will show overall p-value and r-square

Multiple R-squared:  0.1632,  Adjusted R-squared:  0.1338

F-statistic: 5.558 on 2 and 57 DF,  p-value: 0.006235
```
Conduct analysis of variance
An analysis of variance table is reported as the result of the Anova function in the car package. By default the Anova function uses type-II sum of squares, which are appropriate in common anova analyses.

This table contains the p-value for each effect tested in the model.

```r
library(car)

Anova(model, type = "II")  ### Type II sum of squares

Anova Table (Type II tests)
Response: Sodium

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th></th>
<th>Sum Sq</th>
<th>Df</th>
<th>F value</th>
<th>Pr(&gt;F)</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>Instructor</td>
<td>290146</td>
<td>2</td>
<td>5.5579</td>
<td>0.006235 **</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Residuals</td>
<td>1487812</td>
<td>57</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>
```

Histogram of residuals

```r
x = residuals(model)

library(rcompanion)

plotNormalHistogram(x)
```

```
plot(fitted(model), residuals(model))
```
### Additional model checking plots

#### Post-hoc analysis: mean separation tests

For an explanation of using estimated marginal means for multiple comparisons, review the following chapters:

- What are Estimated Marginal Means?
- Estimated Marginal Means for Multiple Comparisons

The code defines an object `marginal` which holds the output of the `emmeans` function. The `emmeans` function here calls for comparisons for the independent variable `Instructor` in the previously defined `model` object.

Using the `cld` function produces a compact letter display. EM means sharing a letter are not significantly different from one another at the alpha level indicated. A Tukey adjustment is made for multiple comparisons with the `adjust="tukey"` option. And `Letters` indicates the symbols to use for groups.

To adjust the confidence intervals for the EM means, use e.g. `summary(marginal, level=0.99)` or e.g. `cld(marginal, level=0.99)`.

Note that because `Instructor` is the only independent variable in the model, the EM means are equal to the arithmetic means produced by the `Summarize` function in this case.
One-way ANOVA

Summary and Analysis of Extension Education Program Evaluation in R

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Instructor</th>
<th>emmean</th>
<th>SE</th>
<th>df</th>
<th>lower.CL</th>
<th>upper.CL</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>Brendon Small</td>
<td>1287.50</td>
<td>36.12615</td>
<td>57</td>
<td>1215.159</td>
<td>1359.841</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Coach McGuirk</td>
<td>1246.25</td>
<td>36.12615</td>
<td>57</td>
<td>1173.909</td>
<td>1318.591</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Melissa Robins</td>
<td>1123.75</td>
<td>36.12615</td>
<td>57</td>
<td>1051.409</td>
<td>1196.091</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

Confidence level used: 0.95

pairs(marginal, adjust="tukey")

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>contrast</th>
<th>estimate</th>
<th>SE</th>
<th>df</th>
<th>t.ratio</th>
<th>p.value</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>Brendon Small - Coach McGuirk</td>
<td>41.25</td>
<td>51.09009</td>
<td>57</td>
<td>0.807</td>
<td>0.7000</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Brendon Small - Melissa Robins</td>
<td>163.75</td>
<td>51.09009</td>
<td>57</td>
<td>3.205</td>
<td>0.0062</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Coach McGuirk - Melissa Robins</td>
<td>122.50</td>
<td>51.09009</td>
<td>57</td>
<td>2.398</td>
<td>0.0510</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

P value adjustment: tukey method for comparing a family of 3 estimates

CLD = cld(marginal, alpha = 0.05, Letters = letters, adjust = "tukey")

CLD

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Instructor</th>
<th>emmean</th>
<th>SE</th>
<th>df</th>
<th>lower.CL</th>
<th>upper.CL .group</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>Melissa Robins</td>
<td>1123.75</td>
<td>36.12615</td>
<td>57</td>
<td>1034.882</td>
<td>1212.618 a</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Coach McGuirk</td>
<td>1246.25</td>
<td>36.12615</td>
<td>57</td>
<td>1157.382</td>
<td>1335.118 ab</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Brendon Small</td>
<td>1287.50</td>
<td>36.12615</td>
<td>57</td>
<td>1198.632</td>
<td>1376.368 b</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

Confidence level used: 0.95

P value adjustment: tukey method for comparing a family of 3 estimates

significance level used: alpha = 0.05

Plot of means, confidence intervals, and mean-separation letters

This plot uses the estimated marginal means, confidence intervals, and mean-separation letters from the compact letter display above.

For different data, the nudge_y parameter will need to be adjusted manually.

### Order the levels for printing

CLD$Instructor = factor(CLD$Instructor, levels=c("Brendon Small", "Coach McGuirk", "Melissa Robins"))

### Remove spaces in .group

CLD$.group=gsub(" ", ",", CLD$.group)
Daily intake of sodium from diaries for students in Supplemental Nutrition Assistance Program Education (SNAP-ed) workshops. Boxes represent estimated marginal mean values for each of three classes, following one-way analysis of variance (ANOVA). Error bars indicate 95% confidence intervals of the EM means. Means sharing a letter are not significantly different (alpha = 0.05, Tukey-adjusted).
References


Exercises R

1. Considering Brendon, Melissa, and McGuirk's data,
   
a. What was the mean sodium intake for each instructor?

b. Does Instructor have a significant effect on sodium intake?

c. Are the residuals reasonably normal and homoscedastic?

d. Which instructors had classes with significantly different mean sodium intake from which others?

e. Does this result correspond to what you would have thought from looking at the plot of the means and standard errors or the box plots?

f. Practically speaking, what do you conclude?

2. As part of a professional skills program, a 4-H club tests its members for typing proficiency. Dr. Katz, Laura, and Ben want to compare their students’ mean typing speed between their classes.

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Instructor</th>
<th>Student</th>
<th>Words.per.minute</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>'Dr. Katz Professional Therapist'</td>
<td>a</td>
<td>35</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>'Dr. Katz Professional Therapist'</td>
<td>b</td>
<td>50</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>'Dr. Katz Professional Therapist'</td>
<td>c</td>
<td>55</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>'Dr. Katz Professional Therapist'</td>
<td>d</td>
<td>60</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>'Dr. Katz Professional Therapist'</td>
<td>e</td>
<td>65</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>'Dr. Katz Professional Therapist'</td>
<td>f</td>
<td>60</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>'Dr. Katz Professional Therapist'</td>
<td>g</td>
<td>70</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>'Dr. Katz Professional Therapist'</td>
<td>h</td>
<td>55</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>'Dr. Katz Professional Therapist'</td>
<td>i</td>
<td>45</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>'Dr. Katz Professional Therapist'</td>
<td>j</td>
<td>55</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>'Dr. Katz Professional Therapist'</td>
<td>k</td>
<td>60</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>'Dr. Katz Professional Therapist'</td>
<td>l</td>
<td>45</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>'Dr. Katz Professional Therapist'</td>
<td>m</td>
<td>65</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>'Dr. Katz Professional Therapist'</td>
<td>n</td>
<td>55</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>'Dr. Katz Professional Therapist'</td>
<td>o</td>
<td>50</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>'Dr. Katz Professional Therapist'</td>
<td>p</td>
<td>60</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>'Laura the Receptionist'</td>
<td>q</td>
<td>55</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>
For each of the following, answer the question, and *show the output from the analyses you used to answer the question*.  

a. What was the mean typing speed for each instructor?  
b. Does *Instructor* have a significant effect on typing speed?  
c. Are the residuals reasonably normal and homoscedastic?  
d. Which instructors had classes with significantly different mean typing speed from which others?  
e. Produce and submit a plot of means with error bars or a box plot. Include a caption.  
f. Does this result correspond to what you would have thought from looking at the plot of the means and standard errors or box plots?  
g. Practically speaking, what do you conclude?
One-way ANOVA with Blocks

Blocks are used in an analysis of variance or similar models in order to account for suspected variation from factors other than the treatments or main independent variables being investigated.

Traditionally, in agricultural experiments, plots would be arranged into blocks according to factors in the field that could not be controlled. For example, if one side of the field were close to the tree line, those plots might get less sun, or be more protected from wind. So the experimenter would consider those plots near the tree line as one block, and another set in a more open spot another block. In this way, all kinds of variation in the soils and locations could be accounted for somewhat. The experiment might be designed in a randomized complete block design in which each block had a plot with each treatment.

When using blocks, the experimenter isn’t concerned necessarily with the effect of the blocks or even the factors behind assigning those blocks. That is, the east end of the field might be by the tree line and may have soils with slightly poorer drainage. If the experimenter were testing the effects of different fertilizers, she isn’t going to try to report the effect of “next to the tree line” or “in poorly drained soil,” but she does want to account for these effects statistically.

Blocks in extension education for measurements on students might include school or class or grade. There might be differences according to these factors, but we might not care to investigate if one particular school has a different result than another particular one. Still, we want to take to these differences into account statistically.

**Appropriate data**

- One-way data, with blocks. That is, one measurement variable in two or more groups, where each group is also distributed among at least two blocks
- Dependent variable is interval/ratio, and is continuous
- Independent variable is a factor with two or more levels. That is, two or more groups
- A second independent variable is a blocking factor variable with two or more levels
- In the general linear model approach, residuals are normally distributed
- In the general linear model approach, groups have the same variance. That is, homoscedasticity
- Observations among groups are independent. That is, not paired or repeated measures data, except that observations are within blocks
- Moderate deviation from normally-distributed residuals is permissible

**Hypotheses**

- Null hypothesis: The means of the measurement variable for each group are equal
- Alternative hypothesis (two-sided): The means of the measurement variable for among groups are not equal
• An additional null hypothesis is tested for the effect of blocks: The means of the measurement variable for each block are equal

**Interpretation**

• Reporting significant results for the omnibus test as “Significant differences were found among means for groups.” is acceptable. Alternatively, “A significant effect for independent variable on dependent variable was found.”

• Reporting significant results for mean separation post-hoc tests as “Mean of variable Y for group A was different than that for group B.” is acceptable.

**Other notes and alternative tests**

• A permutation test is a nonparametric alternative. Only for unreplicated complete block designs, the traditional nonparametric analogues for this test are the Friedman and Quade tests.

**Packages used in this chapter**

The packages used in this chapter include:

- psych
- FSA
- ggplot2
- car
- multcompView
- emmeans
- rcompanion

The following commands will install these packages if they are not already installed:

```r
if(!require(psych)){install.packages("psych")}
if(!require(FSA)){install.packages("FSA")}
if(!require(ggplot2)){install.packages("ggplot2")}
if(!require(car)){install.packages("car")}
if(!require(multcompView)){install.packages("multcompView")}
if(!require(emmeans)){install.packages("emmeans")}
if(!require(rcompanion)){install.packages("rcompanion")}
```

**One-way ANOVA with blocks example**

This example will revisit the sodium intake data set with Brendon Small and the other instructors. This time, though, they have recorded the town each student is from, and they would like to use this as a blocking variable. They suspect that the town of residence may have some effect on sodium intake since each town has varying income, ethnic makeup, and other demographic factors.

The instructors are focused on the effect of their different nutrition education programs. They are not concerned about sodium intake in one specific town or another *per se*, but they want to take account this effect into account statistically.
Note that when the blocking variable is added to the model, the calculated $p$-value for the effect of *Instructor* is different than it was for the case of the one-way ANOVA without the blocking variable.

```
Input = ("Instructor";
  Town; Sodium
'Brendon Small' Squiggleville  1200
'Brendon Small' Squiggleville  1400
'Brendon Small' Squiggleville  1350
'Brendon Small' Metalocalypse   950
'Brendon Small' Squiggleville  1400
'Brendon Small' Squiggleville  1150
'Brendon Small' Squiggleville  1300
'Brendon Small' Metalocalypse   1325
'Brendon Small' Metalocalypse   1425
'Brendon Small' Squiggleville  1500
'Brendon Small' Squiggleville  1250
'Brendon Small' Metalocalypse   1150
'Brendon Small' Metalocalypse   1300
'Brendon Small' Squiggleville  1600
'Brendon Small' Metalocalypse   1300
'Brendon Small' Metalocalypse   1050
'Brendon Small' Metalocalypse   1700
'Brendon Small' Squiggleville  1300
'Coach McGuirk' Squiggleville  1100
'Coach McGuirk' Squiggleville  1200
'Coach McGuirk' Squiggleville  1250
'Coach McGuirk' Metalocalypse  1050
'Coach McGuirk' Metalocalypse  1200
'Coach McGuirk' Metalocalypse  1250
'Coach McGuirk' Squiggleville  1350
'Coach McGuirk' Squiggleville  1350
'Coach McGuirk' Squiggleville  1325
'Coach McGuirk' Squiggleville  1525
'Coach McGuirk' Squiggleville  1225
'Coach McGuirk' Squiggleville  1125
'Coach McGuirk' Metalocalypse  1000
'Coach McGuirk' Metalocalypse  1125
'Coach McGuirk' Squiggleville  1400
'Coach McGuirk' Metalocalypse  1200
'Coach McGuirk' Squiggleville  1150
'Coach McGuirk' Squiggleville  1400
'Coach McGuirk' Squiggleville  1500
'Coach McGuirk' Squiggleville  1200
'Melissa Robins' Metalocalypse  900
'Melissa Robins' Metalocalypse  1100
'Melissa Robins' Metalocalypse  1150
'Melissa Robins' Metalocalypse  950
'Melissa Robins' Metalocalypse  1100
'Melissa Robins' Metalocalypse  1150
'Melissa Robins' Squiggleville  1250
'Melissa Robins' Squiggleville  1250
'Melissa Robins' Squiggleville  1225
```

606
Data = read.table(textConnection(Input),header=TRUE)

### Order factors by the order in data frame
### Otherwise, R will alphabetize them

Data$Instructor = factor(Data$Instructor,
levels=unique(Data$Instructor))
Data$Town = factor(Data$Town,
levels=unique(Data$Town))

### Check the data frame
library(psych)
headTail(Data)
str(Data)
summary(Data)

### Remove unnecessary objects
rm(Input)

Use Summarize to check if cell sizes are balanced
We can use the n or nvalid columns in the Summarize output to check if cell sizes are balanced. That is, if each treatment and block combination have the same number of observations.

library(FSA)
Summarize(Sodium ~ Instructor + Town, 
data=Data, 
digits=3)
Define linear model

```
model = lm(Sodium ~ Instructor + Town, data = Data)
```

```
summary(model)  ### will show overall p-value and r-squared

  Multiple R-squared:  0.3485,  Adjusted R-squared:  0.3136
  F-statistic: 9.987 on 3 and 56 DF,  p-value: 2.265e-05
```

Conduct analysis of variance

```
library(car)

Anova(model, type = "II")  ### Type II sum of squares

  Anova Table (Type II tests)

  Response: Sodium

     Sum Sq Df F value    Pr(>F)
  Instructor  148944  2  3.6006 0.0338033 *
  Town        329551  1 15.9332 0.0001928 ***
  Residuals  1158261 56
```

Histogram and plot of residuals

```
x = residuals(model)

library(rcompanion)

plotNormalHistogram(x)
```
Post-hoc analysis: mean separation tests
For an explanation of using estimated marginal means for multiple comparisons, see the section “Post-hoc analysis: mean separation tests” in the One-way ANOVA chapter.

In this example, you’ll note that the EM means are different from the arithmetic means calculated for Instructor in the last chapter. This is a result of the fact that instructors have different numbers of students from each town. That is, the design is unbalanced.

```r
library(multcompView)
library(emmeans)
marginal = emmeans(model, ~ Instructor)
```
pairs(marginal, adjust="tukey")

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>contrast</th>
<th>estimate</th>
<th>SE</th>
<th>df</th>
<th>t.ratio</th>
<th>p.value</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>Brendon Small - Coach McGuirk</td>
<td>64.81742</td>
<td>45.86048</td>
<td>56</td>
<td>1.413</td>
<td>0.3410</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Brendon Small - Melissa Robins</td>
<td>124.47097</td>
<td>46.53123</td>
<td>56</td>
<td>2.675</td>
<td>0.0261</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Coach McGuirk - Melissa Robins</td>
<td>59.65356</td>
<td>48.12705</td>
<td>56</td>
<td>1.240</td>
<td>0.4352</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

Results are averaged over the levels of: Town
P value adjustment: tukey method for comparing a family of 3 estimates

CLD = cld(marginal, alpha = 0.05, Letters = letters, ### Use lower-case letters for .group adjust = "tukey") ### Tukey-adjusted p-values

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Instructor</th>
<th>emmean</th>
<th>SE</th>
<th>df</th>
<th>lower.CL</th>
<th>upper.CL</th>
<th>.group</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>Melissa Robins</td>
<td>1155.173</td>
<td>33.10792</td>
<td>56</td>
<td>1088.850</td>
<td>1221.496</td>
<td>a</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Coach McGuirk</td>
<td>1214.827</td>
<td>33.10792</td>
<td>56</td>
<td>1148.504</td>
<td>1281.150</td>
<td>ab</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Brendon Small</td>
<td>1279.644</td>
<td>32.21856</td>
<td>56</td>
<td>1215.103</td>
<td>1344.186</td>
<td>b</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

Results are averaged over the levels of: Town
Confidence level used: 0.95
P value adjustment: tukey method for comparing a family of 3 estimates
significance level used: alpha = 0.05

Plot of means, confidence intervals, and mean-separation letters
This plot uses the estimated marginal means, confidence intervals, and mean-separation letters from the compact letter display above.

For different data, the nudge_y parameter will need to be adjusted manually.

### Order the levels for printing

```r
CLD$Instructor = factor(CLD$Instructor, levels=c("Brendon Small", "Coach McGuirk", "Melissa Robins"))
```

### Remove spaces in .group

```r
CLD$.group=gsub(" ", ",", CLD$.group)
```

### Plot

```r
library(ggplot2)

ggplot(CLD, aes(x = Instructor, ...

\[ \text{...} \]
Daily intake of sodium from diaries for students in Supplemental Nutrition Assistance Program Education (SNAP-ed) workshops. Boxes represent estimated marginal mean values for each of three classes, following one-way analysis of variance (ANOVA). Error bars indicate 95% confidence intervals of the EM means. Means sharing a letter are not significantly different (alpha = 0.05, Tukey-adjusted).

Exercises S

1. Considering Brendon, Melissa, and McGuirk's data with means adjusted for students' towns,
What was the EM mean sodium intake for students for each instructor?

Does Instructor have a significant effect on sodium intake?

Does Town have a significant effect on sodium intake?

Are the residuals reasonably normal and homoscedastic?

Which instructors had classes with significantly different mean sodium intake from which others?

Does this result correspond to what you would have thought from looking at the plot of the EM means and confidence intervals?

Is this design balanced or unbalanced?

2. As part of a professional skills program, a 4-H club tests its members for typing proficiency. Dr. Katz, and Laura, and Ben want to compare their students’ mean typing speed between their classes. They have also recorded the year or grade of each student. They are not interested in the effect of Year per se, but they want to account for the effect statistically.

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Instructor</th>
<th>Year</th>
<th>Words per minute</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>'Dr. Katz Professional Therapist'</td>
<td>7</td>
<td>35</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>'Dr. Katz Professional Therapist'</td>
<td>7</td>
<td>50</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>'Dr. Katz Professional Therapist'</td>
<td>7</td>
<td>55</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>'Dr. Katz Professional Therapist'</td>
<td>7</td>
<td>60</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>'Dr. Katz Professional Therapist'</td>
<td>8</td>
<td>65</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>'Dr. Katz Professional Therapist'</td>
<td>8</td>
<td>60</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>'Dr. Katz Professional Therapist'</td>
<td>8</td>
<td>70</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>'Dr. Katz Professional Therapist'</td>
<td>8</td>
<td>55</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>'Dr. Katz Professional Therapist'</td>
<td>9</td>
<td>45</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>'Dr. Katz Professional Therapist'</td>
<td>9</td>
<td>55</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>'Dr. Katz Professional Therapist'</td>
<td>9</td>
<td>60</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>'Dr. Katz Professional Therapist'</td>
<td>9</td>
<td>45</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>'Dr. Katz Professional Therapist'</td>
<td>10</td>
<td>65</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>'Dr. Katz Professional Therapist'</td>
<td>10</td>
<td>55</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>'Dr. Katz Professional Therapist'</td>
<td>11</td>
<td>50</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>'Dr. Katz Professional Therapist'</td>
<td>12</td>
<td>60</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>'Laura the Receptionist'</td>
<td>7</td>
<td>55</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>'Laura the Receptionist'</td>
<td>7</td>
<td>60</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>'Laura the Receptionist'</td>
<td>7</td>
<td>75</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>'Laura the Receptionist'</td>
<td>7</td>
<td>65</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>'Laura the Receptionist'</td>
<td>8</td>
<td>60</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>'Laura the Receptionist'</td>
<td>8</td>
<td>70</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>'Laura the Receptionist'</td>
<td>8</td>
<td>75</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>'Laura the Receptionist'</td>
<td>8</td>
<td>70</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>'Laura the Receptionist'</td>
<td>9</td>
<td>65</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>'Laura the Receptionist'</td>
<td>9</td>
<td>72</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>'Laura the Receptionist'</td>
<td>9</td>
<td>73</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>'Laura the Receptionist'</td>
<td>9</td>
<td>65</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>'Laura the Receptionist'</td>
<td>10</td>
<td>80</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>
Note that the following code is necessary for R to recognize Year as a factor variable.

```r
### Convert Year from an integer variable to a factor variable
Data$Year = factor(Data$Year, levels=c("7", "8", "9", "10"))
```

For each of the following, answer the question, and show the output from the analyses you used to answer the question.

What was the EM mean typing speed for each instructor’s class?

Does Instructor have a significant effect on typing speed?

Does Year have a significant effect on typing speed?

Are the residuals reasonably normal and homoscedastic?

Which instructors had classes with significantly different mean typing speed from which others?

Does this result correspond to what you would have thought from looking at the plot of the EM means and standard errors?

Is this design balanced or unbalanced?
One-way ANOVA with Random Blocks

This chapter reproduces the example from the previous chapter. The reader should consult that chapter for an explanation of one-way analysis of variance with blocks. Here, the analysis is done with a mixed effects model, with the treatments treated as a fixed effect and the blocks treated as a random effect.

In analysis of variance, blocking variables are often treated as random variables. This is because the blocking variable represents a random selection of levels of that variable. The analyst wants to take the effects of the blocking variable into account, but the identity of the specific levels of the blocks are not of interest.

In the example in this chapter, the instructors are focused on the effect of their different nutrition education programs, which are the treatments; they are not concerned about the effect of one specific town or another per se, but do want to want to take into account any differences due to the different towns.

For a more complete discussion of random effects, see the Using Random Effects in Models chapter.

Packages used in this chapter

The packages used in this chapter include:

- psych
- lme4
- lmerTest
- multcompView
- emmeans
- nlme
- car
- rcompanion

The following commands will install these packages if they are not already installed:

```r
if(!require(psych)){install.packages("psych")}
if(!require(lme4)){install.packages("lme4")}
if(!require(lmerTest)){install.packages("lmerTest")}
if(!require(multcompView)){install.packages("multcompView")}
if(!require(emmeans)){install.packages("emmeans")}
if(!require(nlme)){install.packages("nlme")}
if(!require(car)){install.packages("car")}
if(!require(rcompanion)){install.packages("rcompanion")}
```

One-way ANOVA with random blocks example

```
Input = ("Instructor Town Sodium
1 C Town1 Sodium1
2 A Town2 Sodium2
3 B Town3 Sodium3
4 D Town4 Sodium4
5 E Town5 Sodium5
"刑法
1.0000
1.0000
1.0000
1.0000
1.0000
```

614
One-way ANOVA with Random Blocks

Summary and Analysis of Extension Education Program Evaluation in R

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Name</th>
<th>Location</th>
<th>Score</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>'Brendon Small'</td>
<td>Squiggleville</td>
<td>1200</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>'Brendon Small'</td>
<td>Squiggleville</td>
<td>1400</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>'Brendon Small'</td>
<td>Squiggleville</td>
<td>1350</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>'Brendon Small'</td>
<td>Metalocalypse</td>
<td>950</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>'Brendon Small'</td>
<td>Squiggleville</td>
<td>1400</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>'Brendon Small'</td>
<td>Squiggleville</td>
<td>1150</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>'Brendon Small'</td>
<td>Squiggleville</td>
<td>1300</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>'Brendon Small'</td>
<td>Metalocalypse</td>
<td>1325</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>'Brendon Small'</td>
<td>Metalocalypse</td>
<td>1425</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>'Brendon Small'</td>
<td>Squiggleville</td>
<td>1500</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>'Brendon Small'</td>
<td>Squiggleville</td>
<td>1250</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>'Brendon Small'</td>
<td>Metalocalypse</td>
<td>1150</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>'Brendon Small'</td>
<td>Metalocalypse</td>
<td>950</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>'Brendon Small'</td>
<td>Squiggleville</td>
<td>1150</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>'Brendon Small'</td>
<td>Metalocalypse</td>
<td>1600</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>'Brendon Small'</td>
<td>Metalocalypse</td>
<td>1300</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>'Brendon Small'</td>
<td>Metalocalypse</td>
<td>1050</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>'Brendon Small'</td>
<td>Metalocalypse</td>
<td>1300</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>'Brendon Small'</td>
<td>Squiggleville</td>
<td>1700</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>'Brendon Small'</td>
<td>Squiggleville</td>
<td>1300</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>'Coach McGuirk'</td>
<td>Squiggleville</td>
<td>1100</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>'Coach McGuirk'</td>
<td>Squiggleville</td>
<td>1200</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>'Coach McGuirk'</td>
<td>Squiggleville</td>
<td>1250</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>'Coach McGuirk'</td>
<td>Metalocalypse</td>
<td>1050</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>'Coach McGuirk'</td>
<td>Metalocalypse</td>
<td>1200</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>'Coach McGuirk'</td>
<td>Metalocalypse</td>
<td>1250</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>'Coach McGuirk'</td>
<td>Squiggleville</td>
<td>1350</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>'Coach McGuirk'</td>
<td>Squiggleville</td>
<td>1350</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>'Coach McGuirk'</td>
<td>Squiggleville</td>
<td>1325</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>'Coach McGuirk'</td>
<td>Squiggleville</td>
<td>1525</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>'Coach McGuirk'</td>
<td>Squiggleville</td>
<td>1225</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>'Coach McGuirk'</td>
<td>Squiggleville</td>
<td>1125</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>'Coach McGuirk'</td>
<td>Metalocalypse</td>
<td>1000</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>'Coach McGuirk'</td>
<td>Metalocalypse</td>
<td>1125</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>'Coach McGuirk'</td>
<td>Squiggleville</td>
<td>1400</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>'Coach McGuirk'</td>
<td>Metalocalypse</td>
<td>1200</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>'Coach McGuirk'</td>
<td>Squiggleville</td>
<td>1150</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>'Coach McGuirk'</td>
<td>Squiggleville</td>
<td>1400</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>'Coach McGuirk'</td>
<td>Squiggleville</td>
<td>1500</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>'Coach McGuirk'</td>
<td>Squiggleville</td>
<td>1200</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>'Melissa Robins'</td>
<td>Metalocalypse</td>
<td>900</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>'Melissa Robins'</td>
<td>Metalocalypse</td>
<td>1100</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>'Melissa Robins'</td>
<td>Metalocalypse</td>
<td>1150</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>'Melissa Robins'</td>
<td>Metalocalypse</td>
<td>950</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>'Melissa Robins'</td>
<td>Metalocalypse</td>
<td>1100</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>'Melissa Robins'</td>
<td>Metalocalypse</td>
<td>1150</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>'Melissa Robins'</td>
<td>Squiggleville</td>
<td>1250</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>'Melissa Robins'</td>
<td>Squiggleville</td>
<td>1250</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>'Melissa Robins'</td>
<td>Squiggleville</td>
<td>1225</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>'Melissa Robins'</td>
<td>Squiggleville</td>
<td>1325</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>'Melissa Robins'</td>
<td>Metalocalypse</td>
<td>1125</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>'Melissa Robins'</td>
<td>Metalocalypse</td>
<td>1025</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>'Melissa Robins'</td>
<td>Metalocalypse</td>
<td>925</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>'Melissa Robins'</td>
<td>Squiggleville</td>
<td>1200</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>
'Melissa Robins'  Metalocalypse    1100
'Melissa Robins'  Metalocalypse    950
'Melissa Robins'  Metalocalypse    1300
'Melissa Robins'  Squiggleville    1400
'Melissa Robins'  Metalocalypse    1100
"

Data = read.table(textConnection(Input), header=TRUE)

### Order factors by the order in data frame
### Otherwise, R will alphabetize them
Data$Instructor = factor(Data$Instructor,
                          levels=unique(Data$Instructor))
Data$Town = factor(Data$Town,
                    levels=unique(Data$Town))

### Check the data frame
library(psych)
headTail(Data)
str(Data)
summary(Data)

### Remove unnecessary objects
rm(Input)

Mixed-effects model with lmer
In this first example, the model will be specified with the lmer function in the package lme4. The term (1|Town) in the model formula indicates that Town should be treated as a random variable, with each level having its own intercept in the model. The anova function in the package lmerTest is used to produce p-values for the fixed effects. The rand function in the package lmerTest produces p-values for the random effects.

Technical note
lmerTest::anova by default returns p-values for Type III sum of squares with a Satterthwaite approximation for the degrees of freedom.

library(lme4)
library(lmerTest)

model = lmer(Sodium ~ Instructor + (1|Town),
             data=Data,
REML=TRUE)

anova(model)

Analysis of Variance Table of type III with Satterthwaite approximation for degrees of freedom

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Sum Sq</th>
<th>Mean Sq</th>
<th>Num DF</th>
<th>Den DF</th>
<th>F.value</th>
<th>Pr(&gt;F)</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>Instructor</td>
<td>154766</td>
<td>77383</td>
<td>2</td>
<td>56.29</td>
<td>0.02982 *</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

rand(model)

Analysis of Random effects Table:

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Chi.sq</th>
<th>Chi.DF</th>
<th>p.value</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>Town</td>
<td>10.5</td>
<td>0.001 **</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

p-value and pseudo R-squared for model

To use the `nagelkerke` function with an `lmer` object, the null model with which to compare the `lmer` model has to be specified explicitly.

One approach is to define the null model as one with no fixed effects except for an intercept, indicated with a 1 on the right side of the ~. And to also include the random effects, in this case (1|Town).

```r
model.null = lmer(Sodium ~ 1 + (1|Town),
                  data = Data,
                  REML = TRUE)
```

anova(model, model.null)

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>DF</th>
<th>AIC</th>
<th>BIC</th>
<th>logLik</th>
<th>deviance</th>
<th>Chisq</th>
<th>Chi Df</th>
<th>Pr(&gt;Chisq)</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>..1</td>
<td>3</td>
<td>782.34</td>
<td>788.63</td>
<td>-388.17</td>
<td>776.34</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>object</td>
<td>5</td>
<td>778.82</td>
<td>789.29</td>
<td>-384.41</td>
<td>768.82</td>
<td>7.5255</td>
<td>2 0.02322 *</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

library(rcompanion)

nagelkerke(fit = model, null = model.null)

$Pseudo.R.squared.for.model.vs.null

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Pseudo.R.squared</th>
<th></th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>McFadden</td>
<td>0.00971559</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Cox and Snell (ML)</td>
<td>0.11818400</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Nagelkerke (Cragg and Uhler)</td>
<td>0.11818400</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

Another approach to determining the p-value and pseudo R-squared for an `lmer` model is to compare the model to a null model with only an intercept and neither the fixed nor the random effects. To
accomplish this, the null model has to be specified with \texttt{lm} and not \texttt{lmer}. However, it may not be permissible to compare models specified with different functions in this way. The \texttt{anova} function in \texttt{lmerTest} does allow these comparisons. The \texttt{nagelkerke} function will also allow these comparisons, although I do not know if the results are valid.

```r
model.null.2 = lm(Sodium ~ 1, 
data = Data)

anova(model, 
      model.null.2)

Df    AIC    BIC  logLik deviance  Chisq Chi Df Pr(>Chisq)
..1     2 792.07 796.26 -394.04   788.07
object  5 778.82 789.29 -384.41   768.82 19.253      3  0.0002424 ***
```

```r
library(rcompanion)
nagelkerke(fit = model, 
null = model.null.2)

$Pseudo.R.squared.for.model.vs.null 
Pseudo.R.squared
McFadden 0.0239772
Cox and Snell (ML) 0.2701590
Nagelkerke (Cragg and Uhler) 0.2701600
```

**Post-hoc analysis**
The \texttt{emmeans} package is able to handle \texttt{lmer} objects. For further details, see \texttt{?emmeans::models}. For a review of mean separation tests and estimated marginal means, see the chapters *What are Estimated Marginal Means?*; the chapter *Estimated Marginal Means for Multiple Comparisons*; and the “Post-hoc analysis: mean separation tests” section in the *One-way ANOVA* chapter.

The \texttt{lmerTest} package has a function \texttt{Difflsmeans} which also compares marginal means for treatments, but doesn’t include output for a compact letter display or adjusted \textit{p}-values.

```r
library(multcompView)
library(emmeans)

marginal = emmeans(model, 
                  ~ Instructor)

CLD = cld(marginal, 
          alpha=0.05, 
          Letters=letters, 
          adjust="tukey")

CLD

Instructor  emmean       SE   df lower.CL upper.CL .group
Melissa Robins 1153.201 83.01880 1.24  476.7519 1829.650     a
```

618
Coach McGuirk  1216.799 83.01880 1.24 540.3498 1893.248 ab
Brendon Small  1280.137 82.60038 1.22 588.9293 1971.345 b

Confidence level used: 0.95
P value adjustment: tukey method for comparing a family of 3 estimates
significance level used: alpha = 0.05

pairs(marginal, adjust="tukey")

contrast  estimate       SE    df t.ratio p.value
Brendon Small - Coach McGuirk   63.33828 45.8366 56.1 1.38     0.1902
Brendon Small - Melissa Robins 126.93620 46.5630 56.3 2.73     0.0252
Coach McGuirk - Melissa Robins  63.59792 48.0097 56.6 1.33     0.1902

P value adjustment: tukey method for comparing a family of 3 estimates

A similar analysis can be conducted with the `difflsmeans` function in the `lmerTest` package.

library(lmerTest)

difflsmeans(model, test.effs="Instructor")

Differences of LSMEANS:

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Instructor</th>
<th>Estimate</th>
<th>Standard Error</th>
<th>DF</th>
<th>t-value</th>
<th>Lower CI</th>
<th>Upper CI</th>
<th>p-value</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>Brendon Small - Coach McGuirk</td>
<td>63.3</td>
<td>45.8</td>
<td>56.1</td>
<td>1.38</td>
<td>-28.4807</td>
<td>155.1573</td>
<td>0.1902</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Brendon Small - Melissa Robins</td>
<td>126.9</td>
<td>46.5</td>
<td>56.3</td>
<td>2.73</td>
<td>33.8631</td>
<td>220.0093</td>
<td>0.0252</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Coach McGuirk - Melissa Robins</td>
<td>63.6</td>
<td>48.0</td>
<td>56.6</td>
<td>1.33</td>
<td>-32.4661</td>
<td>159.6619</td>
<td>0.1902</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

The following code extracts a data frame from the `difflsmeans` output, and then adds a column of p-values adjusted by the fdr method. See ?p.adjust for other adjustment options.

```
comparison = difflsmeans(model, test.effs="Instructor")[[1]]
p.value = comparison$"p-value"
comparison$p.adj = p.adjust(p.value, method = "fdr")
```

Mixed-effects model with nlme

Mixed models can also be specified with the `nlme` package. The formula notation for this package is slightly different than the `lme4` package. The expression `random=~1|Town` indicates that `Town` should be treated as a random variable, with each level having its own intercept in the model.

The fixed effects in the model can be tested with the `Anova` function in the `car` package.
library(nlme)

model = lme(Sodium ~ Instructor, random=~1|Town,
data=Data,
method="REML")

library(car)

Anova(model)

Analysis of Deviance Table (Type II tests)

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Chisq</th>
<th>Df</th>
<th>Pr(&gt;Chisq)</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>7.4827</td>
<td>2</td>
<td>0.02372 *</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

The random effects in the model can be tested by specifying a null model with only fixed effects and comparing it to the full model with `anova`. The `nlme` package has a function `gls` that creates model objects without random effects in a manner analogous to those specified with `lme`.

model.null = gls(Sodium ~ Instructor,
data=Data,
method="REML")

anova(model,
model.null)

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Model df</th>
<th>AIC</th>
<th>BIC</th>
<th>logLik</th>
<th>Test</th>
<th>L.Ratio</th>
<th>p-value</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>model</td>
<td>1</td>
<td>5749.9281</td>
<td>760.1434</td>
<td>-369.9691</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>model.null</td>
<td>2</td>
<td>4758.4229</td>
<td>766.5951</td>
<td>-375.2114</td>
<td>1 vs 2</td>
<td>10.49476 0.0012</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

**p-value and pseudo R-squared for model**

By default, the `nagelkerke` function will compare an `lme` object to a null model with the fixed effects removed, but the random effects retained.

library(rcompanion)

nagelkerke(model)

$Models

Model: "lme.formula, Sodium ~ Instructor, Data, ~1 | Town, REML"
Null: "lme.formula, Sodium ~ 1, Data, ~1 | Town, REML"

$Pseudo.R.squared.for.model.vs.null

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Pseudo.R.squared</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>MCFadden</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Cox and Snell (ML)</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Nagelkerke (Cragg and Uhler)</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

$Likelihood.ratio.test

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Df.diff</th>
<th>LogLik.diff</th>
<th>Chisq</th>
<th>p.value</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>
Another approach to determining the \( p \)-value and pseudo \( R^2 \) for an \( lme \) model is to compare the model to a null model with only an intercept and neither the fixed nor the random effects. To accomplish this, the null model has to be specified with the \( gls \) function.

```r
model.null.2 = gls(Sodium ~ 1,
                   data=Data,
                   method="REML")

library(rcompanion)
nagelkerke(fit = model,
           null = model.null.2)
```

### Pseudo.\( R^2 \) for model vs. null

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Pseudo.( R^2 )</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>McFadden</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Cox and Snell (ML)</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Nagelkerke (Cragg and Uhler)</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Likelihood.ratio.test</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>Df.diff LogLik.diff Chisq p.value</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>-3  -9.4479  18.896  0.00028731</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

**Post-hoc analysis**

The \emph{emmeans} package is able to handle \( lme \) objects. For further details, see ?\emph{emmeans}:models. For a review of mean separation tests and estimated marginal means, see the chapters *What are Estimated Marginal Means?*; the chapter *Estimated Marginal Means for Multiple Comparisons*; and the “Post-hoc analysis: mean separation tests” section in the *One-way ANOVA* chapter.

```r
library(multcompView)
library(emmeans)
marginal = emmeans(model,
                   ~ Instructor)

CLD = cld(marginal,
          alpha = 0.05,
          Letters = letters,
          adjust = "tukey")

CLD
```

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Instructor</th>
<th>emmean</th>
<th>SE</th>
<th>df</th>
<th>lower.CL</th>
<th>upper.CL</th>
<th>.group</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>Melissa Robins</td>
<td>1153.201</td>
<td>82.92335</td>
<td>1</td>
<td>99.55992</td>
<td>2206.842</td>
<td>a</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>
Confidence level used: 0.95
P value adjustment: tukey method for comparing a family of 3 estimates
significance level used: alpha = 0.05

```
pairs(marginal, adjust="tukey")
```

### Comparison of results from one-way ANOVA with blocks

Just for interest, a comparison of results from this chapter and the previous chapter are presented here. There is some variation in the values obtained for these statistics.

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th></th>
<th>Fixed</th>
<th>lmer</th>
<th>lme</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>p-value for Instructor</td>
<td>0.034</td>
<td>0.030</td>
<td>0.024</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>p-value for Town</td>
<td>0.00019</td>
<td>0.001</td>
<td>0.0012</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Mean separation for Instructor</td>
<td>a</td>
<td>a</td>
<td>a</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>ab</td>
<td>ab</td>
<td>ab</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>b</td>
<td>b</td>
<td>b</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Overall p-value</td>
<td>&lt; 0.0001</td>
<td>0.00024</td>
<td>0.00029</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>R-square or</td>
<td>0.348</td>
<td>0.270</td>
<td>0.270</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Pseudo R-square</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>(Nagelkerke)</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

### Two-way ANOVA

A two-way anova can investigate the main effects of each of two independent factor variables, as well as the effect of the interaction of these variables.

For an overview of the concepts in multi-way analysis of variance, review the chapter *Factorial ANOVA: Main Effects, Interaction Effects, and Interaction Plots.*
For a review of mean separation tests and estimated marginal means, see the chapters *What are Estimated Marginal Means?*, the chapter *Estimated Marginal Means for Multiple Comparisons*, and the “Post-hoc analysis: mean separation tests” section in the *One-way ANOVA* chapter.

**Appropriate data**
- Two-way data. That is, one dependent variable measured across two independent factor variables
- Dependent variable is interval/ratio, and is continuous
- Independent variables are a factor with two or more levels. That is, two or more groups for each independent variable
- In the general linear model approach, residuals are normally distributed
- In the general linear model approach, groups have the same variance. That is, homoscedasticity
- Observations among groups are independent. That is, not paired or repeated measures data
- Moderate deviation from normally-distributed residuals is permissible

**Hypotheses**
- Null hypothesis 1: The means of the dependent variable for each group in the first independent variable are equal
- Alternative hypothesis 1 (two-sided): The means of the dependent variable for each group in the first independent variable are not equal
- Similar hypotheses are considered for the other independent variable
- Similar hypotheses are considered for the interaction effect

**Interpretation**
- Reporting significant results for the effect of one independent variable as “Significant differences were found among means for groups.” is acceptable. Alternatively, “A significant effect for independent variable on dependent variable was found.”
- Reporting significant results for the interaction effect as “A significant effect for the interaction of independent variable 1 and independent variable 2 on dependent variable was found.” is acceptable.
- Reporting significant results for mean separation post-hoc tests as “Mean of variable Y for group A was different than that for group B.” is acceptable.

**Packages used in this chapter**

The packages used in this chapter include:
- psych
- FSA
- car
- multcompView
- emmeans
- Rmisc
- ggplot2
- rcompanion
The following commands will install these packages if they are not already installed:

```r
if(!require(psych)){install.packages("psych")}
if(!require(FSA)){install.packages("FSA")}
if(!require(car)){install.packages("car")}
if(!require(multcompView)){install.packages("multcompView")}
if(!require(emmeans)){install.packages("emmeans")}
if(!require(Rmisc)){install.packages("Rmisc")}
if(!require(ggplot2)){install.packages("ggplot2")}
if(!require(rcompanion)){install.packages("rcompanion")}
```

**Two-way ANOVA example**

This example will revisit the sodium intake data set with Brendon Small and the other instructors. This time, though, they want to test not only the different nutrition education programs (indicated by *Instructor*), but also four supplements to the program, each of which they have used with some students.

```
Input = (
  "Instructor  
  "Supplement  
  "Sodium
'Brendon Small' A 1200
'Brendon Small' A 1400
'Brendon Small' A 1350
'Brendon Small' A 950
'Brendon Small' A 1400
'Brendon Small' B 1150
'Brendon Small' B 1300
'Brendon Small' B 1325
'Brendon Small' B 1425
'Brendon Small' B 1500
'Brendon Small' C 1250
'Brendon Small' C 1150
'Brendon Small' C 950
'Brendon Small' C 1150
'Brendon Small' C 1600
'Brendon Small' D 1300
'Brendon Small' D 1050
'Brendon Small' D 1300
'Brendon Small' D 1700
'Brendon Small' D 1300
'Coach McGuirk' A 1100
'Coach McGuirk' A 1200
'Coach McGuirk' A 1250
'Coach McGuirk' A 1050
'Coach McGuirk' A 1200
'Coach McGuirk' B 1250
'Coach McGuirk' B 1350
'Coach McGuirk' B 1350
'Coach McGuirk' B 1325
'Coach McGuirk' B 1525
'Coach McGuirk' C 1225
'Coach McGuirk' C 1125
```
\textbf{Two-way ANOVA}

\textbf{Summary and Analysis of Extension Education Program Evaluation in R}

\begin{verbatim}
'Data = read.table(textConnection(Input),header=TRUE)

### Order factors by the order in data frame
### Otherwise, R will alphabetize them
Data$Instructor = factor(Data$Instructor,
levels=unique(Data$Instructor))

Data$Supplement = factor(Data$Supplement,
levels=unique(Data$Supplement))

### Check the data frame
library(psych)
headTail(Data)
str(Data)
summary(Data)

### Remove unnecessary objects

625
\end{verbatim}
Use **Summarize** to check if cell sizes are balanced

We can use the `n` or `invalid` columns in the **Summarize** output to check if cell sizes are balanced. That is, if each combination of treatments have the same number of observations.

```r
library(FSA)
Summarize(Sodium ~ Supplement + Instructor, 
data = Data, 
digits = 3)
```

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th></th>
<th>Supplement</th>
<th>Instructor</th>
<th>n</th>
<th>mean</th>
<th>sd</th>
<th>min</th>
<th>Q1</th>
<th>median</th>
<th>Q3</th>
<th>max</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>1</td>
<td>A</td>
<td>Brendon Small</td>
<td>5</td>
<td>1260</td>
<td>191.703</td>
<td>950</td>
<td>1200</td>
<td>1350</td>
<td>1400</td>
<td>1400</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>2</td>
<td>B</td>
<td>Brendon Small</td>
<td>5</td>
<td>1340</td>
<td>132.994</td>
<td>1150</td>
<td>1300</td>
<td>1300</td>
<td>1425</td>
<td>1500</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>3</td>
<td>C</td>
<td>Brendon Small</td>
<td>5</td>
<td>1220</td>
<td>238.747</td>
<td>950</td>
<td>1150</td>
<td>1150</td>
<td>1250</td>
<td>1600</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>4</td>
<td>D</td>
<td>Brendon Small</td>
<td>5</td>
<td>1330</td>
<td>233.452</td>
<td>1050</td>
<td>1300</td>
<td>1300</td>
<td>1700</td>
<td>1700</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>5</td>
<td>A</td>
<td>Coach McGuirk</td>
<td>5</td>
<td>1160</td>
<td>82.158</td>
<td>1050</td>
<td>1100</td>
<td>1200</td>
<td>1250</td>
<td>1400</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>6</td>
<td>B</td>
<td>Coach McGuirk</td>
<td>5</td>
<td>1360</td>
<td>100.933</td>
<td>1250</td>
<td>1325</td>
<td>1350</td>
<td>1350</td>
<td>1525</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>7</td>
<td>C</td>
<td>Coach McGuirk</td>
<td>5</td>
<td>1175</td>
<td>148.955</td>
<td>1000</td>
<td>1125</td>
<td>1125</td>
<td>1350</td>
<td>1400</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>8</td>
<td>D</td>
<td>Coach McGuirk</td>
<td>5</td>
<td>1290</td>
<td>151.658</td>
<td>1150</td>
<td>1200</td>
<td>1200</td>
<td>1400</td>
<td>1500</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>9</td>
<td>A</td>
<td>Melissa Robins</td>
<td>5</td>
<td>1040</td>
<td>108.397</td>
<td>900</td>
<td>950</td>
<td>1100</td>
<td>1150</td>
<td>1150</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>10</td>
<td>B</td>
<td>Melissa Robins</td>
<td>5</td>
<td>1240</td>
<td>62.750</td>
<td>1150</td>
<td>1225</td>
<td>1225</td>
<td>1250</td>
<td>1325</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>11</td>
<td>C</td>
<td>Melissa Robins</td>
<td>5</td>
<td>1045</td>
<td>116.458</td>
<td>925</td>
<td>950</td>
<td>1025</td>
<td>1125</td>
<td>1200</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>12</td>
<td>D</td>
<td>Melissa Robins</td>
<td>5</td>
<td>1170</td>
<td>178.885</td>
<td>950</td>
<td>1100</td>
<td>1100</td>
<td>1300</td>
<td>1400</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

**Define linear model**

Note that the interaction of `Instruction` and `Supplement` is indicated in the model definition by `Instructor:Supplement`.

```r
model = lm(Sodium ~ Instructor + Supplement + Instructor:Supplement, 
data = Data)
```

```r
summary(model)  ### Will show overall p-value and r-square

Multiple R-squared: 0.3491,  Adjusted R-squared: 0.2

F-statistic: 2.341 on 11 and 48 DF,  p-value: 0.02121
```

**Conduct analysis of variance**

```r
library(car)
Anova(model, 
type = "II")  ### Type II sum of squares

Anova Table (Type II tests)

Response: Sodium

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Sum Sq</th>
<th>Df</th>
<th>F value</th>
<th>Pr(&gt;F)</th>
</tr>
</thead>
</table>
```
Two-way ANOVA

Summary and Analysis of Extension Education Program Evaluation in R

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Source</th>
<th>df</th>
<th>Sum Sq</th>
<th>Mean Sq</th>
<th>F value</th>
<th>Pr(&gt;F)</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>Instructor</td>
<td>2</td>
<td>290146</td>
<td>6.0173</td>
<td>0.004658 **</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Supplement</td>
<td>3</td>
<td>306125</td>
<td>4.2324</td>
<td>0.009841 **</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Instructor:Supplement</td>
<td>6</td>
<td>24438</td>
<td>0.1689</td>
<td>0.983880</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Residuals</td>
<td>48</td>
<td>1157250</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

Histogram of residuals

```r
x = residuals(model)
library(rcompanion)
plotNormalHistogram(x)
```

![Histogram of residuals](image)

```r
plot(fitted(model), residuals(model))
```

![Scatter plot of residuals vs fitted values](image)

```r
plot(model)  ### Additional model checking plots
```
Post-hoc analysis: mean separation tests
For an explanation of using estimated marginal means for multiple comparisons, see the section "Post-hoc analysis: mean separation tests" in the One-way ANOVA chapter.

EM means for main effects

```r
library(multcompView)
library(emmeans)
marginal = emmeans(model, ~ Instructor)
pairs(marginal, adjust="tukey")
```

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>contrast</th>
<th>estimate</th>
<th>SE</th>
<th>df</th>
<th>t.ratio</th>
<th>p.value</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>Brendon Small - Coach McGuirk</td>
<td>41.25</td>
<td>49.1013</td>
<td>48</td>
<td>0.840</td>
<td>0.6802</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Brendon Small - Melissa Robins</td>
<td>163.75</td>
<td>49.1013</td>
<td>48</td>
<td>3.335</td>
<td>0.0046</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Coach McGuirk - Melissa Robins</td>
<td>122.50</td>
<td>49.1013</td>
<td>48</td>
<td>2.495</td>
<td>0.0418</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

Results are averaged over the levels of: Supplement
P value adjustment: tukey method for comparing a family of 3 estimates

```r
CLD = cld(marginal, alpha = 0.05, Letters = letters, adjust = "tukey")
```

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Instructor</th>
<th>emmean</th>
<th>SE</th>
<th>df</th>
<th>lower.CL</th>
<th>upper.CL</th>
<th>.group</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>Melissa Robins</td>
<td>1123.75</td>
<td>34.71986</td>
<td>48</td>
<td>1053.941</td>
<td>1193.559</td>
<td>a</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Coach McGuirk</td>
<td>1246.25</td>
<td>34.71986</td>
<td>48</td>
<td>1176.441</td>
<td>1316.059</td>
<td>b</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Brendon Small</td>
<td>1287.50</td>
<td>34.71986</td>
<td>48</td>
<td>1217.691</td>
<td>1357.309</td>
<td>b</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

Results are averaged over the levels of: Supplement
Confidence level used: 0.95
P value adjustment: tukey method for comparing a family of 3 estimates
significance level used: alpha = 0.05
## Two-way ANOVA

### Summary and Analysis of Extension Education Program Evaluation in R

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>contrast</th>
<th>estimate</th>
<th>SE</th>
<th>df</th>
<th>t.ratio</th>
<th>p.value</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>A - B</td>
<td>-160.000000</td>
<td>56.6973</td>
<td>48</td>
<td>-2.822</td>
<td>0.0338</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>A - C</td>
<td>6.666667</td>
<td>56.6973</td>
<td>48</td>
<td>0.118</td>
<td>0.9994</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>A - D</td>
<td>-110.000000</td>
<td>56.6973</td>
<td>48</td>
<td>-1.940</td>
<td>0.2253</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>B - C</td>
<td>166.66667</td>
<td>56.6973</td>
<td>48</td>
<td>2.940</td>
<td>0.0251</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>B - D</td>
<td>50.000000</td>
<td>56.6973</td>
<td>48</td>
<td>0.882</td>
<td>0.8142</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>C - D</td>
<td>116.66667</td>
<td>56.6973</td>
<td>48</td>
<td>-2.058</td>
<td>0.1818</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

Results are averaged over the levels of: Instructor
P value adjustment: tukey method for comparing a family of 4 estimates

```r
CLD = cld(marginal, 
           alpha = 0.05, 
           Letters = letters, 
           adjust = "tukey")
```

### CLD

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Supplement</th>
<th>emmean</th>
<th>SE</th>
<th>df</th>
<th>lower.CL</th>
<th>upper.CL</th>
<th>.group</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>C</td>
<td>1146.667</td>
<td>40.09104</td>
<td>48</td>
<td>1066.058</td>
<td>1227.275</td>
<td>a</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>A</td>
<td>1153.333</td>
<td>40.09104</td>
<td>48</td>
<td>1072.725</td>
<td>1333.942</td>
<td>a</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>D</td>
<td>1263.333</td>
<td>40.09104</td>
<td>48</td>
<td>1182.725</td>
<td>1343.942</td>
<td>ab</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>B</td>
<td>1313.333</td>
<td>40.09104</td>
<td>48</td>
<td>1232.725</td>
<td>1393.942</td>
<td>b</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

Results are averaged over the levels of: Instructor
Confidence level used: 0.95
P value adjustment: tukey method for comparing a family of 4 estimates
significance level used: alpha = 0.05

### Plot of means and confidence intervals for main effects

Because the interaction term was not significant, we would probably want to present means for the main effects only. Some authors would suggest re-doing the analysis without the interaction included.

For different data, the `nudge_y` parameter will need to be adjusted manually.

```r
library(multcompView)
library(emmeans)

marginal = emmeans(model, 
                    ~ Instructor)

CLD = cld(marginal, 
           alpha = 0.05, 
           Letters = letters, 
           adjust = "tukey")
```

### Order the levels for printing
\begin{verbatim}
CLD$Instructor = factor(CLD$Instructor,
                       levels=c("Brendon Small",
                                 "Coach McGuirk",
                                 "Melissa Robins"))

### Remove spaces in .group
CLD$.group=gsub(" ", ",", CLD$.group)

### Plot
library(ggplot2)

ggplot(CLD,
       aes(x     = Instructor,
            y     = emmean,
            label = .group)) +
  geom_point(shape  = 15,
              size   = 4) +
  geom_errorbar(aes(ymin  =  lower.CL,
                     ymax  =  upper.CL),
                width =  0.2,
                size  =  0.7) +
  theme_bw() +
  theme(axis.title   = element_text(face = "bold"),
        axis.text    = element_text(face = "bold"),
        plot.caption = element_text(hjust = 0)) +
  ylab("Estimated marginal mean\nsodium intake (mg / day)") +
  geom_text(nudge_x = c(0, 0, 0),
            nudge_y = c(120, 120, 120),
            color   = "black")
\end{verbatim}
Estimated marginal mean daily sodium intake for students in each of three classes with four different supplemental programs. Error bars indicate confidence intervals for the estimated marginal means. Groups sharing the same letter are not significantly different (alpha = 0.05, Tukey-adjusted).

```r
library(multcompView)
library(emmeans)
marginal = emmeans(model, ~ Supplement)

CLD = cld(marginal, 
  alpha = 0.05, 
  Letters = letters, 
  adjust = "tukey")

### Order the levels for printing
CLD$Supplement = factor(CLD$Supplement, 
  levels=c("A", "B", "C", "D"))

### Remove spaces in .group
CLD$.group = gsub(" ", "", CLD$.group)

### Plot
library(ggplot2)
```
Estimated marginal mean daily sodium intake for students in each of three classes with four different supplemental programs. Error bars indicate confidence intervals for the estimated marginal means. Groups sharing the same letter are not significantly different (alpha = 0.05, Tukey-adjusted).

**Plot of EM means and confidence intervals for interaction**
If the interaction effect were significant, it would make sense to present an interaction plot of the means for both main effects together on one plot. We can indicate mean separations with letters on the plot.
For different data, the *nudge_y* parameter will need to be adjusted manually.

```r
library(multcompView)
library(emmeans)

marginal = emmeans(model,
                   ~ Instructor + Supplement)

CLD = cld(marginal,
          alpha = 0.05,
          Letters = letters, 
          adjust = "tukey")  

### Order the levels for printing

CLD$Instructor = factor(CLD$Instructor,
                        levels=c("Brendon Small",
                                 "Coach McGuirk",
                                 "Melissa Robins"))

CLD$Supplement = factor(CLD$Supplement,
                        levels=c("A", "B", "C", "D"))

### Remove spaces in .group

CLD$.group=gsub(" ", ",", CLD$.group)

CLD

### Plot

library(ggplot2)

pd = position_dodge(0.6)  

ggplot(CLD,
       aes(x = Instructor,
            y = emmean,
            color = Supplement,
            label = .group)) +

  geom_point(shape = 15,
              size = 4,
              position = pd) +

  geom_errorbar(aes(ymin = lower.CL,
                    ymax = upper.CL),
                width = 0.2,
                size = 0.7,

```
Estimated marginal mean daily sodium intake for students in each of three classes with four different supplemental programs. Error bars indicate confidence intervals for the estimated marginal means. Groups sharing the same letter are not significantly different (alpha = 0.05, Tukey-adjusted).

**Exercises T**

1. Considering Brendon, Melissa, and McGuirk's data with for instructional programs and supplements,
   a. Is the experimental design balanced?
   b. Does *Instructor* have a significant effect on sodium intake?
   c. Does *Supplement* have a significant effect on sodium intake?
d. Does the interaction of Instructor and Supplement have a significant effect on sodium intake?

e. Are the residuals from the analysis reasonably normal and homoscedastic?

f. Which instructors had classes with significantly different mean sodium intake from which others?

g. Does this result correspond to what you would have thought from looking at the plot of the EM means and confidence intervals?

h. How would you summarize the effect of the supplements?

2. As part of a professional skills program, a 4-H club tests its members for typing proficiency. Dr. Katz, and Laura, and Ben want to compare their students’ mean typing speed between their classes, as well as for the software they used to teach typing.

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Instructor</th>
<th>Software</th>
<th>words.per.minute</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>'Dr. Katz Professional Therapist'</td>
<td>A</td>
<td>35</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>'Dr. Katz Professional Therapist'</td>
<td>A</td>
<td>50</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>'Dr. Katz Professional Therapist'</td>
<td>A</td>
<td>55</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>'Dr. Katz Professional Therapist'</td>
<td>B</td>
<td>60</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>'Dr. Katz Professional Therapist'</td>
<td>B</td>
<td>65</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>'Dr. Katz Professional Therapist'</td>
<td>B</td>
<td>70</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>'Dr. Katz Professional Therapist'</td>
<td>C</td>
<td>60</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>'Dr. Katz Professional Therapist'</td>
<td>C</td>
<td>45</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>'Dr. Katz Professional Therapist'</td>
<td>C</td>
<td>55</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>'Laura the Receptionist'</td>
<td>A</td>
<td>55</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>'Laura the Receptionist'</td>
<td>A</td>
<td>55</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>'Laura the Receptionist'</td>
<td>A</td>
<td>60</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>'Laura the Receptionist'</td>
<td>A</td>
<td>70</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>'Laura the Receptionist'</td>
<td>B</td>
<td>60</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>'Laura the Receptionist'</td>
<td>B</td>
<td>70</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>'Laura the Receptionist'</td>
<td>B</td>
<td>70</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>'Laura the Receptionist'</td>
<td>C</td>
<td>65</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>'Laura the Receptionist'</td>
<td>C</td>
<td>72</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>'Laura the Receptionist'</td>
<td>C</td>
<td>73</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>'Laura the Receptionist'</td>
<td>C</td>
<td>65</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>'Ben Katz'</td>
<td>A</td>
<td>55</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>'Ben Katz'</td>
<td>A</td>
<td>55</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>'Ben Katz'</td>
<td>A</td>
<td>70</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>'Ben Katz'</td>
<td>A</td>
<td>55</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>'Ben Katz'</td>
<td>B</td>
<td>65</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>'Ben Katz'</td>
<td>B</td>
<td>60</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>'Ben Katz'</td>
<td>B</td>
<td>70</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>'Ben Katz'</td>
<td>B</td>
<td>60</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>'Ben Katz'</td>
<td>C</td>
<td>60</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>'Ben Katz'</td>
<td>C</td>
<td>62</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>
For each of the following, answer the question, and show the output from the analyses you used to answer the question.

a. What was the EM mean typing speed for each instructor's class?

b. Does Instructor have a significant effect on typing speed?

c. Does Software have a significant effect on typing speed?

d. Are the residuals reasonably normal and homoscedastic?

e. Which instructors had classes with significantly different mean typing speed from which others?

f. How do you summarize the results of the effect of Software.

g. What is your summary of the analysis and practical conclusions?

**Repeated Measures ANOVA**

When an experimental design takes measurements on the same experimental unit over time, the analysis of the data must take into account the probability that measurements for a given experimental unit will be correlated in some way. For example, if we were measuring calorie intake for students, we would expect that if one student had a higher intake at Time 1, that that student would have a higher intake others at Time 2, and so on.

In previous chapters, our approach to deal with non-independent observations was to treat Student as a blocking variable or as a random (blocking) variable.

The approach in this chapter is to include an autocorrelation structure in the model using the *nlme* package.

**Packages used in this chapter**

The packages used in this chapter include:

- psych
- nlme
- car
- multcompView
- emmeans
- ggplot2
Repeated measures ANOVA example

In this example, students were asked to document their daily caloric intake once a month for six months. Students were divided into three groups with each receiving instruction in nutrition education using one of three curricula.

There are different ways we might approach this problem. If we simply wanted to see if one curriculum was better at decreasing caloric intake in students, we might do a simple analysis of variance on the difference between each student's final and initial intake.

In the approach here we will use a repeated measures analysis with all the measurements, treating Student as a random variable to take into account native differences among students, and including an autocorrelation structure.

| Input = (" Instruction          Student Month Calories.per.day
| "Curriculum A"    | a    | 1  | 2000
| "Curriculum A"    | a    | 2  | 1978
| "Curriculum A"    | a    | 3  | 1962
| "Curriculum A"    | a    | 4  | 1873
| "Curriculum A"    | a    | 5  | 1782
| "Curriculum A"    | a    | 6  | 1737
| "Curriculum A"    | b    | 1  | 1900
| "Curriculum A"    | b    | 2  | 1826
| "Curriculum A"    | b    | 3  | 1782
| "Curriculum A"    | b    | 4  | 1718
| "Curriculum A"    | b    | 5  | 1639
| "Curriculum A"    | b    | 6  | 1644
| "Curriculum A"    | c    | 1  | 2100
| "Curriculum A"    | c    | 2  | 2067
| "Curriculum A"    | c    | 3  | 2065
| "Curriculum A"    | c    | 4  | 2015
| "Curriculum A"    | c    | 5  | 1994
| "Curriculum A"    | c    | 6  | 1919
| "Curriculum A"    | d    | 1  | 2000
| "Curriculum A"    | d    | 2  | 1981
| "Curriculum A"    | d    | 3  | 1987
| "Curriculum A"    | d    | 4  | 2016
| "Curriculum A"    | d    | 5  | 2010
'Curriculum A' d 6 1946
'Curriculum B' e 1 2100
'Curriculum B' e 2 2004
'Curriculum B' e 3 2027
'Curriculum B' e 4 2109
'Curriculum B' e 5 2197
'Curriculum B' e 6 2294
'Curriculum B' f 1 2000
'Curriculum B' f 2 2011
'Curriculum B' f 3 2089
'Curriculum B' f 4 2124
'Curriculum B' f 5 2199
'Curriculum B' f 6 2234
'Curriculum B' g 1 2000
'Curriculum B' g 2 2074
'Curriculum B' g 3 2141
'Curriculum B' g 4 2199
'Curriculum B' g 5 2265
'Curriculum B' g 6 2254
'Curriculum B' h 1 2000
'Curriculum B' h 2 1970
'Curriculum B' h 3 1951
'Curriculum B' h 4 1981
'Curriculum B' h 5 1987
'Curriculum B' h 6 1969
'Curriculum C' i 1 1950
'Curriculum C' i 2 2007
'Curriculum C' i 3 1978
'Curriculum C' i 4 1965
'Curriculum C' i 5 1984
'Curriculum C' i 6 2020
'Curriculum C' j 1 2000
'Curriculum C' j 2 2029
'Curriculum C' j 3 2033
'Curriculum C' j 4 2050
'Curriculum C' j 5 2001
'Curriculum C' j 6 1988
'Curriculum C' k 1 2000
'Curriculum C' k 2 1976
'Curriculum C' k 3 2025
'Curriculum C' k 4 2047
'Curriculum C' k 5 2033
'Curriculum C' k 6 1984
'Curriculum C' l 1 2000
'Curriculum C' l 2 2020
'Curriculum C' l 3 2009
'Curriculum C' l 4 2017
'Curriculum C' l 5 1989
'Curriculum C' l 6 2020

Data = read.table(textConnection(Input),header=TRUE)
### Order factors by the order in data frame
### Otherwise, R will alphabetize them
Data$Instruction = factor(Data$Instruction, 
    levels=unique(Data$Instruction))

### Check the data frame
library(psych)
headTail(Data)
str(Data)
summary(Data)

### Remove unnecessary objects
rm(Input)

Define model and conduct analysis of deviance
This example will use a mixed effects model to describe the repeated measures analysis, using the `lme` function in the `nlme` package. *Student* is treated as a random variable in the model.

The autocorrelation structure is described with the `correlation` statement. In this case, *corAR1* is used to indicate a temporal autocorrelation structure of order one, often abbreviated as AR(1). This statement takes the form:

\[
\text{correlation} = \text{Structure(form } = \sim \text{ time | subjvar)}
\]

where:
- *Structure* is the autocorrelation structure. Options are listed in `library(nlme); ?corClasses`
- *time* is the variable indicating time. In this case, *Month*. For the corAR1 structure, the time variable must be an integer variable.
- *subjvar* indicates the variable for experimental units, in this case *Student*. Autocorrelation is modeled within levels of the *subjvar*, and not between them.

For the *corAR1* structure, a value for the first order correlation can be specified. In this case, the value of 0.429 is found using the *ACF* function in the “Optional analysis: determining autocorrelation in residuals” section below.

Autocorrelation structures can be chosen by either of two methods. The first is to choose a structure based on theoretical expectations of how the data should be correlated. The second is to try various autocorrelation structures and compare the resulting models with a criterion like AIC, AICc, or BIC to choose the structure that best models the data.
Optional technical note:
In this case, it isn’t necessary to use a mixed effects model. That is, it’s not necessary to include Student as a random variable. A similar analysis could be conducted by using the gls function in the nlme package, and including the correlation option, but excluding the random option, as follows in black.

```r
library(nlme)
model = gls(Calories.per.day ~ Instruction + Month + Instruction*Month,
            correlation = corAR1(form = ~ Month | Student,
                                  value = 0.8990),
            data=Data,
            method="REML")
library(car)
Anova(model)
```

**Code for analysis**

```r
library(nlme)
model = lme(Calories.per.day ~ Instruction + Month + Instruction*Month,
            random = ~1|Student,
            correlation = corAR1(form = ~ Month | Student,
                                  value = 0.4287),
            data=Data,
            method="REML")
library(car)
Anova(model)
```

**Analysis of Deviance Table (Type II tests)**

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Response: Calories.per.day</th>
<th>Chisq</th>
<th>Df</th>
<th>Pr(&gt;Chisq)</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>Instruction</td>
<td>10.4221</td>
<td>2</td>
<td>0.005456 **</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Month</td>
<td>0.0198</td>
<td>1</td>
<td>0.888045</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Instruction:Month</td>
<td>38.6045</td>
<td>2</td>
<td>4.141e-09 ***</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

Test the random effects in the model
The random effects in the model can be tested by comparing the model to a model fitted with just the fixed effects and excluding the random effects. Because there are not random effects in this second model, the gls function in the nlme package is used to fit this model.

```r
model.fixed = gls(Calories.per.day ~ Instruction + Month + Instruction*Month,
                   data=Data,
                   method="REML")
```
Repeated Measures ANOVA

Summary and Analysis of Extension Education Program Evaluation in R

\[
\text{anova(model, model.fixed)}
\]

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Model</th>
<th>df</th>
<th>AIC</th>
<th>BIC</th>
<th>logLik</th>
<th>Test L.Ratio</th>
<th>p-value</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>model</td>
<td>1</td>
<td>9716.9693</td>
<td>736.6762</td>
<td>-349.4847</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>model.fixed</td>
<td>2</td>
<td>813.6213</td>
<td>828.9489</td>
<td>-399.8106</td>
<td>1 vs 2</td>
<td>100.652</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

\text{*p*-value and pseudo $R$-squared for model}

The \textit{nagelkerke} function can be used to calculate a \textit{p}-value and pseudo \textit{R}-\textit{squared} value for the model.

One approach is to define the null model as one with no fixed effects except for an intercept, indicated with a 1 on the right side of the $\sim$. And to also include the random effects, in this case $1|\text{Student}$.

\begin{verbatim}
library(rcompanion)
model.null = lme(Calories.per.day ~ 1,
                  random = ~1|Student,
                  data = Data)
nagelkerke(model, model.null)

$Pseudo.R.squared.for.model.vs.null
Pseudo.R.squared
McFadden        0.123969
Cox and Snell (ML) 0.768652
Nagelkerke (Cragg and Uhler) 0.768658

$Likelihood.ratio.test
Df.diff LogLik.diff Chisq    p.value
-6      -52.698 105.4 1.8733e-20
\end{verbatim}

Another approach to determining the \textit{p}-value and pseudo \textit{R}-\textit{squared} for an \textit{lme} model is to compare the model to a null model with only an intercept and neither the fixed nor the random effects. To accomplish this, the null model has to be specified with the \textit{gls} function.

\begin{verbatim}
library(rcompanion)
model.null.2 = gls(Calories.per.day ~ 1,
                    data = Data)
nagelkerke(model, model.null.2)

$Pseudo.R.squared.for.model.vs.null
Pseudo.R.squared
McFadden        0.168971
Cox and Snell (ML) 0.877943
Nagelkerke (Cragg and Uhler) 0.877946

$Likelihood.ratio.test
Df.diff LogLik.diff Chisq    p.value
-6      -52.698 105.4 1.8733e-20
\end{verbatim}

641
Post-hoc analysis

The `emmeans` package is able to handle `lme` objects. For further details, see `?emmeans::models`. For a review of mean separation tests and estimated marginal means, see the chapters What are Estimated Marginal Means?; the chapter Estimated Marginal Means for Multiple Comparisons; and the “Post-hoc analysis: mean separation tests” section in the One-way ANOVA chapter.

Because `Month` is an integer variable, not a factor variable, it is listed in the `emmeans cld` table as its average only.

```r
library(multcompView)
library(emmeans)

marginal = emmeans(model, ~ Instruction:Month)
cld(marginal, 
    alpha = 0.05,
    Letters = letters, ### Use lower-case letters for .group
    adjust = "tukey") ### Tukey-adjusted comparisons
```

### Use lower-case letters for .group
### Tukey-adjusted comparisons

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Instruction</th>
<th>Month</th>
<th>emmean</th>
<th>SE</th>
<th>df</th>
<th>lower.CL</th>
<th>upper.CL</th>
<th>.group</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>Curriculum A</td>
<td>1</td>
<td>4</td>
<td>2000</td>
<td>0.95</td>
<td>1920</td>
<td>2080</td>
<td>a</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Curriculum C</td>
<td>1</td>
<td>4</td>
<td>2000</td>
<td>0.95</td>
<td>1920</td>
<td>2080</td>
<td>ab</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Curriculum B</td>
<td>1</td>
<td>4</td>
<td>2000</td>
<td>0.95</td>
<td>1920</td>
<td>2080</td>
<td>b</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

Confidence level used: 0.95
Conf-level adjustment: sidak method for 3 estimates
P value adjustment: tukey method for comparing a family of 3 estimates
significance level used: alpha = 0.05

Interaction plot

For this plot, we will use the `groupwiseMean` function to calculate the natural mean of each `Instruction x Month` combination, along with the confidence interval of each mean with the percentile method.

```r
library(rcompanion)

Sum = groupwiseMean(Calories.per.day ~ Instruction + Month, 
    data = Data, 
    conf = 0.95, 
    digits = 3, 
    traditional = FALSE, 
    percentile = TRUE)
```

### Use lower-case letters for .group
### Tukey-adjusted comparisons

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Instruction</th>
<th>Month</th>
<th>n</th>
<th>Mean</th>
<th>Conf.level</th>
<th>Percentile.lower</th>
<th>Percentile.upper</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>Curriculum A</td>
<td>1</td>
<td>4</td>
<td>2000</td>
<td>0.95</td>
<td>1920</td>
<td>2080</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

642
<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th></th>
<th>Curriculum A</th>
<th></th>
<th></th>
<th></th>
<th></th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>2</td>
<td>4 1960</td>
<td>0.95</td>
<td>1860</td>
<td>2040</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>3</td>
<td>4 1950</td>
<td>0.95</td>
<td>1830</td>
<td>2040</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>4</td>
<td>4 1910</td>
<td>0.95</td>
<td>1760</td>
<td>2020</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>5</td>
<td>4 1860</td>
<td>0.95</td>
<td>1710</td>
<td>2000</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>6</td>
<td>4 1810</td>
<td>0.95</td>
<td>1690</td>
<td>1930</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>7</td>
<td>4 2020</td>
<td>0.95</td>
<td>2000</td>
<td>2080</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>8</td>
<td>4 2010</td>
<td>0.95</td>
<td>1980</td>
<td>2060</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>9</td>
<td>4 2050</td>
<td>0.95</td>
<td>1990</td>
<td>2120</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>10</td>
<td>4 2100</td>
<td>0.95</td>
<td>2020</td>
<td>2180</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>11</td>
<td>4 2160</td>
<td>0.95</td>
<td>2040</td>
<td>2250</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>12</td>
<td>4 2190</td>
<td>0.95</td>
<td>2040</td>
<td>2280</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>13</td>
<td>4 1990</td>
<td>0.95</td>
<td>1960</td>
<td>2000</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>14</td>
<td>4 2010</td>
<td>0.95</td>
<td>1990</td>
<td>2020</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>15</td>
<td>4 2010</td>
<td>0.95</td>
<td>1990</td>
<td>2030</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>16</td>
<td>4 2020</td>
<td>0.95</td>
<td>1990</td>
<td>2050</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>17</td>
<td>4 2000</td>
<td>0.95</td>
<td>1990</td>
<td>2020</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>18</td>
<td>4 2000</td>
<td>0.95</td>
<td>1990</td>
<td>2020</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

```r
library(ggplot2)
pd = position_dodge(.2)

ggplot(Sum, aes(x = Month,
y = Mean,
color = Instruction)) +
  geom_errorbar(aes(ymin=Percentile.lower,
                   ymax=Percentile.upper),
                width=.2, size=0.7, position=pd) +
  geom_point(shape=15, size=4, position=pd) +
  theme_bw() +
  theme(axis.title = element_text(face = "bold")) +
  ylab("Mean calories per day")
```
Histogram of residuals

Residuals from a mixed model fit with `nlme` should be normally distributed. Plotting residuals vs. fitted values, to check for homoscedasticity and independence, is probably also advisable.

```r
x = residuals(model)

library(rcompanion)

plotNormalHistogram(x)
```

![Histogram of residuals](image)

```r
plot(fitted(model), residuals(model))
```

Optional analysis: determining autocorrelation in residuals

The `ACF` function in the `nlme` package will indicate the autocorrelation for lags in the time variable. Note that for a gls model, the `form` of the autocorrelation structure can be specified. For an lme model, the function uses the innermost group level and assumes equally spaced intervals.
library(nlme)

model.a = gls(Calories.per.day ~ Instruction + Month + Instruction*Month,
              data=Data)

ACF(model.a,
     form = ~ Month | Student)

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>lag</th>
<th>ACF</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>1</td>
<td>1.0000000</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>2</td>
<td>0.8989822</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>3</td>
<td>0.7462712</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>4</td>
<td>0.6249217</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>5</td>
<td>0.5365430</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>6</td>
<td>0.4564673</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

library(nlme)

model.b = lme(Calories.per.day ~ Instruction + Month + Instruction*Month,
               random = ~1|Student,
               data=Data)

ACF(model.b)

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>lag</th>
<th>ACF</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>1</td>
<td>1.0000000</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>2</td>
<td>0.4286522</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>3</td>
<td>-0.1750233</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>4</td>
<td>-0.6283754</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>5</td>
<td>-0.8651088</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>6</td>
<td>-0.6957774</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

Optional discussion on specifying formulae for repeated measures analysis

**Specifying random effects in models**
The general schema for specifying random effects in R is:

Formula for random effects | Unit for which these apply

So that, in the *nlme* package:

- random = ~ 1 | subject
  
  Indicates that each *subject* will have its own intercept

- random = ~ rep | subject
  
  Indicates that each *subject* will have its own intercept and its own slope for *rep*

- random = ~ 1 | rep/subject
Indicates that each subject-within-rep unit will have its own intercept

**Indicating time and subject variables**

A simple repeated analysis statement in *proc mixed* in SAS could be specified with:

```
repeated date / subject = id  type = AR(1)
```

A similar specification in with the *gls* function in *nlme* package in R would be:

```
correlation = corAR1(form = ~ date | id)
```

Likewise, a simple mixed effects repeated analysis statement in *proc mixed* in SAS could be specified with:

```
random id
repeated date / subject = id  type = AR(1)
```

A similar specification in with the *lme* function in *nlme* package in R would be:

```
random = ~1 | id,
correlation = corAR1(form = ~ date | id)
```

**Specifying nested effects**

In repeated measures analysis, it is common to used nested effects. For example, if our subject variable is *treatment* within *block*,

In SAS:

```
treatment(block)
```

is equivalent to

```
block block*treatment
```

In R:

```
block/treatment
```

is equivalent to

```
block + block:treatment
```
Correlation and Linear Regression

Correlation and linear regression each explore the relationship between two quantitative variables. Both are very common analyses.

Correlation determines if one variable varies systematically as another variable changes. It does not specify that one variable is the dependent variable and the other is the independent variable. Often, it is useful to look at which variables are correlated to others in a data set, and it is especially useful to see which variables correlate to a particular variable of interest.

The three forms of correlation presented here are Pearson, Kendall, and Spearman. The test determining the p-value for Pearson correlation is a parametric test that assumes that data are bivariate normal. Kendall and Spearman correlation use nonparametric tests.

In contrast, linear regression specifies one variable as the independent variable and another as the dependent variable. The resultant model relates the variables with a linear relationship.

The tests associated with linear regression are parametric and assume normality, homoscedasticity, and independence of residuals, as well as a linear relationship between the two variables.

**Appropriate data**
- For Pearson correlation, two interval/ratio variables. Together the data in the variables are bivariate normal. The relationship between the two variables is linear. Outliers can detrimentally affect results.
- For Kendall correlation, two variables of interval/ratio or ordinal type.
- For Spearman correlation, two variables of interval/ratio or ordinal type.
- For linear regression, two interval/ratio variables. The relationship between the two variables is linear. Residuals are normal, independent, and homoscedastic. Outliers can affect the results unless robust methods are used.

**Hypotheses**
- For correlation, null hypothesis: The correlation coefficient \((r, \tau, \text{or } \rho)\) is zero. Or, there is no correlation between the two variables.
- For linear regression, null hypothesis: The slope of the fit line is zero. Or, there is no linear relationship between the two variables.

**Interpretation**
- For correlation, reporting significant results as “Variable A was significantly correlated to Variable B” is acceptable. Alternatively, “A significant correlation between Variable A and Variable B was found.” Or, “Variables A, B, and C were significantly correlated.”
• For linear regression, reporting significant results as “Variable A was significantly linearly related to Variable B” is acceptable. Alternatively, “A significant linear regression between Variable A and Variable B was found.”

Packages used in this chapter

The packages used in this chapter include:

• psych
• PerformanceAnalytics
• ggplot2
• rcompanion

The following commands will install these packages if they are not already installed:

```r
if(!require(psych)){install.packages("psych")}
if(!require(PerformanceAnalytics)){install.packages("PerformanceAnalytics")}
if(!require(ggplot2)){install.packages("ggplot2")}
if(!require(rcompanion)){install.packages("rcompanion")}
```

Examples for correlation and linear regression

Brendon Small and company recorded several measurements for students in their classes related to their nutrition education program: Grade, Weight in kilograms, intake of Calories per day, daily Sodium intake in milligrams, and Score on the assessment of knowledge gain.

```r
Input = read.csv("input.csv")

# Example for correlation
correlation.cor = cor(Input$Weight, Input$Calories)

# Example for linear regression
regression.lm = lm(Score ~ Weight + Calories, data = Input)
```
Correlation and Linear Regression

Summary and Analysis of Extension Education Program Evaluation in R

Data = read.table(textConnection(Input), header=TRUE)

### Order factors by the order in data frame
### Otherwise, R will alphabetize them

Data$Instructor = factor(Data$Instructor,
                        levels=unique(Data$Instructor))

### Check the data frame

library(psych)

headTail(Data)

str(Data)

summary(Data)

### Remove unnecessary objects

rm(Input)

Visualizing correlated variables

Correlation does not have independent and dependent variables

Notice in the formulae for the pairs and cor.test functions, that all variables are named to the right of the ~. One reason for this is that correlation is measured between two variables without assuming
that one variable is the dependent variable and one is the independent variable. By necessity, one variable must be plotted on the x-axis and one on the y-axis, but their placement is arbitrary.

**Multiple correlation**

The *pairs* function can plot multiple numeric or integer variables on a single plot to look for correlations among the variables.

```
pairs(data=Data, ~ Grade + Weight + Calories + Sodium + Score)
```

The *corr.test* function in the *psych* package can be used in a similar manner, with the output being a table of correlation coefficients and a table of *p*-values. *p*-values can be adjusted with the *adjust* option. Options for correlation methods are “pearson”, “kendall”, and “spearman”. The function can produce confidence intervals for the correlation coefficients, but I recommend using the *cor.ci* function in the *psych* package for this task (not shown here).

The *corr.test* function requires that the data frame contain only numeric or integer variables, so we will first create a new data frame called *Data.num* containing only the numeric and integer variables.

```
Data.num = Data[c("Grade", "Weight", "Calories", "Sodium", "Score")]
```

```
library(psych)
corr.test(Data.num,
```
use = "pairwise",
method = "pearson",
adjust = "none")

Correlation matrix

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th></th>
<th>Grade</th>
<th>Weight</th>
<th>Calories</th>
<th>Sodium</th>
<th>Score</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>Grade</td>
<td>1.00</td>
<td>0.85</td>
<td>0.85</td>
<td>0.79</td>
<td>-0.70</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Weight</td>
<td>0.85</td>
<td>1.00</td>
<td>0.99</td>
<td>0.87</td>
<td>-0.48</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Calories</td>
<td>0.85</td>
<td>0.99</td>
<td>1.00</td>
<td>0.85</td>
<td>-0.48</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Sodium</td>
<td>0.79</td>
<td>0.87</td>
<td>0.85</td>
<td>1.00</td>
<td>-0.45</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Score</td>
<td>-0.70</td>
<td>-0.48</td>
<td>-0.48</td>
<td>-0.45</td>
<td>1.00</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

Sample Size
[1] 45

A useful plot of histograms, correlations, and correlation coefficients can be produced with the chart.Correlation function in the PerformanceAnalytics package.

In the output, the numbers represent the correlation coefficients (r, tau, or rho, depending on whether Pearson, Kendall, or Spearman correlation is selected, respectively). The stars represent the p-value of the correlation:

*    p < 0.05
**   p < 0.01
***  p < 0.001

The function requires that the data frame contain only numeric or integer variables, so we will first create a new data frame called Data.num containing only the numeric and integer variables.

Data.num = Data[c("Grade", "Weight", "Calories", "Sodium", "Score")]

library(PerformanceAnalytics)

chart.Correlation(Data.num,
method="pearson",
histogram=TRUE,
pch=16)
**Effect size statistics**

*r, rho, and tau*

The statistics *r*, *rho*, and *tau* are used as effect sizes for Pearson, Spearman, and Kendall regression, respectively. These statistics vary from \(-1\) to 1, with 0 indicating no correlation, 1 indicating a perfect positive correlation, and \(-1\) indicating a perfect negative correlation. Like other effect size statistics, these statistics are not affected by sample size.

Interpretation of effect sizes necessarily varies by discipline and the expectations of the experiment. They should not be considered universal. An interpretation of *r* is given by Cohen (1988). It is probably reasonable to use similar interpretations for *rho* and *tau*.

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th></th>
<th>small</th>
<th>medium</th>
<th>large</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td><em>r</em></td>
<td>0.10 (-&lt; 0.30)</td>
<td>0.30 (-&lt; 0.50)</td>
<td>(\geq 0.50)</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

Adapted from Cohen (1988).

*r*-squared

For linear regression, *r*-squared is used as an effect size statistic. It indicates the proportion of the variability in the dependent variable that is explained by model. That is, an *r*-squared of 0.60 indicates that 60% of the variability in the dependent variable is explained by the model.
Pearson correlation
Pearson correlation is a parametric analysis that requires that the relationship between the variables is linear, and that the data be bivariate normal. Variables should be interval/ratio. The test is sensitive to outliers.

The correlation coefficient, \( r \), can range from +1 to −1, with +1 being a perfect positive correlation and −1 being a perfect negative correlation. An \( r \) of 0 represents no correlation whatsoever. The hypothesis test determines if the \( r \) value is significantly different from 0.

As an example, we’ll plot Sodium vs. Calories, and use the cor.test function to test the correlation of these two variables.

Simple plot of the data
Note that the relationship between the \( y \) and \( x \) variables is not particularly linear.

```r
plot(Sodium ~ Calories, data=Data, pch=16, xlab = "Calories", ylab = "Sodium")
```

Pearson correlation
Note that the results report the \( p \)-value for the hypothesis test as well as the \( r \) value, written as cor, 0.849.

```r
cor.test( ~ Sodium + Calories, data=Data, method = "pearson")
```

Pearson's product-moment correlation

\[
t = 10.534, \text{ df } = 43, \text{ p-value } = 1.737 \times 10^{-13}
\]
alternative hypothesis: true correlation is not equal to 0

95 percent confidence interval:
0.7397691 0.9145785
sample estimates:
cor
0.8489548

Plot residuals
It’s not a bad idea to look at the residuals from Pearson correlation to be sure the data meet the assumption of bivariate normality. Unfortunately, the `cor.test` function doesn’t supply residuals. One solution is to use the `lm` function, which actually redoes the analysis as a linear regression.

```r
model = lm(Sodium ~ Calories,
data = Data)
x = residuals(model)

library(rcompanion)
plotNormalHistogram(x)
```

Kendall correlation
Kendall correlation is considered a nonparametric analysis. It is a rank-based test that does not require assumptions about the distribution of the data. Variables can be interval/ratio or ordinal.

The correlation coefficient from the test is $\tau$, which can range from +1 to −1, with +1 being a perfect positive correlation and −1 being a perfect negative correlation. A $\tau$ of 0 represents no correlation whatsoever. The hypothesis test determines if the $\tau$ value is significantly different from 0.

As a technical note, the `cor.test` function in R calculates $\tau$-b, which handles ties in ranks well.

The test is relatively robust to outliers in the data. The test is sometimes cited for being reliable when there are small number of samples or when there are many ties in ranks.

Simple plot of the data
(See Pearson correlation above.)
Kendall correlation
Note that the results report the \( p \)-value for the hypothesis test as well as the \( \tau \) value, written as \( \tau \), 0.649.

```
cor.test(~ Sodium + Calories,
data=Data,
method = "kendall")
```

Kendall's rank correlation \( \tau \)

\[ z = 6.2631, \ p-value = 3.774 \times 10^{-10} \]
alternative hypothesis: true \( \tau \) is not equal to 0

sample estimates:
\[ \tau = 0.6490902 \]

Spearman correlation
Spearman correlation is considered a nonparametric analysis. It is a rank-based test that does not require assumptions about the distribution of the data. Variables can be interval/ratio or ordinal.

The correlation coefficient from the test, \( \rho \), can range from +1 to −1, with +1 being a perfect positive correlation and −1 being a perfect negative correlation. A \( \rho \) of 0 represents no correlation whatsoever. The hypothesis test determines if the \( \rho \) value is significantly different from 0.

Spearman correlation is probably most often used with ordinal data. It tests for a monotonic relationship between the variables. It is relatively robust to outliers in the data.

Simple plot of the data
(See Pearson correlation above.)

Spearman correlation
Note that the results report the \( p \)-value for the hypothesis test as well as the \( \rho \) value, written as \( \rho \), 0.820.

```
cor.test(~ Sodium + Calories,
data=Data,
method = "spearman")
```

Spearman's rank correlation \( \rho \)

\[ S = 2729.7, \ p-value = 5.443 \times 10^{-12} \]
alternative hypothesis: true \( \rho \) is not equal to 0

sample estimates:
\[ \rho = 0.8201766 \]
### Linear regression

Linear regression is a very common approach to model the relationship between two interval/ratio variables. The method assumes that there is a linear relationship between the dependent variable and the independent variable, and finds a best fit model for this relationship.

**Dependent and Independent variables**

When plotted, the dependent variable is usually placed on the $y$-axis, and the independent variable is usually placed in the $x$-axis.

**Interpretation of coefficients**

The outcome of linear regression includes estimating the intercept and the slope of the linear model. Linear regression can then be used as a predictive model, whereby the model can be used to predict a $y$ value for any given $x$. In practice, the model shouldn't be used to predict values beyond the range of the $x$ values used to develop the model.

**Multiple, nominal, and ordinal independent variables**

If there are multiple independent variables of interval/ratio type in the model, then linear regression expands to multiple regression. The polynomial regression example in this chapter is a form of multiple regression.

If the independent variable were of nominal type, then the linear regression would become a one-way analysis of variance.

Handling independent variables of ordinal type can be complicated. Often they are treated as either nominal type or interval/ratio type, although there are drawbacks to each approach.

**Assumptions**

Linear regression assumes a linear relationship between the two variables, normality of the residuals, independence of the residuals, and homoscedasticity of residuals.

**Note on writing r-squared**

For bivariate linear regression, the $r$-squared value often uses a lower case $r$; however, some authors prefer to use a capital $R$. For multiple regression, the $R$ in the $R$-squared value is usually capitalized. The name of the statistic may be written out as “$r$-squared” for convenience, or as $r^2$.

Define model, and produce model coefficients, $p$-value, and $r$-squared value

Linear regression can be performed with the `lm` function, which was the same function we used for analysis of variance.

The `summary` function for `lm` model objects includes estimates for model parameters (intercept and slope), as well as an $r$-squared value for the model and $p$-value for the model.

Note that even for bivariate regression, the output calls the $r$-squared value “Multiple R-squared”.

```r
model = lm(Sodium ~ Calories, 
data = Data)
```
summary(model)

Coefficients:
                 Estimate  Std. Error t value Pr(>|t|)
(Intercept)      519.07547   78.78211   6.589 5.09e-08 ***
Calories         0.35909    0.03409  10.534 1.74e-13 ***

Residual standard error: 38.89 on 43 degrees of freedom
Multiple R-squared:  0.7207,    Adjusted R-squared:  0.7142
F-statistic:   111 on 1 and 43 DF,  p-value: 1.737e-13

Plot data with best fit line

plot(Sodium ~ Calories,
data=Data,
pch=16,
xlab = "Calories",
ylab = "Sodium")

abline(model,
col = "blue",
lwd = 2)

There is a clear nonlinearity to the data, suggesting that the simple linear model is not the best fit. This nonlinearity is apparent in the plot of residuals vs. fitted values as well.

The next chapter will include fitting linear plateau, quadratic plateau, and a curvilinear models with this data.

The following section will attempt to improve the model fit by adding polynomial terms.
Plots of residuals

\[ x = \text{residuals}(\text{model}) \]

```r
library(rcompanion)
plotNormalHistogram(x)
```

![Histogram of residuals](image1)

```r
plot(fitted(model),
     residuals(model))
```

![Plot of fitted vs. residuals](image2)

**Polynomial regression**

Polynomial regression adds additional terms to the model, so that the terms include some set of the linear, quadratic, cubic, and quartic, etc., forms of the independent variable. These terms are the independent variable, the square of the independent variable, the cube of the independent variable, and so on.
Create polynomial terms in the data frame
Because the variable Calories is an integer variable, we will need to convert it to a numeric variable. Otherwise R will produce errors when we try to square and cube the values of the variable.

Our new variables will be Calories2 for the square of Calories, Calories3 for the cube of Calories, and so on.

```r
Data$Calories = as.numeric(Data$Calories)
Data$Calories2 = Data$Calories * Data$Calories
Data$Calories3 = Data$Calories * Data$Calories * Data$Calories
Data$Calories4 = Data$Calories * Data$Calories * Data$Calories * Data$Calories
```

Define models and determine best model
Chances are that we will not need all of the polynomial terms to adequately model our data. One approach to choosing the best model is to construct several models with increasing numbers of polynomial terms, and then use a model selection criterion like AIC, AICc, or BIC to choose the best one. These criteria balance the goodness-of-fit of each model versus its complexity. That is, the goal is to find a model which adequately explains the data without having too many terms.

We can use the `compareLM` function to list AIC, AICc, and BIC for a series of models.

```r
model.1 = lm(Sodium ~ Calories, data = Data)
model.2 = lm(Sodium ~ Calories + Calories2, data = Data)
model.3 = lm(Sodium ~ Calories + Calories2 + Calories3, data = Data)
model.4 = lm(Sodium ~ Calories + Calories2 + Calories3 + Calories4, data = Data)
library(rcompanion)
compareLM(model.1, model.2, model.3, model.4)
```

```
$Models
   Formula
1 "Sodium ~ Calories"
2 "Sodium ~ Calories + Calories2"
3 "Sodium ~ Calories + Calories2 + Calories3"
4 "Sodium ~ Calories + Calories2 + Calories3 + Calories4"

$Fit.criteria
1       2     43 461.1 461.7 466.5  0.7207   0.7142 0.9696   0.2800
2       3     42 431.4 432.4 438.6  0.8621   0.8556 0.9791   0.5839
3       4     41 433.2 434.7 442.2  0.8627   0.8526 0.9749   0.4288
```
If we use BIC as our model fit criterion, we would choose model.2 as the best model for these data, since it had the lowest BIC. AIC or AICc could have been used as criteria instead.

BIC tends to penalize models more than the other criteria for having additional parameters, so it will tend to choose models with fewer terms.

There is not generally accepted advice as to which model fitting criterion to use. My advice might be to use BIC when a more parsimonious model (one with fewer terms) is a priority, and in other cases use AICc.

For final model, produce model coefficients, p-value, and $R^2$ value

```r
summary(model.2)
```

```
```

Residual standard error: 27.65 on 42 degrees of freedom
Multiple R-squared: 0.8621, Adjusted R-squared: 0.8556
F-statistic: 131.3 on 2 and 42 DF, p-value: < 2.2e-16

Note on retaining lower-order effects
In polynomial regression, we typically keep all lower order effects of any higher order effects we include. So, in this case, if the final model included Calories2, but the effect of Calories were not significant, we would still include Calories in the model since we are including Calories2.

Plot data with best fit line
For bivariate data, the function `plotPredy` will plot the data and the predicted line for the model. It also works for polynomial functions, if the `order` option is changed.

```r
library(rcompanion)

plotPredy(data = Data,
  y = Sodium,
  x = Calories,
  x2 = Calories2,
  model = model.2,
  order = 2,
  xlab = "Calories per day",
  ylab = "Sodium intake per day")
```
Plot of best fit line with confidence interval
For polynomial regression, the `ggplot` function can plot the best-fit curve with the confidence interval of the curve shaded.

```r
library(ggplot2)

ggplot(Data, aes(x = Calories, y = Sodium)) +
  geom_point() +
  geom_smooth(method = "lm",
              formula = y ~ poly(x, 2, raw=TRUE),
              se = TRUE)
```
Plots of residuals

\[ x = \text{residuals(model.2)} \]

```r
library(rcompanion)
plotNormalHistogram(x)
```

![Histogram of residuals](image1)

```r
plot(fitted(model.2), residuals(model.2))
```

![Residuals vs. fitted values](image2)

A few of xkcd comics

*Correlation*

xkcd.com/552/

*Extrapolating*

xkcd.com/605/
Correlation and Linear Regression

Correlation and Linear Regression

References


Exercises U

1. Consider the data from Brendon, Jason, Melissa, Paula, and McGuirk. Report for each answer, indicate how you know, when appropriate, by reporting the values of the statistic you are using or other information you used.

   a. Which two variables are the most strongly correlated?

   b. Which two variables are the least strongly correlated?

   c. Are there any pairs of variables that are uncorrelated? Which?

   d. Name a pair of variables that is positively correlated.

   e. Name a pair of variables that is negatively correlated.

   f. Is Sodium significantly correlated with Calories?

   g. By linear regression, is there a significant linear relationship of Sodium vs. Calories?

   h. Does the quadratic polynomial model fit the Sodium vs. Calories data better than the linear model? Consider the p-value, the r-squared value, the range of values for each of Sodium and Calories, and your practical conclusions.

2. As part of a professional skills program, a 4-H club tests its members for typing proficiency (Words.per.minute), Proofreading skill, proficiency with using a Spreadsheet, and acumen in Statistics.

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Instructor</th>
<th>Grade</th>
<th>Words.per.minute</th>
<th>Proofreading</th>
<th>Spreadsheet</th>
<th>Statistics</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>'Dr. Katz'</td>
<td>6</td>
<td>35</td>
<td>53</td>
<td>75</td>
<td>61</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>'Dr. Katz'</td>
<td>6</td>
<td>50</td>
<td>77</td>
<td>24</td>
<td>51</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>'Dr. Katz'</td>
<td>6</td>
<td>55</td>
<td>71</td>
<td>62</td>
<td>55</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>'Dr. Katz'</td>
<td>6</td>
<td>60</td>
<td>78</td>
<td>27</td>
<td>91</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>'Dr. Katz'</td>
<td>6</td>
<td>65</td>
<td>84</td>
<td>44</td>
<td>95</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>'Dr. Katz'</td>
<td>6</td>
<td>60</td>
<td>79</td>
<td>38</td>
<td>50</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>
**Correlation and Linear Regression**

**Summary and Analysis of Extension Education Program Evaluation in R**

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>'Dr. Katz'</th>
<th>6</th>
<th>70</th>
<th>96</th>
<th>12</th>
<th>94</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>'Dr. Katz'</td>
<td>6</td>
<td>55</td>
<td>61</td>
<td>55</td>
<td>76</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>'Dr. Katz'</td>
<td>6</td>
<td>45</td>
<td>73</td>
<td>59</td>
<td>75</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>'Dr. Katz'</td>
<td>6</td>
<td>55</td>
<td>75</td>
<td>55</td>
<td>80</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>'Dr. Katz'</td>
<td>6</td>
<td>60</td>
<td>85</td>
<td>35</td>
<td>84</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>'Dr. Katz'</td>
<td>6</td>
<td>45</td>
<td>61</td>
<td>49</td>
<td>80</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>'Laura'</td>
<td>7</td>
<td>55</td>
<td>59</td>
<td>79</td>
<td>57</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>'Laura'</td>
<td>7</td>
<td>60</td>
<td>60</td>
<td>60</td>
<td>60</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>'Laura'</td>
<td>7</td>
<td>75</td>
<td>90</td>
<td>19</td>
<td>64</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>'Laura'</td>
<td>7</td>
<td>65</td>
<td>87</td>
<td>32</td>
<td>65</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>'Laura'</td>
<td>7</td>
<td>60</td>
<td>70</td>
<td>33</td>
<td>94</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>'Laura'</td>
<td>7</td>
<td>70</td>
<td>84</td>
<td>27</td>
<td>54</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>'Laura'</td>
<td>7</td>
<td>75</td>
<td>87</td>
<td>24</td>
<td>59</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>'Laura'</td>
<td>7</td>
<td>70</td>
<td>97</td>
<td>38</td>
<td>74</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>'Laura'</td>
<td>7</td>
<td>65</td>
<td>86</td>
<td>30</td>
<td>52</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>'Laura'</td>
<td>7</td>
<td>72</td>
<td>91</td>
<td>36</td>
<td>66</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>'Laura'</td>
<td>7</td>
<td>73</td>
<td>88</td>
<td>20</td>
<td>57</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>'Laura'</td>
<td>7</td>
<td>65</td>
<td>86</td>
<td>19</td>
<td>71</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>'Ben Katz'</td>
<td>8</td>
<td>55</td>
<td>84</td>
<td>20</td>
<td>76</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>'Ben Katz'</td>
<td>8</td>
<td>55</td>
<td>63</td>
<td>44</td>
<td>94</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>'Ben Katz'</td>
<td>8</td>
<td>70</td>
<td>95</td>
<td>31</td>
<td>88</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>'Ben Katz'</td>
<td>8</td>
<td>55</td>
<td>63</td>
<td>69</td>
<td>93</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>'Ben Katz'</td>
<td>8</td>
<td>65</td>
<td>65</td>
<td>47</td>
<td>70</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>'Ben Katz'</td>
<td>8</td>
<td>60</td>
<td>61</td>
<td>63</td>
<td>92</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>'Ben Katz'</td>
<td>8</td>
<td>70</td>
<td>80</td>
<td>35</td>
<td>60</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>'Ben Katz'</td>
<td>8</td>
<td>60</td>
<td>88</td>
<td>38</td>
<td>58</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>'Ben Katz'</td>
<td>8</td>
<td>60</td>
<td>71</td>
<td>65</td>
<td>99</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>'Ben Katz'</td>
<td>8</td>
<td>62</td>
<td>78</td>
<td>46</td>
<td>54</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>'Ben Katz'</td>
<td>8</td>
<td>63</td>
<td>89</td>
<td>17</td>
<td>60</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>'Ben Katz'</td>
<td>8</td>
<td>65</td>
<td>75</td>
<td>33</td>
<td>77</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

For each of the following, answer the question, and show the output from the analyses you used to answer the question. Where relevant, indicate how you know.

a. Which two variables are the most strongly correlated?

b. Name a pair of variables that are uncorrelated.

c. Name a pair of variables that is positively correlated.

d. Name a pair of variables that is negatively correlated.

e. Consider the correlation between Spreadsheet and Proofreading.

   i. What is the value of the correlation coefficient $r$ for this correlation?
   
   ii. What is the value of $\tau$?
   
   iii. What is the value of $\rho$?
f. Conduct a linear regression of Proofreading vs. Words.per.minute.

i. What is the p-value for this model?

ii. What is the r-squared value?

iii. Do the residuals suggest that the linear regression model is an appropriate model?

iv. What can you conclude about the results of the linear regression? Consider the p-value, the r-squared value, the range of values for each of Proofreading and Words.per.minute, and your practical conclusions.

---

**Advanced Parametric Methods**

**Packages used in this chapter**

The packages used in this chapter include:

- robustbase
- psych
- minpack.lm
- car
- rcompanion
- mblm

The following commands will install these packages if they are not already installed:

```r
if(!require(robustbase)){install.packages("robustbase")}
if(!require(psych)){install.packages("psych")}
if(!require(nlstools)){install.packages("nlstools")}
if(!require(minpack.lm)){install.packages("minpack.lm")}
if(!require(car)){install.packages("car")}
if(!require(rcompanion)){install.packages("rcompanion")}
if(!require(mblm)){install.packages("mblm")}
```

**More complex experimental designs**

Except for t-tests, the approach of this book for parametric statistics has been to develop linear models (with the *lm* function) or mixed effects models (with the *nlme* or *lme4* packages) and then to apply analysis of variance, model checking, and post-hoc testing.
These relatively simple models can be expanded to include more independent variables of either continuous or factor type. Likewise, more complex designs can include nested and crossed factors. Some traditional experimental designs include Latin square, split plot, and incomplete block.

**Analysis of co-variance**

Analysis of covariance combines continuous independent variables with factor independent variables.

A related design is the paired watershed design which, while it was developed for watershed studies, can be adapted to various situations in a variety of fields.


**Nonlinear regression and curvilinear regression**

Nonlinear and curvilinear regression are similar to linear regression, except that the relationship between the dependent variable and the independent variable is curved in some way. Specific methods include polynomial regression, spline regression, and nonlinear regression.

Polynomial regression was covered briefly in the previous chapter, while some examples of curvilinear regression are shown below in the “Linear plateau and quadratic plateau models” section in this chapter.

For further discussion, see:


**Multiple regression**

Multiple regression is similar to linear regression, except that the model contains multiple independent variables.

The polynomial regression example in the previous chapter is one example of multiple regression.

For further discussion, see:
Logistic regression

Logistic regression is similar to linear regression, except that the dependent variable is categorical. In standard logistic regression, the dependent variable has only two levels, and in multinomial logistic regression, the dependent variable can have more than two levels.

For examples of logistic regression, see the chapter *Models for Nominal Data* in this book.

Analysis of count data

When the dependent variable is a counted quantity and not a measured quantity, it is appropriate to use Poisson regression or related techniques.

For a discussion of when standard parametric approaches may or may not be used with count data, see the “Count data may not be appropriate for common parametric tests” section in the *Introduction to Parametric Tests* chapter.

For examples of appropriate ways to model count data, see the *Regression for Count Data* chapter in this book.

Robust techniques

Standard parametric analyses can be sensitive to outliers and other deviations from assumptions of the analyses. The example below shows that a single point can affect the predicted line from standard linear regression. It is said that this point has high leverage, as so has high influence in the model.

One approach in these cases is to use nonparametric techniques.

Another approach is to adjust the model to better fit the data.

A third way is to determine if certain data points are true outliers, and then give them further examination.

A fourth way is to use a robust technique such as robust regression. The references below discuss robust regression and robust techniques appropriate for designs lending themselves to an analysis of variance approach.


Search for Robust regression in the following:

**Example of robust linear regression**
Note that this example does not include checking assumptions of the model, but is intended only to compare the results of ordinary linear regression and robust regression when there is a data point with high influence.

```r
Input="
X Y
0 0
1 2
2 5
3 6
4 9
5 10
6 11
7 14
8 16
9 20
10 44"

Data = read.table(textConnection(Input),header=TRUE)

Linear regression

model = lm(Y ~ X,
data = Data)

summary(model)

Coefficients:

| Estimate | Std. Error | t value | Pr(>|t|) |
|----------|------------|---------|----------|
| (Intercept) | -3.1364 | 3.6614 | -0.857 0.413888 |
| X | 3.1182 | 0.6189 | 5.038 0.000701 *** |

Residual standard error: 6.491 on 9 degrees of freedom
Multiple R-squared:  0.7383,  Adjusted R-squared:  0.7092
F-statistic: 25.39 on 1 and 9 DF,  p-value: 0.0007013

Calculate statistics and plot

Pvalue = pf(summary(model)$fstatistic[1],
summary(model)$fstatistic[2],
summary(model)$fstatistic[3],
lower.tail = FALSE)

R2 = summary(model)$r.squared

t1 = paste0("p-value: ", signif(Pvalue, digits=3))

668
t2 = paste0("R-squared: ", signif(R2, digits=3))
t3 = paste0("Intercept: ", signif(coef(model)[1], digits=3))
t4 = paste0("Slope: ", signif(coef(model)[2], digits=3))

plot(Y ~ X,
data = Data,
pch = 16)
abline(model,
col="blue",
lwd=2)
text(0, 38, labels = t1, pos=4)
text(0, 33, labels = t2, pos=4)
text(0, 28, labels = t3, pos=4)
text(0, 23, labels = t4, pos=4)

Cook's distance

Cook's distance is a measure of influence of each data point, specifically determining how much predicted values would change if the observation were deleted. It is sometimes recommended that a Cook's distance of 1 or more merits further examination of the data point. However, there are other recommendations for critical values for Cook's distance.

In this case, the high Cook's distance for observation 11 makes it a candidate for further evaluation.

barplot(cooks.distance(model))
Plot of residuals
This plot suggests that the residuals are not independent of the fitted values. We would probably want to adjust the model by adding additional terms, using a nonlinear or curvilinear approach, or using a robust analysis to minimize the influence of certain data points.

```r
plot(fitted(model), residuals(model))
```

Robust regression

```r
library(robustbase)

model.r = lmrob(Y ~ X,
    data = Data)

summary(model.r)
```

Coefficients:

|                  | Estimate | Std. Error | t value | Pr(>|t|) |
|------------------|----------|------------|---------|----------|
| (Intercept)      | 0.09015  | 0.32804    | 0.275   | 0.79     |
| X                | 2.04249  | 0.10970    | 18.619  | 1.7e-08  | ***
Robust residual standard error: 0.9378
Multiple R-squared: 0.9817, Adjusted R-squared: 0.9796

Calculate statistics and plot

```r
model.null = lmrob(Y ~ 1,
data = Data)
Pvalue = anova(model.r, model.null)[4][2,1]
R2 = summary(model.r)$r.squared
t1 = paste0("p-value: ", signif(Pvalue, digits=3))
t2 = paste0("R-squared: ", signif(R2, digits=3))
t3 = paste0("Intercept: ", signif(coefficients(model.r)[1], digits=3))
t4 = paste0("Slope: ", signif(coefficients(model.r)[2], digits=3))

plot(Y ~ X,
data = Data,
pch = 16)
abline(model.r,
col="blue",
lwd=2)
text(0, 38, labels = t1, pos=4)
text(0, 33, labels = t2, pos=4)
text(0, 28, labels = t3, pos=4)
text(0, 23, labels = t4, pos=4)
```

![Graph showing regression analysis results](image-url)
Contrasts in Linear Models

Contrasts can be used in linear models to compare groups of treatments to one another. For example, if you were testing four curricula and wanted to compare the effect of One and Two vs. Three and Four, you could accomplish this with a single-degree-of freedom contrast.


Linear plateau and quadratic plateau models

Linear plateau and quadratic plateau models are segmented models for bivariate data, typically where the y-value increases with an increase in x to some critical value, beyond which the y-value ceases to increase. The statistics of interest include the critical value (the x-value above which there is no further increase in y), and the plateau value (the statistically highest value that y reaches).

For another example of these models, see the “Use the best model” section of the Basic Plots chapter.

Also included in this section is an example of curvilinear regression, with a Mitscherlich–Bray model fit to the same data.

Examples of linear plateau and quadratic plateau models

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Instructor</th>
<th>Grade</th>
<th>Weight</th>
<th>Calories</th>
<th>Sodium</th>
<th>Score</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>'Brendon Small'</td>
<td>6</td>
<td>43</td>
<td>2069</td>
<td>1287</td>
<td>77</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>'Brendon Small'</td>
<td>6</td>
<td>41</td>
<td>1990</td>
<td>1164</td>
<td>76</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>'Brendon Small'</td>
<td>6</td>
<td>40</td>
<td>1975</td>
<td>1177</td>
<td>76</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>'Brendon Small'</td>
<td>6</td>
<td>44</td>
<td>2116</td>
<td>1262</td>
<td>84</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>'Brendon Small'</td>
<td>6</td>
<td>45</td>
<td>2161</td>
<td>1271</td>
<td>86</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>'Brendon Small'</td>
<td>6</td>
<td>44</td>
<td>2091</td>
<td>1222</td>
<td>87</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>
Data = read.table(textConnection(Input), header=TRUE)

### Order factors by the order in data frame
### Otherwise, R will alphabetize them

Data$Instructor = factor(Data$Instructor,
                        levels=unique(Data$Instructor))

### Check the data frame

library(psych)

headTail(Data)
str(Data)
summary(Data)

### Remove unnecessary objects
rm(Input)

### Linear plateau model
The `nls` function in the native `stats` package can fit nonlinear and curvilinear functions. To accomplish this, a function—`linplat`, here—will be defined with the \( x \) and \( y \) variables (Calories and Sodium) along with parameters \((a, b, \text{and } clx)\). It is the goal of the `nls` function to find the best fit values for these parameters for these data.

The code below starts with an attempt to find reasonable starting values for the parameters. If these starting values don’t yield appropriate results, other starting values can be tried.

The fitted parameters \( a \), \( b \), and \( clx \) designate the best fit intercept, slope, and critical \( x \) value. The plateau value is calculated as \( a + b \times clx \).

### Find reasonable initial values for parameters
```r
fit.lm = lm(Sodium ~ Calories, data=Data)
a.ini = fit.lm$coefficients[1]
b.ini = fit.lm$coefficients[2]
clx.ini = mean(Data$Calories)
```

### Define linear plateau function
```r
linplat = function(x, a, b, clx)
  {ifelse(x < clx, a + b * x,
          a + b * clx)}
```

### Find best fit parameters
```r
model = nls(Sodium ~ linplat(Calories, a, b, clx),
             data = Data,
             start = list(a = a.ini, b = b.ini, clx = clx.ini),
             trace = FALSE,
             nls.control(maxiter = 1000))

summary(model)
```

**Parameters:**
| Estimate | Std. Error | t value | Pr(>|t|) |
|----------|------------|---------|----------|

674
### Define null model

```r
nullfunct = function(x, m){m}

m.ini = mean(Data$Sodium)

null = nls(Sodium ~ nullfunct(Calories, m),
           data = Data,
           start = list(m = m.ini),
           trace = FALSE,
           nls.control(maxiter = 1000))
```

### Find p-value and pseudo R-squared

```r
library(rcompanion)
nagelkerke(model, null)
```

```r
$Pseudo.R.squared.for.model.vs.null

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Pseudo.R.squared</th>
<th></th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>McFadden</td>
<td>0.195417</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Cox and Snell (ML)</td>
<td>0.892004</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Nagelkerke (Cragg and Uhler)</td>
<td>0.892014</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>
```

```r
$Likelihood.ratio.test

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Df.diff</th>
<th>LogLik.diff</th>
<th>Chisq</th>
<th>p.value</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>-2</td>
<td>-50.077</td>
<td>100.15</td>
<td>1.785e-22</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>
```

### Determine confidence intervals for parameter estimates

```r
library(nlstools)
confint2(model, level = 0.95)
```

```r
2.5 %     97.5 %
a   -363.1711583  105.4604611
b     0.5498523    0.7654999
clx  2292.5693351 2360.4610904
```

```r
library(nlstools)
Boot = nlsBoot(model)
```
summary(Boot)

-----
Bootstrap statistics
   Estimate   Std. error
  a  -143.519074  111.182930
  b    0.664326   0.051329
clx  2326.812417 16.714827

-----
Median of bootstrap estimates and percentile confidence intervals
   Median      2.5%       97.5%
  a  -143.547479 -376.322446   73.437548
  b    0.663848   0.565207   0.771089
clx  2327.127932 2292.524830  2363.929178

Plot data with best fit line

library(rcompanion)
plotPredy(data = Data,
          x = Calories,
          y = Sodium,
          model = model,
          xlab = "Calories per day",
          ylab = "Sodium intake per day")

A plot of daily sodium intake vs. daily caloric intake for students. Best fit linear plateau model is shown. Critical x value = 2327 calories, and Plateau y = 1401 mg. p < 0.0001. Pseudo R-squared (Nagelkerke) = 0.892.
Plots of residuals

```r
x = residuals(model)

library(rcompanion)

plotNormalHistogram(x)
```

![Histogram and normal plot](image)

```r
plot(fitted(model), residuals(model))
```

### Quadratic plateau model
A quadratic plateau model is similar to a linear plateau model, except that the linear segment is replaced with a quadratic function.

The fitted parameters $a$, $b$, and $clx$ designate the best fit intercept, linear coefficient, and critical $x$ value. The quadratic coefficient is calculated as $-0.5 \times b / clx$. The plateau value is calculated as $a + b \times clx - 0.5 \times b \times clx$.

### Find reasonable initial values for parameters
fit.lm = lm(Sodium ~ Calories, data=Data)

a.ini = fit.lm$coefficients[1]
b.ini = fit.lm$coefficients[2]
clx.ini = mean(Data$Calories)

### Define quadratic plateau function

quadplat = function(x, a, b, clx) {
  ifelse(x < clx, a + b * x + (-0.5*b/clx) * x * x,
         a + b * clx + (-0.5*b/clx) * clx * clx)
}

### Find best fit parameters

model = nls(Sodium ~ quadplat(Calories, a, b, clx),
            data = Data,
            start = list(a = a.ini,
                         b = b.ini,
                         clx = clx.ini),
            trace = FALSE,
            nls.control(maxiter = 1000))

summary(model)

Parameters:
  Estimate Std. Error t value Pr(>|t|)
 a  -4217.72  935.11  -4.510 5.13e-05 ***
b   4.4920  0.8251   5.444 2.49e-06 ***
clx 2504.41  48.97   51.14   < 2e-16 ***

p-value and pseudo R-squared

### Define null model

nullfunct = function(x, m){m}

m.ini = mean(Data$Sodium)

null = nls(Sodium ~ nullfunct(Calories, m),
            data = Data,
            start = list(m = m.ini),
            trace = FALSE,
            nls.control(maxiter = 1000))

### Find p-value and pseudo R-squared

library(rcompanion)
nagelkerke(model, null)

$Pseudo.R.squared.for.model.vs.null

Pseudo.R.squared
McFadden 0.175609
Cox and Snell (ML) 0.864674
Nagelkerke (Cragg and Uhler) 0.864683

$Likelihood.ratio.test
Df.diff LogLik.diff Chisq p.value
-2 -45.001 90.003 2.8583e-20

Determine confidence intervals for parameter estimates

library(nlstools)

confint2(model, level = 0.95)

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th></th>
<th>2.5%</th>
<th>97.5%</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>a</td>
<td>-6104.855900</td>
<td>-2330.583368</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>b</td>
<td>2.826818</td>
<td>6.157185</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>clx</td>
<td>2405.584577</td>
<td>2603.227200</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

library(nlstools)

Boot = nlsBoot(model)

summary(Boot)

-----
Bootstrap statistics

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th></th>
<th>Estimate</th>
<th>Std. error</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>a</td>
<td>-4294.518746</td>
<td>956.6204011</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>b</td>
<td>4.560459</td>
<td>0.8448001</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>clx</td>
<td>2510.154733</td>
<td>53.3134728</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

-----
Median of bootstrap estimates and percentile confidence intervals

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th></th>
<th>Median</th>
<th>2.5%</th>
<th>97.5%</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>a</td>
<td>-4250.030936</td>
<td>-6311.47965</td>
<td>-2546.971334</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>b</td>
<td>4.515874</td>
<td>3.03532</td>
<td>6.359601</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>clx</td>
<td>2504.795426</td>
<td>2425.75206</td>
<td>2626.813217</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

Plot data with best fit line

library(rcompanion)

plotPredy(data = Data, x = Calories,
\begin{verbatim}
library(rcompanion)
plotNormalHistogram(x)
\end{verbatim}

Plots of residuals

\begin{verbatim}
x = residuals(model)
library(rcompanion)
plotNormalHistogram(x)
\end{verbatim}

A plot of daily sodium intake vs. daily caloric intake for students. Best fit quadratic plateau model is shown. Critical x value = 2504 calories, and Plateau y = 1403 mg. p < 0.0001. Pseudo R-squared (Nagelkerke) = 0.865.
Mitscherlich–Bray model
This model is an example of curvilinear regression, specifically with a general exponential model. The model here is specified as $y = a - be^{-cx}$.

In the function below, the constant $D$ is set to the minimum of $Calories + 1$. This will be subtracted from the $x$ values because the numerically large values for $Calories$ make the fitting of the exponential function difficult without doing this subtraction.

### Find reasonable initial values for parameters

```r
a.ini   = 1400
b.ini   = -120
c.ini   = 0.01
```

### Set a constant to adjust $x$ values

```r
D       = 1974
```

### Define exponential function

```r
expon = function(x, a, b, c) {
    a + b * exp(-1 * c * (x - D))
}
```

### Find best fit parameters

```r
model = nls(Sodium ~ expon(Calories, a, b, c),
    data = Data,
    start = list(a = a.ini,
                  b = b.ini,
                  c = c.ini),
    trace = FALSE,
    nls.control(maxiter = 10000))
```
summary(model)

Parameters:
  Estimate Std. Error t value Pr(>|t|)
a  1.450e+03  2.309e+01  62.790  < 2e-16 ***
b -2.966e+02  2.142e+01 -13.846  < 2e-16 ***
c  3.807e-03  7.973e-04  4.776  2.2e-05 ***

p-value and pseudo R-squared

### Define null model

nullfunct = function(x, m){m}
m.ini = mean(Data$Sodium)
null = nls(Sodium ~ nullfunct(Calories, m),
data = Data,
start = list(m = m.ini),
trace = FALSE,
nls.control(maxiter = 1000))

### Find p-value and pseudo R-squared

library(rcompanion)
nagelkerke(model, null)

$Pseudo.R.squared.for.model.vs.null

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Pseudo.R.squared</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>McFadden</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>0.162515</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Cox and Snell (ML)</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>0.842908</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Nagelkerke (Cragg and Uhler)</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>0.842918</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

$Likelihood.ratio.test

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Df.diff LogLik.diff Chisq   p.value</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>-2</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>-41.646</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>83.292</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>8.1931e-19</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

Determine confidence intervals for parameter estimates

library(nlstools)

confint2(model, level = 0.95)

          2.5 %        97.5 %
a  1.403060e+03  1.496244e+03
b -3.398171e+02 -2.533587e+02
c  2.198512e-03  5.416355e-03
library(nlstools)

Boot = nlsBoot(model)

summary(Boot)

-----
Bootstrap statistics
          Estimate  Std. error
a  1.453109e+03  2.522906e+01
b -3.005815e+02  2.244473e+01
c  3.850955e-03  7.832523e-04

-----
Median of bootstrap estimates and percentile confidence intervals
          Median          2.5%         97.5%
a  1.449234e+03  1.415464e+03  1.513570e+03
b -2.998719e+02 -3.474264e+02 -2.566514e+02
c  3.827519e-03  2.390379e-03  5.410459e-03

Plot data with best fit line

library(rcompanion)

plotPredy(data = Data, 
x = Calories, 
y = Sodium, 
model = model, 
xlab = "Calories per day", 
ylab = "Sodium intake per day")

A plot of daily sodium intake vs. daily caloric intake for students. Best fit exponential model is shown. p < 0.0001. Pseudo R-squared (Nagelkerke) = 0.843.
Plots of residuals

\[ x = \text{residuals(model)} \]

```
library(rcompanion)
plotNormalHistogram(x)
```

![Histogram of residuals](image)

```
plot(fitted(model), residuals(model))
```

![Residuals vs. fitted values](image)

Better functions to fit nonlinear regression
Finding reasonable starting values for some functions can be difficult, and the `nls` function may not find a solution for certain functions if starting values are not close to their best values. One issue is that the Gauss–Newton method that `nls` uses will fail in some situations.
Typically, I will put my data into a spreadsheet and make a plot of the function I am trying to fit. I can then change parameter values and watch the curve change until I get the curve reasonably close to the data.

The package *minpack.lm* has a function *nlsLM*, which uses the Levenberg–Marquardt method. It is more successful at fitting parameters for difficult functions when the initial values for parameters are poor. An example of using this package is shown in the “Fitting curvilinear models with the *minpack.lm* package” below.

(The package *nlmrt* uses the Marquardt–Nash method, which is also tolerant of difficult functions and poor starting values for parameters. However, at the time of writing, this package is not available for newer versions of R.)

**Fitting curvilinear models with the *minpack.lm* package**

For a plot of the best fit line and plots of residuals, see the previous section of this chapter.

```r
library(minpack.lm)

### Define exponential function

```{r}
expon = function(x, a, b, c) {
  a + b * exp(-1 * c * (x - D))
}
```

### Find best fit parameters

```{r}
model = nlsLM(Sodium ~ expon(Calories, a, b, c),
               data = Data,
               start = list(a = 1400,
                             b = -1,
                             c = 0.1))

summary(model)

Parameters:
  Estimate Std. Error t value Pr(>|t|)
    a 1.450e+03 2.309e+01 62.789  < 2e-16 ***
    b-2.966e+02 2.142e+01 -13.846  < 2e-16 ***
    c 3.807e-03 7.972e-04  4.776  2.2e-05 ***
```

**Cate–Nelson analysis**

Cate–Nelson analysis is a useful approach for some bivariate data that don’t fit neatly into linear model, linear–plateau model, or curvilinear model. The analysis divides the data into two populations: those *x* values that are likely to have high *y* values, and those *x* values that are likely to have low *y* values.

For more discussion and examples, see:

```r
library(rcompanion)
cateNelson(x = Data$Calories,
y = Data$Sodium,
plotit=TRUE,
hollow=TRUE,
xlab="Calories per day",
ylab="Sodium intake, mg per day",
trend="positive",
clx=1,
cly=1,
xthreshold=0.10,
ythreshold=0.15)
```

**Final model:**

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>n</th>
<th>CLx</th>
<th>SS</th>
<th>CLy</th>
<th>Q.I</th>
<th>Q.II</th>
<th>Q.III</th>
<th>Q.IV</th>
<th>Fisher.p.value</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>1</td>
<td>45</td>
<td>2209.5</td>
<td>190716.1</td>
<td>1317</td>
<td>0</td>
<td>30</td>
<td>0</td>
<td>15</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

A plot of daily sodium intake vs. daily caloric intake for students, with a Cate–Nelson analysis applied. Students with a Caloric intake greater than 2210 calories tended to have a sodium intake greater than 1317 mg per day.

### Transforming Data

Transforming data is one step in addressing data that do not fit model assumptions, and is also used to coerce different variables to have similar distributions. Before transforming data, see the “Steps to handle violations of assumption” section in the *Assessing Model Assumptions* chapter.
**Transforming data**

Most parametric tests require that residuals be normally distributed and that the residuals be homoscedastic.

One approach when residuals fail to meet these conditions is to transform one or more variables to better follow a normal distribution. Often, just the dependent variable in a model will need to be transformed. However, in complex models and multiple regression, it is sometimes helpful to transform both dependent and independent variables that deviate greatly from a normal distribution.

There is nothing illicit in transforming variables, but you must be careful about how the results from analyses with transformed variables are reported. For example, looking at the turbidity of water across three locations, you might report, “Locations showed a significant difference in log-transformed turbidity.” To present means or other summary statistics, you might present the mean of transformed values, or back transform means to their original units.

Some measurements in nature are naturally normally distributed. Other measurements are naturally log-normally distributed. These include some natural pollutants in water: There may be many low values with fewer high values and even fewer very high values.

For right-skewed data—tail is on the right, positive skew—, common transformations include square root, cube root, and log.

For left-skewed data—tail is on the left, negative skew—, common transformations include square root (constant – x), cube root (constant – x), and log (constant – x).

Because log (0) is undefined—as is the log of any negative number—, when using a log transformation, a constant should be added to all values to make them all positive before transformation. It is also sometimes helpful to add a constant when using other transformations.

Another approach is to use a general power transformation, such as Tukey’s Ladder of Powers or a Box–Cox transformation. These determine a $\lambda$ value, which is used as the power coefficient to transform values. $X_{\text{new}} = X^{\lambda}$ for Tukey, and $X_{\text{new}} = (X^{\lambda} - 1) / \lambda$ for Box–Cox.

The `transformTukey` function in the `rcompanion` package finds the $\lambda$ which makes a single vector of values—that is, one variable—as normally distributed as possible with a simple power transformation.

The Box–Cox procedure is included in the `MASS` package with the function `boxcox`. It uses a log-likelihood procedure to find the $\lambda$ to use to transform the dependent variable for a linear model (such as an ANOVA or linear regression). It can also be used on a single vector.

**Packages used in this chapter**

The packages used in this chapter include:
Example of transforming skewed data

This example uses hypothetical data of river water turbidity. Turbidity is a measure of how cloudy water is due to suspended material in the water. Water quality parameters such as this are often naturally log-normally distributed: values are often low, but are occasionally high or very high.

The first plot is a histogram of the Turbidity values, with a normal curve superimposed. Looking at the gray bars, this data is skewed strongly to the right (positive skew), and looks more or less log-normal. The gray bars deviate noticeably from the red normal curve.

The second plot is a normal quantile plot (normal Q–Q plot). If the data were normally distributed, the points would follow the red line fairly closely.

```r
turbidity <- c(1.0, 1.2, 1.1, 1.1, 2.4, 2.2, 2.6, 4.1, 5.0, 10.0, 4.0, 4.1, 4.2, 4.1, 5.1, 4.5, 5.0, 15.2, 10.0, 20.0, 1.1, 1.1, 1.2, 1.6, 2.2, 3.0, 4.0, 10.5)
library(rcompanion)
plotNormalHistogram(turbidity)
qqnorm(turbidity,
       ylab="Sample Quantiles for Turbidity")
```
Square root transformation
Since the data is right-skewed, we will apply common transformations for right-skewed data: square root, cube root, and log. The square root transformation improves the distribution of the data somewhat.

\[ T_{\text{sqrt}} = \sqrt{Turbidity} \]

```
library(rcompanion)
plotNormalHistogram(T.sqrt)
```

Cube root transformation
The cube root transformation is stronger than the square root transformation.
\[ T_{\text{cub}} = \text{sign}(\text{Turbidity}) \times |\text{Turbidity}|^{1/3} \]  # Avoid complex numbers
# for some cube roots

library(rcompanion)

plotNormalHistogram(T_cub)

---

**Log transformation**

The log transformation is a relatively strong transformation. Because certain measurements in nature are naturally log-normal, it is often a successful transformation for certain data sets. While the transformed data here does not follow a normal distribution very well, it is probably about as close as we can get with these particular data.

\[ T_{\log} = \log(\text{Turbidity}) \]
Tukey's Ladder of Powers transformation

The approach of Tukey's Ladder of Powers uses a power transformation on a data set. For example, raising data to a 0.5 power is equivalent to applying a square root transformation; raising data to a 0.33 power is equivalent to applying a cube root transformation.

Here, I use the `transformTukey` function, which performs iterative Shapiro–Wilk tests, and finds the lambda value that maximizes the W statistic from those tests. In essence, this finds the power transformation that makes the data fit the normal distribution as closely as possible with this type of transformation.

Left skewed values should be adjusted with (constant – value), to convert the skew to right skewed, and perhaps making all values positive. In some cases of right skewed data, it may be beneficial to add a constant to make all data values positive before transformation. For large values, it may be helpful to scale values to a more reasonable range.

In this example, the resultant lambda of -0.1 is slightly stronger than a log transformation, since a log transformation corresponds to a lambda of 0.

```r
## Some options require NCStats

library(rcompanion)
T_tuk = transformTukey(Turbidity, plotit=FALSE)

lambda    W  Shapiro.p.value
-0.1 0.935 0.08248

if (lambda > 0){TRANS = x ^ lambda}
if (lambda == 0){TRANS = log(x)}
if (lambda < 0){TRANS = -1 * x ^ lambda}

library(rcompanion)
plotNormalHistogram(T_tuk)
```
Example of Tukey-transformed data in ANOVA
For an example of how transforming data can improve the distribution of the residuals of a parametric analysis, we will use the same turbidity values, but assign them to three different locations.

Transforming the turbidity values to be more normally distributed, both improves the distribution of the residuals of the analysis and makes a more powerful test, lowering the $p$-value.

```
Input =("Location Turbidity
a 1.0
a 1.2
a 1.1
a 1.1
a 2.4
a 2.2
a 2.6
a 4.1
a 5.0
a 10.0
b 4.0
b 4.1
b 4.2
b 4.1
b 5.1
b 4.5
b 5.0
b 15.2
b 10.0
b 20.0
c 1.1
c 1.1
c 1.2
c 1.6
c 2.2
c 3.0
c 4.0
c 10.5
```
"\n\n```
Data = read.table(textConnection(Input),header=TRUE)
```

**Attempt ANOVA on un-transformed data**

Here, even though the analysis of variance results in a significant \( p \)-value \( (p = 0.03) \), the residuals deviate from the normal distribution enough to make the analysis invalid. The plot of the residuals vs. the fitted values shows that the residuals are somewhat heteroscedastic, though not terribly so.

```
boxplot(Turbidity ~ Location, 
data = Data, 
ylab="Turbidity", 
xlab="Location")
```

```
model = lm(Turbidity ~ Location, 
data=Data)
```

```
library(car)
Anova(model, type="II")
```

```
\textit{Anova Table (Type II tests)}
\begin{tabular}{lllrr}
\hline
  & \text{Sum Sq} & \text{Df} & \text{F value} & \text{Pr(>F)} \\
Location & 132.63 & 2 & 3.8651 & 0.03447 * \\
Residuals & 428.95 & 25 & & \\
\hline
\end{tabular}
```

```
x = (residuals(model))
```

```
library(rcompanion)
plotNormalHistogram(x)
```

```
qqnorm(residuals(model), 
ylab="Sample Quantiles for residuals")
```

693
Transform data

```r
### Some options require NCStats
library(rcompanion)

Data$Turbidity_tuk = transformTukey(Data$Turbidity, plotit=FALSE)
```
Transforming Data

Summary and Analysis of Extension Education Program Evaluation in R

\[
\begin{array}{ccc}
\text{lambda} & w \text{ Shapiro.p.value} \\
397 & -0.1 & 0.935 & 0.08248
\end{array}
\]

\[
\text{if (lambda > 0) \{TRANS = x ^ lambda\}}
\]
\[
\text{if (lambda == 0) \{TRANS = log(x)\}}
\]
\[
\text{if (lambda < 0) \{TRANS = -1 ^ x ^ lambda\}}
\]

ANOVA with Tukey-transformed data

After transformation, the residuals from the ANOVA are closer to a normal distribution—although not perfectly—, making the F-test more appropriate. In addition, the test is more powerful as indicated by the lower p-value \((p = 0.005)\) than with the untransformed data. The plot of the residuals vs. the fitted values shows that the residuals are about as heteroscedastic as they were with the untransformed data.

\[
\text{boxplot(Turbidity_tuk ~ Location,}
\]
\[
\text{data = Data,}
\]
\[
\text{ylab="Tukey-transformed Turbidity",}
\]
\[
\text{xlab="Location")}
\]

\[
\text{model = lm(Turbidity_tuk ~ Location,}
\]
\[
\text{data=Data)
\]

\text{library(car)}

\text{Anova(model, type="II")}

\text{Anova Table (Type II tests)}

\[
\begin{array}{cccccc}
\text{Sum Sq} & \text{Df} & \text{F value} & \text{Pr(>F)} \\
\text{Location} & 0.052506 & 2 & 6.6018 & 0.004988 ** \\
\text{Residuals} & 0.099416 & 25
\end{array}
\]
```r
x = residuals(model)
library(rcompanion)
plotNormalHistogram(x)

qqnorm(residuals(model),
     ylab="Sample Quantiles for residuals")
qqline(residuals(model),
       col="red")

plot(fitted(model),
     residuals(model))
```
Box–Cox transformation

The Box–Cox procedure is similar in concept to the Tukey Ladder of Power procedure described above. However, instead of transforming a single variable, it maximizes a log-likelihood statistic for a linear model (such as ANOVA or linear regression). It will also work on a single variable using a formula of $x \sim 1$.

The Box–Cox procedure is available with the `boxcox` function in the `MASS` package. However, a few steps are needed to extract the $\lambda$ value and transform the data set.

This example uses the same turbidity data.

```r
Turbidity = c(1.0, 1.2, 1.1, 1.1, 2.4, 2.2, 2.6, 4.1, 5.0, 10.0, 4.0, 4.1, 4.2, 4.1, 5.1, 4.5, 5.0, 15.2, 10.0, 20.0, 1.1, 1.1, 1.2, 1.6, 2.2, 3.0, 4.0, 10.5)

library(rcompanion)

plotNormalHistogram(Turbidity)
```
Box–Cox transformation for a single variable

```
library(MASS)

Box = boxcox(Turbidity ~ 1,  # Transform Turbidity as a single vector
              lambda = seq(-6,6,0.1))  # Try values -6 to 6 by 0.1

Cox = data.frame(Box$x, Box$y)  # Create a data frame with the results

Cox2 = Cox[with(Cox, order(-Cox$Box.y))[,]  # Order the new data frame by decreasing y

Cox2[1,]  # Display the lambda with the greatest log likelihood

  Box.x  Box.y
  59 -0.2 -41.35829

lambda = Cox2[1, "Box.x"]  # Extract that lambda

T_box = (Turbidity ^ lambda - 1)/lambda  # Transform the original data

library(rcompanion)

plotNormalHistogram(T_box)
```
Example of Box–Cox transformation for ANOVA model

```r
Input =(" Location Turbidity
 a  1.0
 a  1.2
 a  1.1
 a  1.1
 a  2.4
 a  2.2
 a  2.6
 a  4.1
 a  5.0
 a 10.0
 b  4.0
 b  4.1
 b  4.2
 b  4.1
 b  5.1
 b  4.5
 b  5.0
 b 15.2
 b 10.0
 b 20.0
 c  1.1
 c  1.1
 c  1.2
 c  1.6
 c  2.2
 c  3.0
 c  4.0
 c 10.5
")

Data = read.table(textConnection(Input),header=TRUE)
```
**Attempt ANOVA on un-transformed data**

```
model = lm(Turbidity ~ Location, data=Data)

library(car)
Anova(model, type="II")

Anova Table (Type II tests)

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Sum Sq</th>
<th>Df</th>
<th>F value</th>
<th>Pr(&gt;F)</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>Location</td>
<td>3</td>
<td>3.8651</td>
<td>0.03447 *</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Residuals</td>
<td>25</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

x = residuals(model)

library(rcompanion)

plotNormalHistogram(x)

qqnorm(residuals(model), ylab="Sample Quantiles for residuals")
qqline(residuals(model), col="red")
```
Transform data

```r
library(MASS)

Box = boxcox(Turbidity ~ Location, data = Data, lambda = seq(-6, 6, 0.1))

Cox = data.frame(Box[, 1], Box[, 2])

Cox2 = Cox[with(Cox, order(-Cox[, 2])),]
```

Normal Q–Q Plot

Sample Quantiles for residuals

Theoretical Quantiles

plot(fitted(model), residuals(model))
`Cox2[1,]`

`lambda = Cox2[1, "Box.x"]`

`Data$Turbidity_box = (Data$Turbidity ^ lambda - 1)/lambda`

```r
boxplot(Turbidity_box ~ Location,
       data = Data,
       ylab="Box-Cox-transformed Turbidity",
       xlab="Location")
```

**Perform ANOVA and check residuals**

```r
model = lm(Turbidity_box ~ Location,
           data=Data)

library(car)

Anova(model, type="II")

Anova Table (Type II tests)

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th></th>
<th>Sum Sq</th>
<th>Df</th>
<th>F value</th>
<th>Pr(&gt;F)</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>Location</td>
<td>0.16657</td>
<td>2</td>
<td>6.6929</td>
<td>0.0047 **</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Residuals</td>
<td>0.31110</td>
<td>25</td>
<td>0.0047</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

x = residuals(model)

library(rcompanion)

plotNormalHistogram(x)
```
qqnorm(residuals(model),
    ylab="Sample Quantiles for residuals")
qqline(residuals(model),
    col="red")

plot(fitted(model),
     residuals(model))
Conclusions

Both the Tukey’s Ladder of Powers principle as implemented by the `transformTukey` function and the Box–Cox procedure were successful at transforming a single variable to follow a more normal distribution. They were also both successful at improving the distribution of residuals from a simple ANOVA.

The Box–Cox procedure has the advantage of dealing with the dependent variable of a linear model, while the `transformTukey` function works only for a single variable without considering other variables. Because of this, the Box–Cox procedure may be advantageous when a relatively simple model is considered. In cases where there are complex models or multiple regression, it may be helpful to transform both dependent and independent variables independently.
Regression for Count Data

Introduction

Count data
In general, common parametric tests like t-test and anova shouldn’t be used for count data. One reason is technical in nature: that parametric analyses require continuous data. Count data is by its nature discrete and is left-censored at zero. (That is, usually counts can’t be less than zero.)

A second reason is more practical in nature. Count data are often highly skewed, and often produce skewed residuals if a parametric approach is attempted. In this case, the hypothesis tests will not be accurate.

For further discussion, see the “Count data may not be appropriate for common parametric tests” section in the Introduction to Parametric Tests chapter.

Regression approaches for count data
The most common regression approach for handling count data is probably Poisson regression. However, Poisson regression makes assumptions about the distribution of the data that may not be appropriate in all cases. Hermite regression is a more flexible approach, but at the time of writing doesn’t have a complete set of support functions in R. Quasi-Poisson regression is also flexible with data assumptions, but also but at the time of writing doesn’t have a complete set of support functions in R. Negative binomial regression allows for overdispersion in data; and zero-inflated regression is useful when there are a high proportion of zero counts in the data.

Cautionary note
Note that model assumptions and pitfalls of these regression techniques are not discussed in depth here. The reader is urged to understand the assumptions of this kind of modeling before proceeding.

Generalized linear regression
Poisson, Hermite, and related regression approaches are a type of generalized linear model. This should not be confused with general linear model, which is implemented with the lm function. Generalized linear models are implemented with the glm function or other functions.

Generalized linear models are used when the dependent variable is count, binary, multinomial, etc. More information on using the glm function can be found by using help(glm) and help(family). For examples of logistic regression, see the chapter Models for Nominal Data; the chapter Beta Regression for Percent and Proportion Data; or Mangiafico (2015) in the “References” section. For a table of common uses for family and link function in generalized linear models, see the Wikipedia article in the “References” section for this chapter.

Packages used in this chapter
The packages used in this chapter include:
Regression for Count Data

The following commands will install these packages if they are not already installed:

```r
if(!require(psych)){install.packages("psych")}
if(!require(hermite)){install.packages("hermite")}
if(!require(lattice)){install.packages("lattice")}
if(!require(plyr)){install.packages("plyr")}
if(!require(boot)){install.packages("boot")}
if(!require(DescTools)){install.packages("DescTools")}
if(!require(ggplot2)){install.packages("ggplot2")}
if(!require(car)){install.packages("car")}
if(!require(multcompView)){install.packages("multcompView")}
if(!require(emmeans)){install.packages("emmeans")}
if(!require(MASS)){install.packages("MASS")}
if(!require(pscl)){install.packages("pscl")}
if(!require(rcompanion)){install.packages("rcompanion")}
if(!require(robust)){install.packages("robust")}
```

Hermite regression

**Hermite regression example**

The generalized Hermite distribution is a more general distribution that can handle overdispersion or multimodality (Moriña and others, 2015). This makes generalized Hermite regression a powerful and flexible tool for modeling count data. It is implemented with the `hermite` package.

Fitting models with the `hermite` package can be somewhat difficult. One issue is that model fitting may fail without some parameters being specified. Often specifying an appropriate value for the `m` option will help.

A further difficulty with this approach is that, at the time writing, the package isn't supported by the `anova` function to compare models, the `Anova` function to test effects, or other useful functions like `emmeans` for factor effects. The function `nagelkerkeHermite` can be used to compare models to test effects.
In this example, extension researchers have set up garden plots with different suites of plants, with each suite identified as a level of the variable *Garden* below. In September, they counted the number of monarch butterflies in each garden plot.

```r
Input = "
Garden   Monarchs
A        0
A        4
A        2
A        2
A        0
A        6
A        0
A        0
B        5
B        9
B        7
B        5
B        7
B        5
B        9
B        5
C        10
C        14
C        12
C        12
C        10
C        16
C        10
C        10
"

Data = read.table(textConnection(Input),header=TRUE)

### Order factors by the order in data frame
### Otherwise, R will alphabetize them
Data$Garden = factor(Data$Garden,
levels=unique(Data$Garden))

### Check the data frame
library(psych)
headTail(Data)
str(Data)
summary(Data)

### Remove unnecessary objects
```
Regression for Count Data

SUMMARY AND ANALYSIS OF EXTENSION EDUCATION PROGRAM EVALUATION IN R

Hermit regression

Here, the hermite package is used to conduct hermite regression. The nagelkerkeHermite function is used to test the effect of Garden by likelihood ratio test, comparing the full model to null model with the Garden effect excluded. It also produces a pseudo R-squared value for the model by comparison to a null model.

Here, the m=3 option is specified. Often the default m=NULL can be used. In this case, if the m value is not specified, the function cannot complete the model fitting, and errors are produced. Using m=2 often works. Here, m=3 was used because it produced a model with a lower AIC than did the m=2 option.

```r
library(hermite)

model = glm.hermite(Monarchs ~ Garden,  
data = Data,  
link = "log",  
m=3)

summary(model)

### Determine p-value and pseudo R-squared for model

null = glm.hermite(Monarchs ~ 1,  
data = Data,  
link = "log",  
m=3)

library(rcompanion)
nagelkerkeHermite(model, null)

$Models

  Model: "glm.hermite, Monarchs ~ Garden, Data, log, 3"
  Null: "glm.hermite, Monarchs ~ 1, Data, log, 3"

$Pseudo.R.squared.for.model.vs.null

  Pseudo.R.squared
  MCFadden 0.249943
  Cox and Snell (ML) 0.766548
  Nagelkerke (Cragg and Uhler) 0.768829

$Likelihood.ratio.test

  Df.diff LogLik.diff  Chisq    p.value
    -2   -17.457 34.915 2.6204e-08

$AIC

  AIC
```
Regression for Count Data

Summary and Analysis of Extension Education Program Evaluation in R

Model: 112.78
Null: 143.69

Note that because the null model is the same as the full model without the Garden effect, this test can also be considered a test of the Garden effect, and the pseudo R-squared akin to a partial pseudo R-squared due to the effect of Garden.

Histories

library(lattice)

histogram(~ Monarchs | Garden,
data=Data,
layout=c(1,3) # columns and rows of individual plots)

Post-hoc analysis: Medians and confidence intervals
At the time of writing, the emmeans package does not support post-hoc analysis of regressions produced with the hermite package.

One imperfect approach for post-hoc analysis would be to examine median counts for treatments and the confidence intervals of these medians. We can conclude that groups with non-overlapping 95% confidence intervals for their medians are significantly different.

However, this approach does not represent any information learned from the Hermite regression.

A second issue is that, because the dependent variable is not continuous, the distribution of the bootstrapped confidence intervals is not likely to be continuous, and so is may not be reliable.
To get confidence intervals for the medians for each group, we will use the `groupwiseMedian` function. Here I used the percentile method for confidence intervals.

```r
library(rcompanion)

Sum = groupwiseMedian(Monarchs ~ Garden, 
data=Data, 
conf=0.95, 
R=5000, 
percentile=TRUE, 
bc=FALSE, 
digits=3)

Sum

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Garden</th>
<th>n</th>
<th>Median</th>
<th>Conf.level</th>
<th>Percentile.lower</th>
<th>Percentile.upper</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>A</td>
<td>8</td>
<td>1</td>
<td>0.95</td>
<td>0</td>
<td>4</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>B</td>
<td>8</td>
<td>6</td>
<td>0.95</td>
<td>5</td>
<td>8</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>C</td>
<td>8</td>
<td>11</td>
<td>0.95</td>
<td>10</td>
<td>14</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

### In this case, none of the confidence intervals overlap.

Plot of medians and confidence intervals
The data frame `Sum` created above will be passed to `ggplot` for plotting. At the end of the code, `annotate` is used to add text to the plot to indicate which medians are significantly different from one another.

```r
library(ggplot2)

ggplot(Sum, 
aes(x = Garden, 
y = Median)) + 
geom_errorbar(aes(ymin = Percentile.lower, 
ymax = Percentile.upper), 
width = 0.05, 
size  = 1) + 
geom_point(shape = 15, 
size  = 5) + 
theme_bw() + 
theme(axis.title = element_text(face = "bold")) + 
ylab("Median count of monarch butterflies") + 
annotate("text", 
x = 1:3, 
y = c(5, 10, 15), 
label = c("Group 3", "Group 2", "Group 1"))
```
Post-hoc analysis: Pairwise models
Another imperfect approach to post-hoc analysis would be to produce additional hermite regression models which isolate groups to compare in a pairwise manner.

```
Data1 = subset(Data, Garden=="A" | Garden=="B")
Data2 = subset(Data, Garden=="A" | Garden=="C")
Data3 = subset(Data, Garden=="B" | Garden=="C")

### Pairwise regressions
library(hermite)
model1 = glm.hermite(Monarchs ~ Garden, data = Data1, link = "log", m=3)
null1 = glm.hermite(Monarchs ~ 1, data = Data1, link = "log", m=3)
```

```
library(rcompanion)
nagelkerkeHermite(model1, null1)
```
library(hermite)

model2 = glm.hermite(Monarchs ~ Garden,
  data = Data2,
  link = "log",
  m=3)

null2 = glm.hermite(Monarchs ~ 1,
  data = Data2,
  link = "log",
  m=3)

library(rcompanion)

nagelkerkeHermite(model2, null2)

$Likelihood.ratio.test
   Df.diff LogLik.diff  Chisq    p.value
     -1    -6.7312  13.462    0.00024339

library(hermite)

model3 = glm.hermite(Monarchs ~ Garden,
  data = Data3,
  link = "log",
  m=3)

null3 = glm.hermite(Monarchs ~ 1,
  data = Data3,
  link = "log",
  m=3)

library(rcompanion)

nagelkerkeHermite(model3, null3)

$Likelihood.ratio.test
   Df.diff LogLik.diff  Chisq    p.value
     -1    -6.0386  12.077    0.00051042

p.value = c(0.00024339, 2.2099e-07, 0.00051042)

p.adj = p.adjust(p.value,
Poisson regression example

Poisson regression makes certain assumptions about the relationship between the mean and the dispersion of the dependent variable. Because this assumption may not be met for all data sets, Poisson regression may not be recommended for routine use. Particularly, classic Poisson regression should be avoided if there is overdispersion in the data or if there are several zero counts in the dependent variable.

An alternate approach for data with overdispersion is negative binomial regression.

An alternative approach for data with many zeros is zero-inflated Poisson regression.

For further discussion, see the “Count data may not be appropriate for common parametric tests” section in the Introduction to Parametric Tests chapter.

Note that model assumptions and pitfalls of this approach are not discussed here. The reader is urged to understand the assumptions of this kind of modeling before proceeding.

```r
method = "fdr")

p.adj

```

```r
model.p = glm(Monarchs ~ Garden,
data=Data,
family="poisson")

library(car)

Anova(model.p,
     type="II",
     test="LR")

Analysis of Deviance Table (Type II tests)

    LR Chisq Df Pr(>Chisq)
Garden    66.463  2 3.697e-15 ***

library(rcompanion)
nagelkerke(model.p)

$Pseudo.R.squared.for.model.vs.null

Pseudo.R.squared

MCFadden     0.387929
Cox and Snell (ML) 0.937293
Nagelkerke (Cragg and Uhler) 0.938037

$Likelihood.ratio.test
```
**Negative binomial regression example**

Negative binomial regression is similar in application to Poisson regression, but allows for overdispersion in the dependent count variable.

This example will use the `glm.nb` function in the `MASS` package. The `Anova` function in the `car` package will be used for an analysis of deviance, and the `nagelkerke` function will be used to determine a p-value and pseudo R-squared value for the model. Post-hoc analysis can be conducted with the `emmeans` package.

Note that model assumptions and pitfalls of this approach are not discussed here. The reader is urged to understand the assumptions of this kind of modeling before proceeding.

```r
library(MASS)

model.nb = glm.nb(Monarchs ~ Garden,
data=Data,
control = glm.control(maxit=10000))
```

---

### Use lower-case letters for .group

### Tukey adjustment for multiple comparisons

---

Results are given on the log (not the response) scale.

Confidence level used: 0.95

Conf-level adjustment: sidak method for 3 estimates

P value adjustment: tukey method for comparing a family of 3 estimates

Tests are performed on the log scale

significance level used: alpha = 0.05

---

### Note that estimates are on log scale
library(car)

Anova(model.nb, 
  type="II", 
  test="LR")

Analysis of Deviance Table (Type II tests)

  LR Chisq Df Pr(>Chisq)
Garden   66.464  2 3.694e-15 ***

library(rcomppanion)

nagelkerke(model.nb)

$Pseudo.R.squared.for.model.vs.null
  Pseudo.R.squared
  MCFadden   0.255141
  Cox and Snell (ML) 0.776007
  Nagelkerke (Cragg and Uhler) 0.778217

$Likelihood.ratio.test
  Df.diff LogLik.diff  Chisq    p.value
  -2      -17.954 35.907 1.5952e-08

library(multcompView)

library(emmeans)

marginal = emmeans(model.nb, 
  ~ Garden)

pairs(marginal, 
  adjust="tukey")

cld(marginal, 
  alpha = 0.05, 
  Letters = letters,  ### Use lower-case letters for .group 
  type = "response", ### Report emmeans in orginal scale 
  adjust = "tukey")  ### Tukey adjustment for multiple comparisons

Garden response        SE df asymp.LCL asymp.UCL .group
A          1.75 0.4677072 NA 0.9244706  3.312707  a
B          6.50 0.9013878 NA 4.6677750  9.051422  b
C         11.75 1.2119200 NA 9.1850474 15.031223    c

Confidence level used: 0.95
Conf-level adjustment: sidak method for 3 estimates
Intervals are back-transformed from the log scale
P value adjustment: tukey method for comparing a family of 3 estimates
Tests are performed on the log scale
significance level used: alpha = 0.05
Zero-inflated regression example

Zero-inflated regression is similar in application to Poisson regression, but allows for an abundance of zeros in the dependent count variable.

This example will use the `zeroinfl` function in the `pscl` package. The `Anova` function in the `car` package will be used for an analysis of deviance, and the `nagelkerke` function will be used to determine a p-value and pseudo $R$-squared value for the model. Post-hoc analysis can be conducted with the `emmeans` package.

```r
library(pscl)

model.zi = zeroinfl(Monarchs ~ Garden, 
                      data = Data, 
                      dist = "poisson")

### dist = "negbin" may be used

summary(model.zi)

Call:
zeroinfl(formula = Monarchs ~ Garden | Garden, data = Data, dist = "poisson")

Count model coefficients (poisson with log link):
  Estimate Std. Error  z value  Pr(>|z|)
(Intercept)   1.2182     0.2847   4.278  1.89e-05 ***
GardenB       0.6536     0.3167   2.064    0.039 *
GardenC       1.2457     0.3029   4.113  3.90e-05 ***

Zero-inflation model coefficients (binomial with logit link):
  Estimate Std. Error  z value  Pr(>|z|)
(Intercept) -7.046e-02  7.363e-01  -0.096     0.924
GardenB    -2.057e+01 1.071e+04 -0.002     0.998
GardenC    -2.057e+01 1.071e+04 -0.002     0.998

### Note that there are separate coefficients for the
###  Poisson part of the analysis and for the zero-inflation part.

library(car)

Anova(model.zi, 
      type="II", 
      test="Chisq")

Analysis of Deviance Table (Type II tests)

Df  Chisq Pr(>Chisq)
Garden 2 23.914  6.414e-06 ***
library(rcompanion)

nagelkerke(model.zi)

$Pseudo.R.squared.for.model.vs.null
   Pseudo.R.squared
  McFadden           0.284636
  Cox and Snell (ML) 0.797356
  Nagelkerke (Cragg and Uhler) 0.800291

$Likelihood.ratio.test
    Df.diff LogLik.diff  Chisq    p.value
      -4     -19.156 38.311 9.6649e-08

library(multcompView)

library(emmeans)

marginal = emmeans(model.zi, ~ Garden)

pairs(marginal, adjust="tukey")

cld(marginal, alpha=0.05, Letters=letters, ### Use lower-case letters for .group
     adjust="tukey") ### Tukey adjustment for multiple comparisons

Garden   emmean        SE df  asymp.LCL asymp.UCL .group
A   1.75 0.7586301 NA  0.06140972  3.561410  a
B   6.50 0.9013877 NA  4.34772229  8.652278   b
C 11.75 1.2119199 NA  8.85625304 14.643747    c

Confidence level used: 0.95
Conf-level adjustment: sidak method for 3 estimates
P value adjustment: tukey method for comparing a family of 3 estimates
significance level used: alpha = 0.05

### Note, emmeans are on the original measurement scale

Robust Poisson regression example

Robust Poisson regression is robust to outliers in the dependent variable.

This example uses the glmRob function in the robust package. The anova function can be used to conduct an analysis of deviance. The p-value for the model can be found by comparing the model to a null model. However, at the time of writing, I don’t know of any way to determine AIC or pseudo $R^2$ for the model.

At the time of writing, the glmRob function can only use the Poisson and binomial families of models.
An alternate method is the `glmrob` function in the `robustbase` package.

```r
library(robust)

model.rob = glmRob(Monarchs ~ Garden,
                     data = Data,
                     family = "poisson")

anova(model.rob, test="Chisq")

Df Deviance Resid. Df Resid. Dev     Pr(>Chi)
NULL   NA       NA        23  430.19850           NA
Garden  2 400.9221        21   29.27641 3.567693e-63

model.rob.null = glmRob(Monarchs ~ 1,
                         data = Data,
                         family = "poisson")

anova(model.rob.null, model.rob, test="Chisq")

Terms Resid. Df Resid. Dev Test Df Deviance     Pr(>Chi)
1      1        23   95.12606      NA       NA
2 Garden        21   29.27641       2 65.84965 5.536815e-11

Quasi-Poisson regression

Quasi-Poisson regression is useful since it has a variable dispersion parameter, so that it can model over-dispersed data. It may be better than negative binomial regression in some circumstances (Verhoef and Boveng. 2007).

At the time of writing, Quasi-Poisson regression doesn't have complete set of support functions in R. Using the `quasipoisson` family option in the `glm` function, the results will have the same parameter coefficients as with the `poisson` option, but the inference statistics are adjusted in the `summary` function. The `Anova` function in the `car` package can be used for an analysis of deviance table, and the `emmeans` package can be used for post-hoc comparisons. Since the model doesn't produce a log-likelihood value, I don't know a way to produce a p-value for the mode, for a pseudo $R$-squared value for the model.

```r
model.qp = glm(Monarchs ~ Garden,
                data=Data,
                family="quasipoisson")

library(car)

Anova(model.qp,
      type="II",
      test="LR")
Analysis of Deviance Table (Type II tests)

Response: Monarchs

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th></th>
<th>LR Chisq</th>
<th>Df</th>
<th>Pr(&gt;Chisq)</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>Garden</td>
<td>52.286</td>
<td>2</td>
<td>4.429e-12</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

library(multcompView)

library(emmeans)

marginal = emmeans(model.qp, ~ Garden)

pairs(marginal, adjust="tukey")

cld(marginal, alpha=0.05, Letters=letters, adjust="tukey")

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Garden</th>
<th>emmean</th>
<th>SE</th>
<th>df</th>
<th>asymp.LCL</th>
<th>asymp.UCL</th>
<th>.group</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>A</td>
<td>0.5596158</td>
<td>0.3013057</td>
<td>NA</td>
<td>-0.1598233</td>
<td>1.279055</td>
<td>a</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>B</td>
<td>1.8718022</td>
<td>0.1563493</td>
<td>NA</td>
<td>1.4984809</td>
<td>2.245123</td>
<td>b</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>C</td>
<td>2.4638532</td>
<td>0.1162877</td>
<td>NA</td>
<td>2.1861887</td>
<td>2.741518</td>
<td>c</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

Results are given on the log (not the response) scale.
Confidence level used: 0.95
Conf-level adjustment: sidak method for 3 estimates
P value adjustment: tukey method for comparing a family of 3 estimates
significance level used: alpha = 0.05

Optional code for chi-square goodness-of-fit test

An alternative approach to handling count data is to sum up the counts for treatments, and use a chi-square test or related test. Here, a chi-square goodness-of-fit test is used to see if counts differ from "expected" equal proportions.

Omnibus test

Tabla = xtabs(Monarchs ~ Garden, data = Data)

Tabla

| Garden | | | |
|--------| | | |
| A      | B | C |
| 14     | 52| 94 |
Regression for Count Data

Summary and Analysis of Extension Education Program Evaluation in R

\texttt{chisq.test(Tabla)}

\begin{verbatim}
Chi-squared test for given probabilities
X-squared = 60.05, df = 2, p-value = 9.127e-14
\end{verbatim}

\textbf{Post-hoc chi-square tests}

\begin{verbatim}
Garden.A = sum(Data$Monarchs[Data$Garden=="A"])
Garden.B = sum(Data$Monarchs[Data$Garden=="B"])
Garden.C = sum(Data$Monarchs[Data$Garden=="C"])

observed = c(Garden.A, Garden.B)  # observed frequencies
expected = c(1/2, 1/2)            # expected proportions
chisq.test(x = observed, 
p = expected)

Chi-squared test for given probabilities
X-squared = 21.879, df = 1, p-value = 2.904e-06

observed = c(Garden.B, Garden.C)  # observed frequencies
expected = c(1/2, 1/2)            # expected proportions
chisq.test(x = observed, 
p = expected)

Chi-squared test for given probabilities
X-squared = 12.082, df = 1, p-value = 0.0005091

observed = c(Garden.A, Garden.C)  # observed frequencies
expected = c(1/2, 1/2)            # expected proportions
chisq.test(x = observed, 
p = expected)

Chi-squared test for given probabilities
X-squared = 59.259, df = 1, p-value = 1.382e-14
\end{verbatim}

Optional analysis: Vuong test to compare Poisson, negative binomial, and zero-inflated models

The Vuong test, implemented by the \textit{pscl} package, can test two non-nested models. It works with \textit{negbin}, \textit{zeroinfl}, and some \textit{glm} model objects which are fitted to the same data.
The null hypothesis is that there is no difference in models. The function produces three tests, a "Raw" test, an AIC-corrected, and a BIC-corrected, any of which could be used.

It has been suggested that the Vuong test not be used to test for zero-inflation (Wilson, 2015).

Define models

```r
model.p = glm(Monarchs ~ Garden,
              data=Data,
              family="poisson")

library(MASS)

model.nb = glm.nb(Monarchs ~ Garden,
                  data=Data,
                  control = glm.control(maxit=10000))

library(pscl)

model.zi = zeroinfl(Monarchs ~ Garden,
                     data = Data,
                     dist = "poisson")
```

Vuong test

```r
vuong(model.p,
      model.nb,
      digits = 4)

Vuong Non-Nested Hypothesis Test-Statistic:
(test-statistic is asymptotically distributed N(0,1) under the
null that the models are indistinguishible)
-------------------------------------------------------------

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Vuong z-statistic</th>
<th>H_A</th>
<th>p-value</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>Raw</td>
<td>0.03324988</td>
<td>model1 &gt; model2</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>AIC-corrected</td>
<td>0.03324988</td>
<td>model1 &gt; model2</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>BIC-corrected</td>
<td>0.03324988</td>
<td>model1 &gt; model2</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

### Positive Vuong z-statistic suggests that model 1 is superior,
### but, in this case, the difference is not significant,
### and the value of the statistic is probably too tiny to be meaningful.
```

```r
vuong(model.p,
      model.zi,
      digits = 4)

Vuong Non-Nested Hypothesis Test-Statistic:
(test-statistic is asymptotically distributed N(0,1) under the
null that the models are indistinguishible)
-------------------------------------------------------------

Vuong z-statistic         H_A  p-value
-------------------------------------------------------------
Regression for Count Data

Summary and Analysis of Extension Education Program Evaluation in R

Raw  -1.4424725 model2 > model1 0.074585
AIC-corrected  -0.4335210 model2 > model1 0.332318
BIC-corrected  0.1607786 model1 > model2 0.436134

### Negative Vuong z-statistic suggests that model 2 is superior.
### If the Raw statistic is used, p = 0.07 gives some evidence
### that zi model is superior.

vuong(model.nb, model.zi, digits = 4)

Vuong Non-Nested Hypothesis Test-Statistic:
(test-statistic is asymptotically distributed N(0,1) under the
null that the models are indistinguishible)
-------------------------------------------------------------
                 Vuong z-statistic       H_A   p-value
Raw               -1.4424725 model2 > model1 0.074585
AIC-corrected     -0.4335210 model2 > model1 0.332318
BIC-corrected     0.1607786 model1 > model2 0.436134

### Negative Vuong z-statistic suggests that model 2 is superior.
### If the Raw statistic is used, p = 0.07 gives some evidence
### that zi model is superior.

References


help(package="hermite")
library(hermite); ?glm.hermite
library(MASS); ?glm.nb
library(pscl); ?zeroinfl
library(pscl); ?vuong


722

**References for count data**


---

**Beta Regression for Percent and Proportion Data**

**Introduction**

*Proportion data*

In general, common parametric tests like t-test and anova shouldn't be used when the dependent variable is proportion data, since proportion data is by its nature bound at 0 and 1, and is often not normally distributed or homoscedastic.

Data of proportions, percentages, and rates can be thought of as falling into a few different categories.

*Proportion data of discrete counts*

Some proportion data is derived from discrete counts of “successes” and “failures”, where the “successes” are divided by the total counts. The example below with passing and failing counts across classes is an example of this. Each observation is a percentage from 0 to 100%, or a proportion from 0
to 1. This kind of data can be analyzed with beta regression or can be analyzed with logistic regression.

Proportion data that is inherently proportional
Other proportion data is inherently proportional, in that it’s not possible to count “successes” or “failures”, but instead is derived, for example, by dividing one continuous variable by a given denominator value. The sodium intake example below is an example of this. Another case of this kind of proportion data is when a proportion is assessed by subjective measurement. For example, rating a diseased lawn subjectively on the area dead, such as “this plot is 10% dead, and this plot is 20% dead”. Each observation is a percentage from 0 to 100%, or a proportion from 0 to 1. This kind of data can be analyzed with beta regression.

Rates with different numerators and denominators
Some rates are expressed with numerators and denominators of different measurements or units. For example, the number of cases of a disease per 100,000 people or the number of televisions per student’s home. In these cases, the values are not limited to between 0 and 1, and beta regression is not appropriate.

If the numerator can be considered a count variable, Poisson regression or other methods for count data are usually suggested. As a complication, often the denominator varies in value. For example, if the count is disease occurrence in a city and the denominator is the population in a city. (Each city has a different population.) Or if the numerator is the count of televisions in the home and the denominator is the number of students in the home. In these cases, Poisson regression or related methods are often recommended with an offset for the value in the denominator. These examples are not explored further here, but an example model would be

```r
glm(Count_of_televisions ~ Independent_variable +
    offset(log(Number_of_students_in_home)),
    family="poisson",
    data=Data)
```

**Beta regression**
Beta regression can be conducted with the `betareg` function in the `betareg` package (Cribari-Neto and Zeileis, 2010). With this function, the dependent variable varies between 0 and 1, but no observation can equal exactly zero or exactly one. The model assumes that the data follow a beta distribution.

**p-value and pseudo R-squared for the model**
The `summary` function in `betareg` produces a pseudo R-squared value for the model, and the recommended test for the p-value for the model is the `lrtest` function in the `lmtest` package.

The `nagelkerke` function in the `rcompanion` package also works with beta regression objects. The likelihood ratio test there appears to work fine, but the results for pseudo R-squared may be squirrelly, and probably should not be relied upon.
Analysis of deviance table

The *Anova* function in the *car* package will produce an anova-like table for beta regression objects. The default “Chisq” type test is probably the best of available options for these models.

Final note

Note that model assumptions and pitfalls of this approach are not discussed here. The reader is urged to understand the assumptions of this kind of modeling before proceeding.

Packages used in this chapter

The packages used in this chapter include:

- pysch
- betareg
- car
- lmtest
- rcompanion
- multcompView
- emmeans
- ggplot2

The following commands will install these packages if they are not already installed:

```r
if(!require(psych)){install.packages("psych")}
if(!require(betareg)){install.packages("betareg")}
if(!require(car)){install.packages("car")}
if(!require(lmtest)){install.packages("lmtest")}
if(!require(rcompanion)){install.packages("rcompanion")}
if(!require(multcompView)){install.packages("multcompView")}
if(!require(emmeans)){install.packages("emmeans")}
if(!require(ggplot2)){install.packages("ggplot2")}
```

Beta regression example with discrete counts

The following example uses counts of students passing or failing an exam, and asks if there is a relationship between the proportion of passing students and *Grade*. Note that *Grade* is treated as a numeric variable in this analysis.

```r
Input = ("'
Class      Grade  Pass  Fail
'Bully Hill' 12    14    6
'Keuka Lake' 12    15    5
'Heron Hill' 11    18    2
'Castel Grisch' 11    10  10
'Red Newt'    10    17    3
'Finger Lakes' 10    9    11
'Bellview'    9     12    8
'Auburn Road' 9     8    12
'Balic'       8    10    10
'Cape May'    8     8    12
'")
```
'Hawk Haven'    7   12   8
'Natali'        7   4   16

Data = read.table(textConnection(Input),header=TRUE)

###  Create the proportion variable

Data$Proportion = Data$Pass / (Data$Pass + Data$Fail)

### Check the data frame

library(psych)
headTail(Data)
str(Data)
summary(Data)

### Remove unnecessary objects

rm(Input)

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Class</th>
<th>Grade</th>
<th>Pass</th>
<th>Fail</th>
<th>Proportion</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>Bully Hill</td>
<td>12</td>
<td>14</td>
<td>6</td>
<td>0.7</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Keuka Lake</td>
<td>12</td>
<td>15</td>
<td>5</td>
<td>0.75</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Heron Hill</td>
<td>11</td>
<td>18</td>
<td>2</td>
<td>0.9</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Castel Grisch</td>
<td>11</td>
<td>10</td>
<td>10</td>
<td>0.5</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Balic</td>
<td>8</td>
<td>10</td>
<td>10</td>
<td>0.5</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Cape May</td>
<td>8</td>
<td>8</td>
<td>12</td>
<td>0.4</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Hawk Haven</td>
<td>7</td>
<td>12</td>
<td>8</td>
<td>0.6</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Natali</td>
<td>7</td>
<td>4</td>
<td>16</td>
<td>0.2</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

**Beta regression example**

library(betareg)

model.beta = betareg(Proportion ~ Grade,
                      data = Data)

library(car)

Anova(model.beta,
      type="II")

Analysis of Deviance Table (Type II tests)

Response: Proportion
**Beta Regression for Percent and Proportion Data**

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Df</th>
<th>Chisq</th>
<th>Pr(&gt;Chisq)</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>Grade</td>
<td>1</td>
<td>7.3314</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

```r
library(lmtest)

lrtest(model.beta)
```

**Likelihood ratio test**

```
  #Df LogLik Df  Chisq Pr(>Chisq)
1   3 5.9273
2   2 2.9897 -1 5.8752   0.01536 *
```

```r
summary(model.beta)
```

**Pseudo R-squared: 0.3785**

```r
library(rcompanion)

plotPredy(data = Data, 
y = Proportion, 
x = Grade, 
model = model.beta, 
xlab = "Grade", 
ylab = "Proportion passed")
```

![Graph showing the relationship between Grade and Proportion passed]

```r
plot(fitted(model.beta), 
residuals(model.beta))
```
## More diagnostic plots:
```
plot(model.beta)
```

### Alternate logistic regression

```r
Trials = cbind(Data$Pass, Data$Fail)  # Successes, Failures

model.log = glm(Trials ~ Grade,
                data = Data,
                family = binomial(link="logit"))
```

```
library(car)

Anova(model.log,
      type="II",
      test="Wald")
```

### Analysis of Deviance Table (Type II tests)

```
Df Chisq Pr(>Chisq)
Grade 1 14.305  0.0001554 ***
```

```
library(rcompanion)
nagelkerke(model.log)
```

```
$Pseudo.R.squared.for.model.vs.null

Pseudo.R.squared
MCFadden 0.190924
Cox and Snell (ML) 0.717212
Nagelkerke (Cragg and Uhler) 0.718174
```
$Likelihood.ratio.test

Df.diff LogLik.diff  Chisq    p.value
 -1      -7.5784 15.157 9.8946e-05

library(rcompanion)

plotPredy(data  = Data,
y     = Percent,
x     = Grade,
model = model.log,
type  = "response",      # Needed for logistic regression
xlab  = "Grade",
ylab  = "Proportion passing")

plot(fitted(model.beta),
      residuals(model.beta))

### More diagnostic plots: plot(model.beta)

Beta regression example with inherently proportional data

This example revisits the data set from the chapter on two-way analysis of variance. Here, the dependent variable Proportion is created by dividing daily student sodium intake by the US FDA “upper safe limit” of 2300 mg. The rest of the analysis is analogous to that of a two-way ANOVA.

Input = ("
Instructor        Supplement  Sodium
'Brendon Small'   A           1200
'Brendon Small'   A           1400
'Brendon Small'   A           1350
'Brendon Small'   A            950
'Brendon Small'   A           1400
'Brendon Small'   B           1150
'Brendon Small'   B           1300
'Brendon Small'   B           1325
'Brendon Small'   B           1425
'Brendon Small'   B           1500
'Brendon Small'   C           1250
'Brendon Small'   C           1150
'Brendon Small'   C            950
'Brendon Small'   C           1150
'Brendon Small'   C           1600
'Brendon Small'   D           1300
'Brendon Small'   D           1050
'Brendon Small'   D           1300
'Brendon Small'   D           1700
'Brendon Small'   D           1300
'Coach McGuirk'   A           1100
'Coach McGuirk'   A           1200
'Coach McGuirk'   A           1250
'Coach McGuirk'   A          1050

729
'Coach McGuirk'   A           1200
'Coach McGuirk'   B           1250
'Coach McGuirk'   B           1350
'Coach McGuirk'   B           1350
'Coach McGuirk'   B           1325
'Coach McGuirk'   B           1525
'Coach McGuirk'   C           1225
'Coach McGuirk'   C           1125
'Coach McGuirk'   C           1000
'Coach McGuirk'   C           1125
'Coach McGuirk'   C           1400
'Coach McGuirk'   D           1200
'Coach McGuirk'   D           1150
'Coach McGuirk'   D           1400
'Coach McGuirk'   D           1500
'Coach McGuirk'   D           1200
'Melissa Robins'  A            900
'Melissa Robins'  A           1100
'Melissa Robins'  A           1150
'Melissa Robins'  A           950
'Melissa Robins'  A           1100
'Melissa Robins'  B           1150
'Melissa Robins'  B           1250
'Melissa Robins'  B           1250
'Melissa Robins'  B           1225
'Melissa Robins'  B           1325
'Melissa Robins'  C           1125
'Melissa Robins'  C           1025
'Melissa Robins'  C           950
'Melissa Robins'  C           925
'Melissa Robins'  C           1200
'Melissa Robins'  D           1100
'Melissa Robins'  D           950
'Melissa Robins'  D           1300
'Melissa Robins'  D           1400
'Melissa Robins'  D           1100
}

Data = read.table(textConnection(Input),header=TRUE)

### Order factors by the order in data frame
### Otherwise, R will alphabetize them

Data$Instructor = factor(Data$Instructor,
levels=unique(Data$Instructor))

Data$Supplement = factor(Data$Supplement,
levels=unique(Data$Supplement))

### Create proportion variable

Data$Proportion = Data$Sodium / 2300
### Check the data frame

```r
library(psych)
headTail(Data)
str(Data)
summary(Data)
```

### Remove unnecessary objects

```r
rm(Input)
```

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Instructor</th>
<th>Supplement</th>
<th>Sodium</th>
<th>Proportion</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>1</td>
<td>Brendon Small</td>
<td>A</td>
<td>1200</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>2</td>
<td>Brendon Small</td>
<td>A</td>
<td>1400</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>3</td>
<td>Brendon Small</td>
<td>A</td>
<td>1350</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>4</td>
<td>Brendon Small</td>
<td>A</td>
<td>950</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>...</td>
<td>&lt;NA&gt;</td>
<td>&lt;NA&gt;</td>
<td>...</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>57</td>
<td>Melissa Robins</td>
<td>D</td>
<td>950</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>58</td>
<td>Melissa Robins</td>
<td>D</td>
<td>1300</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>59</td>
<td>Melissa Robins</td>
<td>D</td>
<td>1400</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>60</td>
<td>Melissa Robins</td>
<td>D</td>
<td>1100</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

**Beta regression**

```r
library(betareg)
model = betareg(Proportion ~ Instructor + Supplement + Instructor:Supplement, data = Data)

library(car)
Anova(model, type="II")
```

```
Analysis of Deviance Table (Type II tests)

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Term</th>
<th>Df</th>
<th>Chisq</th>
<th>Pr(&gt;Chisq)</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>Instructor</td>
<td>2</td>
<td>14.9873</td>
<td>0.0005566 ***</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Supplement</td>
<td>3</td>
<td>15.3766</td>
<td>0.0015216 **</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Instructor:Supplement</td>
<td>6</td>
<td>1.1985</td>
<td>0.9769603</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>
```

```r
library(lmtest)
lrtest(model)
```

**Likelihood ratio test**
**Beta Regression for Percent and Proportion Data**

**Summary and Analysis of Extension Education Program Evaluation in R**

```
#Df  LogLik  Df  Chisq  Pr(>Chisq)
1 13 82.956
2  2 70.260 -11 25.392 0.007984 **
```

```r
summary(model)

Pseudo R-squared: 0.3431
```

```r
plot(fitted(model), residuals(model))
```

### More diagnostic plots: plot(model)

```
library(multcompView)
library(emmeans)
marginal = emmeans(model, ~ Instructor)
pairs(marginal, adjust="tukey")
```

```r
Sum = cld(marginal, alpha = 0.05,
Letters = letters,
adjust = "tukey")
```

```r
# Use lowercase letters for .group
# Tukey-adjusted comparisons
```

```
Sum
```

732
Instructor  emmean       SE df   asymp.LCL asymp.UCL .group
Melissa Robins  0.4886613 0.01361908 NA 0.4561425 0.5211801  a
Coach McGuirk  0.5417084 0.01357579 NA 0.5092930 0.5741238  b
Brendon Small  0.5606374 0.01354438 NA 0.5282970 0.5929779  b

Results are averaged over the levels of: Supplement
Confidence level used: 0.95
Conf-level adjustment: sidak method for 3 estimates
P value adjustment: tukey method for comparing a family of 3 estimates
significance level used: alpha = 0.05

### Order data frame for plotting

Sum = Sum[order(factor(Sum$Instructor,
    levels=c("Brendon Small",
               "Coach McGuirk",
               "Melissa Robins"))),]

library(ggplot2)
ggplot(Sum,
  aes(x = Instructor,
       y = emmean)) +
  geom_errorbar(aes(ymin = asymp.LCL,
                    ymax = asymp.UCL),
                width = 0.05,
                size  = 0.5) +
  geom_point(shape = 15,
              size  = 4) +
  theme_bw() +
  theme(axis.title = element_text(face = "bold")) +
  ylab("EM mean proportion of sodium intake") +
  annotate("text",
           x = 1:3,
           y = Sum$asymp.UCL + 0.008,
           label = gsub(" ", ",", Sum$.group))
marginal = emmeans(model, 
    ~ Supplement)

pairs(marginal, 
    adjust="tukey")

Sum = cld(marginal, 
    alpha = 0.05, 
    Letters = letters, 
    adjust = "tukey")

### Use lowercase letters for .group

### Tukey-adjusted comparisons

Sum

### Order data frame for plotting

Sum = Sum[order(factor(Sum$Supplement, 
    levels=c("A", "B", "C", "D"))),]

Sum
library(ggplot2)

ggplot(Sum, aes(x = Supplement, y = emmean)) +
  geom_errorbar(aes(ymin = asymp.LCL, ymax = asymp.UCL),
                width = 0.05, size = 0.5) +
  geom_point(shape = 15, size = 4) +
  theme_bw() +
  theme(axis.title = element_text(face = "bold")) +
  ylab("EM mean proportion of sodium intake") +
  annotate("text",
           x = 1:4,
           y = Sum$asymp.UCL + 0.008,
           label = gsub(" ", "", Sum$.group))

References